

MUTANT INJA TURTLES
MNT 外伝
G AIDEN

尊




望



幸



実



PROLOGUE

FEE-FI-FO-FUM.
I SMELL THE
BLOOD OF SCUMMY
HOOLIGANS.



BE THEY POLITE OR
BE THEY PRICKS...

LOOKIE HERE...
TONIGHT'S LUCKY
WINNER.



...I'LL BEAT THE CRAP OUTTA THEM
FOR BEIN' SO DAMN UGLY.

IF YOU WANNA GET HOME
IN ONE PIECE AND KISS
YOUR WIFE 6'NIGHT, YOU'D
BETTER PAY THE TOLL.

COUGH UP THE
DOUGH OR
ELSE...



HEH.

BRING 'EM
ON!

WHAT
THE
F....!

EEEP!



HAVE MERCY!
I... I HAVE KIDS!
TWO CUTE LIL'
GIRLS, AND...!

AREH...

DON'T WORRY, I'M GONNA
SEND 'EM INVITATIONS TO YER
FUNERALS AFTER I'M DONE WITH YA...

EEEEK!

RAPHAEL!
ENOUGH!

CRAP. IT'S SPLINTER JUNIOR.

JUST GOING FOR A STROLL...
I KNEW YOU WERE UP
TO NO GOOD AGAIN!
THOSE TWO HAVE LEARNED
THEIR LESSON, SO
JUST LET THEM GO!

URGH...
YER SUCH A
PARTY-POOPER...

Y...YES! WE LEARNED
THE ERROR OF OUR
WAYS! SORRY!!

I... I PROMISE
I'LL DO COMMUNITY
SERVICE!

JUST
BEAT
IT!!

I BET 'CHA JUST CAN'T WAIT
TO RAT ON ME... AGAIN.

HEY, IT'S NOT LIKE I
ENJOY BABYSITTING YOU
ALL THE TIME... BESIDES
THE SENSEI'S ALREADY
BUSY WITH SOMETHING
ELSE.

YA MEAN
HE'S ACTUALLY
DOIN' SOMETHIN'
ELSE THAN
DRINKIN' TEA
AND PRETENDIN'
TO SLEEP?

TO ANSWER YOUR
QUESTION, YES.
HE "RECEIVED" A
PARCEL FROM
JAPAN THAT WAS
DESTINED TO HIS
LATE MASTER,
HAMATO YOSHI.

HEH. I DIDN'T KNOW THE
POSTAL SERVICE NOW
ALSO DELIVERS MAIL
TO SEWER OUTCASTS
LIKE US.

THAT'S WHAT WE GET
FOR LIVIN' A SECLUDED
LIFE, AM I RIGHT, LEO?

SARCASM ASIDE, THAT'S
THE REASON WHY OUR
SENSEI WAS CONCERNED
ABOUT THIS PACKAGE.
IT WAS DROPPED IN A
MANHOLE, NOT TOO FAR
FROM OUR LAIR.
THIS IS TOO MUCH TO BE
JUST A COINCIDENCE.

OUR SENSEI EVEN THOUGHT THAT IT WAS
A PRACTICAL JOKE FROM OUR FRIENDS
ON THE SURFACE, LIKE APRIL OR CASEY.
YOU KNOW, THE ONLY ONES WHO
KNOW OUR LAIR'S LOCATION.

LIKE CASEY
HAD THE TIME
TO COME UP
WITH A JOKE
LIKE THAT...

HE'S SO BUSY FIGHTIN'
CRIME ALL THE TIME...
IN FACT I FEEL LIKE
GOIN' OUT THERE
AND JOININ' HIM NOW!

YEAH... NO WONDER YOU TWO
GET ALONG SO WELL.
BUT I'D SAY YOU'VE HAD
ENOUGH ACTION FOR TODAY.

RAPHAEL,
YOU'RE BACK!

MY SON... WHY DO YOU ALWAYS GO FOR SUCH LONG STROLLS WITHOUT LETTING ANY OF US KNOW? I KNOW YOU ARE FOND OF THE SURFACE, SO I'M CURIOUS... WHAT WERE YOU DOING UP THERE, ALL BY YOURSELF?

THIS IS NOT GOOD. I CAN SENSE MASTER SPLINTER'S ANGER. IF HE DOESN'T HEAR THE TRUTH, THINGS WILL GET UGLY.

THE OL' RAT'S IN A GOOD MOOD. I GUESS I CAN GET AWAY WITH IT TODAY.

I WAS JUST LOOKIN' AT 'EM TREES IN THE PARK. YA KNOW... TO COMPARE 'EM TO... ER... MY SPIRIT WHEN I MEDITATE. YEAH!

HM. HM.

LEONARDO? ANYTHING YOU WANT TO SAY?

A... ACTUALLY, MASTER SPLINTER.
IT'S NOT TRUE. RAPHAEL DID FIGHT SOME
PUNKS IN CENTRAL PARK.
WHEN THEY BEGGED FOR THEIR LIVES,
RAPHAEL DIDN'T INTEND TO RELENT.
I HAD TO STEP IN TO STOP HIM.

TSK TSK...
I SHOULD'VE
KNOWN.

HE JUST
HAD TO SUCK
UP TO
SPLINTER
NOW.
JUST WHEN
THINGS WERE
GONNA
WORK OUT
FOR ME!

RAPHAEL... SOMETIMES YOU SIMPLY ASTONISH ME.
NEVER FORGET THAT YOU ARE A NINJA. NOT A
BARBARIAN. YOU MUST RELY ON STEALTH AND FINESSE,
NOT BRUTE FORCE... I DON'T EVEN WANT TO KNOW
WHAT PERVERSE EMOTIONS WENT THROUGH YOUR
MIND WHILE YOU FOUGHT THOSE HUMANS.

YA, I KNOW!

YOU COULD'VE JUST KNOCKED THEM
OUT AND LEFT THEM ALONE.
BESIDES, THEY ARE NOT WORTH
YOUR TIME AND FOCUS.

I GET IT, I GET IT!

GOOD. THEN I UNDERSTAND YOU'LL
WHOLE-HEARTEDLY ACCEPT YOUR
PUNISHMENT: YOU ARE NOT TO SET
FOOT ON THE SURFACE FOR THE
REMAINDER OF THIS MONTH.
DO I MAKE MYSELF CLEAR?

WHA...?
BUT I...

LEONARDO,
COME WITH
ME. I'D LIKE
TO HAVE A
FEW WORDS
WITH YOU.





YA HAVE TEN SECONDS
TO EXPLAIN YERSELF
BEFORE I STUFF YA IN
MY PUNCHIN' BAG!!

CAMEL
CLUTCH

URK!!
I CAN
EXPLAIN!!

I WANNA CHECK
OUT WHAT'S IN
THE PARCEL
WE GOT FROM
JAPAN!

RIGHT... AND
HITTIN' MY FACE
WILL HELP YA DO
THAT??

ゴキ
ゴキ

AAW... CHILL OUT, DUDE! THE LONGER YOU
AND LEO BICKER OVER YOUR DIFFERENCES,
THE LONGER THE SENSEI STAYS IN MY WAY!
C'MOOOOON. I KNOW YOU'RE JUST AS
CURIOUS AS I AM ABOUT THAT PARCEL!

WHATEVER.
SOONER OR
LATER... I'LL
MAKE YOU
PAY!

HEHEE. I CAN'T
BELIEVE I'M SNEAKING
IN THE SENSEI'S ROOM.

THIS IS IT?

YEAH!
LET'S
OPEN
IT!

LEONARDO. INSIDE OF MY MASTER'S PARCEL WAS A SCROLL THAT DESCRIBES A TECHNIQUE THAT REQUIRES A HIGH LEVEL OF CONCENTRATION. SINCE YOUR ABILITY TO FOCUS IS MORE DEVELOPED THAN YOUR SIBLINGS', I DECIDED I'D SHOW YOU THAT TECHNIQUE FIRST.

I WON'T FAIL YOU, SENSEI.

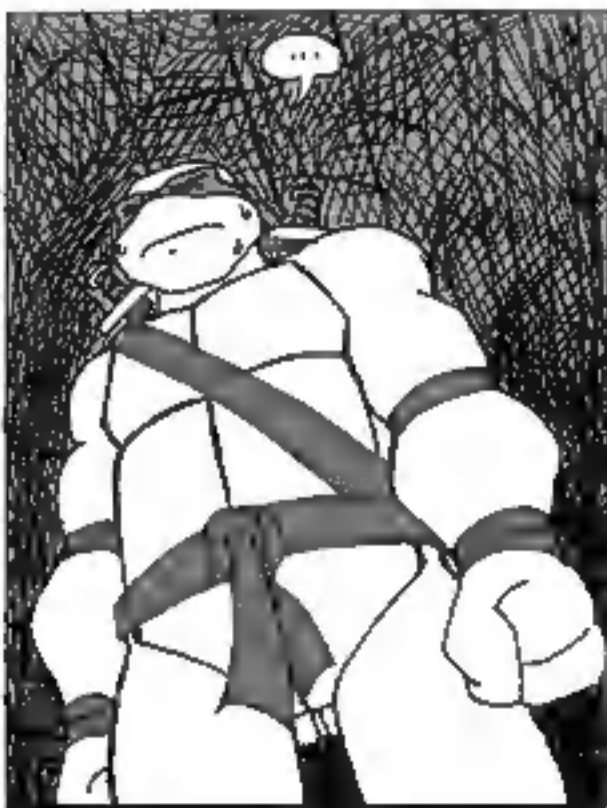
I HAVE NO TROUBLE USING THIS TECHNIQUE. IN YOUR CASE, HOWEVER, YOUR LIMITS WILL BE TESTED.

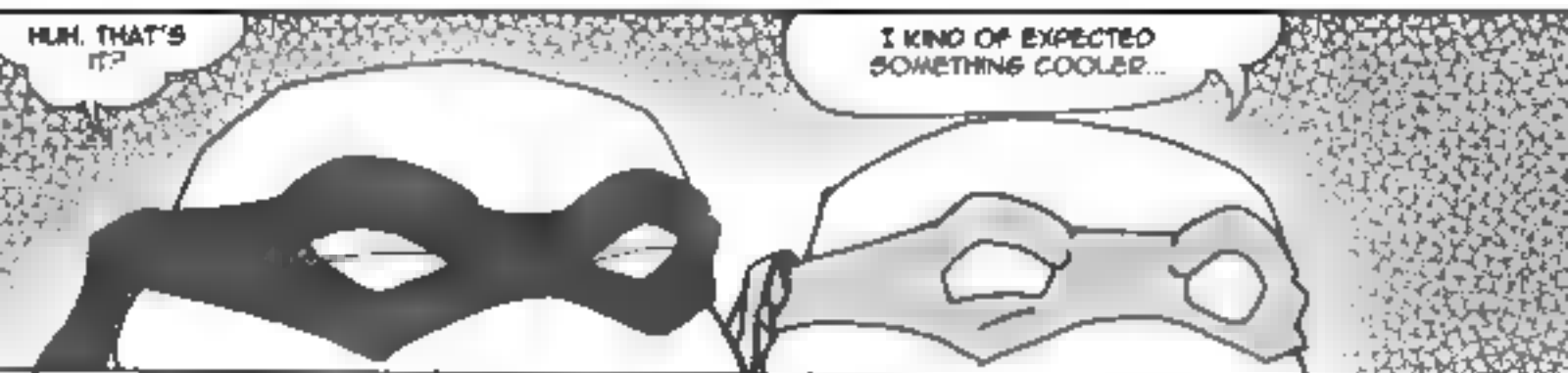
JUST WHAT IS THAT TECHNIQUE?

IT ALLOWS ITS USER TO SEGREGATE HIS SOUL FROM HIS BODY AND INTERACT WITH OTHER SPIRITS IN THE ASTRAL PLANE. ACCORDING TO THE SCROLL, ONLY A SELECT FEW EXORCISTS IN AN ANCIENT CLAN WERE TAUGHT THIS TECHNIQUE.

NOW, MY SON. EMPTY YOUR MIND OF EVERYTHING. THE SOUND OF THE WATER, THE COLDNESS OF THE GROUND, THE STENCH OF THE SEWERS... THEN FORGET ABOUT ME AS WELL. JUST FOCUS ON THE VOID DEEP WITHIN YOURSELF.

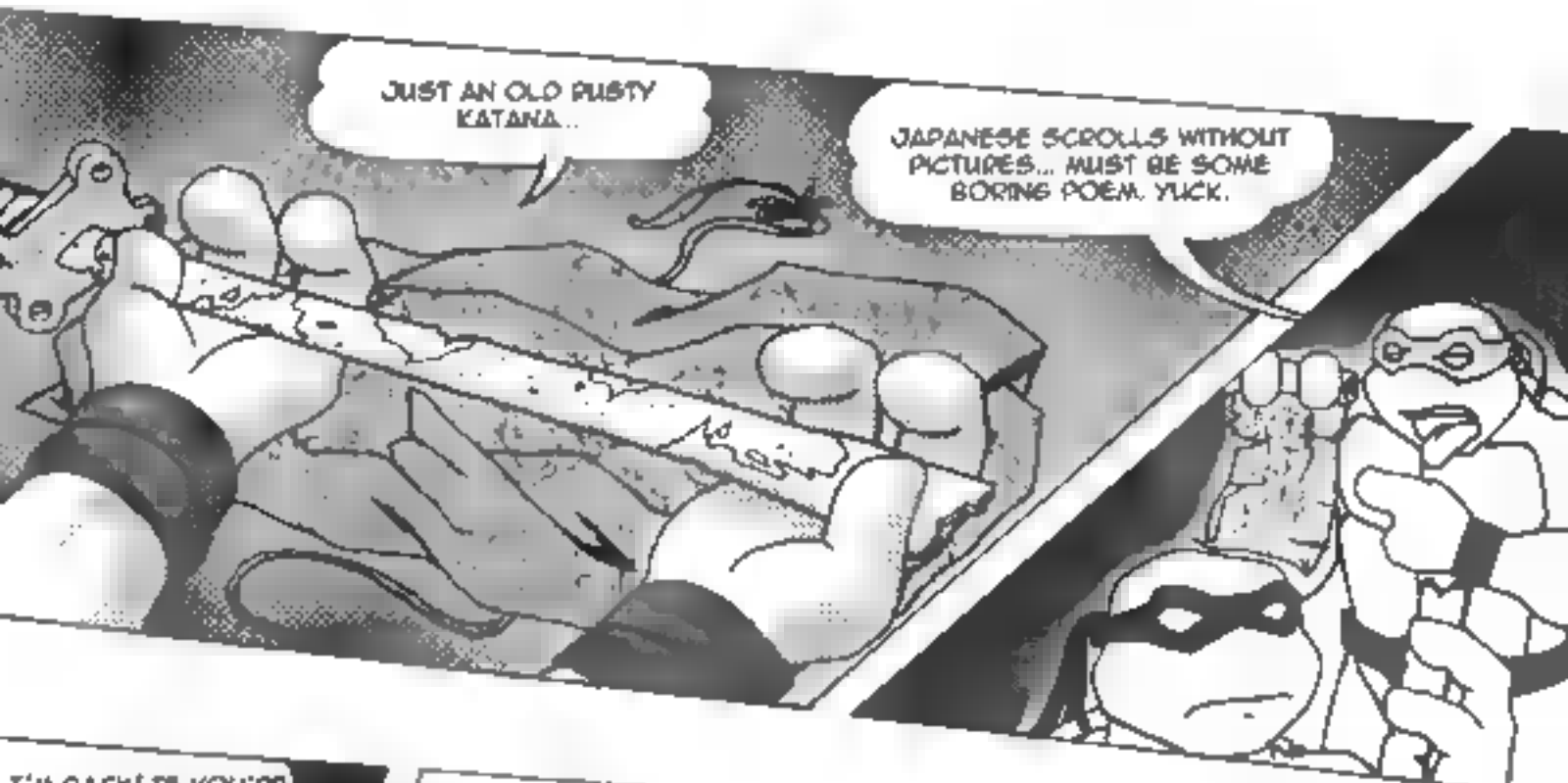
...





HUH. THAT'S IT?

I KIND OF EXPECTED SOMETHING COOLER...



JUST AN OLD RUSTY KATANA...

JAPANESE SCROLLS WITHOUT PICTURES... MUST BE SOME BORING POEM. YUCK.

I'M BACK! IF YOU'RE LOOKING FOR ME, I'LL BE IN THE TRAINING ROOM.

LEO!

WE'D BETTER CLEAN UP AND GET OUTTA HERE! IF LEO SEES WHAT WE DID, WE'LL BE IN BIG TROUBLE!

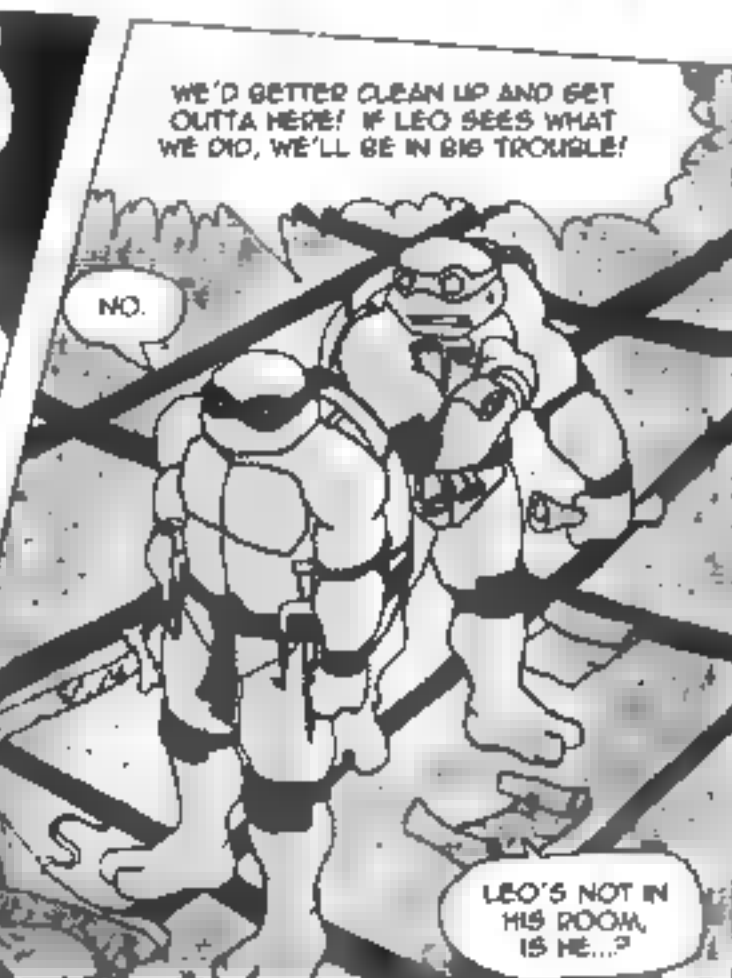
NO.

LET'S BRING ALL THIS STUFF IN HIS ROOM.

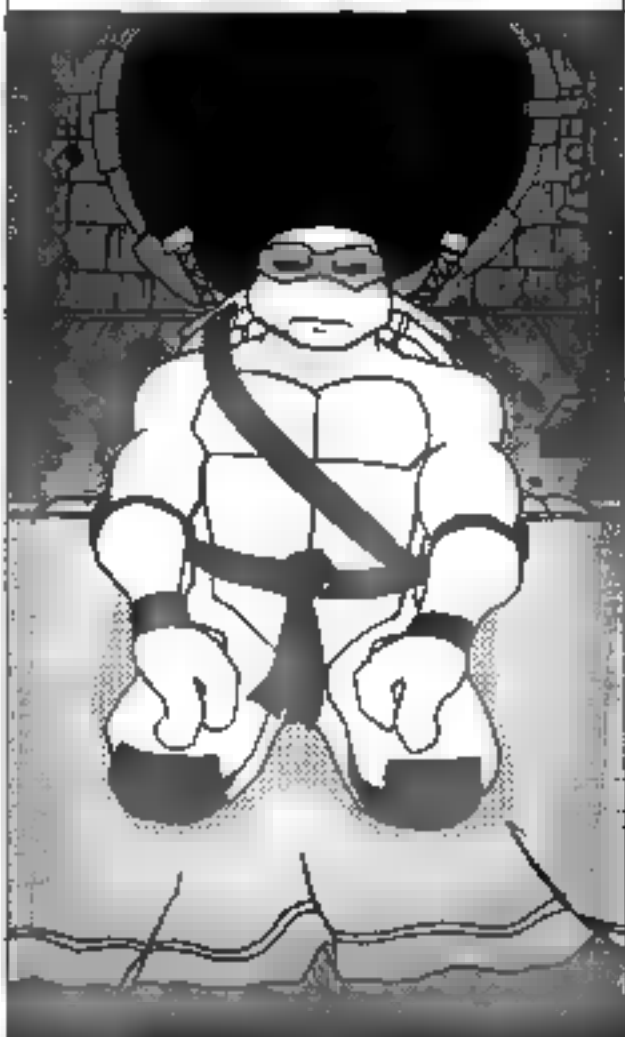
Y'KNOW... TO FRAME HIM.

WHAT?

LEO'S NOT IN HIS ROOM, IS HE...?



MASTER SPLINTER BELIEVES IN MY
POTENTIAL... I MUST NOT LET HIM DOWN.
NEXT TIME, I WON'T LOSE MY
CONCENTRATION, AND...



WHY DO I FEEL SO MUCH
NEGATIVE ENERGY COMING
FROM MY ROOM?



RAPH! CUT IT
OUT! ARE YOU
CRAZY?
AAAARGH!!!

MIKEY?



H...HAVE YOU
GONE NUTS?

HEH...
HEH...
HEH...

WHY NOT
AT ALL,
BRO.

IN FACT, I NEVER FELT
BETTER. I JUST LOVE
THE BITTER TASTE OF
FRESH BLOOD...

YOURS.

N...NO! NO!!!
THIS CAN'T BE!
YOU'RE NOT
RAPH! HE'S NOT
LIKE THAT!

**YOU'RE
NOT
RAPH!**

BUT I AM RAPHAEL.
YOUR DEAR BROTHER
RAPHAEL...

THIS IS A PAYBACK
FOR PUNCHING ME IN
THE FACE.. AND FOR
ALL THOSE TIMES
YOU ANNOYED ME
WITH YOUR STUPID
UPBEAT ATTITUDE.

I'LL ENJOY
DRINKING YOUR
BLOOD...
TO THE LAST
DROP...

R...RAPH...
NO WAY...

PLEASE...
STOP IT...

DIE!

ガキーン

NEVER SHED YOUR OWN
BROTHER'S BLOOD, RAPHAEL.

NEVER.

URRRRSH...
LEOOO...
LEOOOO...



LEEEEOO!!
GRAARRR!!!

ガッ

ガキョ

MIKEY! GET DONNIE TO
TREAT YOUR WOUND!

LEAVE RAPH
TO ME!







I SWORE TO
PROTECT
MY BROTHERS
LIVES
AS LONG
AS I LIVE!

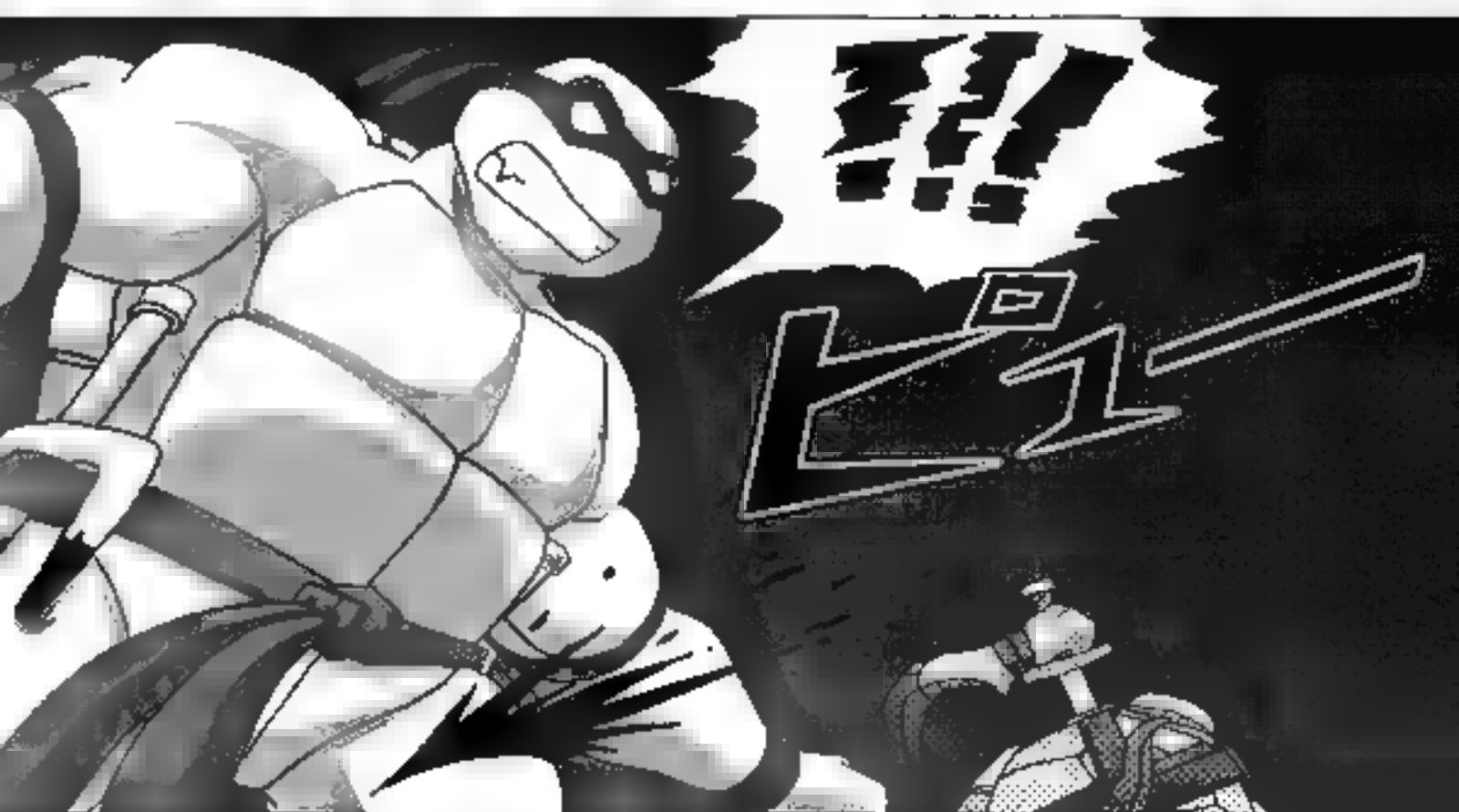


HOW PATHETIC...

SORRY... I
HAVE NO
CHOICE...

HUMPH...

....??

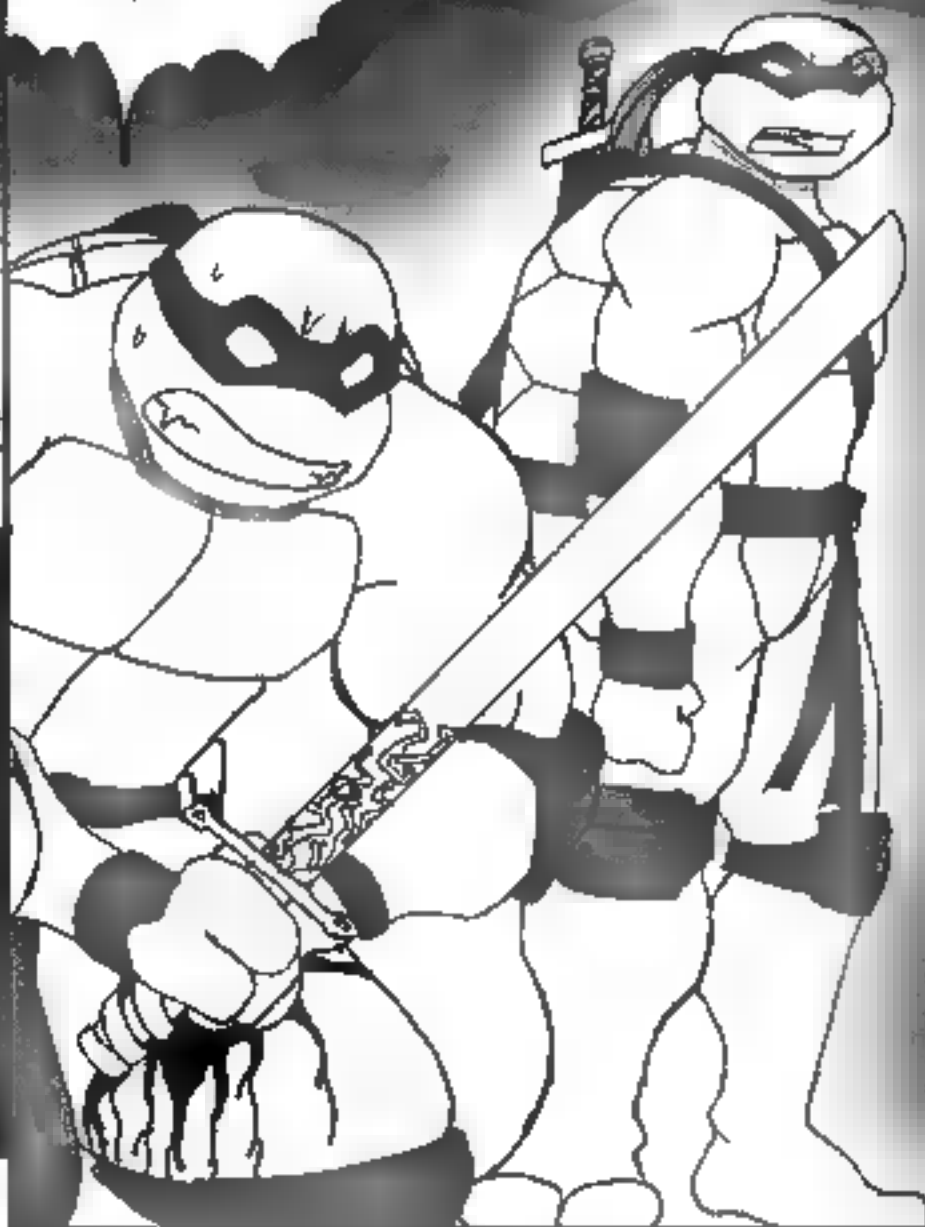


GWAAAAAAR!!!



SHIT, SHIT,
SHIT, SHIT!

SO YOU THINK IT'S OKAY TO
SHED OTHER PEOPLE'S BLOOD,
YET YOU FREAK OUT AT THE SIGHT
OF YOUR OWN?



IT'S JUST A NICK... TO
MAKE SURE YOU WON'T
GET TO MIKEY SO
EASILY.



S...SHUDDAP! MIKEY WAS IN THE WAY!



IN THE WAY OF WHAT, RAPHAEL?
WHAT WERE YOU DOING?



GETTIN' BACK AT
YOU, DUMBASS!!
WHADDOYA THINK?

WHAT?

IF SPLINTER FOUND HIS JAPANESE JUNK IN
YER ROOM, I'D FINALLY GET TO SEE YOU BEIN'
SCREWED UP! BUT THAT PESKY MIKEY GOT IN THE
WAY...

SO I SHUT HIM UP...
SERVES HIM RIGHT...
I ALWAYS WANTED
TO DO THAT...

THE KATANA TOLD ME TO DO IT...
IT UNDERSTOOD MY THIRST FOR
VIOLENCE... IT KNEW HOW MUCH
Y'ALL PISS ME OFF ALL THE TIME...!

THE KATANA SPOKE TO YOU?

RAPHAEL...
WHATEVER
IT IS, IT'S
MESSING
UP YOUR
MIND!
LET GO
OF IT!

MY MIND? MY MIND??
IT'S ALWAYS THE SAME!!
Y'ALL THINK I'M THE ONE WITH
ISSUES!! ME, ME, ME!!
DON'CHA REALIZE
IT'S YER FAULT?

RAPHAEL??

YOU'RE ALWAYS BETTER
THAN ME! ALWAYS MORE
RELIABLE THAN ME!

ALWAYS SPLINTER'S
FAVORITE SON!!

WHERE I FAIL, YA SUCCEED!

WHERE I SUCCEED, YA
ALWAYS DO BETTER!!

YOU GET ALL THE LOVE...

I GET... NOTHING...

THAT'S WHY...
I HATE YA, LEO!
I HATE YER
FRICKIN' GLITS!!

IT WAS 'CUZ OF
YOU THAT I DID
ALL THAT! IT'S
ALL YER FAULT!!

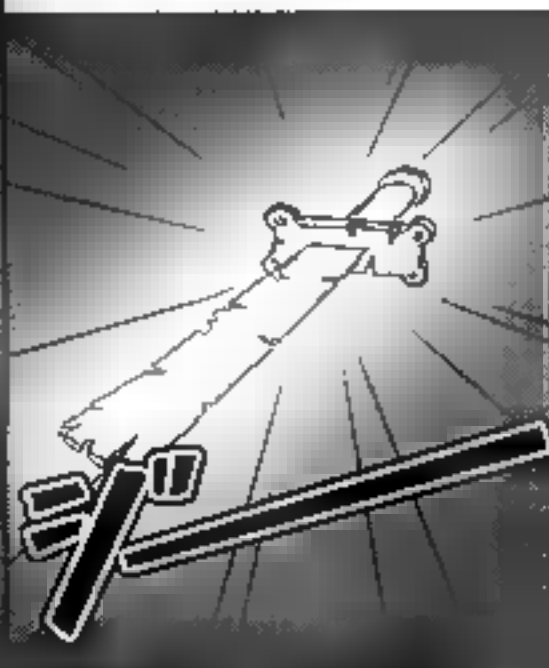
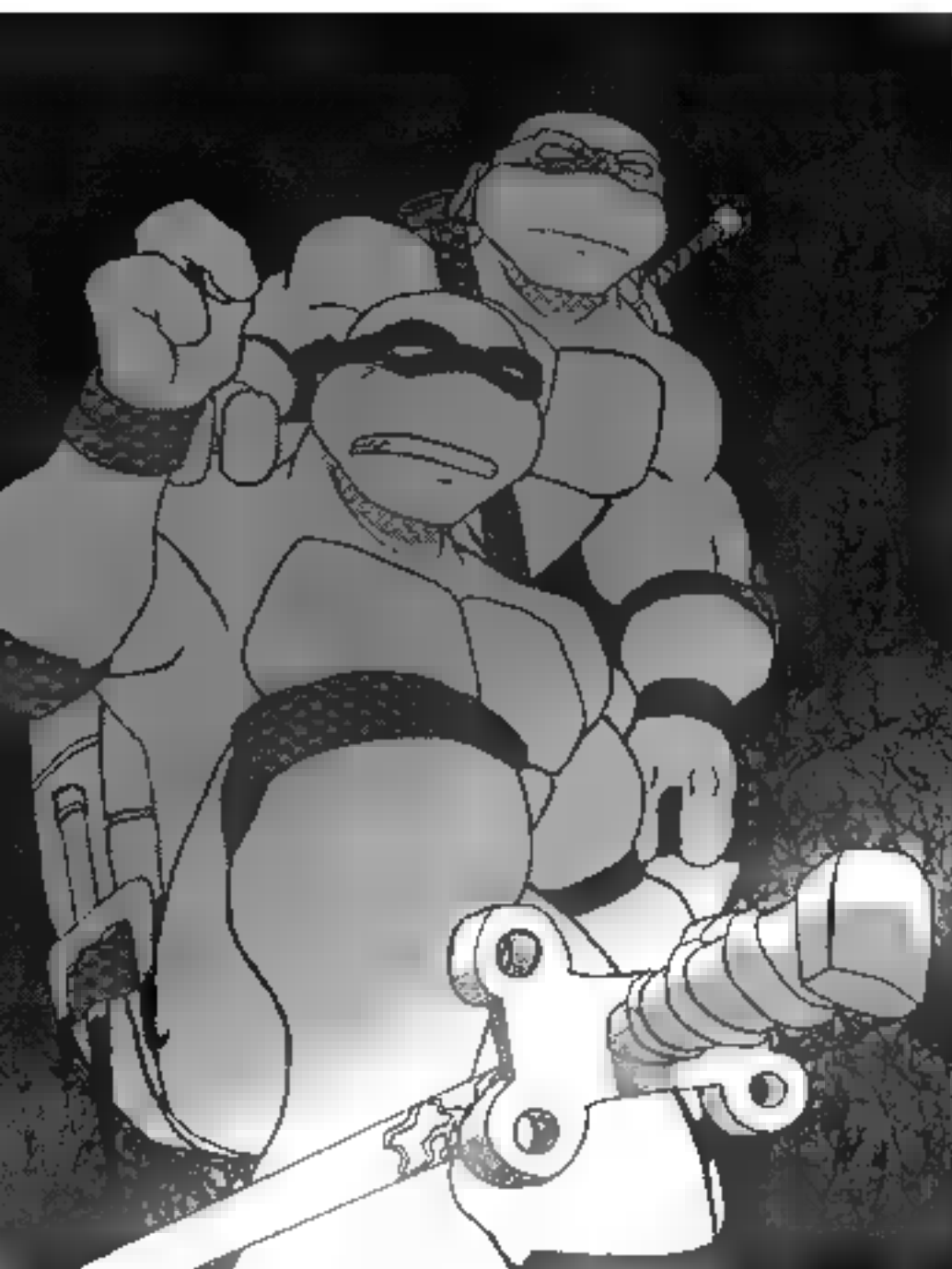
■ ONLY YA DIDN'T EXIST... IF ONLY
YA DIDN'T MAKE ME LOOK BAD ALL
THE TIME!!

RAPH. I'M SORRY TO HEAR THAT...

I DIDN'T KNOW I CAUSED
YOU SO MUCH GRIEF.
I PROMISE THINGS WILL BE
DIFFERENT FROM NOW ON.

BUT FIRST THINGS
FIRST...

LET GO OF THAT
KATANA. I KNOW YOU'RE
WISE ENOUGH TO KNOW
IT'S BAD NEWS...



I...I CAN'T BELIEVE I
ATTACKED YA... AND... AND
I ALMOST KILLED
MIKEY...

DON'T WORRY...
IT WAS THAT
KATANA
CONTROLLING
YOU...

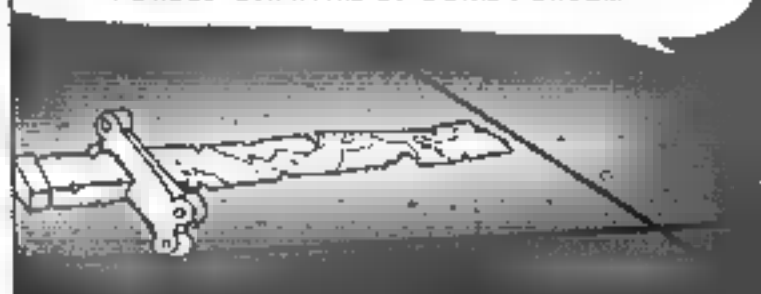


NO... I WAS CONSCIOUS OF MY ACTIONS...

I WAS...
MYSELF...

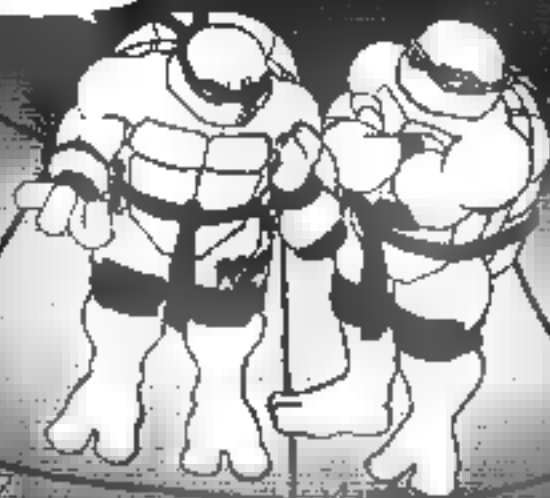


IT WAS AS IF SOMETHING DEEP IN ME WAS BEING
FORCED OUTTA ME BY SOME FORCE...



ALL MY DARKEST
EMOTIONS... I
COULD NO LONGER
CONTAIN THEM...
SHT, I REALLY
SCREWED UP
THIS TIME...

LEO, WE GOTTA DO
SOMETHIN' 'BOUT THAT
KATANA OR SPLINTER'S
GONNA KILL ME...



WE WILL, RAPH. BUT
FIRST, WHY DON'T WE
GO CHECK UP ON MIKEY?
YOU OWE HIM AN APOLOGY...

I TOLD YA WE NEED THIS MESS CLEANED
UP AND YA DECIDE TO IGNORE ME AND ACT
ALL HEH AND MIGHTY AGAIN!! DO YA CARE
'BOUT ME OR NOT? MAKE UP YER MIND!!

CALM
DOWN!



WHADDYA THINK SPLINTER'S GONNA DO ONCE HE FINDS OUT I STOLE ONE OF HIS MASTER'S POSSESSIONS?

I'LL GET BANISHED, THAT'S WHAT!!

WE CAN MAKE UP SOME EXCUSE FOR MIKEY'S WOUNDS, BUT THIS KATANA'S GONNA HAVE TO BE PUT BACK WHERE IT WAS!!

BUT IT'S MOST LIKELY CURSED! MAYBE WE SHOULD...

...LET ME TAKE THE HEAT AGAIN, RIGHT?

YOU'D LIKE THAT, WOULDN'T YA? WHY DON'T YOU TELL ON ME, YOU'LL EARN BROWNIE POINTS WITH SPLINTER!

RAPHAEL... I'VE ALWAYS WISHED FOR WHAT'S BEST FOR YOU...

LEAVE THE KATANA TO ME. I'LL RETURN IT TO THE SENSEI'S ROOM.

I'LL USE MY SHEATH TO PICK IT UP. MAYBE IT'LL PROVIDE ME WITH SUFFICIENT PROTECTION.

I'D NEVER DO ANYTHING TO ANY OF MY SIBLINGS OUT OF MALICE... I'LL DO AS YOU TELL ME THIS ONCE, AS A PROOF OF MY GOOD WILL.

LEO...

...I'M SORRY. YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE TO GO OUTTA YER WAY LIKE THAT FOR ME... J...JUST LEAVE THAT KATANA THERE, BRO.

...BRO?

YEAH, I'M TALKIN'
TO YOU, LEO!
LET GO OF THAT
KATANA!

WAS THAT...
AN ORDER...?

IT'S WHATEVER YOU WANT IT
TO BE! NOW FORGET THAT
KATANA! I'M BONNA 'FESS UP
TO SPLINTER AND...

SHOW ME SOME
RESPECT,
YOU IMPERTINENT
FOOL!!

ガッ

...THE FUCK'S
YER PROBLEM?
GODDAMMIT!



WATCH
YOUR
TONGUE!

URGGH!

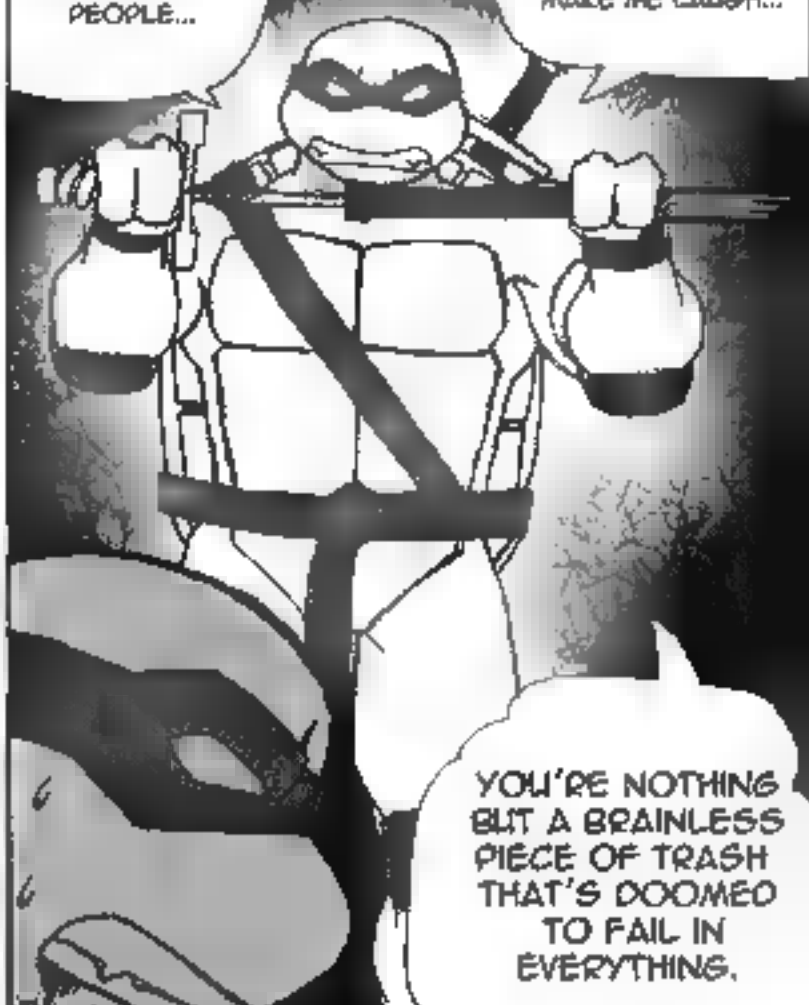


CRAP... CRAP!!! THE KATANA GOT
LEO...! EVEN IF HE DIDN'T TOUCH IT
WITH HIS BARE HANDS! BEING
CLOSE TO IT IS ENOUGH TO
SCREW UP PEOPLE'S MINDS??
I GOTTA TAKE IT AWAY FROM HIM



ALWAYS
BLAMING YOUR
OWN FAILURES
ON OTHER
PEOPLE...

...AND YET, YOU
DARE TO COMPARE
YOURSELF
TO ME? DON'T
MAKE ME LAUGH...



YOU'RE NOTHING
BUT A BRAINLESS
PIECE OF TRASH
THAT'S DOOMED
TO FAIL IN
EVERYTHING.

YOUR VERY EXISTENCE IS
A DISHONOUR TO OUR
SENSEI!



LEO... LEO!
HOLD IT!!

WHAT THE... THERE'S BLOOD
ON MY SAI. MUST BE FROM
THOSE PUNKS I BEAT UP
EARLIER!

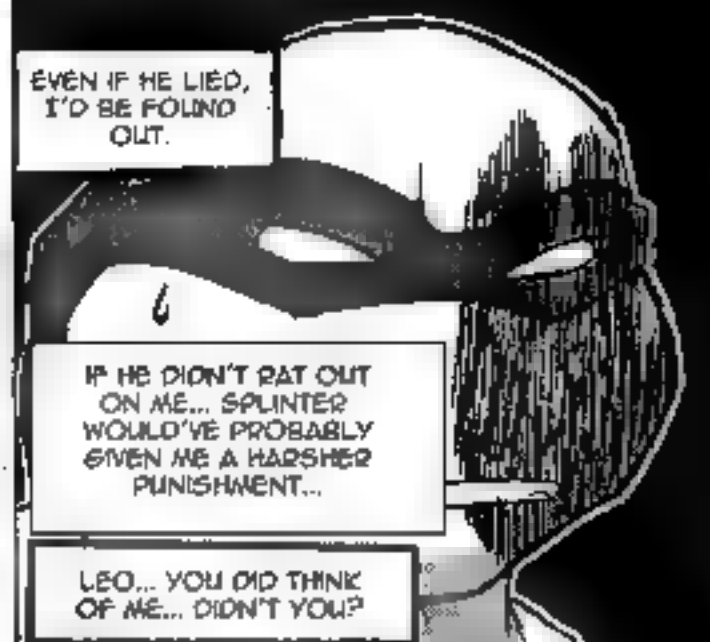


THAT'S WHAT LEO
MEANT WHEN HE SAID
WE COULDN'T LIE TO
SPINTER'S EYES...

EVEN IF HE LIED,
I'D BE FOUND
OUT.

IF HE DIDN'T RAT OUT
ON ME... SPINTER
WOULD'VE PROBABLY
GIVEN ME A HARSHER
PUNISHMENT...

LEO... YOU DID THINK
OF ME... DIDN'T YOU?



I SHOULDN'T
HAVE BLAMED YOU,
BRO... AND NOW
YOU'RE IN DEEP
SHIT BECAUSE OF
ME.

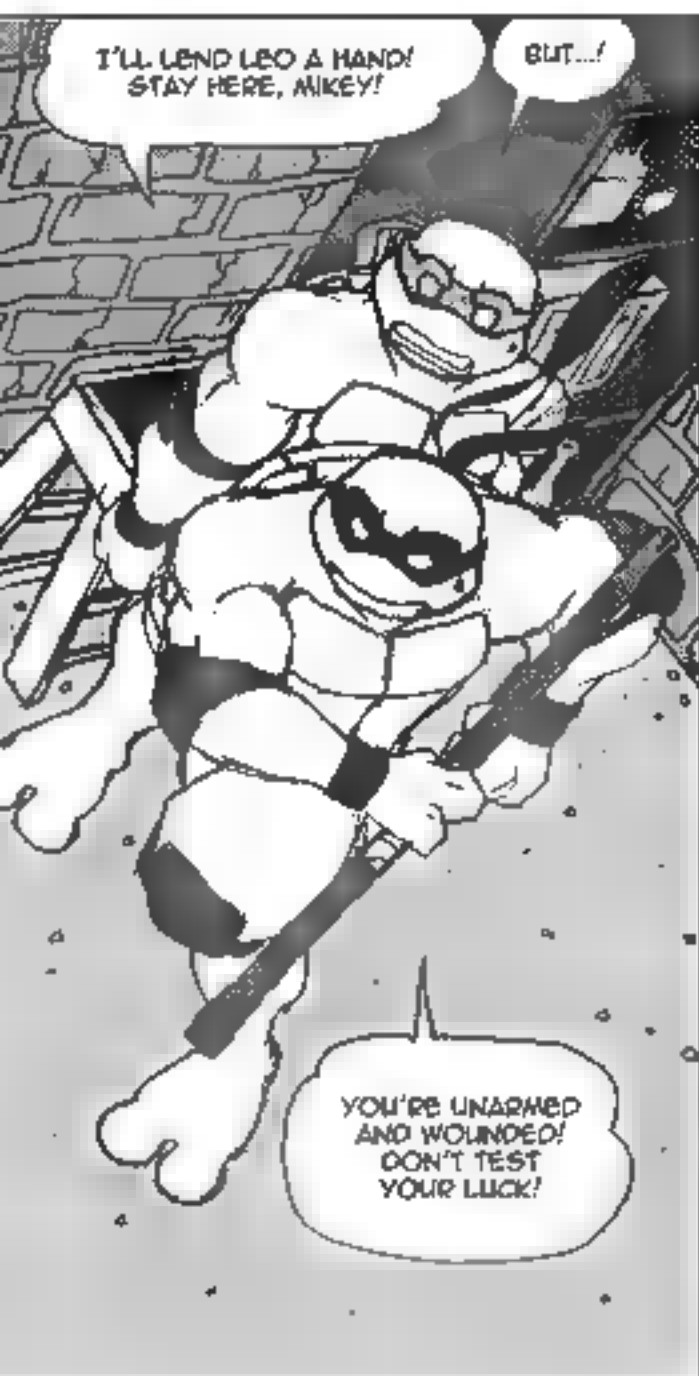


IT'S MY TURN
TO TAKE CARE
OF YOU.



I WON'T BACK
OUT ON YA!!





SHHHH!!

LEO! GET
A GRIP!

WHAT
THE
SHELL...?

YOU!

DONNIE!!
HELP ME!
LEO...
HE'S...!!

WHOA!

NOT SO FAST!
I WANT SOME
EXPLANATIONS!

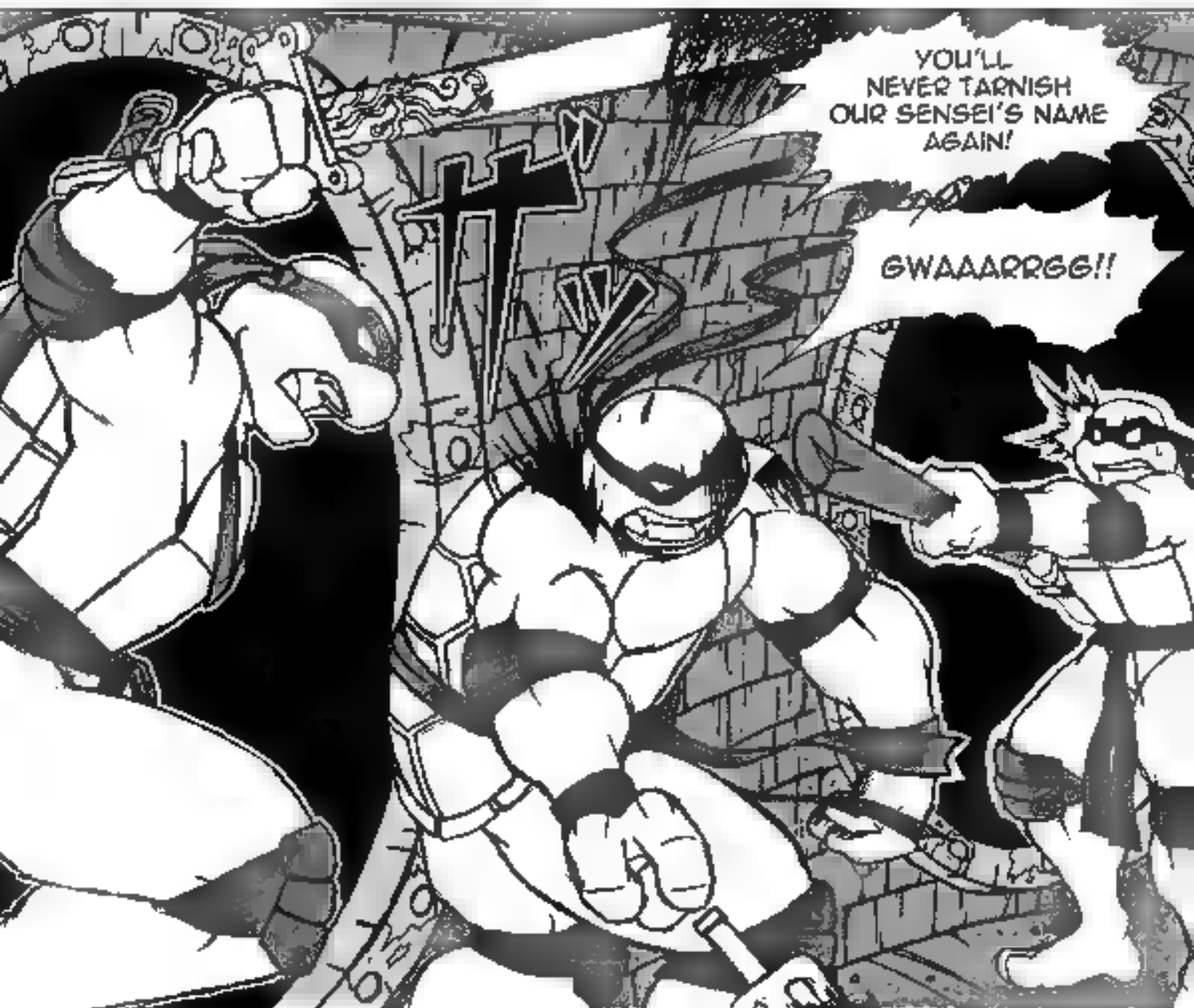
WHY ARE YA POINTIN' THAT AT ME?
LEO'S MAD AND WE GOTTA KNOCK
THAT KATANA OFF HIS HANDS....!!



MIKEY'S RIGHT... YOU'RE TOTALLY
MAD! YOU'RE NOT MAKING ANY
SENSE AT ALL!!



I'LL PUNISH YOU,
RAPHAEL.



YOU'LL
NEVER TARNISH
OUR SENSEI'S NAME
AGAIN!

GWAAARRGG!!

LEO!! WHAT DO YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING? JUST LOOK AT RAPH!!

SOON, OUR NAMES WILL BE CLEANSED, DONATELLO.

URGH...

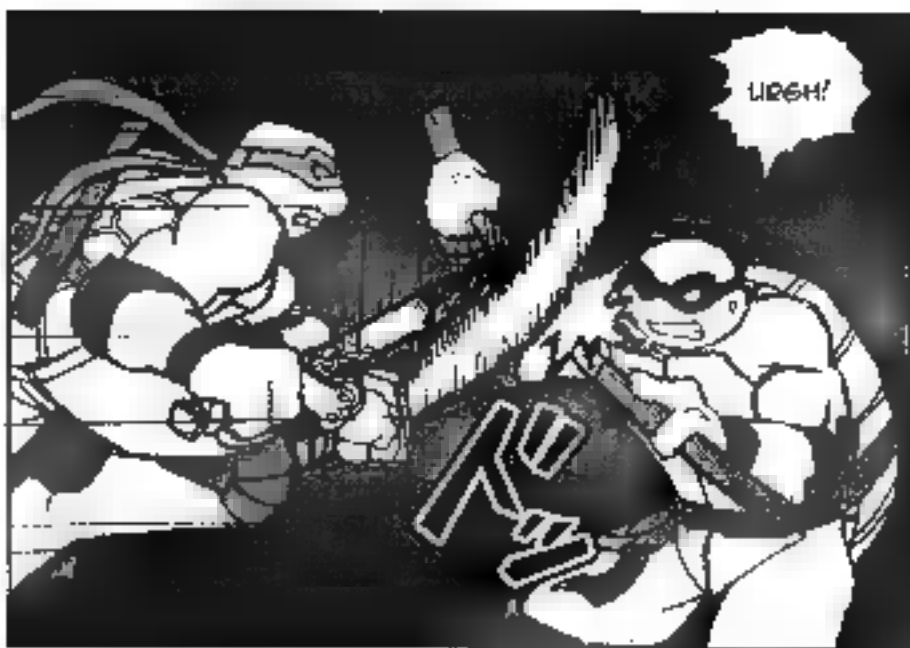
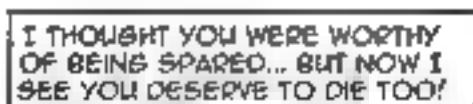
ISN'T BLOODSHED SUPPOSED TO BE THE LAST RESORT TO OUR CONFLICTS?

DIE, SCUM.

LEO! ARE YOU LISTENING?

D... DONNIE...

STAY AWAY FROM RAPH!!

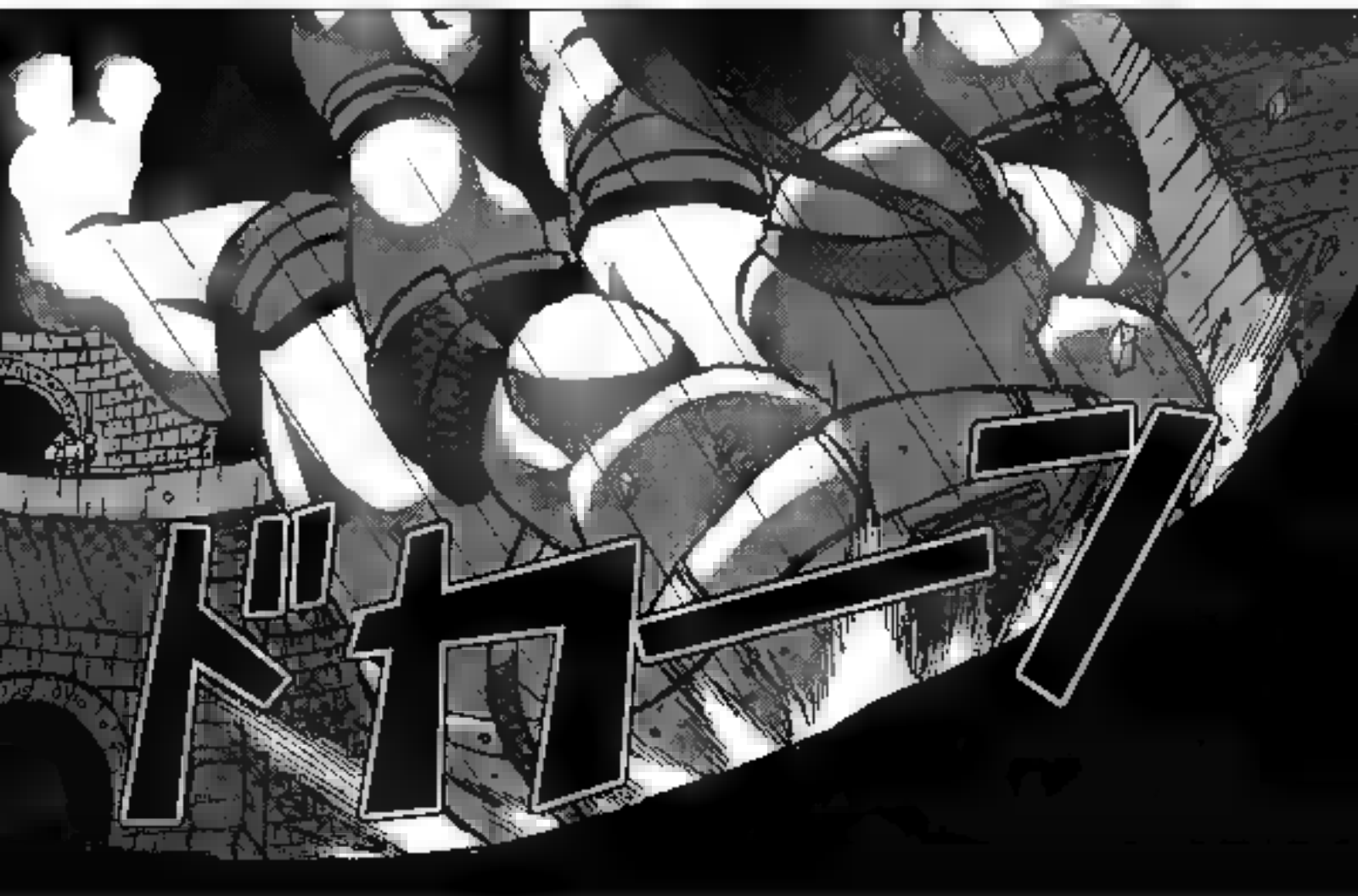


LEO!
SORRY, BUT
I HAVE TO
DO THIS!

WHA...!

NOW!





...MAYBE I
SHOULDN'T HAVE
DONE THAT...



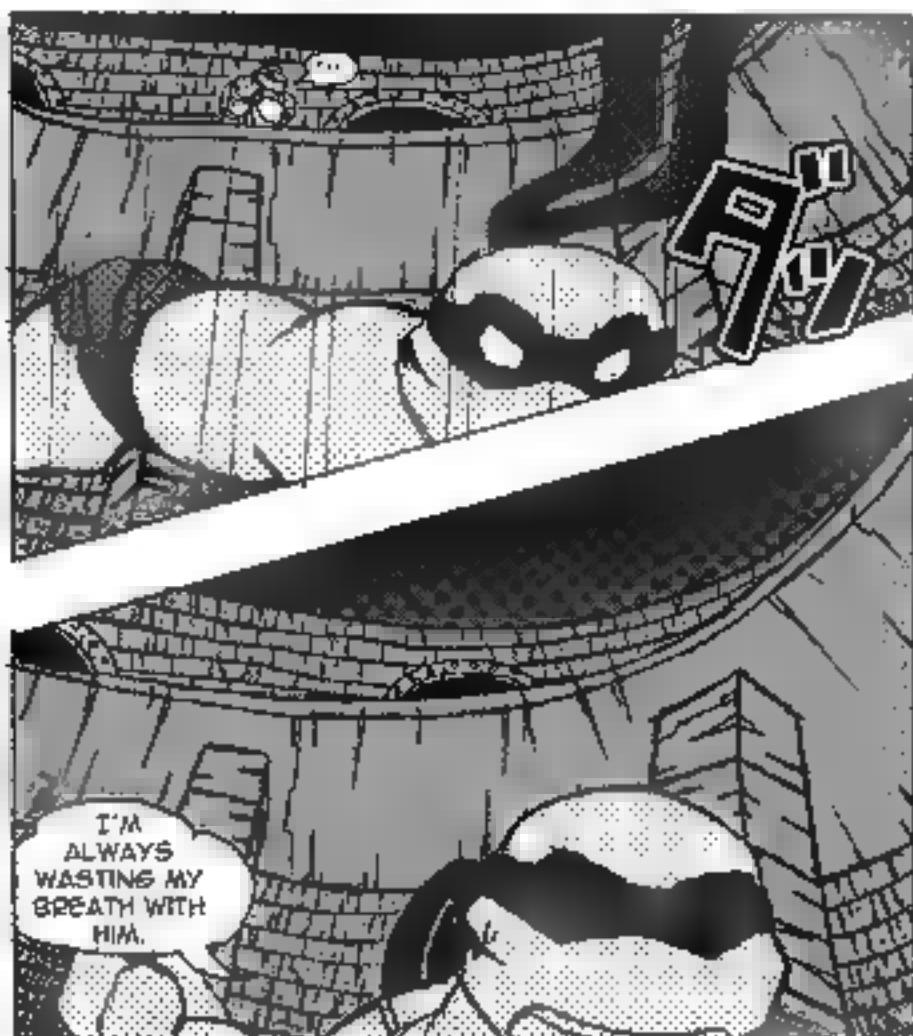
O... DON'T WORRY.
IT TAKES MORE THAN
A LIL' FALL TO
KILL US MUTANTS...

I KNOW THAT, BUT IT WAS
QUITE A FALL.. I HOPE HIS
SHELL WITHSTOOD THE
IMPACT... WAIT HERE RAPH,
I'LL TREAT YOUR WOUNDS
IN A SECOND.



HEY, DONNIE! WE
GOTTA WARN
SPLINTER! LEO
MIGHT STILL BE
MAD OR
SOMETHIN'!

FROM WHAT
I SEE, THE
BOTH YOU AND
LEO ARE
MAD... NOW
WAIT HERE.



I'M
ALWAYS
WASTING MY
BREATH WITH
HIM.



WHAT?

YOU HEARD
ME RIGHT, RAPH!
BACK OFF,
YOU MANIAC!

YOU WANT THE
SHELLCELL
TO DESTROY IT AND
PREVENT US FROM
CALLING THE SENSEI
FOR HELP, I KNOW IT!

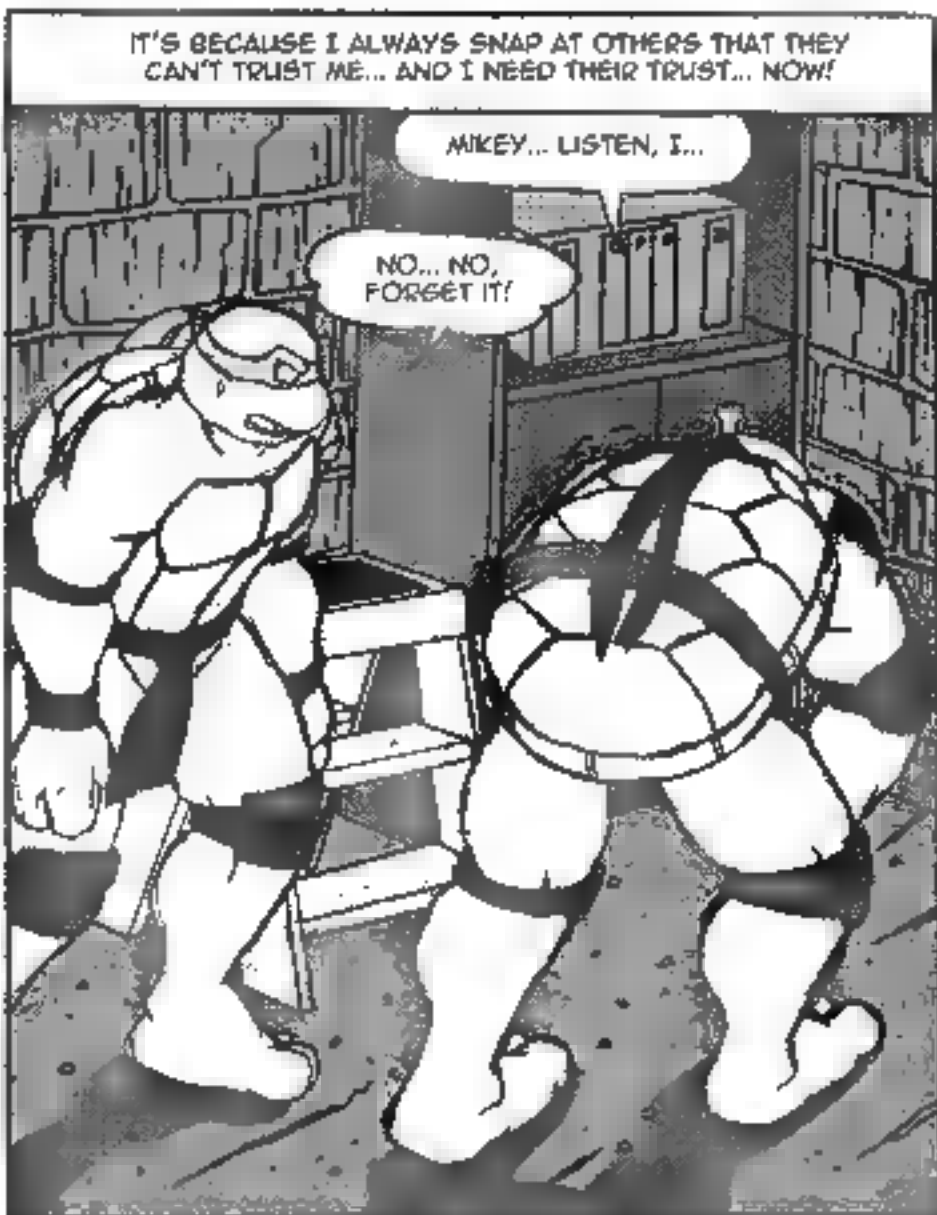
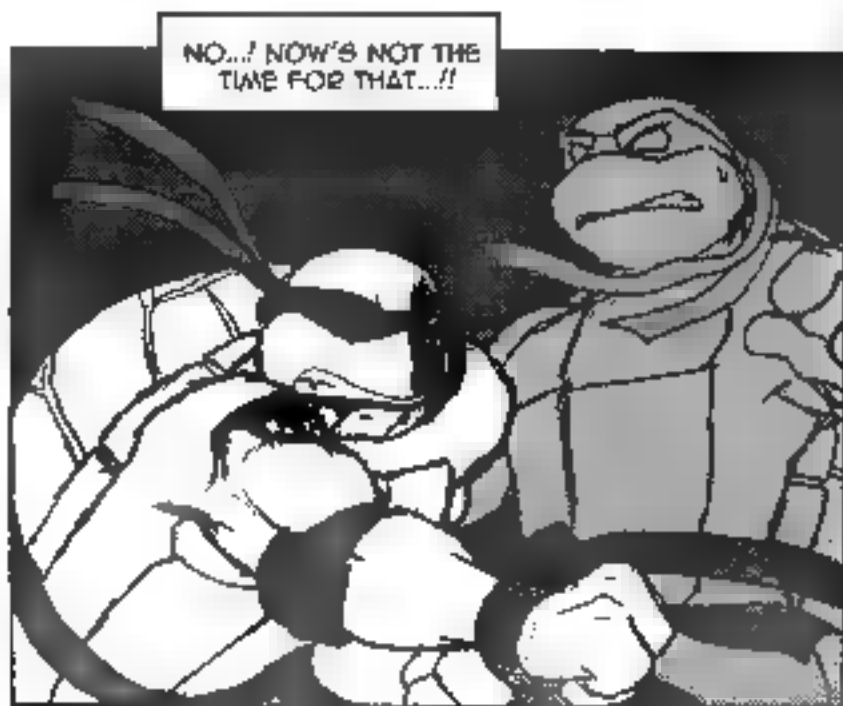
SO THAT'S HOW
YOU THINK OF ME,
DON'T YOU?

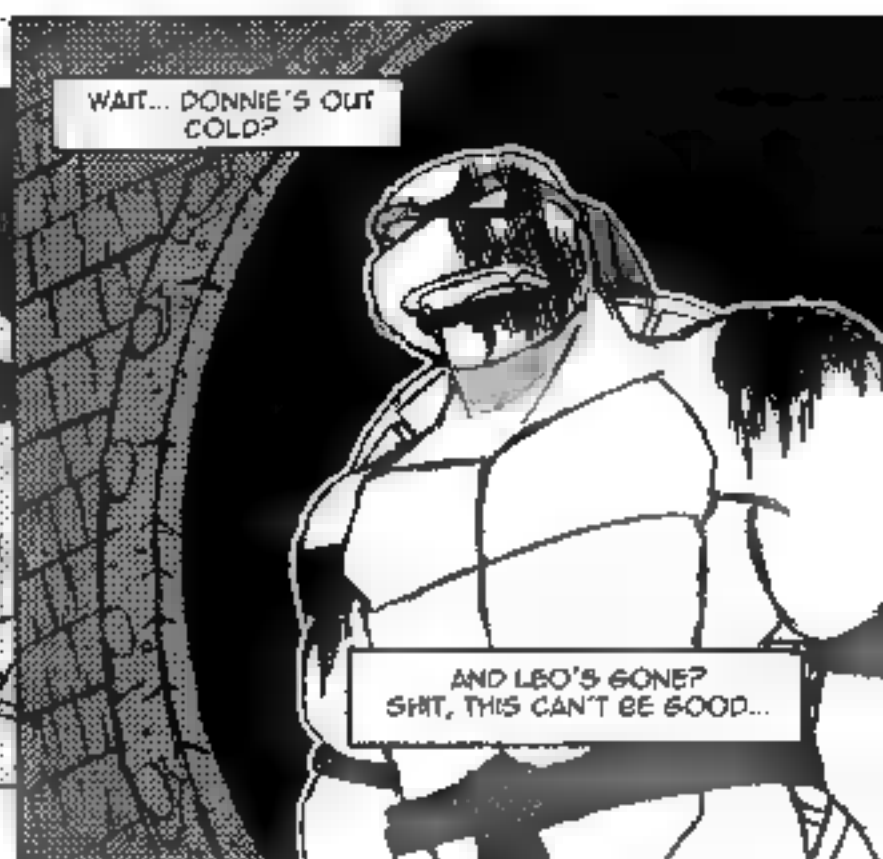
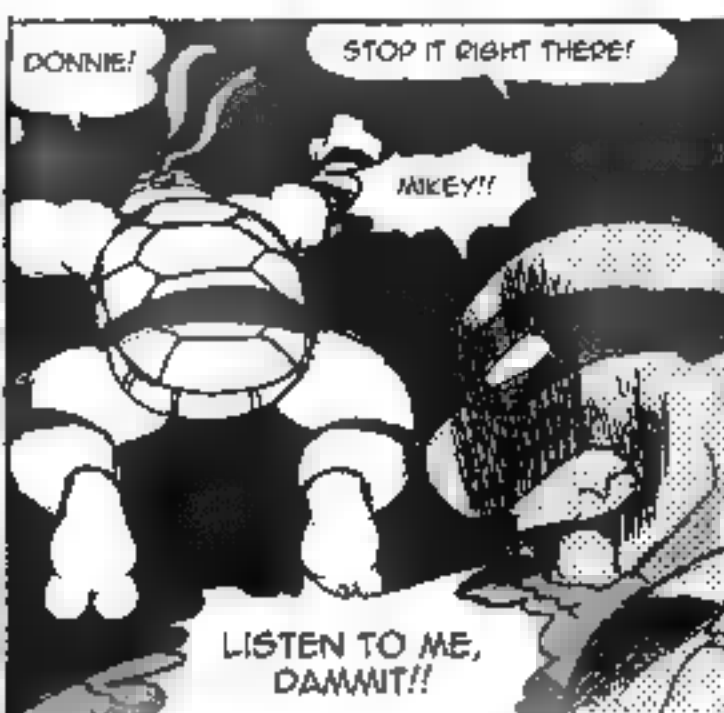
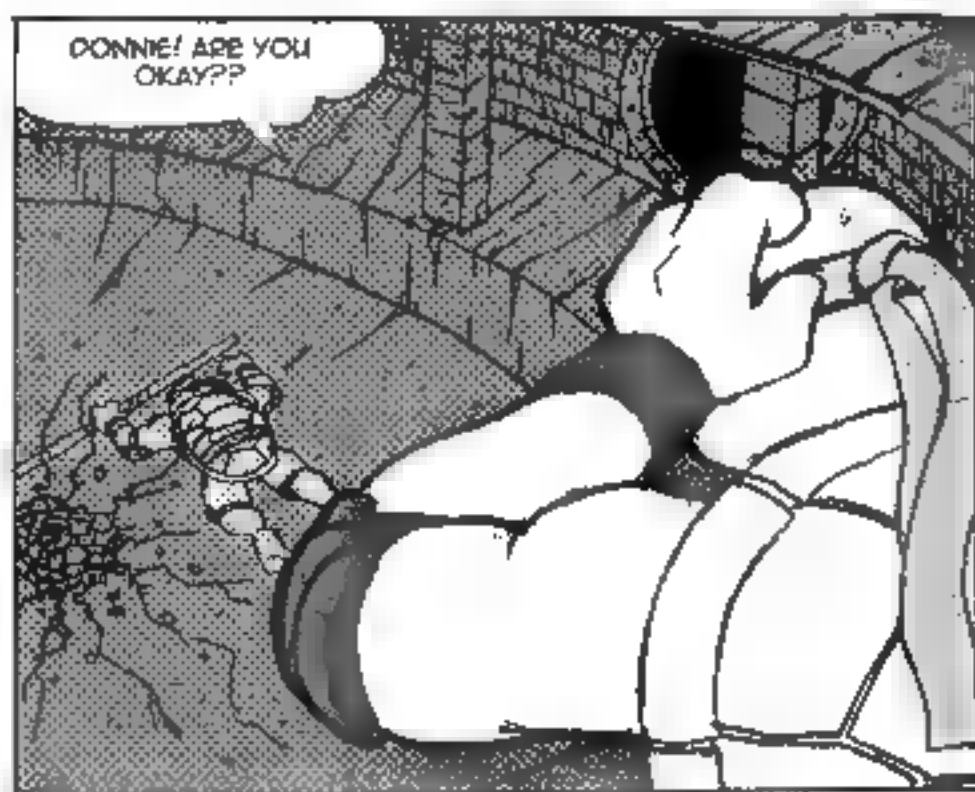
9...BACK OFF.

LEAVE
ME
ALONE!

SHADDAP!!!

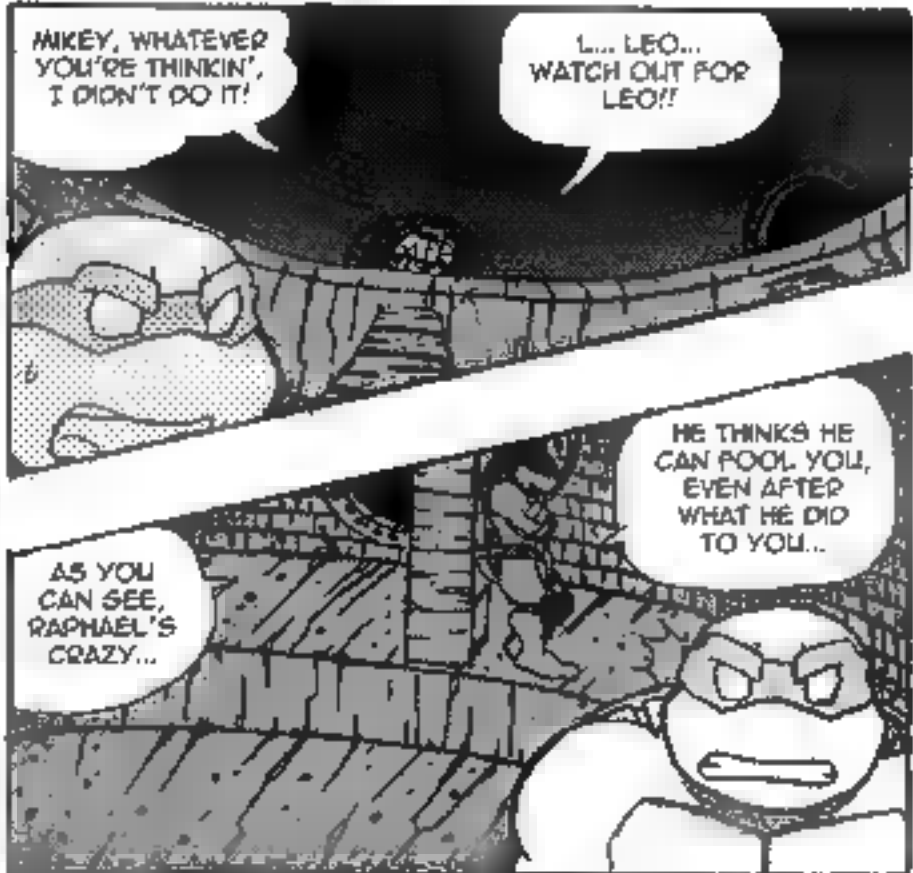
YOU THINK
I'D DO THAT?







DONNIE!
COME ON,
WAKE UP!



MIKEY, WHATEVER
YOU'RE THINKIN',
I DIDN'T DO IT!

L... LEO...
WATCH OUT FOR
LEO!!

AS YOU
CAN SEE,
RAPHAEL'S
CRAZY...

HE THINKS HE
CAN FOOL YOU,
EVEN AFTER
WHAT HE DID
TO YOU...



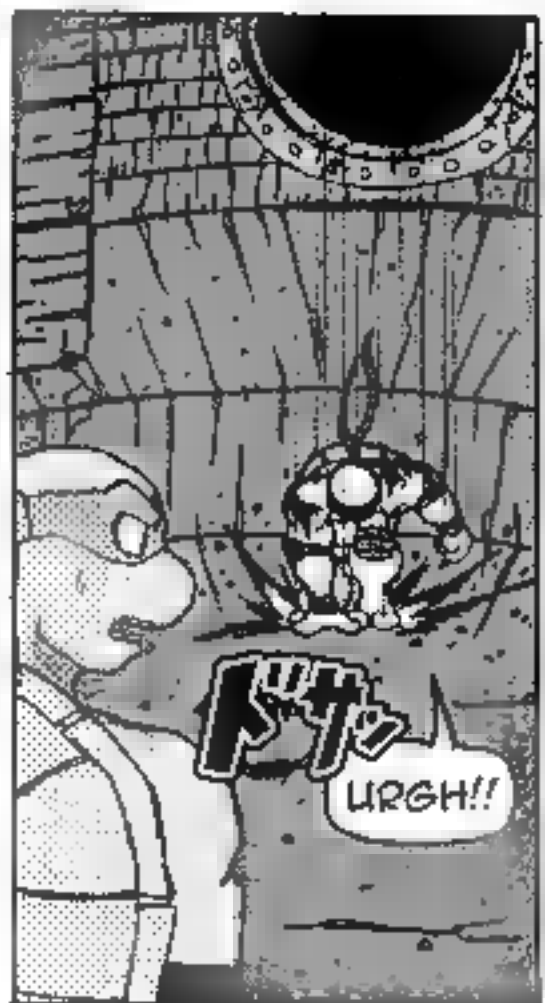
DONATELLO CONFRONTED
RAPHAEL AND WAS A LITTLE
LESS LUCKY THAN YOU WERE.

DON'T LISTEN TO
HIM IF YOU KNOW
WHAT'S BEST FOR
YOU.



YOU
LIAR!!

WAIT TIL I GET MY
HANDS ON YA, I'M
GONNA...!!



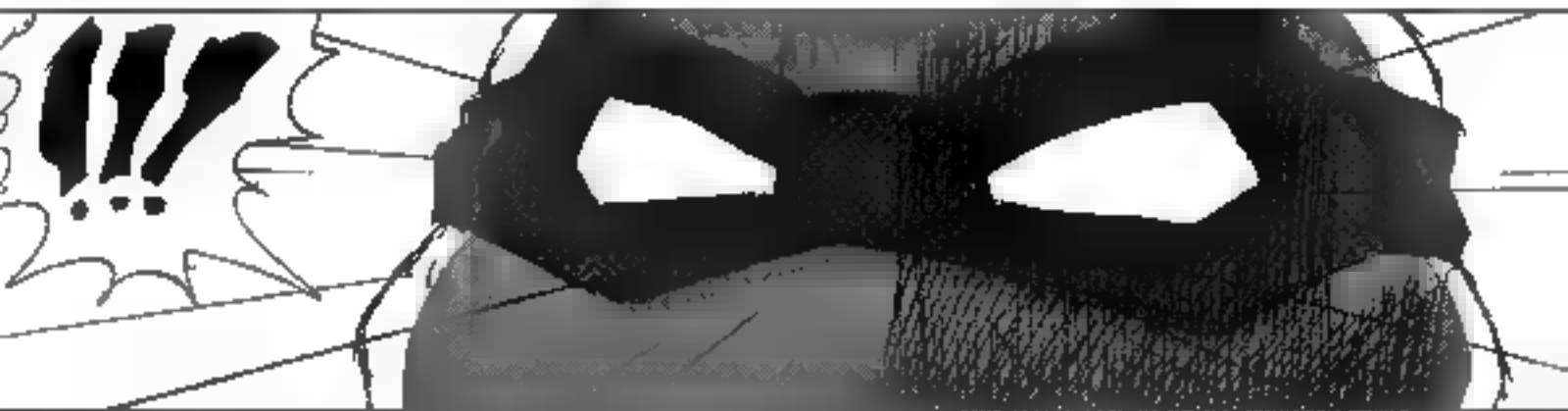
ドサッ
URGH!!

UURRRASH... M...MIKEY!! C'MON
OVER HERE...C'MON!!



FORGET IT,
RAPH...

YOU'RE
A SICKO...
STAY
WHERE
YOU ARE.



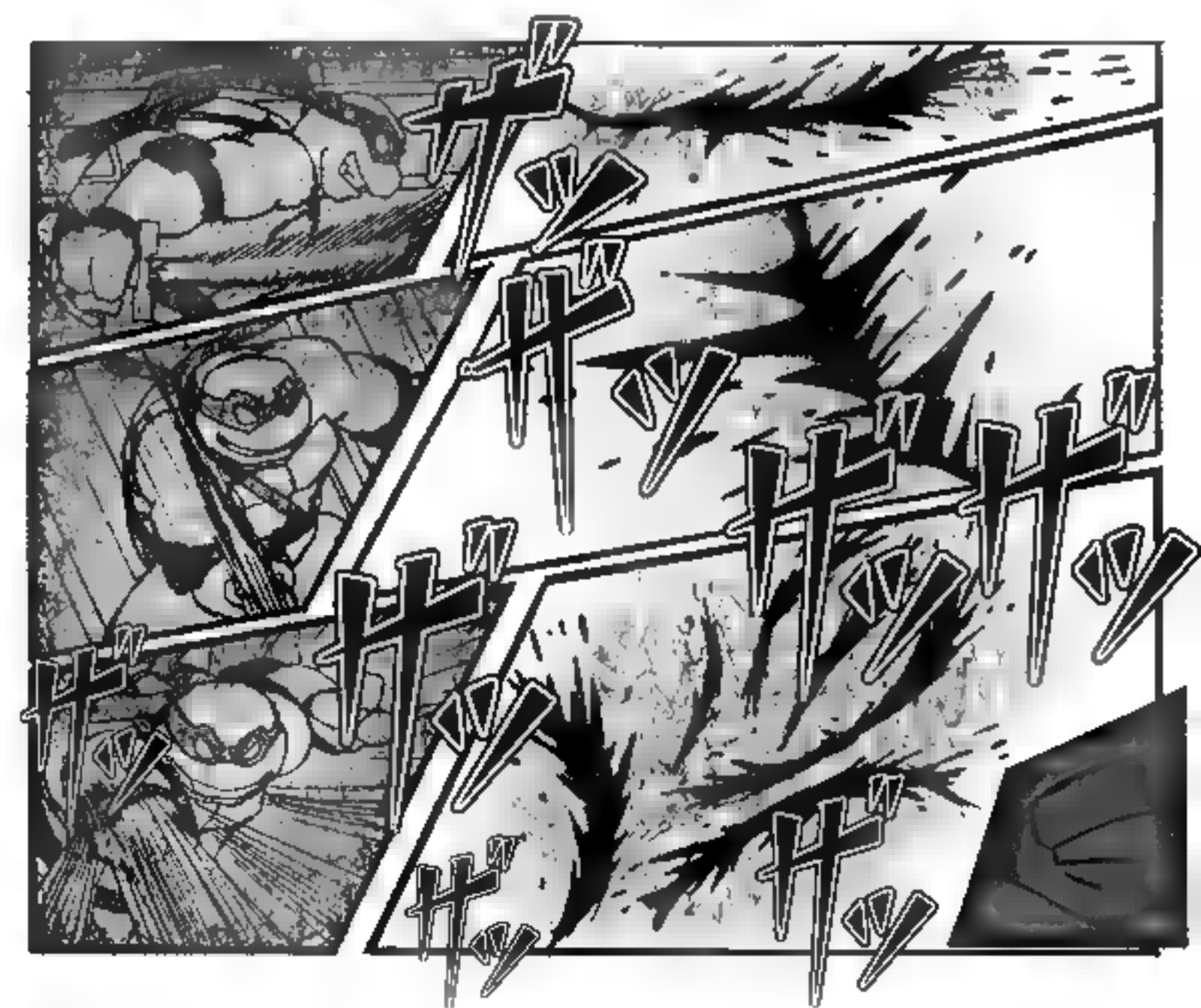


MIKEY!! WATCH OUT!!

ゴ オオオオオ

DIE!

Z







HEADS UP,
MIKEY!!

DON'T LET YOUR GUARD
DOWN...!
THIS NIGHTMARE'S NOT
OVER YET!

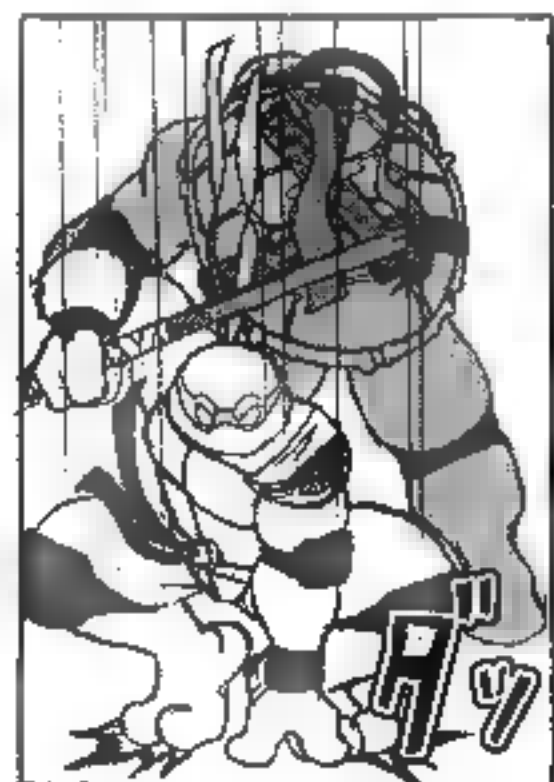
DONNIE!
YOU'RE
OKAY!!

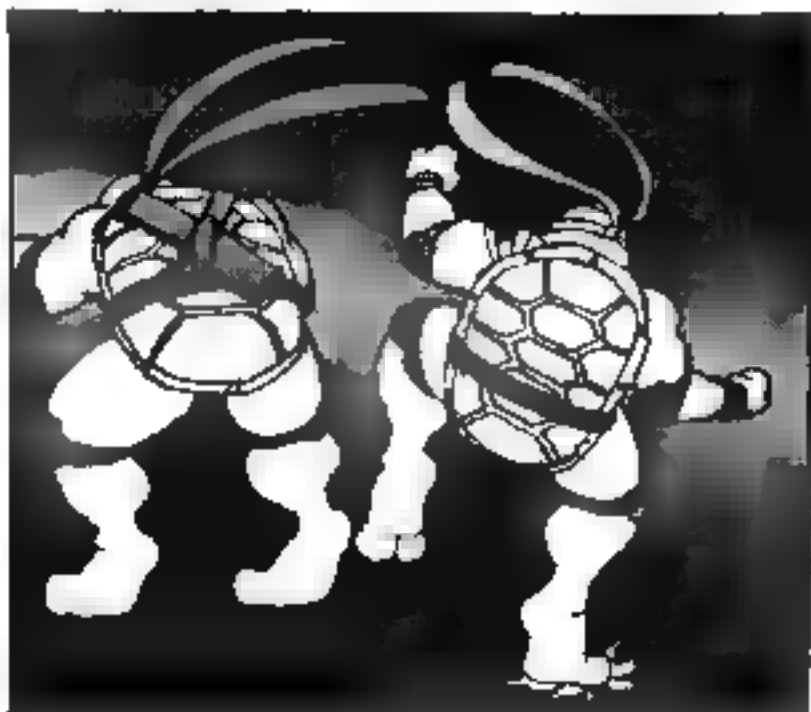
WE WON'T
LET RAPH'S
SACRIFICE
GO TO WASTE!!
LET'S DO
THIS
TOGETHER!

YOU
WITH ME,
MIKEY??

GOT IT!!









UNLIKE MYSELF... YOU ALL
LACK FOCUS...

MICHELANGELO'S
ENJOYMENT OF
PETTY THINGS IN
LIFE...

RAPHAEL'S
BITTERNESS
ABOUT HIS
LIFE...

YOU'LL NEVER
REACH YOUR
FULL POTENTIAL!

DONATELLO'S
OBSESSION
FOR SCIENCE
AND MACHINES...


YOU'RE ALL CORRUPTED BY LIFE'S ILLUSIONS!
YOU'RE ALL FAILURES!
I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO FULLY DEDICATED
HIMSELF TO NINJUTSU! I'M THE ONLY
ONE WHO... WHO THREW AWAY HIS LIFE
TO SET THE RIGHT EXAMPLE...

SO ALL THIS
TIME...

...LEO WAS
CONSUMED BY...

..TO YOU
SELFISH
BASTARDS!!

..ENVY...



LET'S END THIS.
YOU PARASITES HAVE POISONED
MY LIFE LONG ENOUGH.




MIKEY! TAKE RAPH AND
GET OUTTA HERE, NOW!



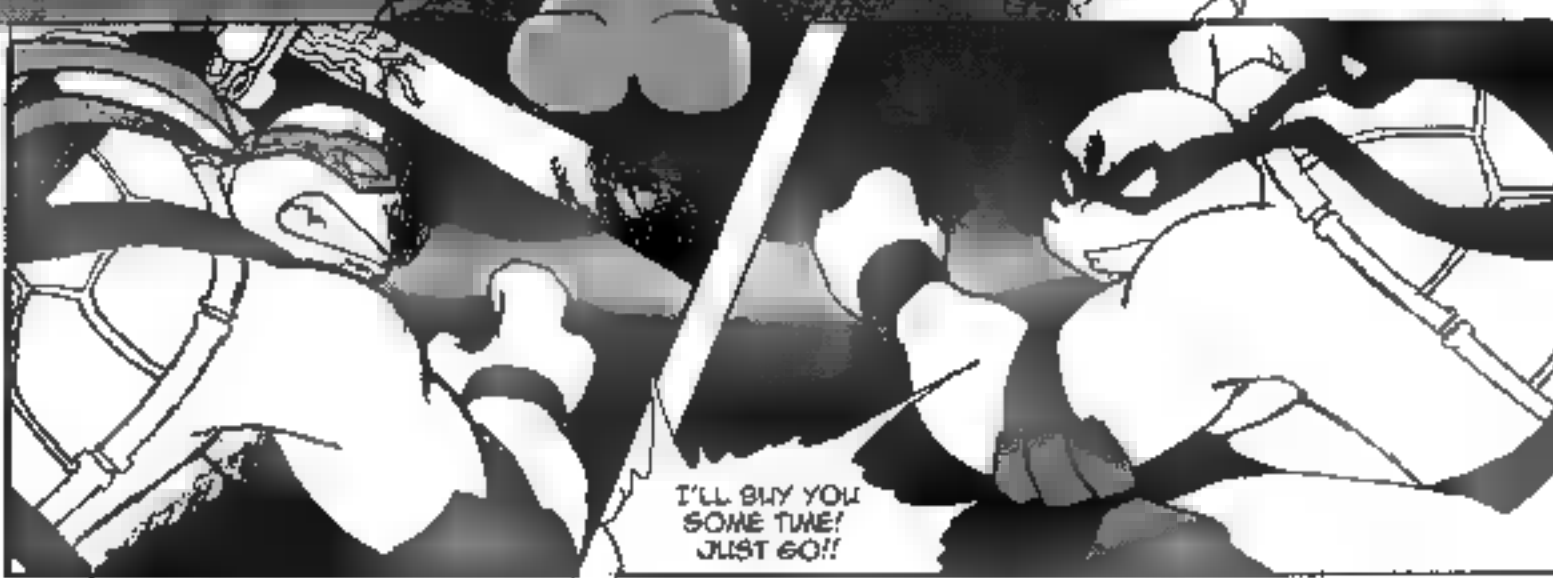
WHAT?
NO
WAY!



THAT'S
WHY... I
MUST
PUNISH
YOU...



D...DONNIE!
WH...WHADDYA
DOIN'?



I'LL BUY YOU
SOME TIME!
JUST GO!!



SHH... LURHHH...



A FOOLISH ATTEMPT
TO BEST ME... BUT
YOU HAVE GUTS.

I'LL
REWARD
YOU WITH
A SWIFT
AND PAINLESS
DEATH.

LURSH!

L...LEAVE...
HIM.... ALONE...
Y... YOU
BASTARD!!

RAPH!
DONNIE
TOLD US
TO RUN!!
C'MON!

LET GO
OF ME!
LET
GO!!

NO, RAPH!!

DONNNNNNIE!!!







WELCOME HOME,
SENSEI.



M...MASTER...
TH...THE KATANA...
IT... LEO... L...LEO'S
MAD!!



HOW DARE
YOU SPEAK
TO MY
VENERABLE
SENSEI,
YOU FOOL!




LEONARDO!!



YOUR BROTHERS DESERVE AS MUCH
RESPECT AS I DO. BEHAVE
YOURSELF AND DROP YOUR WEAPON.

S...
SENSEI!

ME? BEHAVE?
BUT...!!

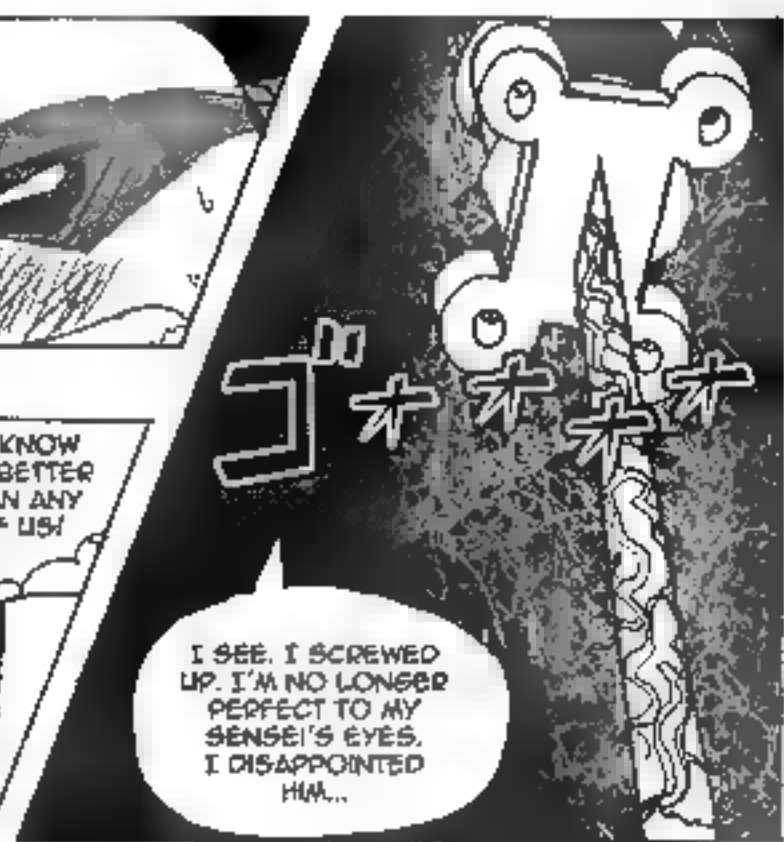


LEONARDO.
DIDN'T YOU
HEAR WHAT
I SAID?



TH...THE KATANAI
IT...IT'S MESSIN' UP
PEOPLE'S MINDS!
M...MASTER!
PLEASE... HELP
HIM!!

YA KNOW
HIM BETTER
THAN ANY
OF US!



ゴオオオオオ

I SEE. I SCREWED
UP. I'M NO LONGER
PERFECT TO MY
SENSEI'S EYES.
I DISAPPOINTED
HIM...



AND IT'S
ALL YOUR
FAULT!

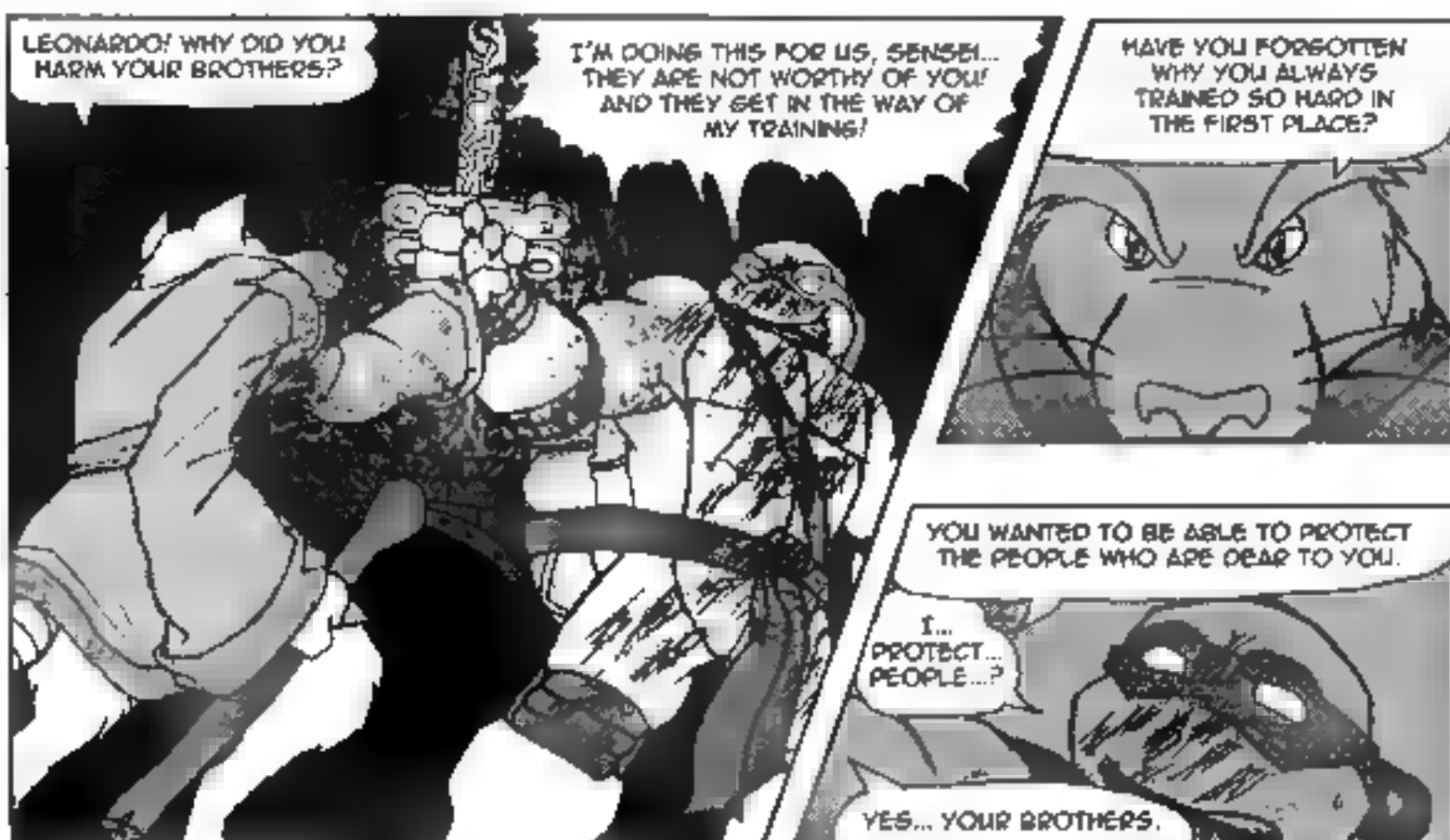
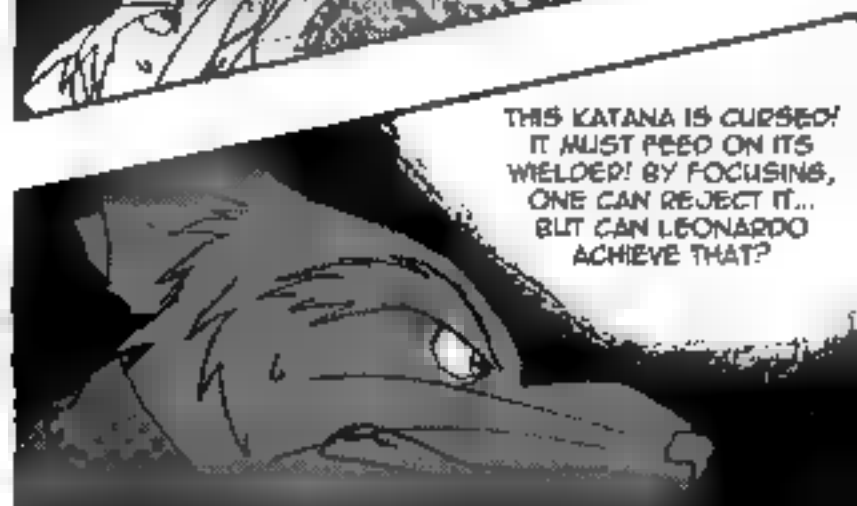
IF ONLY YOU
DIDN'T
EXIST!!




カッパッパッパッパッ

カッパッパッ

ENOUGH!

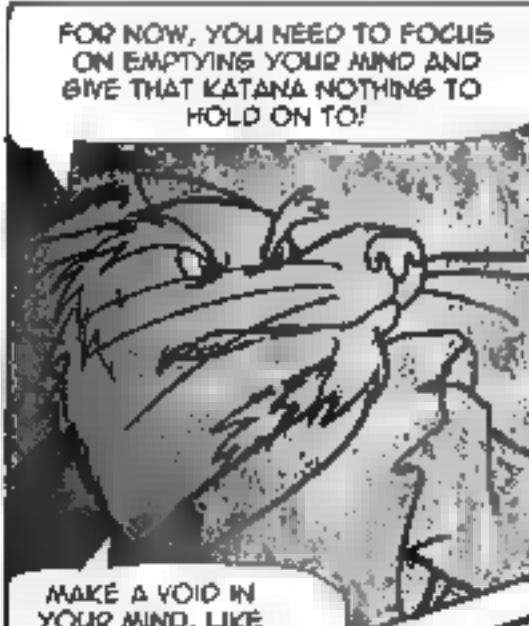




NOW LISTEN WELL!
THIS KATANA SEEMS TO FEED
OFF THE DARK SIDE OF YOUR
SOUL!

THE MORE YOU EMBRACE
YOUR NEGATIVE EMOTIONS,
THE HARDER IT WILL BE
TO LET GO OF
THIS KATANA!

MY... NEGATIVE...
EMOTIONS...?

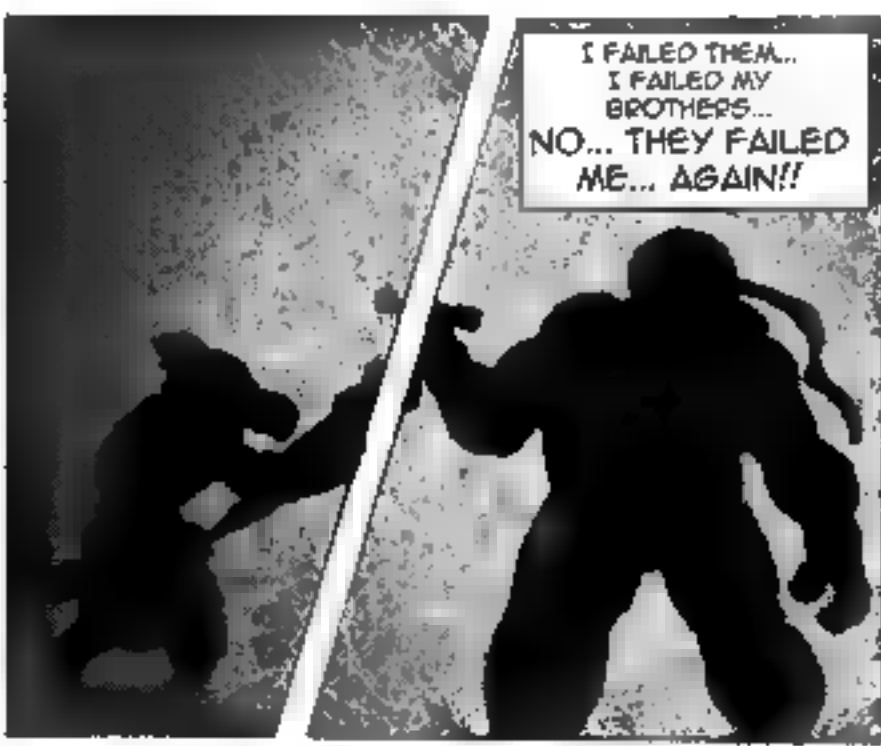


FOR NOW, YOU NEED TO FOCUS
ON EMPTYING YOUR MIND AND
GIVE THAT KATANA NOTHING TO
HOLD ON TO!

MAKE A VOID IN
YOUR MIND, LIKE
WE DID BEFORE!

I'LL FOCUS WITH
YOU MY SON.

YOU CAN DO IT!

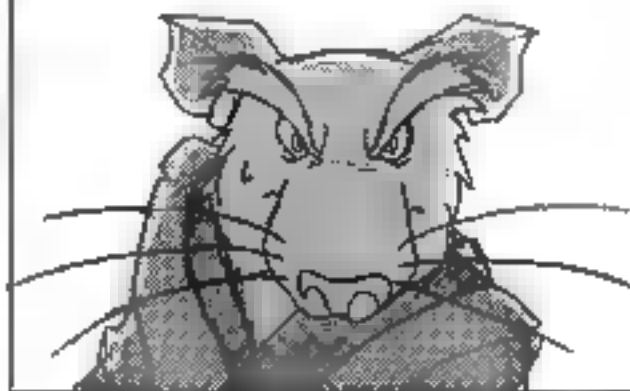


I FAILED THEM...
I FAILED MY
BROTHERS...
NO... THEY FAILED
ME... AGAIN!!



I'LL KILL
YOU!


LEONARDO, IT SEEMS YOU LOST
TO THAT CURSE.
I HAVE NO CHOICE...





MY
SON.

ACCORDING
TO THE SCROLL
I RECEIVED...
THERE IS ANOTHER
WAY TO NEUTRALIZE
THIS CURSE.



SOMEONE HAS TO TRAP THE CURSE
WITHIN HIS BODY AND END HIS LIFE
USING AN ITEM THAT HAS ONCE BEEN
CORRUPTED BY IT.

I WILL FORCE THE CURSE WITHIN MYSELF.
I DO NOT KNOW HOW LONG I WILL BE ABLE TO
RESIST ITS DARK INFLUENCE, SO AS SOON AS
I RELEASE MY GRIP ON THIS KATANA,
YOU MUST ACT IMMEDIATELY.




YOU HAVE TO EXECUTE ME USING
THIS KATANA.



NO...
HASTER!!



NO...TAKE
ME INSTEAD!



I... I'LL
KILL YOUUU!



SHI-
RE!

Aw

WHAT...
HAVE I

LEONARDO! THERE ISN'T MUCH TIME!
YOU MUST PUT AN END TO THIS CURSE
BEFORE IT'S TOO LATE!

ゴォォォ

NO...!

SENSEI!
I...I CAN'T
DO THAT!

...I GUESS
I RAISED YOU TO
REACT THAT
WAY...

I'VE ALWAYS TAUGHT YOU THE VALUE OF LIFE.
NOW IT'S TIME FOR YOU TO LEARN ABOUT
DOING SACRIFICES FOR A GREATER GOOD...

...SACRIFICES THAT
MAY INVOLVE GIVING
AWAY ONE'S LIFE
TO SAVE OTHERS'.

LEONARDO... THIS WAS YOUR
FINAL LESSON. NOW SHOW ME
THAT YOU UNDERSTOOD IT.



I KNOW ASKING
YOU TO CARRY
OUT THIS
TASK IS A VERY
SELFISH
REQUEST.

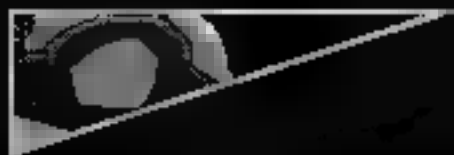
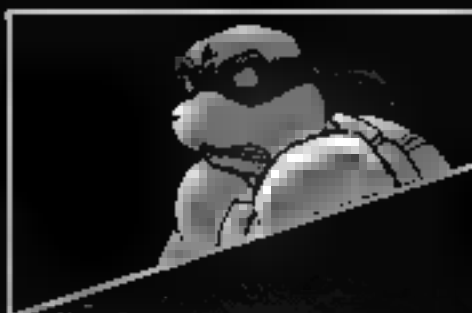


HOWEVER... I CANNOT BEAR THE
THOUGHT OF MY CHILDREN
KILLING OFF EACH OTHER...

...OR EVEN WORSE: THE
THOUGHT OF MY SONS
KILLED BY THEIR OWN FATHER.

THIS IS YOUR MASTER'S
FINAL REQUEST.

PLEASE DO WHAT MUST BE
DONE TO PROTECT YOUR
FAMILY.





HOWEVER, I CAN STILL
LEAVE WITHOUT REGRETS
ALL THOSE YEARS I SPENT
WITH THE FOUR OF YOU
PROVIDED ME WITH A
LIFETIME'S WORTH
OF HAPPINESS

REMEMBER
YOU ARE NEVER ALONE
YOU HAVE EACH OTHER

I WISH I COULD VE STAYED
LONGER TO SEE EACH OF YOU
FIND YOUR OWN HAPPINESS

BE WELL...
MY DEAR
SONS.

FAREWELL...

ゴロオオオオオ



THIS IS ALL
THAT'S LEFT
OF OUR SENSEI?
NO... NO!!
IT'S CAN'T BE!!!!!!

IT HAS TO BE
A NIGHTMARE!!
IT HAS TO!!

I'LL... I'LL WAKE UP
AND IT'LL BE AS USUAL!
LEO SPARRING WITH THE
SENSEI, RAPH SCOUTING
THE CITY, MIKEY MESSING
WITH MY STUFF...

O...DONNIE...
IT'S NOT A
DREAM.
MASTER SPLINTER...
HE'S NOT
GONNA COME
BACK...


...ME... ■ MY
LAB... ALONE...
WORKING...!!!

LET HIM BE...






I'LL PUT OUR SENSEI'S
ASHES IN AN LION...



DON'T YOU
DARE TOUCH
HIS ASHES...



YOU HEARTLESS
MURDERER.



YOU KILLED OUR
FATHER, YOU
SON OF A...!!



DONNIE, CALM
DOWN! IT'S NOT
HIS FAULT!

I SAW
HIM!



DONNIE!
EASY!!!

LEO! I'LL... I'LL
KILL YOU FOR THAT
YOU... YOU
UNGRATEFUL
BASTARD!!!

S... STOP IT...
T WAS ME...

!!!

I... I... PICKED UP THAT
C... CURSED KATANA...
I... I STARTED EVERYTHING...

T... TAKE
IT OUT ON
ME... NOT
LEO...

SHUT UP!
SHUT UP!!!

FIRST YOU TELL
ME THAT
EVERYTHING THAT
JUST HAPPENED
IS REAL!

AND NOW
YOU'RE ASKING
ME TO DENY
THE REALITY
I SAW WITH
MY EYES???

JUST WHAT
AM I SUPPOSED
TO BELIEVE?
WHAT IS REAL
IN ALL THIS
MESS??

DONNIE... LEO... HE...

DONNIE'S
RIGHT.
OUR SENSEI
DIED A
DISHONOURABLE
DEATH BY
MY HANDS...

L... LEO...?

I MUST ATONE
FOR MY SIN.
ALONE.

I'LL GO TO JAPAN AND UNCOVER
THE TRUTH BEHIND THE PACKAGE
THAT WAS SENT TO US.
I WON'T RETURN UNTIL I FIND
SOME ANSWERS.



N...NO... WHY BANISH
YERSELF?? IT...
IT SHOULD BE ME...
ME... AND MIKEY...!!



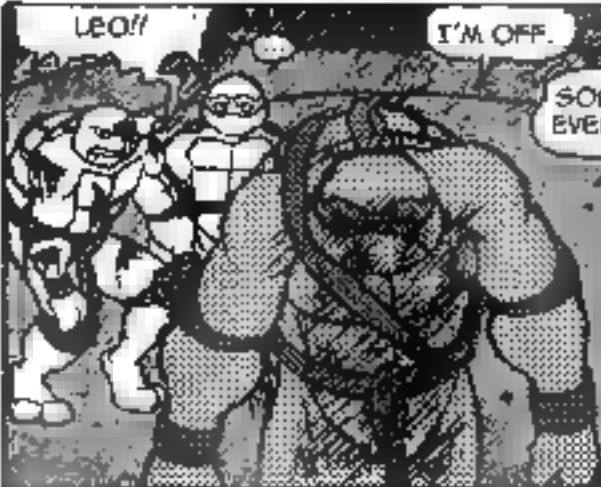
RAPH! HE KILLED OUR
SENSEI AND THAT'S
THAT! I DON'T CARE
WHERE HE GOES AS
LONG AS HE'S FAR
AWAY FROM US!!



LEO!!

I'M OFF.

SORRY FOR
EVERYTHING.

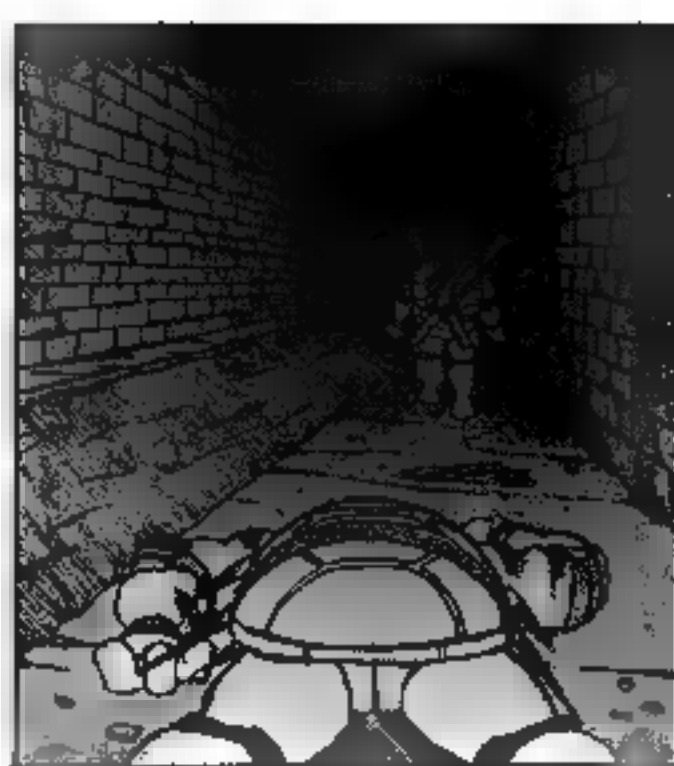
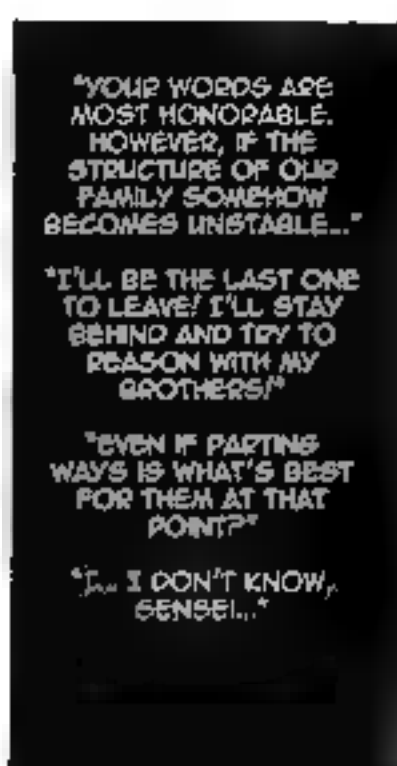


MIKEY!! WHY DON' CHA
SAY SOMETHIN' TOO?
IT'S YER DAMN FAULT
TOO!!!

RAPH! IT WAS LEO'S
DECISION! I... I...
DONNIE! SAY SOMETHING!

LEAVE ME ALONE!!





AND THEN
KID SENSEI
YES

I CAN'T BELIEVE
HE'S DEAD. APRIL
HE'S GONE, ALONG
WITH THE CURSE

AND NOW LEO EXILED
HIMSELF TO JAPAN.
DAPH'S LOOKING FOR HIM
DORRINE'S IN A STATE OF
COMPLETE DENIAL AND
I... I FELT LIKE TALKING
TO SOMEONE NORMAL

H. HOW COULD
THIS BE
OH MEEY

APRIL MAY I ASK YOU
A FAVOR?

"MICHELANGELO, YOU ARE ALWAYS
SO JOYFUL AND CAREFREE. DO
YOU REALLY KNOW WHAT
YOU ARE?"

"WHAT DO YOU MEAN, SENSEI?"

"YOU FIND HAPPINESS IN EVERYTHING.
AS IF HAPPINESS ITSELF SOUGHT YOU.
HOWEVER, KEEP IN MIND THAT ONE
DAY, YOU MIGHT NEED TO BRID
DOWN AND COLLECT ITS SHARDS
YOURSELF."

MY LIFE AS A NINJA IS FULL
OF SAD MEMORIES. I WANT
FORGET THEM ALL

I DON'T WANTA GET BACK

CAN I LIVE
WITH YOU?

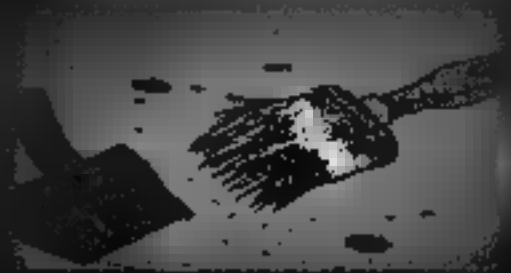
"SHARDS OF HAPPINESS.
HUH? THAT WAS POETIC.
I'LL REMEMBER THAT,
SENSEI!"

HAPPINESS.

幸

OF COURSE, MIKEY.
OF COURSE... WE'RE FAMILY.
WE'LL ALWAYS BE THERE
FOR EACH OTHER...





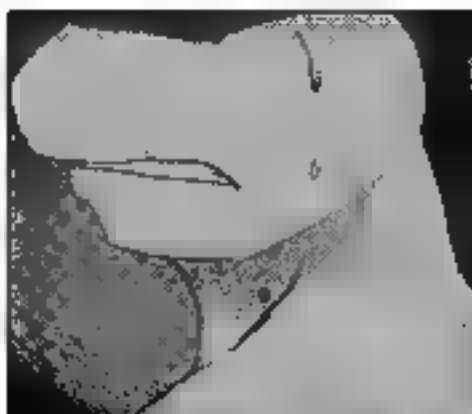
SENSEI, PLEASE LOOK AT MY NEWEST INVENTION! IT'S A VIRTUAL WORLD SIMULATOR!

DONATELLO, I UNDERSTAND YOUR PASSION FOR TECHNOLOGY...



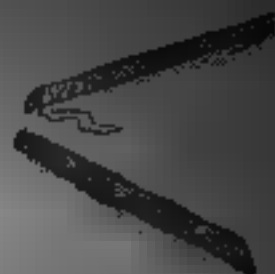
...BUT REMEMBER NOT TO LET ITS ILLUSIONS DISTORT YOUR VISION OF REALITY.

I KNOW... BUT SOMETIMES, I HATE OUR WORLD SO MUCH.



YOU MUST NEVER DENY REALITY, NO MATTER HOW HARSH IT MAY BE. REMEMBER THAT.


I... I'M RIGHT HERE, SENSEI. I WON'T BE GOING ANYWHERE.




REALITY.

実






A FEARLESS LEADER MUST
NEVER SHOW ANY SIGN
OF WEAKNESS



THAT'S WHY I HAD TO LEAVE QUICKLY.
I DIDN'T WANT THEM TO SEE ME LIKE
THIS.



I DIDN'T WANT TO LEAVE




BUT IT'S MY DUTY
AS A LEADER TO
RESTORE OUR
HONOR...
RAPH... MIKEY...
DONNE...
FORGIVE ME...

FAREWELL
FATHER..

HONOR.

尊



U..URGH...
SH...SHHIT...

*MASTER SPLINTER, WHAT'S
THE VALUE OF OUR LIVES?*

WHAT DO YOU MEAN, MY SON?

*WE LIVE HIDDEN FROM THE WHOLE
WORLD. ONLY A HANDFUL OF HUMANS
ACCEPT US FOR WHO WE ARE.
WE HAVE NO FUTURE, NO FACE, NO
IDENTITY...*

C CAN'T
WALK...A... ANY
FURTHER...

HUFF...
HUFF...

*DON'CHA SEE, SENSEI?
OUR LIFE IS WORTHLESS!
THERE'S SO MUCH OUT
THERE, AND IT'S OUT OF
OUR REACH! I... I HATE
MY LIFE!!!*

*RAPHAEL, DO NOT
DOWNPLAY THE BEAUTY
OF BEING ALIVE.*

I... I'LL NEVER
CATCH UP WITH LEO...
THAT... IDIOT...

W..WHY... WHY DOES HE
HAVE TO CARRY ALL THE
BURDEN ON HIS SHOULDERS?
WHY... WON'T HE LET ME...
HELP HIM...?

*AS LONG AS THERE
IS LIFE, THERE IS
HOPE... HOPE FOR
A BETTER
TOMORROW.*

C... CAN'T... DO
A DAMN THING
ABOUT IT... SHIT!!



HOPE.

望
王

AND
THIS IS ALL
MY DAMN
FAULT!!





17 YEARS LATER...

**THE MUTANT NINJA
TURTLES SIDESTORY**

BEGINS...

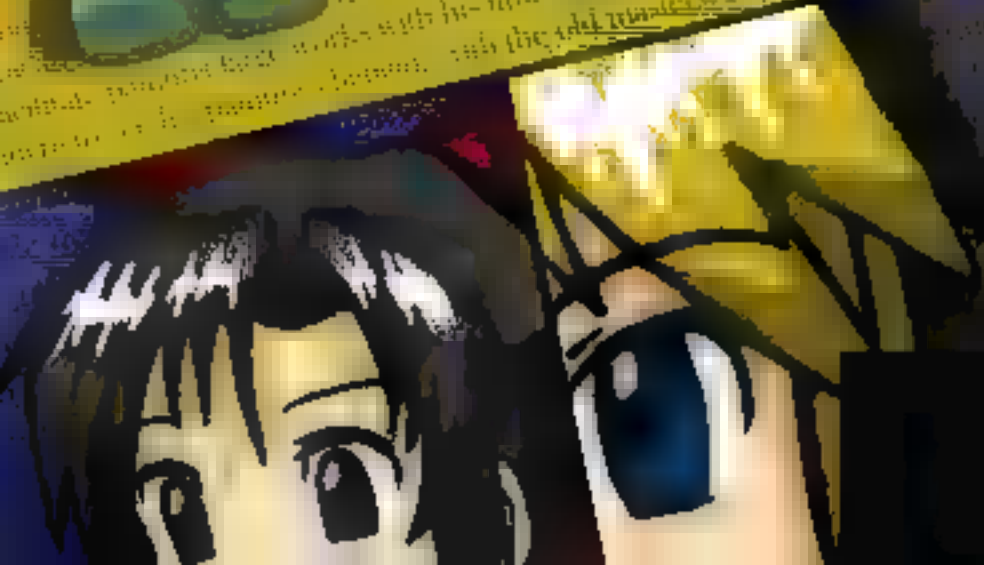


MUTANT NINJA
TURTLES GAIDEN
PROLOGUE

END.

TO BE CONTINUED IN MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN CHAPTER 1.

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GAIDEN



CHAPTER 1 :
ENTER THE RENAISSANCE



THIS TIME HE'S
GONE TOO FAR...
THIS TIME...
THIS TIME...

...HE'S NOT
GETTING AWAY
WITH IT!!



AAH...
WASSUP,
DAVIANNA?
IS SOMETHING
WRONG?

THAT IDIOT...
HE DID IT
AGAIN...!

JUST
NOW,
HE...
HE...

SHADOW
!!

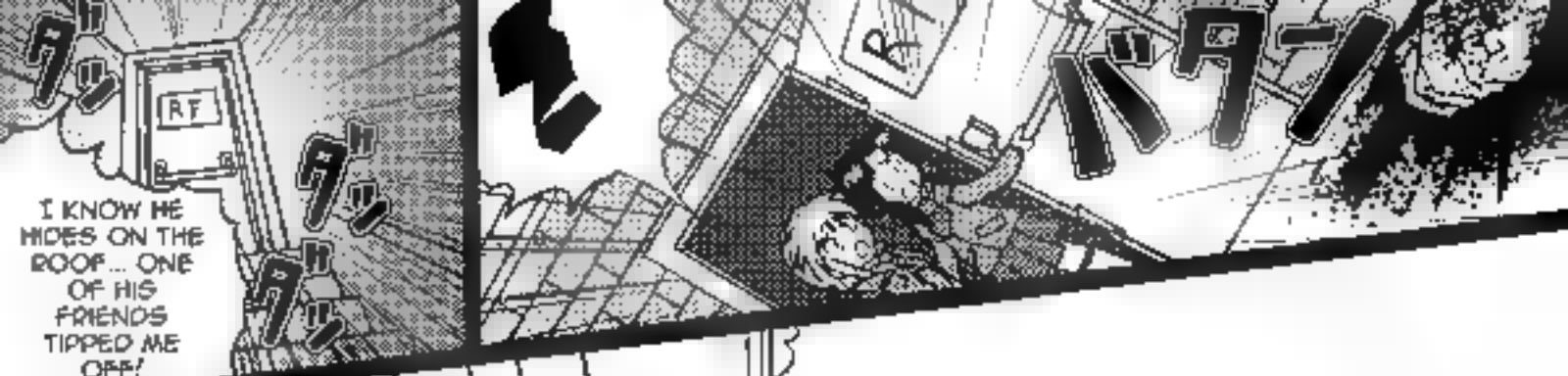


...HE AND HIS FRIENDS PEEPED AT
US AFTER OUR SOCCER GAME...

...WHILE WE
WERE CHANGING!!

THAT... THAT
LOUSY PERV!!

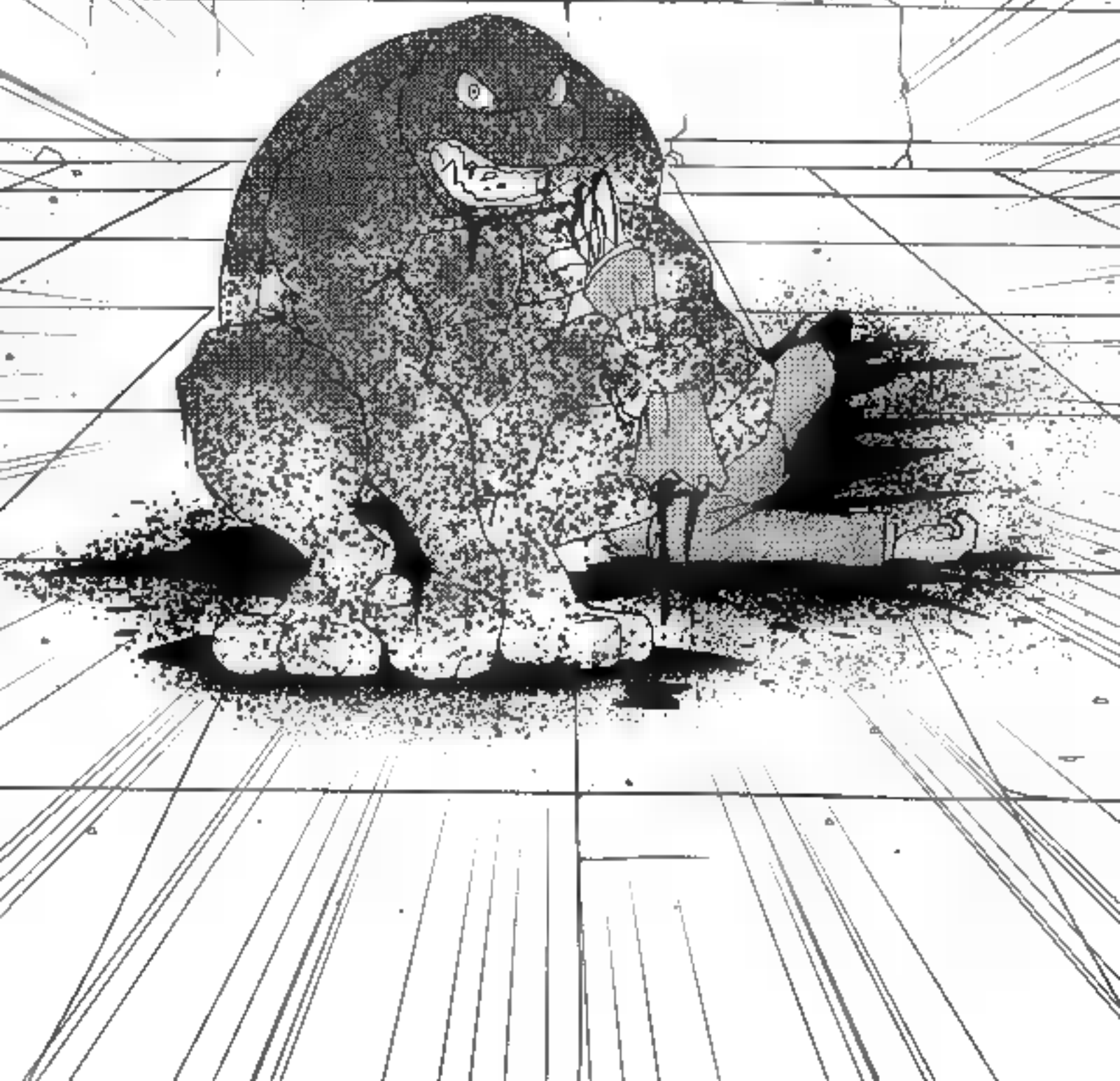
FORGET ABOUT
HIS FRIENDS!
LET'S ATTACK THE
CORE OF THIS
PROBLEM!



I KNOW HE
HIDES ON THE
ROOF... ONE
OF HIS
FRIENDS
TIPPED ME
OFF!

ΔΔΔΔH!!

GARRHR...



GRAAARRH!!

YAAH! SHADOW!!

NO NO!! IT'S
COMING... IT'S
COMING!!!!

OAVIANNA!
STAND BACK!!

GURRH!

OAVIANNA! IT'S OUT
COLD! IT'S OKAY,
NOW IT'S OKAY

IT ATE HIM
SHADOW HE'S
HE'S....!!

IT ATE HIM
SHADOW HE'S
HE'S....!!

IT ATE HIM
SHADOW HE'S
HE'S....!!

DON SPEAKING, MIKEY... I
THOUGHT YOU WERE TOO BUSY
WITH YOUR NEW LIFESTYLE TO
KEEP ■ TOUCH WITH
UNDERGROUND CREATURES
LIKE ME. WHAT DO YOU WANT?

SAY WHAT? A WILD
MUTANT TURTLE? IN
SHADOW'S PRIVATE
SCHOOL?
IT DEVoured A STUDENT?
BUT IF THE POLICE A
READY ON THE CASE,
WHAT DO YOU EXPECT ME
TO DO? ROAM ABOUT AND
FREAK OUT MORE
HUMANS? BESIDES, I
HATE GOING TO THE
SURFACE!



OH... YOU JUST WANTED
TO LET ME KNOW... SO I
WON'T GET INVOLVED IN
THIS, RIGHT? OKAY,
OKAY...

I... I KNOW, I KNOW, YOU
HAVE A REPUTATION TO
PRESERVE. BUT WHAT'S
THE USE? NONE OF YOUR
READERS KNOWS YOU'RE
A MUTANT ANYWAYS...



OKAY, OKAY, I GET IT! I'LL
WARN RAPH ABOUT IT.
GOOD EVENING.



WE INTERRUPT THE BROADCAST OF
"CHAINSAW JUSTICE" TO BRING YOU
A SPECIAL REPORT



FOR MORE THAN TWO DECADES,
THERE HAVE BEEN RUMORS ABOUT
HUMANOID TURTLES LIVING AMONG
US. AS OF TODAY, THIS IS NO
LONGER JUST AN URBAN LEGEND

ONE OF THOSE CREATURES HAS
SLAUGHTERED A TEENAGE BOY
THIS AFTERNOON ON A HIGH
SCHOOL'S ROOFTOP



AUTHORITIES SAY THEY HAVE
CONTROL OVER THE SITUATION
ACCORDING TO SOURCES, THE
CREATURE ■ STILL ALIVE

HERE IS A GLIMPSE OF
THE HUMANOID TURTLE
INVOLVED IN THIS
INCIDENT



HEAR THAT, DONNIE? OUR
BRETHREN'S STILL ALIVE. HOW
'BOUT WE GO GREET HIM OR
SOMETHIN'?

...EH? MIKEY TOLO US TO STAY
CLEAR FROM THIS AFFAIR?
YA KNOW WHAT, DONNIE?
SCREW HIM! HE'S ALWAYS BEEN
A PAIN IN THE ASS

YOU ■ KNOW YA UNDERSTAND ME
BETTER THAN MIKEY. LET'S TAKE A
BREAK FROM THE SEWERS'
DARKNESS AND SHOW THE WORLD
OUR UGLY FACES A LIL' BIT, EH?

YA WIT' ME BRO?
HEHE ■ KNEW YOU'D SAY
THAT'S THE SPIRIT



New York
City
02:10
AM

JUMPIN' ON THE ROOFS OF
NEW YORK, IN THE MOON-
LIGHT LIKE IN THE GOOD
OL' DAYS, EH?

RAPH I
DIDN'T COME
ALONG TO
CHIT-CHAT
WITH YOU

I AGREED TO HELP YOU
BECAUSE I KNOW HOW
TERRIBLY LIMITED YOUR
KNOWLEDGE OF
COMPUTERS IS. YOU
PROBABLY WEREN'T
GONNA GET VERY FAR
WITHOUT ME.

HEH, SO WHAT
MY NINJA
SKILLS AIN'T
GOOD
ENOUGH?

FIRST OF ALL,
I'M SURE IT'S
BEEN ABE'S
SINCE YOU LAST
INFILTRATED A
HUMAN FACILITY
SO YOU DON'T
WANT TO RELY
ON YOUR DUSTY
"NINJA" SKILLS
ALONE.

SECOND,
WE'RE TALKING
ABOUT A HI-
TECH LAB HERE.
IT'S MOST
LIKELY ARMED
WITH VARIOUS
SECURITY
DEVICES.

THIS IS IT, RAPH. THE FACILITY
WHERE THAT KILLED MUTANT
TURTLE IS BEING CONFINED.
ACCORDING TO THE DATA I
DOWNLOADED BY HACKING
INTO THE FBI'S SYSTEMS, THE
LAB WE'RE SPECIFICALLY
LOOKING FOR IS ON THE
SECOND TO LAST FLOOR.

YA HAVEN'T LOST YOUR
TOUGH, EH? STILL A
COMPUTER GEEK, WELL,
LET'S GET DOWN TO
BUSINESS. I'M COUNTIN'
ON YA, DONNE.



UNHAND THAT KNIFE!

GAH...!



THAT VOICE...!

IT CAME FROM DOWN THERE...!



YOU CREEPS HAVE PICKED THE WRONG NIGHT TO CROSS MY PATH...

TH... THAT'S OUR LINE, BITCH!!

DUDE! THE VIGILANTE'S A CHICK! WE CAN TAKE HER ON!!



WUSSIES

I'M GONNA CARVE YA UP!!

YA FREAKIN' DYKE!!





YOU'RE BEIN' WAY
TOO EASY ON 'EM!



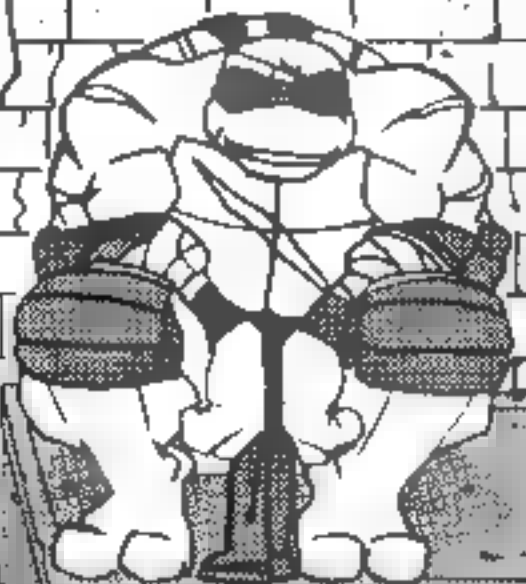


CLEANING THE STREETS OF
NEW YORK FROM PURPLE
DRAGON GANGSTERS JUST
LIKE YOUR DAD, EHP NOT
BAD, SHADOW...

I HAD TO KEEP
MYSELF BUSY WITH
SOMETHING...
AFTER WHAT
I WITNESSED...

SO... WHAT HAPPENED?
GOT DUMPED? GAINED
WEIGHT?

YOU HEARD
ABOUT THAT
WILD MUTANT,
RIGHT?



YEAH, WHAT
ABOUT IT?

THE VICTIM IN THIS
INCIDENT...

...HE WAS MY
CHILDHOOD
FRIEND. HE
GOT RIPPED
TO SHREDS
BY THAT
MUTANT... I
COULDN'T DO
ANYTHING...



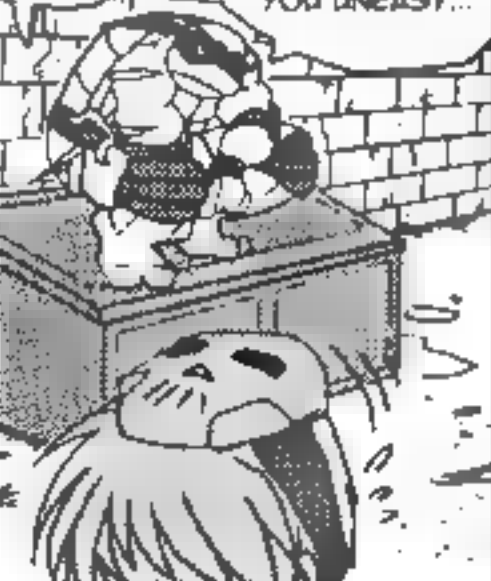
THAT WOULD EXPLAIN WHY
YOUR FIRST REACTION TO
RAPH WAS TO SWING YOUR
BAT AT HIM.

I... I CAN'T HELP IT...
AFTER ALL, YOU'RE
MUTANT TURTLES TOO,
SO... I...



...I'D
BETTER
GO
HOME

GOIN' BACK TO
MIKEY? YOU
JUST SAID
MUTANTS MADE
YOU UNEASY...



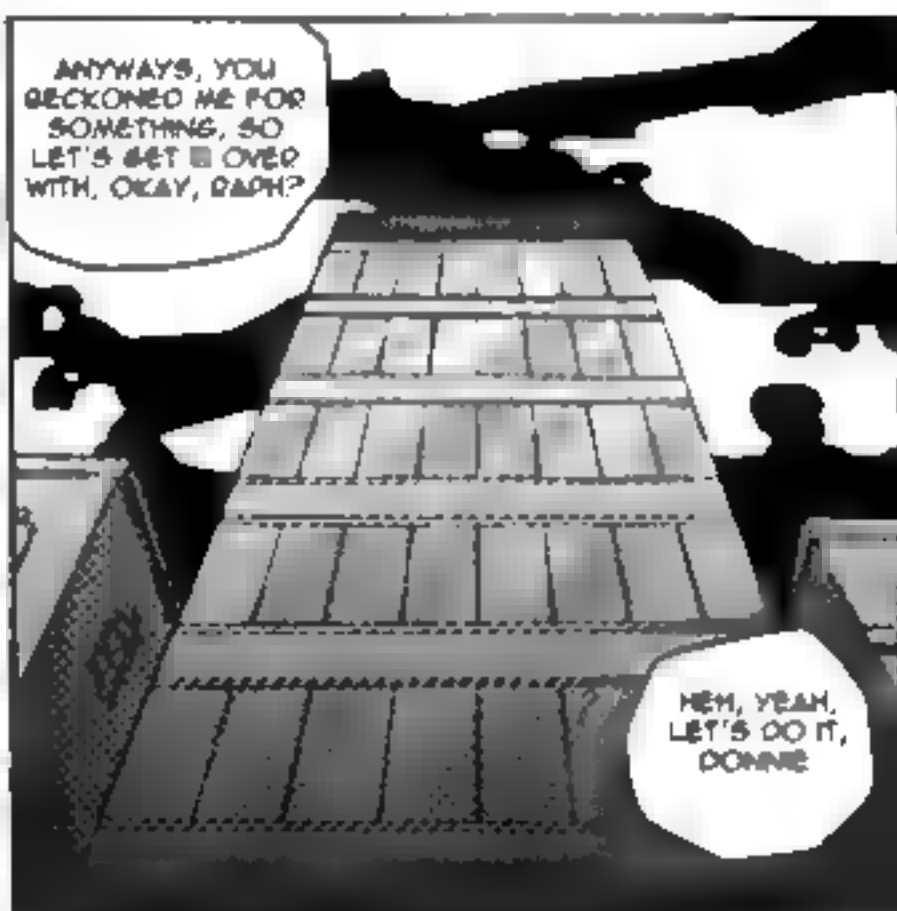
HE'S
DIFFERENT,
UNCLE RAPH.

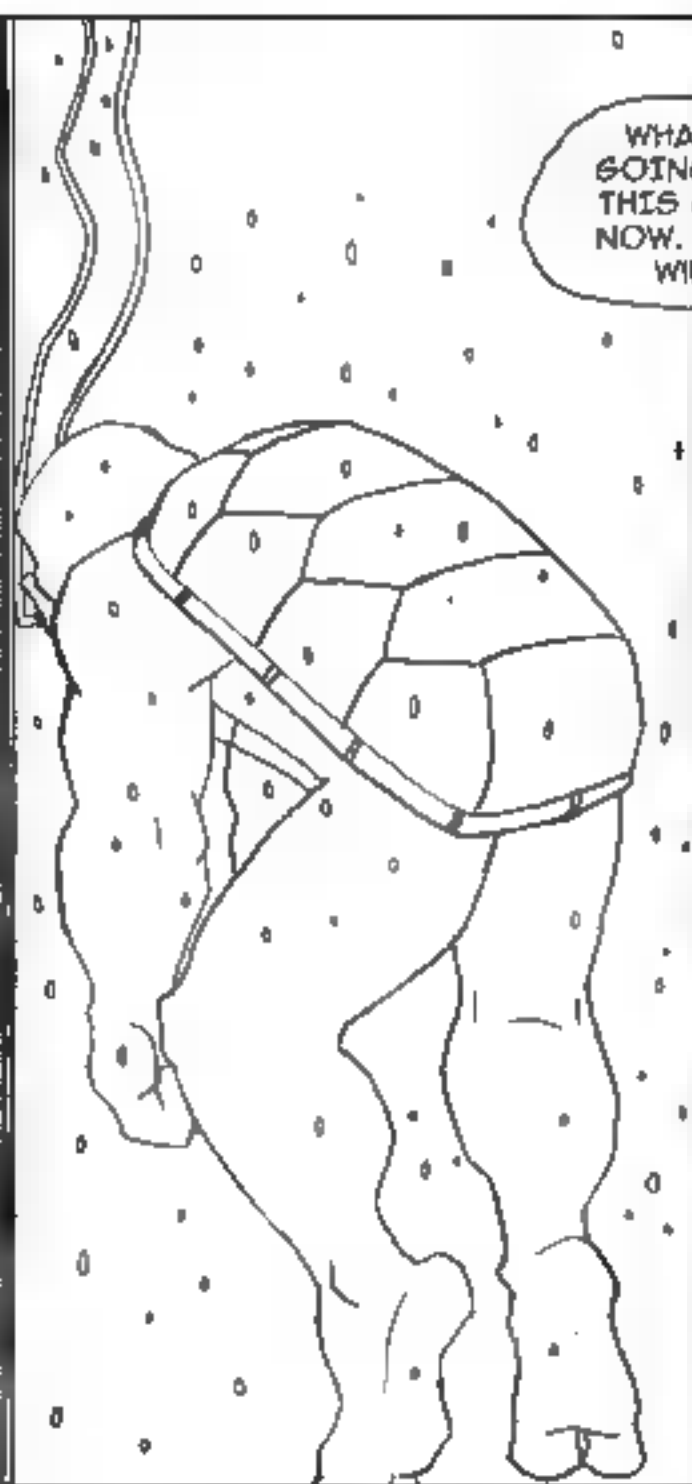
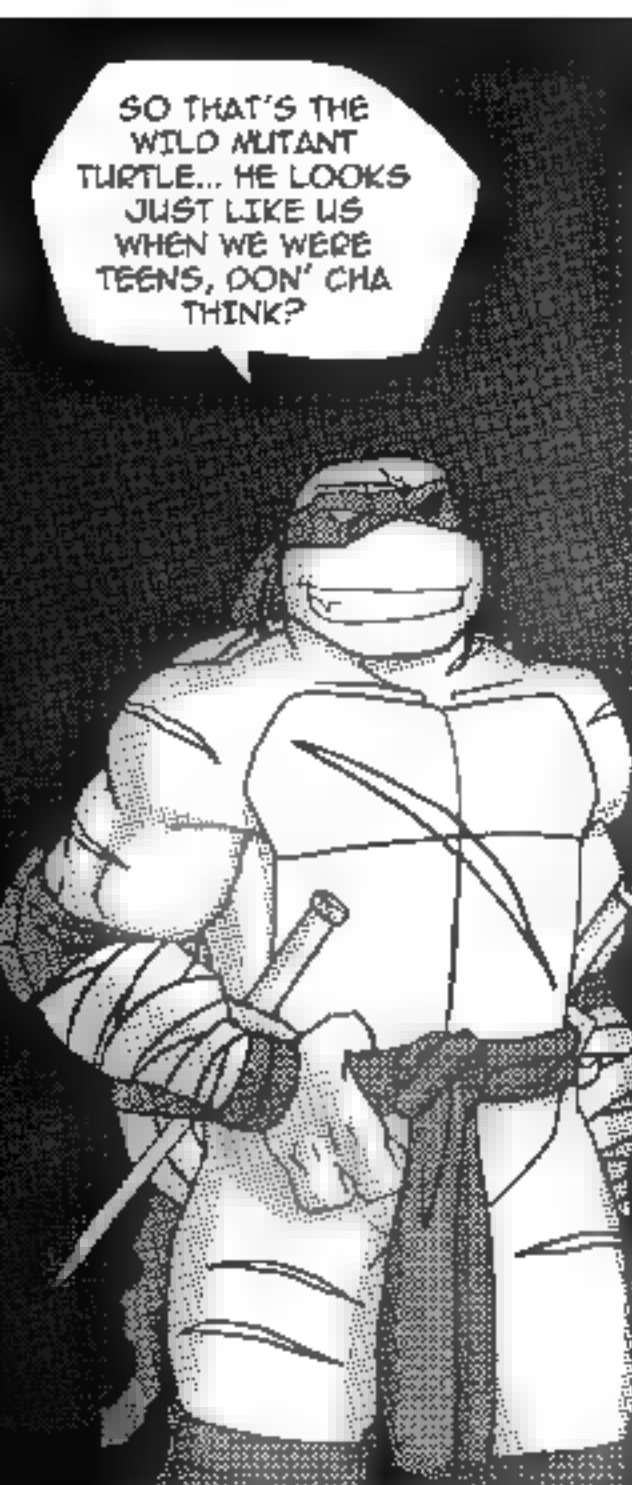
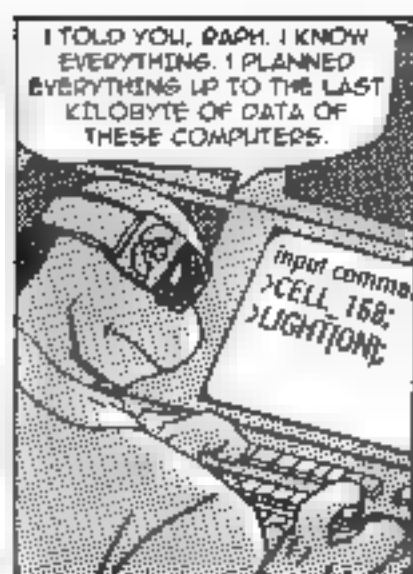
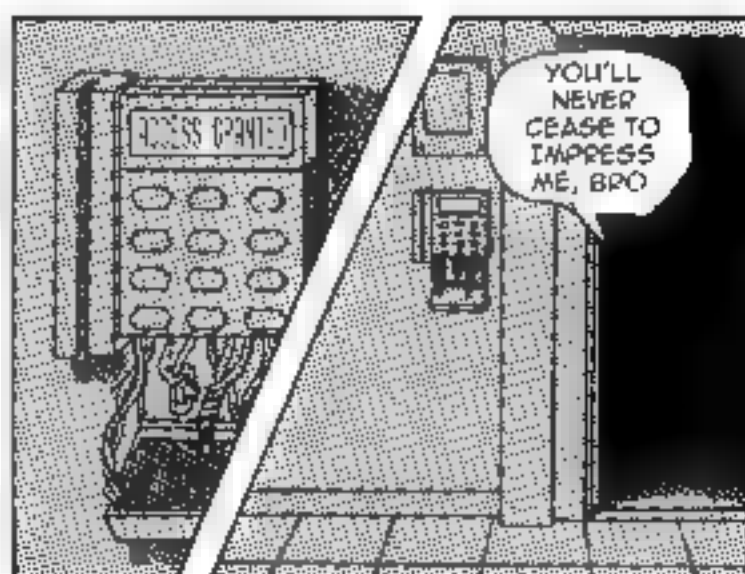
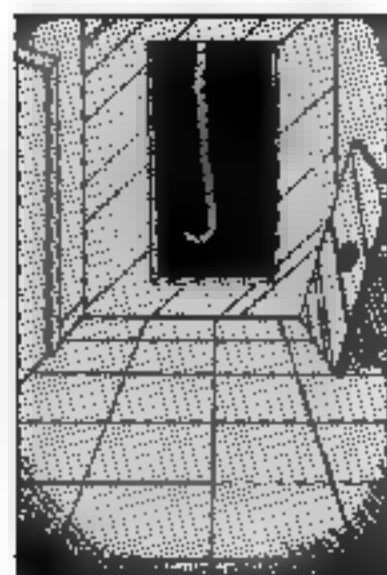


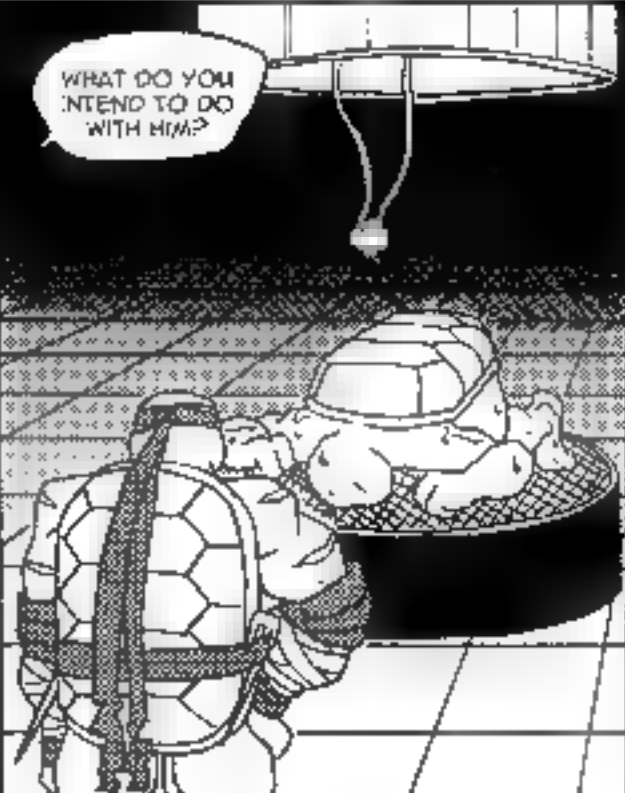
BAH... LET'S JUST
GET ON WITH OUR
PLAN, DONNIE.

HUM










WHAT DO YOU
INTEND TO DO
WITH HIM?



I'VE ALWAYS WANTED TO HAVE
SOMEONE TO DO MY OWN
BIDDING. SPLINTER HAD US.
I'LL HAVE HIM.

I SEE. DO AS YOU WISH, BUT
REMEMBER THAT THOUGH THIS
MUTANT MIGHT LOOK LIKE US,
HE IS WILD! HE KILLED AN
INNOCENT HUMAN... I THINK
YOU'RE PLAYING WITH FIRE,
RAPH.



YEAH, YEAH, I KNOW. IF
THINGS GET UGLY, I'LL
TAKE RESPONSIBILITY.
ANYWAYS, HELP ME
CARRY HIM TO MY
PLACE.

RAPH BECOMING THIS
MUTANT'S MASTER...
POOR MUTANT.

WE CAN TALK ABOUT
DETAILS LATER, OK?

AH / IT'S YOU?

NO . IT'S ALRIGHT. I'LL
GIVE MYSELF TO YOU
I'M ALL YOURS

NOT SO FAST,
PERVERT! THIS IS A
TWO FOR ONE OFFER
YOU GET HER, YOU
GET ME TOO

WHAT DID YOU CALL
ME?? PREPARE
YOURSELF TO FACE
SHADOW JONES'
WRATH!!!

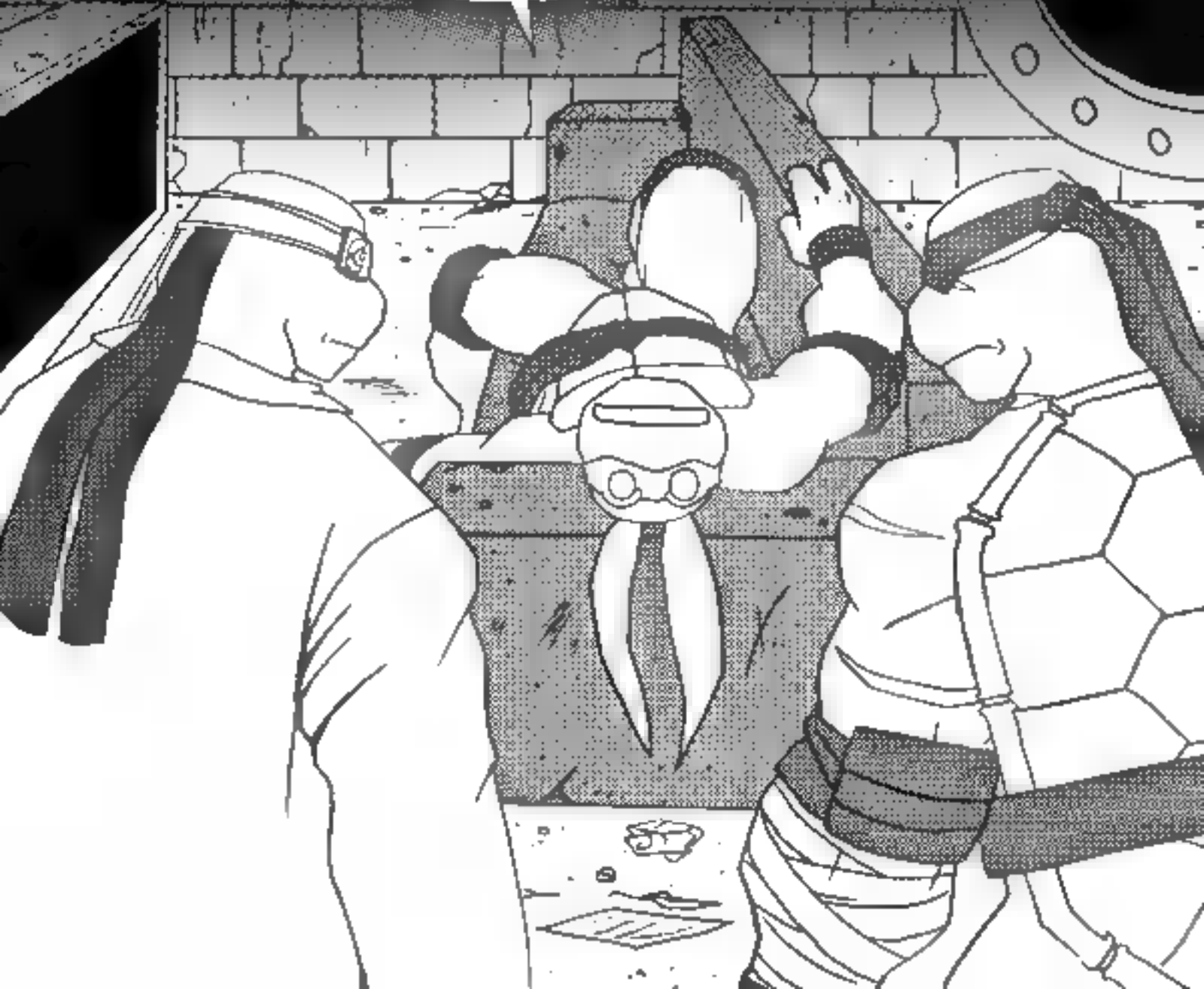
DAVIANNA? EEEE...
SORRY ABOUT EARLIER
I HOPE YOU'RE NOT
TOO MAD AT ME! MY
FRIENDS AND I, WE...
EEE... WE JUST WANTED
TO... EEE...

WHAT? OOOH... AT
LAST! COME, FLY
INTO MY ARMS,
MY DEAR!

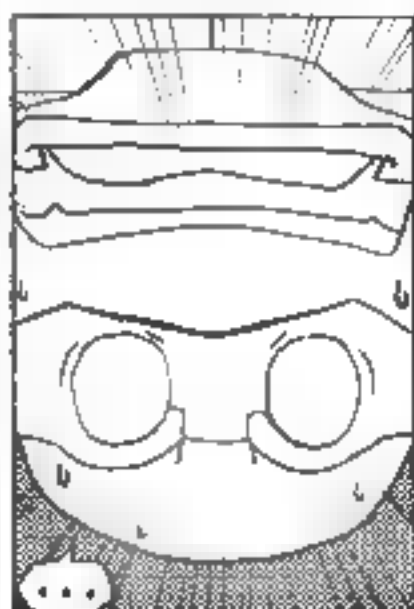
W...WHAT? NO WAY! I DON'T
WANT A TOMBBOY! I JUST
WANT DAVIANNA!

EEEEE?? HELLO?
NOT IN THE...!!

...AH?

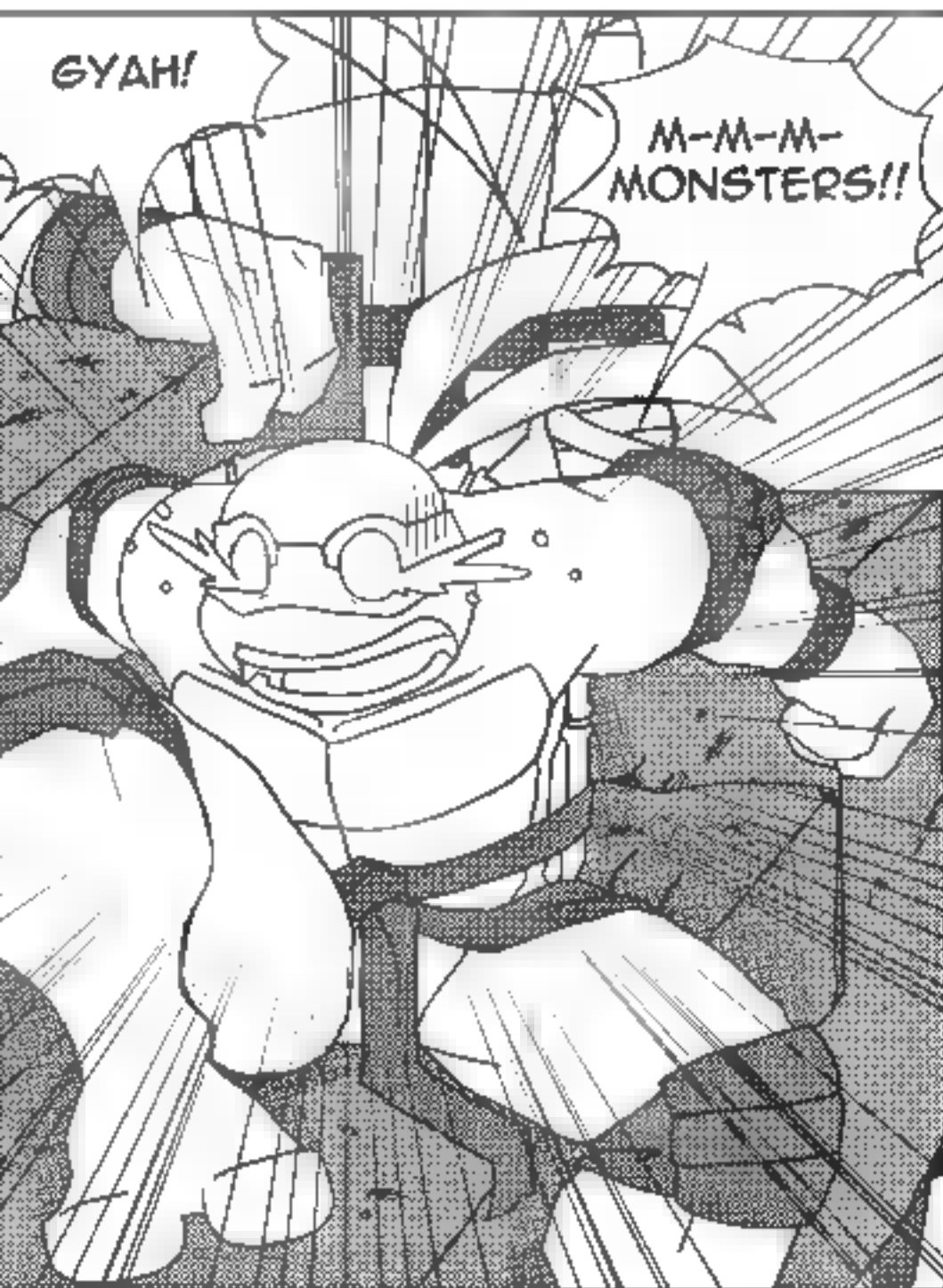


HEY... HOW'S IT
GOIN', KID?



GYAH!

M-M-M-
MONSTERS!!



SO NOW THE WILD KILLER
MUTANT TURTLE REPULSIVELY
CALLS US MUTANT TURTLES
"MONSTERS"... RIGHT.



HEY! WATCH YOUR
MOUTH, KID!





WHAT THE HELL... ?

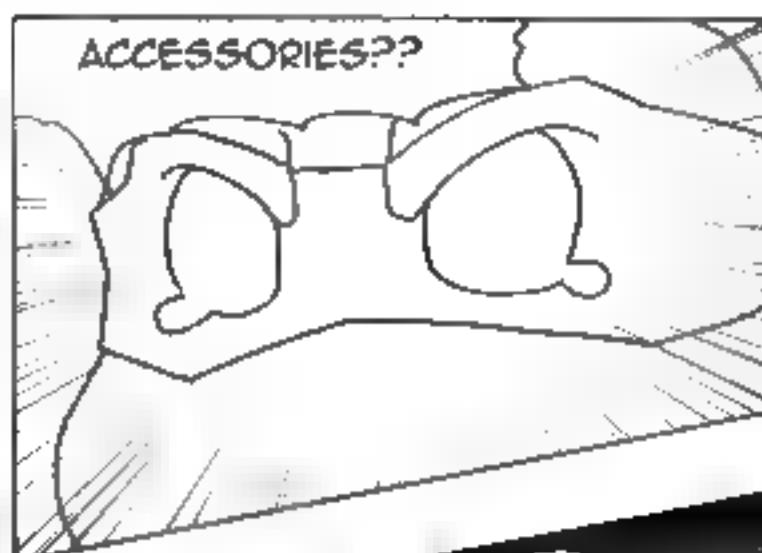


WHA...! THIS ISN'T MINE...
AND THIS... AND... AND...
THIS ISN'T ME!!!

YOU MEAN YOUR
EQUIPMENT? THEY'RE
YOURS NOW. THEY
DON'T FIT ME
ANYMORE.



NOOO!!! MY... MY
BEAUTIFUL FACE!!!
I'M AN
ABOMINATION!!



ACCESSORIES??



HEHEHE... I
GET IT NOW...

HUH?

WHILE IT'S A RELIEF TO SEE
THAT HE'S CAPABLE OF
SPEECH, IT SEEMS THAT
YOU'VE GOT YOURSELF A
SLIGHTLY MENTALLY
DEFICIENT MUTANT. ARE YOU
STILL WILLING TO TAKE HIM IN?

NONSENSE! HE AIN'T
CRAZY...! HE'S PROBABLY
JUST CRYIN' OF JOY
'CUZ OF HIS NEW
ACCESSORIES!

WAHAHAHA!
I...I GET IT!

WAAAAHAHAHA!!!

I DON'T KNOW WHY, BUT
I FEEL LIKE WE'RE
BEING MADE FUN OF.

UGYA!

WHAT'S YER
PROBLEM?

AHA...HAHA...IT'S...
IT'S A COSTUME
PARTY ISN'T IT?
COSPLAY?

カ
ン

ADMIT IT! MY PALS HAVE HIRED YOU TO
BRING ME TO A SPECIAL COSTUME PARTY
DEDICATED TO ME, RIGHT?

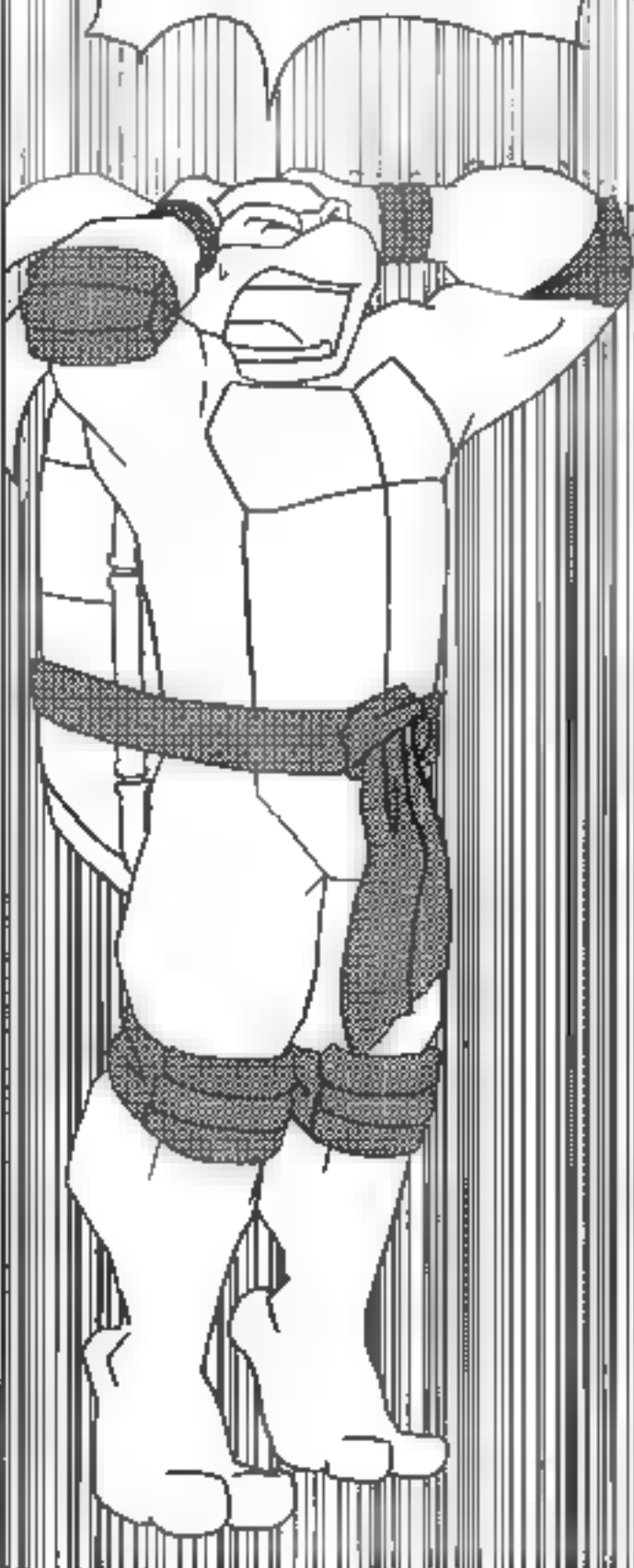
WELL I'M QUITE IMPRESSED WITH THE
PREPARATIONS! THIS PLACE IS SIMPLY
DISGUSTING AND STINKY... WHAT DID YOU
PAINT ON THESE WALLS? ROTTEN EGGS?
AND THIS COSTUME... VERY REALISTIC! I
CAN'T EVEN FEEL LIKE I HAVE FIVE
FINGERS ANYMORE...

UNFORTUNATELY, I
WILL NOT ATTEND
TO THIS PARTY! I
HAVE A TERRIBLE
HEADACHE... SAY,
HOW DO I REMOVE
THIS MASK? IT'S
LIKE IT'S
COMPLETELY STUCK
ON MY FACE OR
SOMETHING...

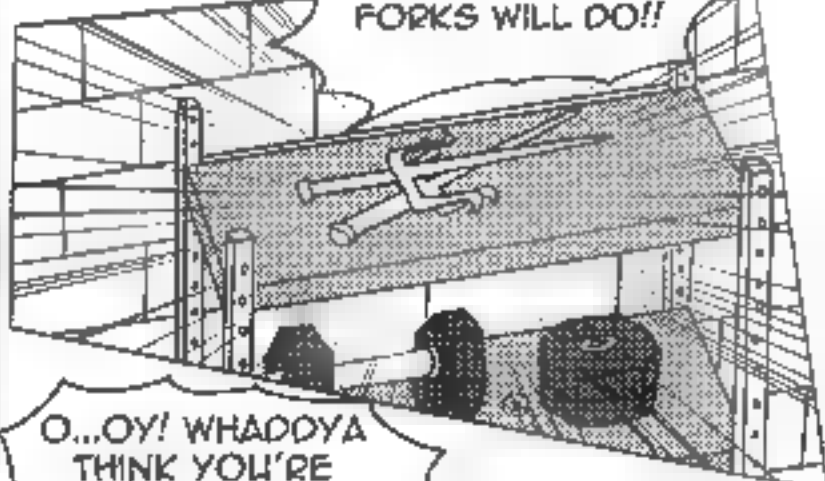
WHAT?

EE?

ARRRHH... WHY... WHY
WON'T IT BUDGE!! I
WANT TO REMOVE IT
NOW!! IT'S GROSS!!



I NEED SOMETHING
SHARP... THESE
FORKS WILL DO!!



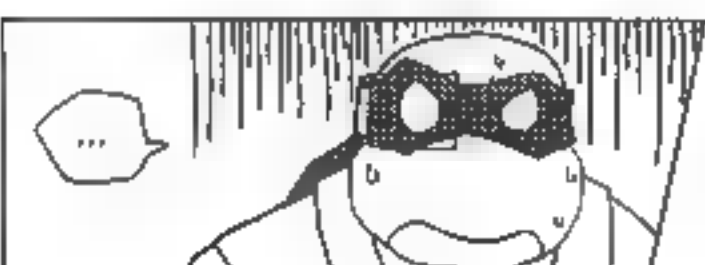
O...OY! WHADDOYA
THINK YOU'RE
DOIN' WITH MY
SAIS!



WHAT DOES IT
LOOK LIKE I'M
DOING!! I'LL PRY
THIS MASK OPEN!!



THIS AIN'T NO
TOY! STOP
THAT BEFORE
YOU...!!



RAPH, STOP HIM SO I
CAN PATCH HIM UP.

AAAAH!! THE PAIN!!
THE PAIN OF
HURTING MY
BEAUTIFUL FACE!!
NOOOOO!

SHUT THE HELL UP OR ELSE I'M
REALLY GONNA GIVE YA
SOMETHIN' TO CRY 'BOUT!

URGH!

IT'S JUST A CUT, YOU'LL BE FINE.
LISTEN, JUST BECAUSE YOU'RE A MUTANT
WITH SELF-REGENERATIVE POWERS DOESN'T
MEAN YOU SHOULD MUTILATE YOURSELF FOR
NO GOOD REASON...

O...OW!! WATCH IT! JUST
WHAT DO YOU MEAN? HE,
A MUTANT?
SELF-REGENERATION?
IS THIS SOME KIND OF
JOKE? JUST LEAVE
OUTTA HERE! I CAN SORT
THIS OUT BY MYSELF,
OKAY?

YO, DONNIE, TURN ON THE
NEWS SO HE CAN SEE WHAT
KIND OF WARM RECEPTION
AWAITS HIM ON THE SURFACE.

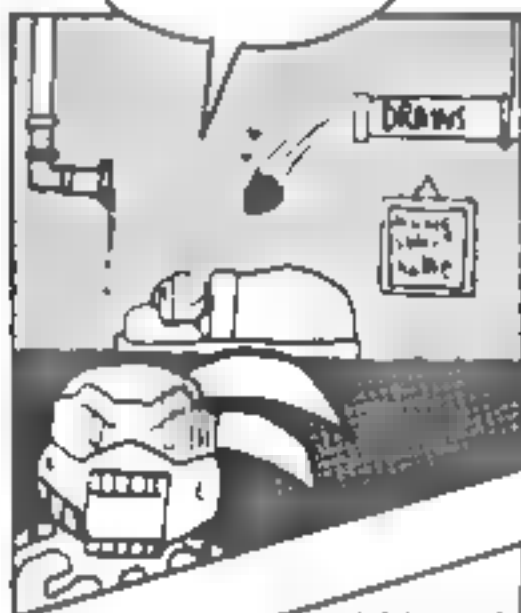
SURFACE? YOU
MEAN WE'RE...
UNDERGROUND?

...YOU'RE IN THE
SEWERS OF NEW
YORK CITY

YOU GOTTA BE
JOKING! I MEAN,
THIS IS WHERE STUFF
GOES WHEN YOU
FLUSH...!

YEP, AND THAT'S
WHERE I LIVED
MY WHOLE LIFE
FROM NOW ON,
IT'LL BE YOUR
NEW "HOME
SWEET HOME"

NO... THIS IS JUST
TOO MUCH...!!



THE GREEN CREATURE RESPONSIBLE
FOR THE DEATH OF A HIGH SCHOOL
STUDENT YESTERDAY IS NOW MISSING.
IT APPEARS THAT SOME HIGHLY PRO-
FESSIONAL ACTIVISTS HAVE BROKEN
INTO THE FACILITY WHERE IT WAS HELD
DURING THE NIGHT AND RELEASED IT
FROM ITS CONTAINER.

GREEN...
WAIT, MY
SKIN IS
GREEN,
THEN...!

THIS CREATURE IS
CONSIDERED DANGEROUS.
ANY SIGN OF IT SHOULD BE
IMMEDIATELY REPORTED TO
THE AUTHORITIES.

THE FUNERALS FOR ITS VICTIM,
AUGUSTUS AMBERST WILL BE
HELD TOMORROW EVENING AT
CYPRESS HILLS CEMETARY
AND.

NO...
THIS IS...
IMPOSSIBLE...





I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST.
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST.
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST

I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST.
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST.
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST.
I'M AUGUSTUS AMHERST

STOP WHININ'!
YA BLEED, YA
KNOW THIS
AIN'T NO
DREAM!!



I DUNNO WHY THE HELL
YOU'RE ACTIN' LIKE SOME
WIMPY HUMAN, BUT YOU'RE
TICKIN' ME OFF! LISTEN,
GUD! YOU'RE A WILD
MUTANT TURTLE THAT
KILLED A KID CALLED
"AUGUSTUS AMHERST!"
YOU'VE BEEN NEUTRALIZED
AND BROUGHT TO A LAB
WHERE I BAILED YA OUT
AND **THAT'S IT!**

ANY OTHER CRAP COMIN'
OUTTA YOUR PEA BRAIN'S
PROBABLY PART OF YOUR
"PREVIOUS INCARNATION"
OR SOMETHIN' SO MOVE
ON AND SPARE ME ALL
THAT STUPID DRAMA,
CAPICHE?

S...SHUT UP! I
KNOW MYSELF
BETTER THAN YOU
DO! I'M AUGUSTUS
AMHERST! I'VE
ALWAYS BEEN!



STILL OBSESSED WITH
THAT NAME, AREN'CHA?
FINE. FROM NOW ON,
YOUR NAME WILL BE...





SINCE YA KILLED AN INNOCENT HUMAN, I SHOULD'VE LEFT YA TO SUFFER IN THAT LAB AND PAY FOR YOUR SIN, BUT I THOUGHT THAT I COULD MAKE A WORTHY NINJA OUTTA YA
YA OWE ME YOUR LIFE IN OTHER WORDS, YOU'D BETTER BE DAMN GRATEFUL TO ME

FROM NOW ON YOU'RE GONNA CALL ME "MASTER RAPHAEL" AND YOU'RE GONNA OBEY MY EVERY ORDER, COMPREHEND?

WHATEVER AS LONG AS YOU

TOTAL SUBMISSION

I CAN'T HELP BUT CONNECT THE DOTS AND REALIZE THAT

I CAN'T HELP BUT CONNECT THE DOTS AND REALIZE THAT YOU ARE AN ANTI-SOCIAL AND TROUBLED OLD MAN WHO CLEARLY HAS ISSUES

YOU INSOLENT TWERP!
SHOW SOME RESPECT
OR ELSE THIS "OLD MAN
WITH ISSUES" OF YOURS
IS GONNA HAVE TO
SHOW WHO'S BOSS
'ROUND HERE!!

HEY!
WHAT?

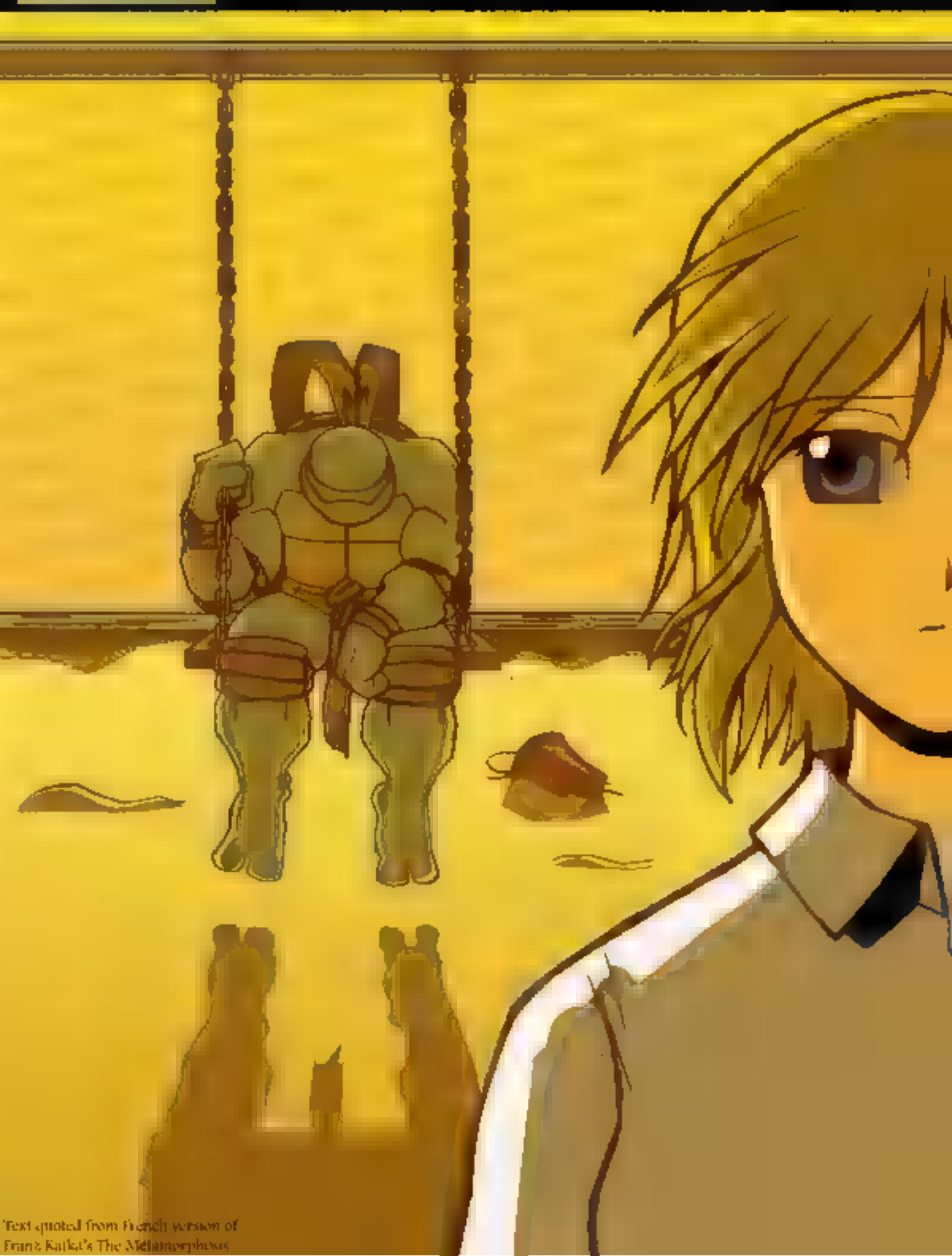
KAPOW
KAPOW
KAPOW
KAPOW
KAPOW

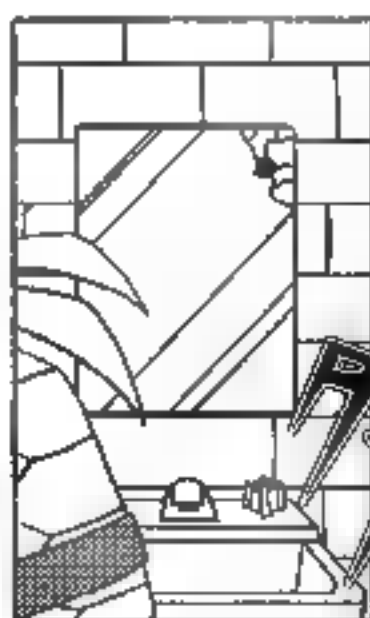
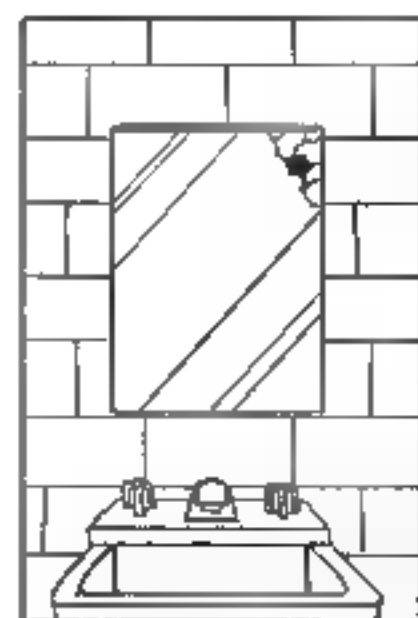
ACK!! OOF!! ACK!! F...
FORGIVE ME! M...
MASTER RAPHAEL!!
S...SORRY!!

ACK!! OOF!! ACK!! F...
FORGIVE ME! M...
MASTER RAPHAEL!!
S...SORRY!!



CHAPTER 2 :
REMINISCENCE - LIVING MEMORIES
BEYOND DEATH'S ILLUSIONS





NOOO!!! I'M... I'M A
MONSTER!!! IT
WASN'T A DREAM!!!

DAMN KID... SO EARLY
IN THE EVENING...



MY BEAUTIFUL
FACE... IT'S STILL
AN ABOMINATION!
NO... NO!!!



TRAINING TIME.

AND STOP
WHINING!



FIRST, I NEED TO CHECK HOW STRONG YOU ARE.

PUNCH THOSE PADS HERE AS HARD AS YOU CAN.

I CAN'T... I DON'T REALLY FEEL LIKE IT.

JUST... LET ME HAVE A FUNERAL IN MY HEAD FOR MY LOST HANDSOME APPEARANCE. BOOHOO...

I'M FED UP WIT' YER SELF-PITY! FOR GOD'S SAKE, I KNOW YA KILLED THAT HUMAN BOY, SO WHAT? NOTHIN' AIN'T GONNA BRING 'IM BACK SO GET OVER IT, RENOIR!

DAMMIT! YOU'RE A MUTANT TURTLE, NOT A WIMP! GET UP, RENOIR!

STOP CALLING ME "RENOIR". YOU DON'T KNOW HOW IT FEELS TO SEE YOUR WORLD TURN UPSIDE DOWN OVERNIGHT.

TCH! I'VE BEEN THROUGH MUCH WORSE THAN THAT, RENOIR...

SINCE YOU'RE SO OBSESSED WIT' THAT DEAD BOY, I'M BRINGIN' YA TO HIS FUNERALS TOMORROW EVENING. THERE, HAPPY?

...AND LEMME TELL YA, IN THIS KIND OF SITUATION, ALL YA NEED IS TO FACE REALITY AND ACCEPT IT.

ONCE THAT'S DONE, I EXPECT YA TO RESUME YER TRAINING WITHOUT ASKING ANY QUESTIONS!

OW!

WHY DO YOU EVEN BOTHER
LOOKING AFTER ME?

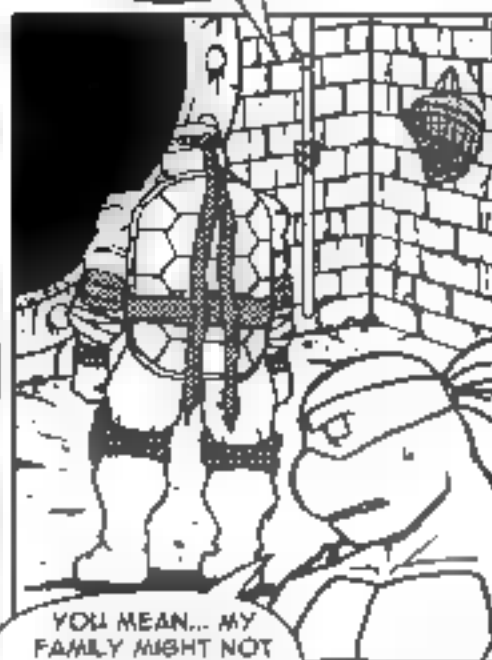


SUPPOSE I REALLY KILLED MYSELF... I
MEAN, THAT STUDENT. WHY WOULD YOU
HELP A MONSTER LIKE ME? WHAT'S IN IT
FOR YOU?



YOU'RE ONE OF OUR
KIND. IT'S ONLY NATURAL,
YA KNOW? WE'RE
REJECTED BY THE HUMAN
WORLD, SO WE HAVE TO
RELY ON OURSELVES.

REJECTED BY
HUMANS...?



YOU MEAN... MY
FAMILY MIGHT NOT
ACCEPT ME THE WAY
I LOOK ANYMORE?

IF IT'S HUMANS YOU'RE TALKIN' 'BOUT,
THEN FORGET IT. THEY'RE GONNA FREAK
OUT AND HUNT 'CHA DOWN. FROM NOW ON,
YOUR FAMILY WILL BE ONLY US MUTANT
NINJA TURTLES.



"US"... YOU MEANT THAT GUY
WITH THE LAB COAT FROM
YESTERDAY? YOU'RE RELATED?

YOU DON'T
SEEM TO GET
ALONG VERY
WELL.

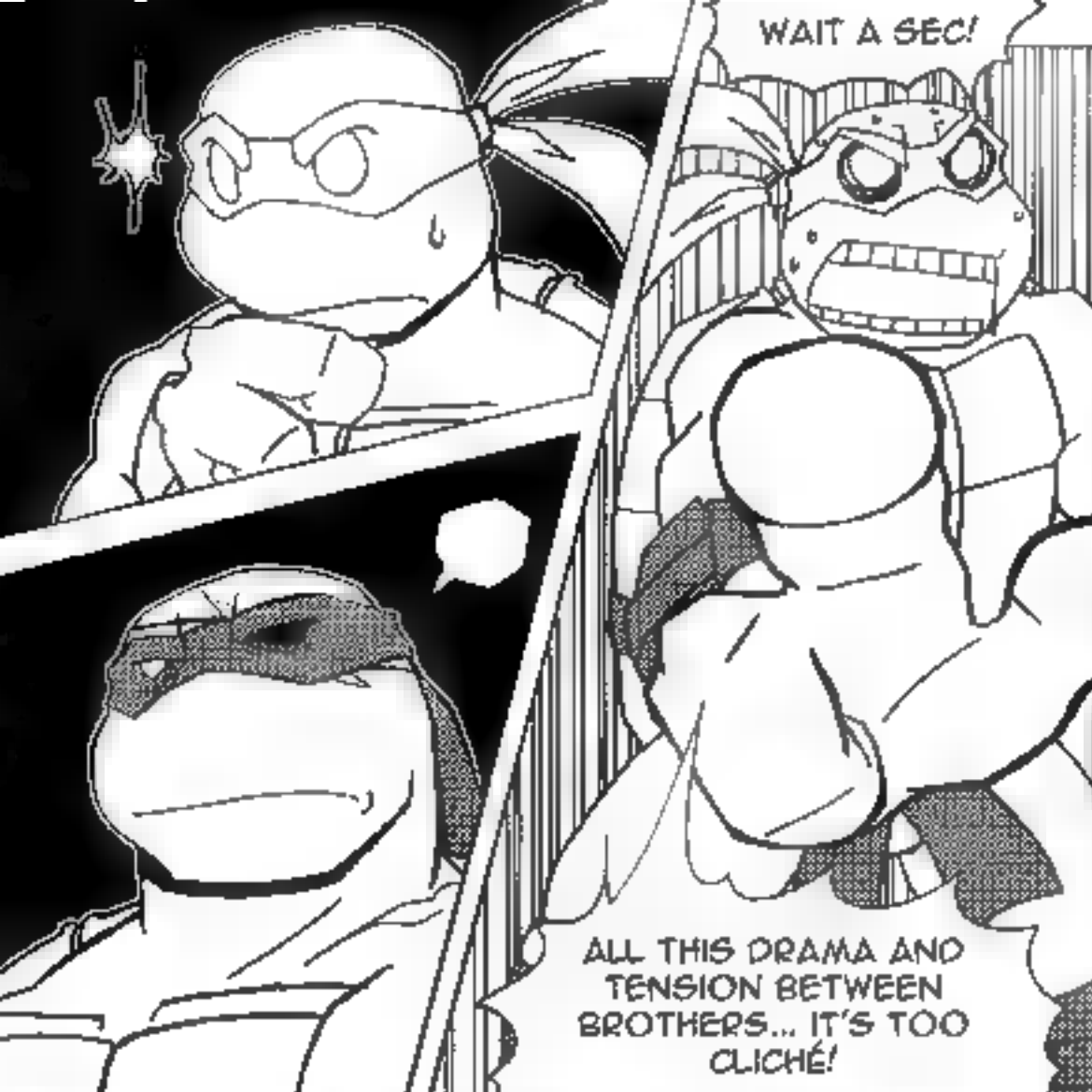


YEAH. DONATELLO. HE LIVES
SECLUDED IN HIS LAB... "HIS
OWN LIL' WORLD". WE USED TO
LIVE TOGETHER, BUT HE
BECAME MORE AND MORE
CYNICAL OVER THE YEARS.

THAT IDIOT'S
ALWAYS TRYIN' TO
DETACH HIMSELF
FROM REALITY. I
WAS SO FED UP
WITH HIS ACT THAT
I MOVED HERE, FAR
AWAY FROM OUR
OLD LAIR.



SO YOU ARE RELATED...
IT'S JUST ME, YOU AND
THAT DONATELLO
GUY...?

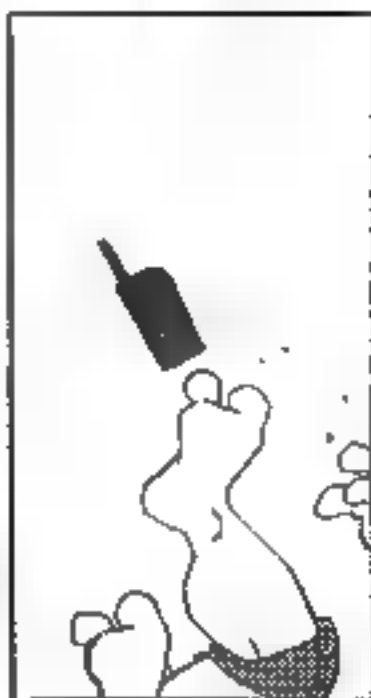


ALL THIS DRAMA AND
TENSION BETWEEN
BROTHERS... IT'S TOO
CLICHÉ!

I KNEW IT!
YOU'RE LYING!



YOU OBVIOUSLY TRIED TO
MAKE ME PITY YOU TO
BETTER MANIPULATE ME!
ISN'T THAT RIGHT? HUH?
HUH? YOU OLD
MANIAC!!



HELLO, DONNIE HERE.
WHAT DO YOU WANT,
RAPH... HUM? YOU'RE
THE MUTANT FROM
YESTERDAY...

WHAT YOU WANT
EXPLANATIONS?
HAM...

HE'S RIGHT. WE'RE THE
ONLY MUTANT TURTLES
IN NEW YORK. WE USED
TO BE FOUR...
BROTHERS.

BUT SOMETHING
OCCURRED AND WE ALL
SPLIT UP. HOWEVER,
IT'S ALSO TRUE THAT
RAPH'S TRYING TO
BRAINWASH YOU
THOROUGHLY...

SECOND
PHONE

ARE YOU SERIOUS?
TH... THAT'S REALLY
CREEPY...

YEAH, HE'S
PUSHY. A
REAL
DRAMA
KING...

YOU'RE NOT HELPIN'!!

MR. DONATELLO!
PLEASE, PLEASE
BRING ME TO YOUR
PLACE! I'M
SCARED! YOU
SOUND SO MUCH MORE
SANE!!

SORRY, KID. I'M
TOO BUSY TO
COME OVER NOW.

BY THE WAY,
HOW'S YOUR
WOUND?

IT HEALED
DURING THE
NIGHT, I THINK...

... OH WELL. GUESS
I'M STUCK WITH THIS
PSYCHOPATH..
BOOHOO...

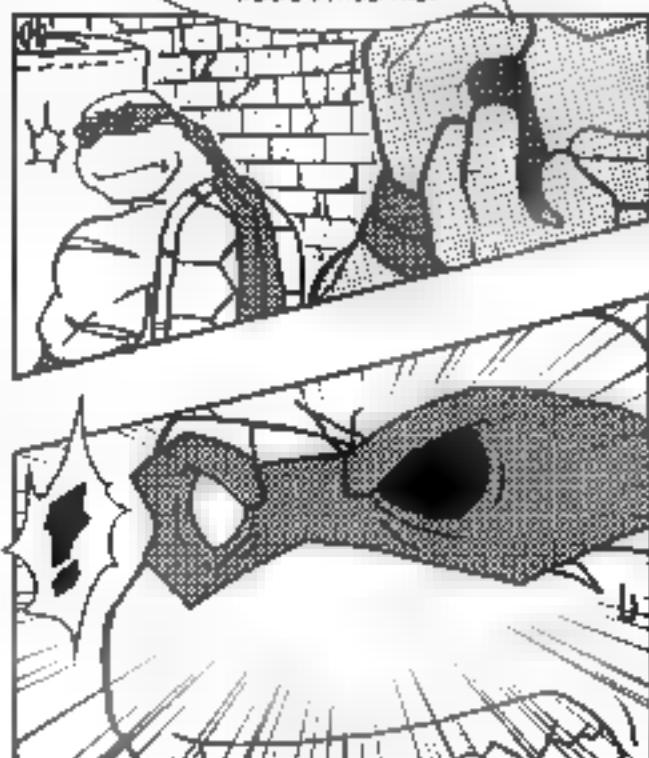
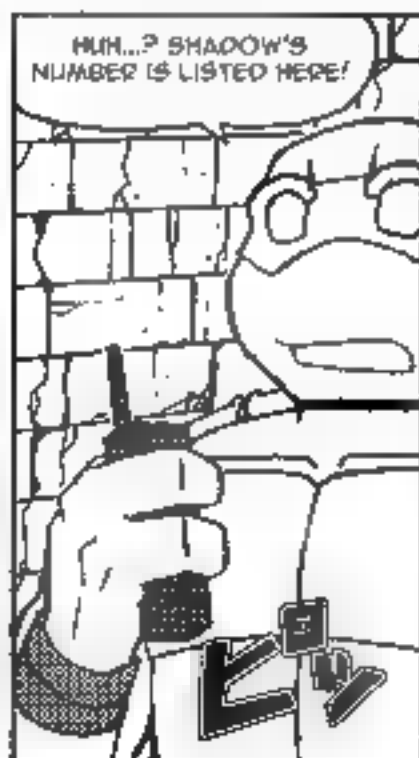
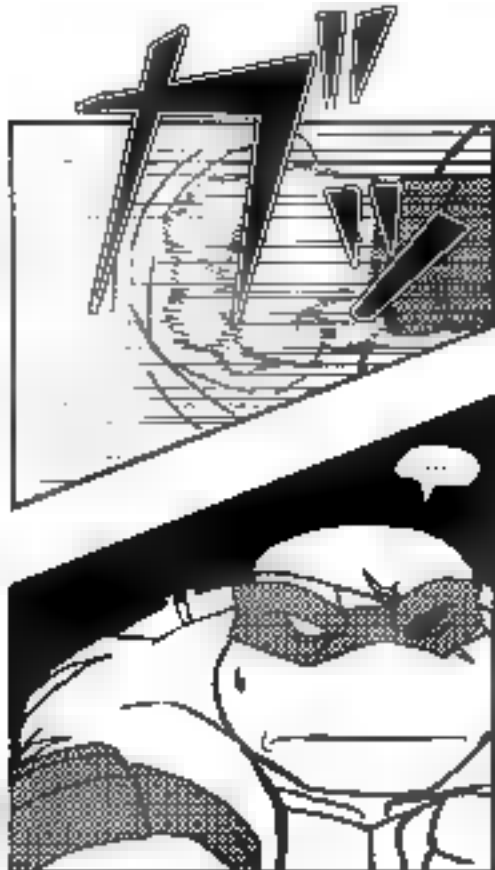
IT HEALED
OVERNIGHT?

CLICK

WAIT!
WAIT!

HEY!
...DAMN IT!

GOOD
NEWS. AT
LAST.



UNCLE RAPH, IF THIS IS SUPPOSED TO BE A JOKE, I DON'T FIND IT VERY AMUSING.



YOUR FRIEND CRIED,
YOU KNOW?

UNCLE MIKEY
YOU WERE
LISTENING?

HOW COULD
YOU TELL SHE
WAS CRYING?

DO YOU THINK
SHE WOULD'VE
SHUNNED YOU AT
A TIME LIKE THIS?

AM... MAYBE YOU'RE
RIGHT. YOU'RE A WRITER.
AFTER ALL, I GUESS YOU
HAVE THE ABILITY TO
UNDERSTAND AND
PREDICT PEOPLE'S
EMOTIONS BETTER
THAN I DO.

RAFAEL IS BEYOND
MY UNDERSTANDING,
SHADOW.

UNCLE MIKEY

HAHA?

I WAS WONDERING IF
MAYBE... YOU COULD,
YOU KNOW,
TOMORROW.

COME TO YOUR FRIEND'S
FUNERALS WITH YOU?
SURE, I KNOW YOU'RE
GOING THROUGH HARD
TIMES.

THANKS

YOU MUST'VE OVERHEARD
MY CONVERSATION WITH
UNCLE RAPH. HE MADE FUN
OF MY FRIEND'S DEATH.
HOW WOULD YOU EXPLAIN
THAT?



Cypress Hills Cemetery

09:00 PM

THIS IS A DAY OF GRIEF FOR ALL OF US. AUGUSTUS AMHERST'S EARLY AND SUDDEN DEPARTURE HAS CREATED A VOID IN OUR LIVES.

Augustus Amherst

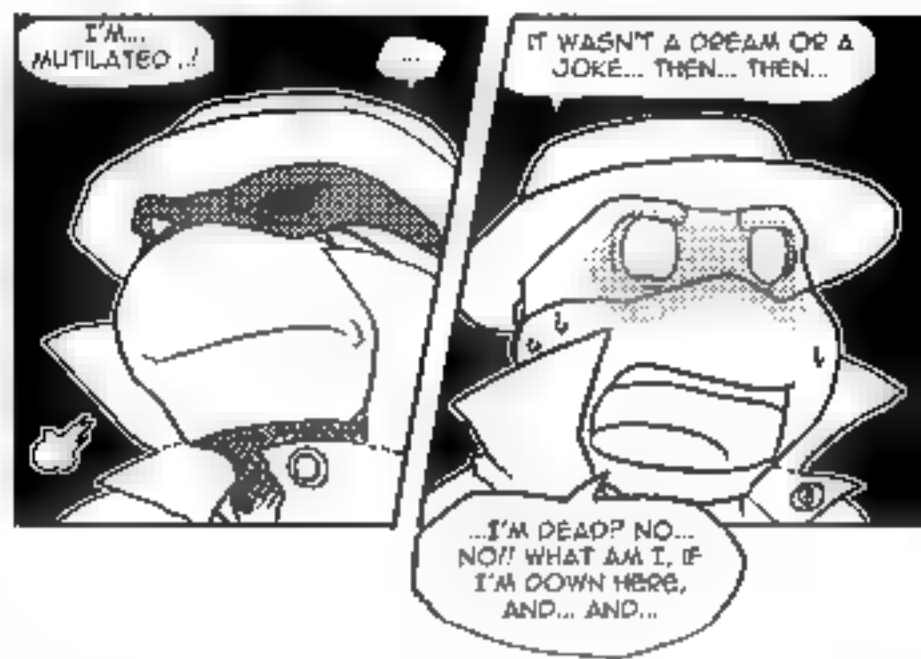
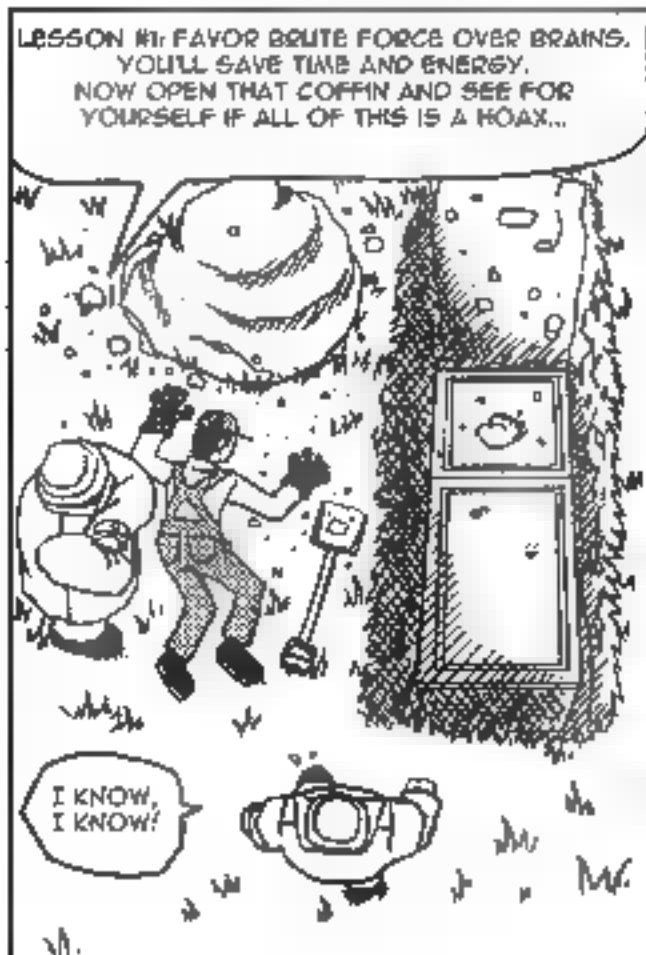
MOMMY, WHEN IS HE GOING TO WAKE UP?

HOWEVER, LIFE MUST GO ON DURING DIFFICULT TIMES LIKE THIS. WE HAVE TO SUPPORT EACH OTHER - WE MUST DRAW STRENGTH FROM FAMILY AND FRIENDS AND OFFER COMPASSION TO THOSE WHO ARE MOST AFFECTED BY THIS TRAGEDY.

LET US NOT FORGET THIS CHEERFUL YOUNG MAN WHOSE LIFE ENDED SOONER THAN IT SHOULD HAVE.

I CAN'T BELIEVE IT! EVERYONE'S REALLY HERE! SO THIS CAN'T BE A HOAX. LET ME TALK TO THEM, I'LL.

KEEP YER HANDS TO YOURSELF AND YOUR MOUTH SHUT, DENOR! THAT'S NOT WHAT WE CAME FOR, DENEMER?



EEH!!! UNCLE RAPH,
WHAT ARE YOU
DOING HERE?

HMM?

SHADOW, WHAT 'CHA
THINKIN', BRINGIN' A
RANDOM KID IN FRONT OF
ME LIKE THAT?

YOU KNOW MY LATE
FRIEND, RIGHT? THE
ONE YOU MADE FUN OF
YESTERDAY!
WELL, I JUST BROUGHT
HIS LITTLE SISTER HERE
TO HELP HER SEARCH
FOR A DOLL SHE
DROPPED DURING THE
FUNERAL, THINKING
THAT YOU'D BE AT
HOME, MAKING CRUEL
JOKES AT YOUR
FRIENDS!

SHADOW, WHO ■
THAT BIG OLD
GREEN MAN?

GGZZ, YOU'RE
STILL MAD AT
ME FOR THAT?

LISTEN CAROLE, MY UNCLE
RAPH HERE IS ACTUALLY AN
ACTOR WHO DISGUISES AS
AN ALIEN TO AVOID FANS, SO
LET'S KEEP THIS A SECRET
BETWEEN YOU AND ME,
OKAY? NOW GO FIND YOUR
DOLL.

YES,
SHADOW!

LOOK... I WAS DRUNK
YESTERDAY, AND KINDA
BECAME, ER... SCHIZOPHRENIC
OR SOMETHIN'... SORRY.

SCHIZOPHRENIC?
UNCLE RAPH...?

WHERE IS IT?
I'M SURE I
DROPPED IT
AROUND HERE.

YOUR BROTHER BOUGHT
YOU THIS FOR YOUR FIFTH
BIRTHDAY, REMEMBER?

HE WOULD'VE
BEEN GLAD THAT
YOU STILL
CHERISH IT.

MY DOLL! THANK YOU!
HOW DO YOU KNOW
ABOUT THAT? ARE YOU
AN ACTOR TOO?

CAROLE!! IT'S ME!! YOUR
BROTHER AUGUSTUS!!
YOU RECOGNIZE ME,
RIGHT? RIGHT?

AH!!

BUT... MOM TOLD ME
AUGUSTUS WAS SLEEPING IN
THE BIG BOX. AND YOU DON'T
LOOK OR SOUND LIKE HIM...

DON'T LOOK AT ME!!
DON'T LISTEN TO MY
VOICE!! I KNOW! I
KNOW I'M IN THERE!!

BUT PLEASE TELL ME I
STILL EXIST, CAROLE!!
SAY IT!!

HUH? SOMEONE
ELSE IS HERE!

ANOTHER MUTANT
TURTLE! AND THAT
SKIN TONE...!!

CAROLE!
GET AWAY!

CRAP! I FORGOT
'BOUT HIM!
SHADOW,
ACTUALLY,
THAT'S...

IT'S THE WILD
MUTANT TURTLE!!

IT'S A MONSTER!
IT'S GONNA EAT
YOU UP!!



LET GO OF THE
GIRL, YOU
ABOMINATION!!

URGH!!

I DON'T KNOW, BUT IT
DOESN'T MATTER, HE'S
DANGEROUS! WE MUST
GET AWAY, NOW!

BUT... HE
DOESN'T
LOOK
DANGEROUS!

CAROLE, ARE YOU
OKAY? DID HE
HURT YOU?

NO, I'M OKAY,
BUT WHY WAS HE
SAD? AND WHY
DOES HE KNOW
ABOUT MY
BROTHER...?

HEY... I RECOGNIZE
THAT VOICE.

CAROLE,
SHADOW...
WAIT FOR
ME...

OH NO!
NOT HIM!

...AND REVEAL
YOURSELF!!

NIGHT'S FALLING,
SHOW'S OVER FOR
YOU!

WAIT...
WAIT!!

SO YOU CAN STOP
PRETENDING...

MIKEY!

EH?
RENOIR...?

CAROLE!!
SHADOW!!
WAIT UP!! IT'S
ME, I TELL
YOU! ME!
AUGUSTUS!!

WHAT THE...?
IT CAN'T BE... YOU
REALLY DID IT...?

RENOIR!!

WAAAAIT!!

YOU TOOK IN THE
WILD MUTANT
TURTLE AND LET HIM
LOOSE AT THE
FUNERALS OF ITS
VICTIM? DOES IT
HURT WHEN YOU
THINK?

YEAH,
BUT...

RAPH... WHY YOU...!
NOW, IT'S AFTER SHADOW...
AND OTHER HUMANS TOO!!

MAKING FUN OF DEAD PEOPLE
WITH PRANK CALLS IS
SOMETHING, BUT... BUT THIS IS
UNFORGIVABLE!

URGH... WHA... JUST
HAPPENED...

HEHEHE. DON'T PUSH THIS
OLD CRANKY TURTLE TO
HIS LIMITS...

...LIL' BRO...

KNOW YOUR
PLACE, YA
WEAKLING!!

HUMPH. EVEN
THOUGH YA
THINK SHADOW
MIGHT BE IN
DANGER AS WE
SPEAK...

ACK!!

...YA DECIDE TO
WASTE YOUR TIME
PICKIN' A FIGHT WIT'
ME FOR YOUR IMAGE.
HOW HEROIC.

SH... SHUT
UP, RAPH!

OOF!!

ドサッ

DON'T MENTION
SPINTER'S NAME!! I
REMAIND YOU THAT BACK
THEN, IT WAS MOSTLY
YOUR FAULT!!

RAPH... YOU IDIOT. I'D
NEVER REJOICE AT THE
THOUGHT OF HIS DEATH.

I CAN PROMISE YA ONE
THING - RENAISSANCE AIN'T NO
WILD MUTANT AND NO ONE'S
GONNA GET HURT.
HOWEVER, KNOW THIS: YOUR
HUMAN WAYS HAVE SCREWED
YA UP REAL BAD. YA THINK
SPINTER'D BE PROUD OF
YOU THE WAY YOU ARE?

T'WAS OURS, MIKEY!
AND YOUR LIFE'S A
RESULT OF WHAT
HAPPENED!

MASTER
SPINTER...





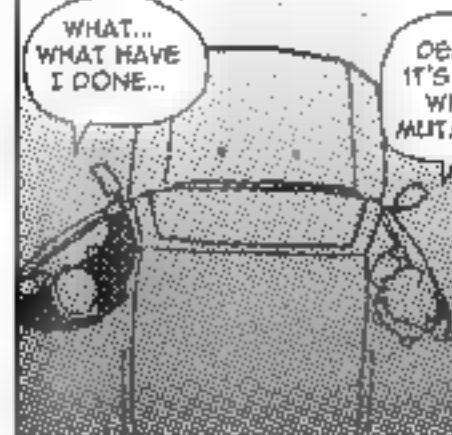
URGH... MY
SHELL... IT...
IT SAVED
US...?

SHADOW!
SHADOW!
ARE YOU
OKAY?



WHAT...
WHAT HAVE
I DONE...

DEARY!
IT'S THE
WILD
MUTANT!!



SHADOW, CAROLE!
ARE YOU OKAY?
EH... SOFT... WHAT THE...

HE'S... HE'S
MOLESTING
ME!!

PERVERT!
PIG!
LOWLIFE!

SORRY!
SORRY!
SORRY!



I KNEW IT! YOU ARE
AUGUSTUS! DOING
DIRTY THINGS,
GETTING BEATEN UP
BY A GIRL AND
APOLOGIZING...
THAT'S SO MUCH
LIKE YOU!

HHUUURRRRRFF...!

...AH...?

CAROLE!! ARE YOU OKAY? DID IT HURT YOU?

DAD, MOM, IT'S IT'S YOU?

YOU HEND... YOU'VE CLAIMED BY SON'S LIFE, BUT I WILL NOT ALLOW YOU TO LAY ANOTHER FINGER ON MY FAMILY!!

CAROLE!! OH, CAROLE!! I WAS SO SCARED!!

DADDY?

PLEASE LISTEN TO ME!
IT'S ME AUGUSTUS!
I KNOW IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE BUT... BUT...

LET DAD WAIT!!

I... I SAVED MY SISTER AND MY FRIEND! YOU SAW ME, RIGHT? I CAN'T BE AN EVIL MUTANT, RIGHT?

EVERYBODY LOOK! IT'S THE MONSTER!

I CALLED THE POLICE!

EVERYONE, RUN WHILE IT'S STUNNED!!

ISN'T THAT ENOUGH TO PROVE YOU I'M YOUR SON?

AAH! IT'S RUNNING AWAY!!

GO AWAY! GO AWAY!!

SOMEONE! DOES SOMEONE HAVE A FIREARM HERE? WE MUST KILL IT!!

I'M... NOT... A MONSTER... I'M NOT A MONSTER!!

IT'S... IT'S MIMICKING OUR LATE SON... THE MONSTER...!

SHAOOW, DEAD! COME OVER HERE QUICK! IT WILL KILL YOU!



ATTENTION TO
ALL CITIZENS.
THERE IS A
WILD ANIMAL
ON THE LOOSE.

PLEASE REMAIN
SAFELY
INDOORS UNTIL
FURTHER
NOTICE.

REPEAT...

PLEASE REMAIN SAFELY
INDOORS UNTIL FURTHER
NOTICE.



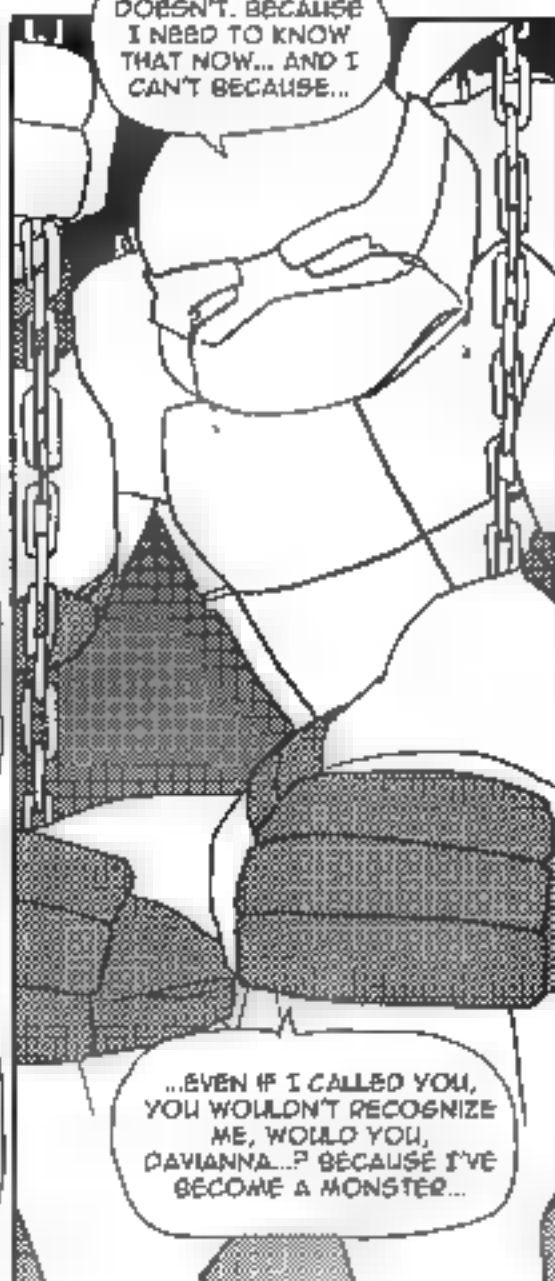
HEY, AUGUSTUS-
KUN, LET'S MAKE
THIS PARK OUR
MEETING POINT...
WE FIRST MET HERE
REMEMBER? I
COULDN'T EVEN
SPEAK ENGLISH...



WHenever you
feel sad, let
me know and
meet me here.
Okay? I'll
cheer you up
just like you
always did for
me!



KNOWING THAT
WE'LL ALWAYS
BE THERE FOR
EACH OTHER...
DOESN'T THIS
MAKE YOU
FEEL BETTER?

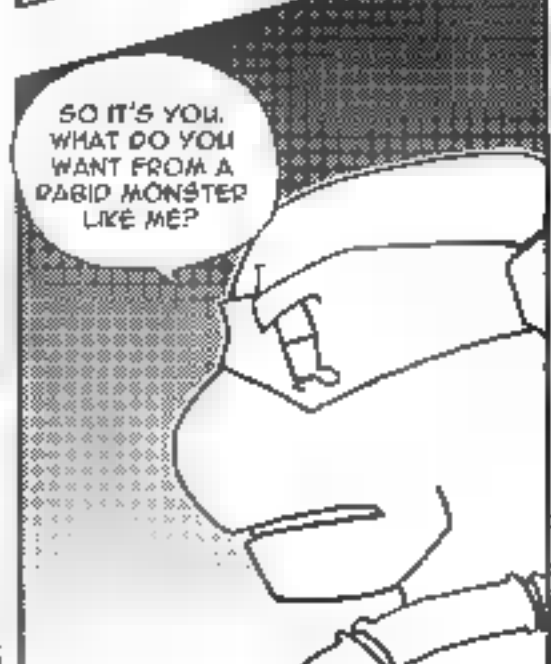


NO... NO, IT
DOESN'T. BECAUSE
I NEED TO KNOW
THAT NOW... AND I
CAN'T BECAUSE...

...EVEN IF I CALLED YOU,
YOU WOULDN'T RECOGNIZE
ME, WOULD YOU,
DAVIANNA...? BECAUSE I'VE
BECOME A MONSTER...



HUFF... HUFF...
SOMEHOW... I
KNEW YOU'D BE
HERE...



SO IT'S YOU.
WHAT DO YOU
WANT FROM A
RABID MONSTER
LIKE ME?

DON'T MAKE SAD PUPPY EYES!
JUST 'CUZ I CAME HERE
DOESN'T MEAN I'M GONNA GO
EASY ON YOU ■ YOU TRY
ANYTHING WEIRD, OKAY? ■
WANT YOU TO STAY THERE
AND ANSWER MY QUESTIONS!

...WHAT? ARE YOU
GOING TO ASK ME
IF I ENJOY HUMAN
FLESH WITH RED
WINE?

SHUT UP! I ASK
THE QUESTIONS
HERE!

WHY DID YOU SAVE
CAROLE AND ■ WHEN
YOU COULD'VE LET
THAT CAR TURN US
INTO HUMAN PURÉE
FOR YOU TO
DEVOUR?

FOR ONE, I DO
NOT ENJOY
SUPPING ON MY
OWN LITTLE
SISTER.

BUT
ALSO...

I OWE YOU.
I'M ALWAYS
INDEBTED TO
YOU. DO YOU
REMEMBER
WHY,
SHADOW?

INDEBTED
TO ME...
YOU...?

SOMETIMES, MY WOMANIZING
PERSONALITY WOULD INFURIATE
SOME GIRLS' BOYFRIENDS.
THEY'D GANG UP ON ME AND BEAT
ME UP.

BUT I WAS NEVER SCARED,
BECAUSE YOU WERE ALWAYS ONE
STEP BEHIND ME - BEATING UP
THE PERVERT THAT I AM... BUT
ALSO, PROTECTING ME FROM
MY RIVALS.

DAVIANNA... SHE
WAS THERE FOR ME
WHEN I WAS HURT
EMOTIONALLY. YOU
WERE THERE FOR
ME WHEN I WAS
HURT PHYSICALLY...
I USED TO HAVE IT
ALL... I TOOK IT ALL
FOR GRANTED.

BUT NOW... I HAVE
NOTHING... I LOST
EVERYTHING...

JUST ANSWER MY
QUESTIONS.

P...PINK WITH GREEN
SKULLS? AND IT WAS A
THONG, NOT PANTIES!

Y...YES!
SHAKESPEARE THE
MUTANT DOLPHIN-
TURTLE NINJA!

KLINK! IT WAS
ORANGE!

COLOSNE
CHANNELING
#7...

MY LATE CAT'S
NAME?

THE GIFT YOU
GAVE ME FOR MY
14TH BIRTHDAY?

WHAT WAS OUR
FAVORITE TOY
WHEN WE WERE
SIX?

SHADOW...?

MY SECRET PANTIES THAT YOU
"ACCIDENTLY" SAW WHEN YOU
BENT DOWN TO PICK UP A
QUARTER DURING LAST YEAR'S
VALENTINE'S DAY PARTY...?

IMPOSSIBLE! NO
ONE, NOT EVEN
MY PARENTS
KNOW I HAVE
THAT KIND OF
LINGERIE... EXCEPT
AUGUSTUS... THAT
PERVERT... NO... IT
CAN'T BE!!

WHAT...!!

AUGUSTUS, IT'S
YOU!
BUT... WHY ARE
YOU...

SHADOW... I... I NEED
SOME EMOTIONAL
RELIEF... CAN... CAN I?

SURE...
WHATEVER...

OOOOH!! SHADOW!
THANK YOU! THANK
YOU FOR BELIEVING
ME!! I'M SO HAPPY!!

AAAAH!

AH... SOFT
AND WARM...?
OH CRAP...

YOU...!!

YOU HAVEN'T
CHANGED...
GOOD, GOOD

S... SORRY,
SHADOW!

THIS MEANS, I
WON'T FEEL BAD
PUNISHING YOU!!

UGYA!

YA LOUSY PERV!!

YOU'RE STILL THE
DESPICABLE WORM I
HAD TO ENDURE
SINCE MY CHILD-
HOOD, YOU... YOU...
ARRGGH!!!

HEHE, JUST LIKE CASEY.
LIKE FATHER, LIKE...
DAUGHTER, I GUESS.

OW! OW! OW!
NOT THE FACE!
SHADOW!! I'M
SORRRYYYYY!

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES GALLERY

CHAPTER 3: BROKEN BROTHERHOOD BURDEN FROM "BACK THEN"





(COUGH) M...
MASTER RAPHAEL!
(COUGH)



SHUDDAP
AND FOCUS
ON YOUR
BALANCE.
OR ELSE...

Y... YOU KNOW, I HAVEN'T
EATEN ANYTHING SINCE I
STARTED LIVING HERE!!

I KNOW, I KNOW! THE
SHARDS OF GLASS
ON THE GROUND!!
A... ARE YOU OUT OF
YOUR MIND? WHY ARE
YOU DOING THIS TO
ME? I... I CAN GET
HURT, YOU KNOW?

STOP WHINING, YA
WORM! AS A NINJA
TURTLE, I WANT 'CHA TO
LEARN TO BALANCE THE
WEIGHT OF YOUR ENTIRE
BODY, INCLUDING YOUR
SHELL AND YOUR
STUPID HEAD FULL OF
CRAP!
NOW FOCUS!



AH...AH...

ACHOO!!



WHOA!

HYAAA!
NOT MY
BEAUTIFUL
BUTT!!

MUST...
CONTROL...
URGE TO KILL...

AAH...? THE
SHARDS OF GLASS
ARE GONE...
HOW COME THERE
IS SMOKE COMING
OUT OF THE LOG I
WAS USING?

THAT AIN'T JUST A
NORMAL LOG, YA
IDIOT! CAN'T 'CHA
SEE? T'WAS MY BRO
DONNIE'S HOLOGRAM
GENERATOR...
SHAPED LIKE A LOG!!

AND FOR YOUR
INFORMATION...

...EEH?

I... I DON'T FEEL ANY
PAIN...

...MACHINES
DON'T NEED TO
BE WATERED TO
BE MAINTAINED!

HEY! HOW COULD I
KNOW THAT? IT'S
NOT LIKE I SAW THE
HOLOGRAMS APPEAR
WHEN I CAME IN
HERE...

...AND YOU'RE
THE SADIST
WHO FORCED
ME TO CARRY
BUCKETS OF
WATER LIKE
THAT!!

SHADOAP, YA INSOLENT
SLACKER! ILLUSIONS
WERE NECESSARY!
WITHOUT PROPER
'MOTIVATION', I KNOW
A MAGGOT LIKE YOU
AIN'T GONNA TRAIN
SERIOUSLY!!

DAMMIT... IF I WANNA GET THIS
THING FIXED AND RUNNIN' AGAIN,
I'M GONNA HAVE TO GET ON MY
KNEES AND BEE DONNIE FOR
SOME TECH SUPPORT... URGH...

I GIVE YOU AN OPPORTUNITY
TO SOCIALIZE WITH YOUR BROTHER
AND THIS IS THE THREAT I
GET STARVATION. I FEEL LIKE
I'M IN A BOOT CAMP

BE DAMN GRATEFUL I
HAVEN'T KICKED YER ASS
YET FOR PISSIN' ME OFF
ALL THE TIME!

IF YOU'RE SO HUNGRY, GET
THE HELL OUTTA HERE AND
GO LEECH ON SHADOW, YA
DAMN KID!!

Brooklyn
09:00 PM

LOOK AT THAT WEIROO!

DID I SEE GREEN SKIN?

I KNEW IT. JUST A TRENCHCOAT WASN'T ENOUGH TO BLEND IN THE CROWD. HAVE I BECOME THAT MUCH OF AN EYESORE?

COULD IT BE... THE DANGEROUS MAN-EATING MUTANT?

SHH... DON'T STARTLE IT!

I SAW THE MUTANT WANDERING AROUND HERE, OFFICER! IT'S PROBABLY BE STILL AROUND!

THANK YOU, MISS. WE'LL SCOUT THIS AREA...

...AND WE'LL CATCH THAT MUTANT, REST ASSURED.

AT LEAST I REACHED SHADOW'S APARTMENT BUILDING... BUT I SUPPOSE IT'S NO LONGER SAFE FOR ME TO ENTER THROUGH THE FRONT DOOR.

THERE HAS TO BE AN ALTERNATIVE ENTRANCE...

LA--LALA--LA--LAAA...

HA...HAHAHA
HA--HA...

AH... SHADOW!

YAAAAAH!!
A STALKER!!



GET OUTTA
HERE, THE
BOTH OF YOU!!



HUMILIATING ME YESTERDAY WAS NOT
ENOUGH FOR RAPH SO HE SENT THE
NOTORIOUS KILLER MUTANT TO MAKE MY
LIFE MISERABLE, DIDN'T HE? I'M GONNA
MAKE YOU PAY FOR WHAT HE DID!



...HUH? YOU JUST CAME
LOOKING FOR FOOD? OH,
OKAY... COME HERE.
I'LL SEE WHAT'S LEFT IN THE
FRIDGE.

...WHAT ARE YOU WAITING
FOR...? HEY, STAY
AWAY FROM THE
BATHROOM!

SORRY I
SHOWED UP
SO LATE IN
THE NIGHT,
SHADOW,
IT'S...

URGH... THAT RAPH. HE NEVER HAD
WHAT IT TAKES TO BE A LEADER,
AND NOW HE WANTS TO BE A
SENSEI! HE DOESN'T EVEN
BOTHER TO GIVE FOOD TO HIS
OWN DISCIPLE...

I KNOW... THE
NOCTURNAL
LIFE OF A
MUTANT
TURTLE...

YEAH... I'M
STILL NOT
USED TO IT,
THOUGH...



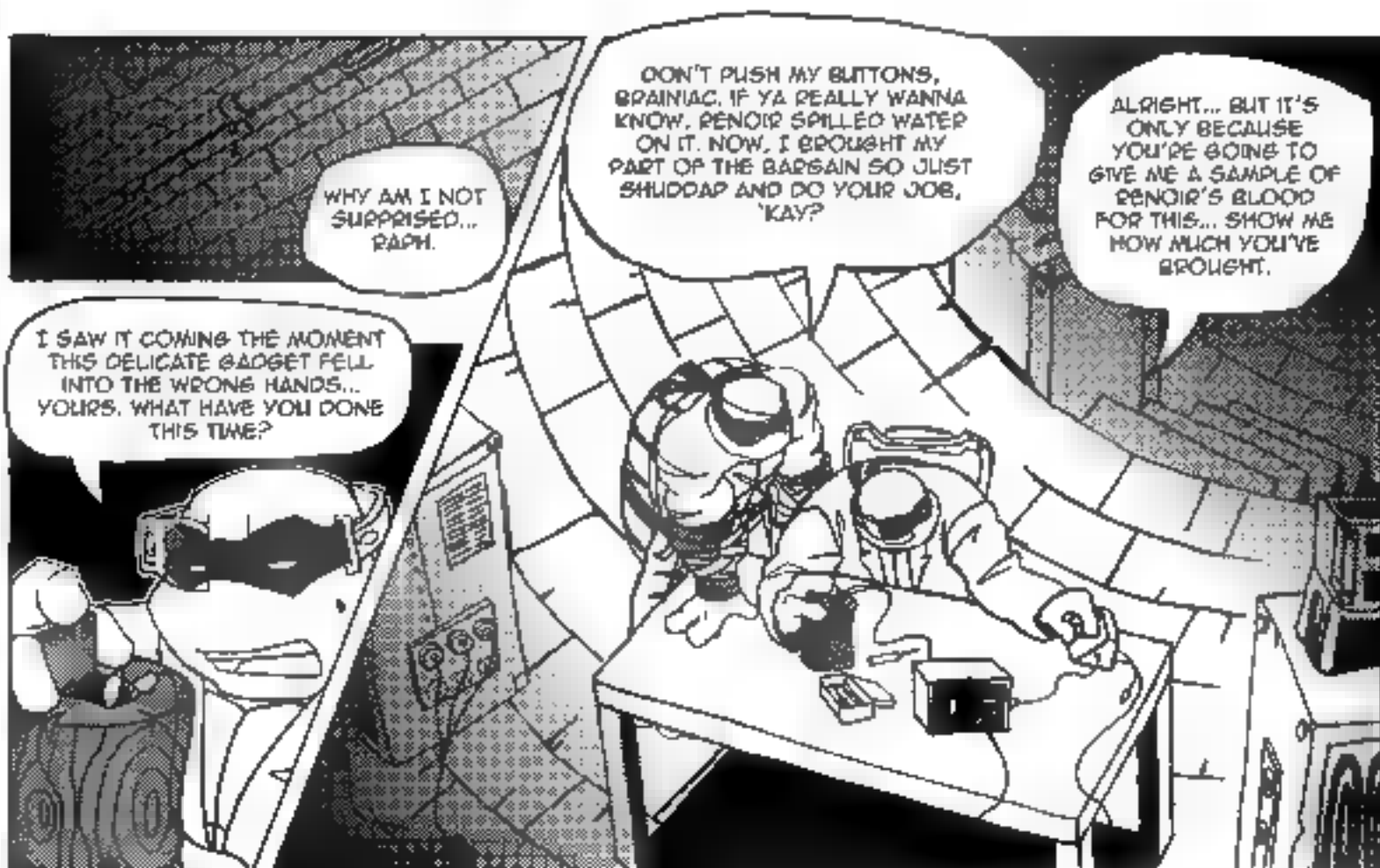
NO, I'M FINE.
THANKS!! I'M SO
HUNGRY ANYTHING
WOULD DO RIGHT
NOW...

SAY, I HEARD THAT
RAPHAEL, THAT
'DONNIE' GUY AND
YOU... SIR 'MIKEY' ARE
RELATED, AREN'T
YOU? ARE YOU
BROTHERS?



YEAH,
BROTHERS. NOT
BLOOD RELATED,
BUT... BROTHERS.
NONETHELESS,
IT'S... A LONG
STORY.



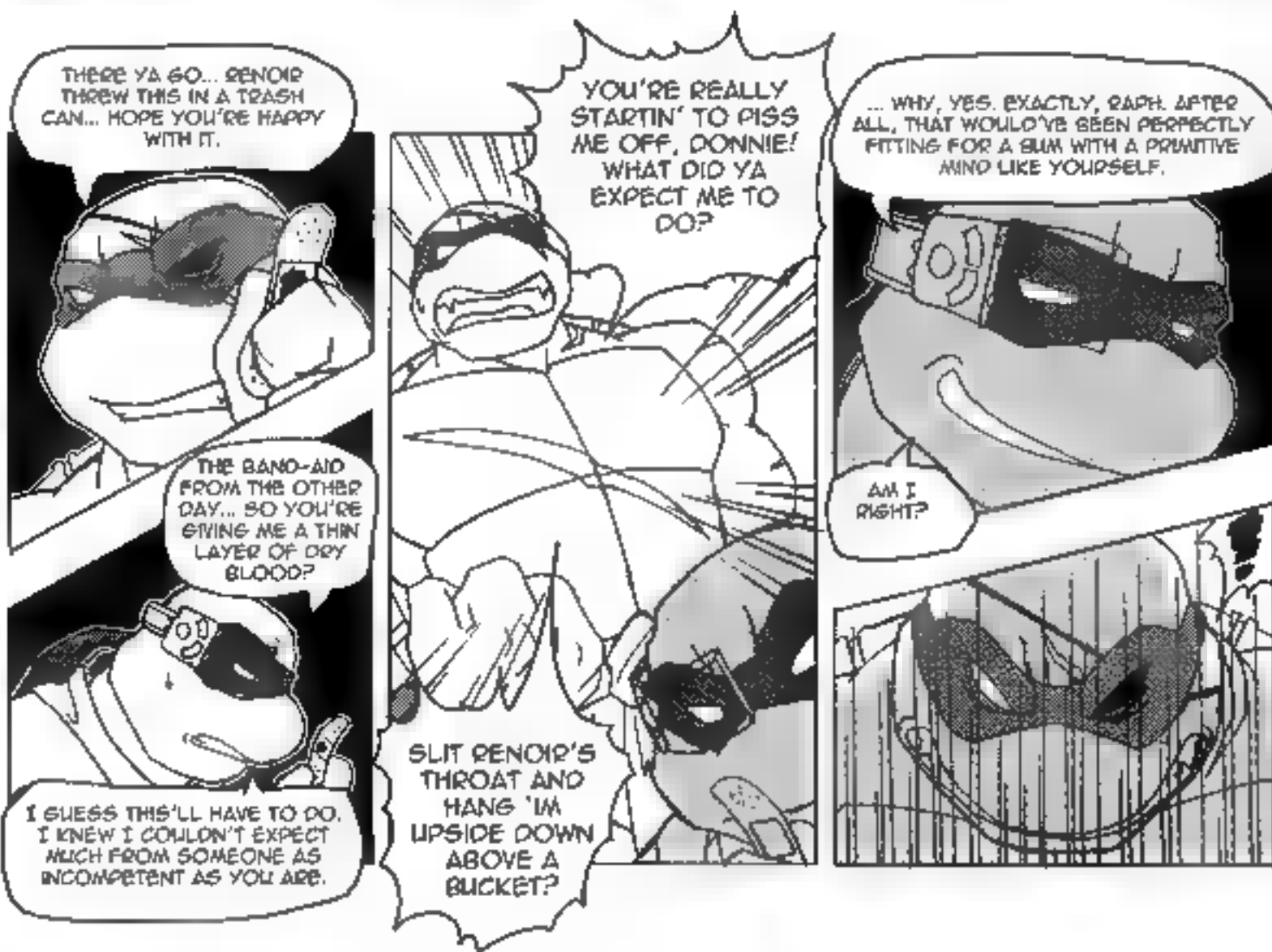


WHY AM I NOT
SURPRISED...
RAPH.

DON'T PUSH MY BUTTONS,
BRAINIAC. IF YA REALLY WANNA
KNOW, RENOIR SPILLED WATER
ON IT. NOW, I BROUGHT MY
PART OF THE BARGAIN SO JUST
SHUDDAP AND DO YOUR JOB,
'KAY?

ALRIGHT... BUT IT'S
ONLY BECAUSE
YOU'RE GOING TO
GIVE ME A SAMPLE OF
RENOIR'S BLOOD
FOR THIS... SHOW ME
HOW MUCH YOU'VE
BROUGHT.

I SAW IT COMING THE MOMENT
THIS DELICATE GADGET FELL
INTO THE WRONG HANDS...
YOURS. WHAT HAVE YOU DONE
THIS TIME?



THERE YA GO... RENOIR
THREW THIS IN A TRASH
CAN... HOPE YOU'RE HAPPY
WITH IT.

THE BAND-AID
FROM THE OTHER
DAY... SO YOU'RE
GIVING ME A THIN
LAYER OF DRY
BLOOD?

I GUESS THIS'LL HAVE TO DO.
I KNEW I COULDN'T EXPECT
MUCH FROM SOMEONE AS
INCOMPETENT AS YOU ARE.

YOU'RE REALLY
STARTIN' TO PISS
ME OFF, DONNIE!
WHAT DID YA
EXPECT ME TO
DO?

SLIT RENOIR'S
THROAT AND
HANG 'IM
UPSIDE DOWN
ABOVE A
BUCKET?

... WHY, YES. EXACTLY, RAPH. AFTER
ALL, THAT WOULD'VE BEEN PERFECTLY
FITTING FOR A BUM WITH A PRIMITIVE
MIND LIKE YOURSELF.

AM I
RIGHT?

SO, YOU GUYS WERE
A BAND OF FOUR NINJA
BROTHERS? ABOUT
THAT LEONARDO? GUY,
WHY IS HE IN JAPAN?
AND WHY DID YOU ALL
SPLIT UP?



IT WAS ALL
BECAUSE OF AN
INCIDENT THAT
OCCURRED
SEVENTEEN
YEARS AGO

ON THAT
DREAFUL DAY
OUR MASTER
WAS KILLED AT
THE HANDS OF
LEONARDO

"WE USED TO BE SO
CLOSE, DESPITE
OUR DIFFERENCES."



"BUT THE CIRCUMSTANCES
SURROUNDING THE DEATH
OF OUR SUPPORTE
FATHER CHANGED US ALL."

DON'T CHA
FUCKIN' MESS
WIT' ME,
ASSHOLE!



"IT'S LIKE WE
COULDN'T TRUST EACH
OTHER ANYMORE LIKE
WE USED TO."



"WE COULDN'T DEPEND ON
EACH OTHER ANYMORE
SO WE EACH WENT DOWN
OUR OWN PATH IN LIFE."

THOSE
MARKS."

"IT WAS THEN THAT I REALIZED
HOW MUCH WE DEPEND ON OUR
MASTER FOR GUIDANCE. WITHOUT
HIM, IN A TIME OF CHAOS, EVEN
OUR LEADER LEONARDO WASN'T
ABLE TO KEEP EVERYONE UNITED."



L...LEONARDO...

"LEONARDO WENT TO JAPAN ON A
QUEST FOR REDEMPTION

DONATELLO ISOLATED HIMSELF IN HIS
LAB, IN HIS OWN LITTLE WORLD.

I DECIDED TO START MY LIFE OVER.

RAFAEL HE WAS THE LAST ONE TO
TRY TO KEEP EVERYONE UNITED.. IN HIS
OWN WAY



DAMMIT, LEO...
EVEN WHEN YOU'RE
NOT HERE... YOU
MANAGE TO
RESTRAIN ME...

I HOPE YOU'RE
SATISFIED.

NOW BEAT
IT, RAPH.

YOU'RE NO LONGER OF ANY USE
TO ME. NOW THAT I HAVE RENOIR'S
BLOOD, YOU'RE BACK TO YOUR
FORMER WORTHLESS STATE.

SHIT... WHY HAS
OUR FAMILY FALLEN
THIS LOW?

EVEN THOUGH WE
LIVE IN A "DOG-EAT-
DOG" WORLD... WE'VE
ALWAYS BEEN THERE
FOR EACH OTHER...
DONNIE... WHY...?

I WAS BORN AFTER THAT
INCIDENT, SO I'VE NEVER
HAD THE CHANCE TO
MEET UNCLE LEONARDO...
OR TO SEE THE THREE
OTHERS UNITED AS A
NORMAL FAMILY.

BUT THEY DO SEE
EACH OTHER FROM
TIME TO TIME.
DON'T THEY?

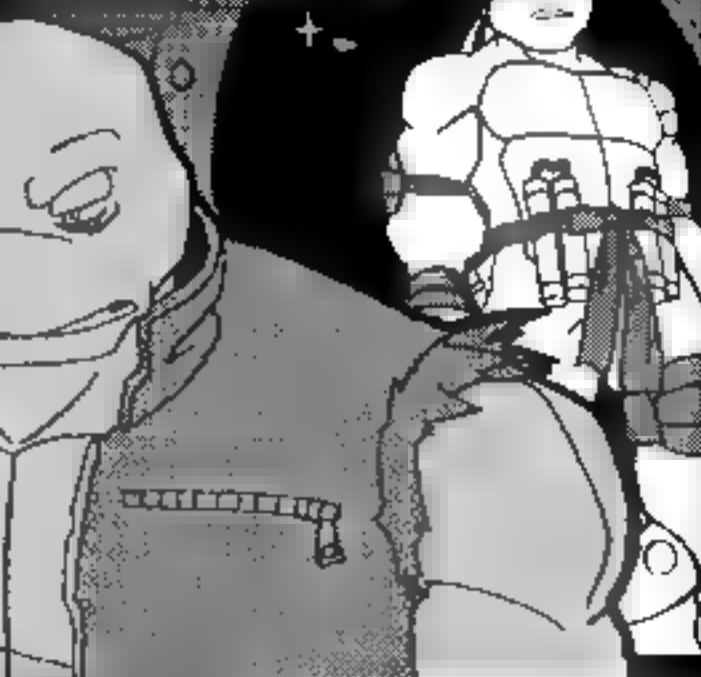
OUTSIDE OF UNCLE
LEO, YEAH. EACH
CHRISTMAS, UNCLE
RAPH AND UNCLE
DONNIE COME OVER TO
CELEBRATE WITH US.

IT DOESN'T HELP THAT
RAPHAEL ALWAYS HAD
TROUBLE EXPRESSING
HIMSELF... HE ARGUES
WITH RAGE AND FISTS...
NOT WITH REASON.

BUT THE TENSION ■
ALWAYS PALPABLE
WHenever THEY MEET.
SOMETIMES, IT WOULD
END UP IN A FIGHT...

"A FEW DAYS AFTER OUR MASTER'S DEATH, I WENT BACK TO OUR OLD LAIR TO PICK UP MY STUFF BECAUSE I WAS MOVING OUT.

WHEN I BROKE OUT THE NEWS TO RAPHAEL, I REALIZED THAT REASONING WITH HIM WAS A WASTE OF TIME..."



SO... YA CAME CRAWLIN' BACK HOME, TRAITOR!!

YA SOUGHT SHELTER IN THE HUMAN WORLD, RUNNIN' AWAY FROM THE CONSEQUENCES OF OUR SIN, DIDN'T YA, MIKEY?

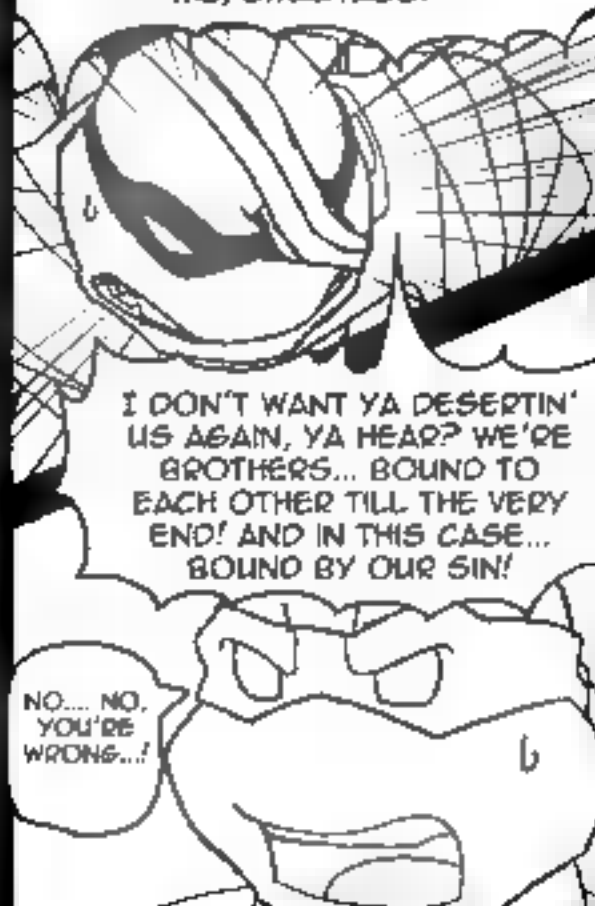
W...WHAT SIN, RAPH? IT'S NOT LIKE I...!

YA BET 'CHA DID!! WHOSE IDEA WAS IT TO SNEAK INTO SPLINTER'S ROOM TO 'CHECK OUT' THAT PACKAGE, HUM? TELL ME, SMARTASS!

I DON'T WANT YA DESERTIN' US AGAIN, YA HEAR? WE'RE BROTHERS... BOUND TO EACH OTHER TILL THE VERY END! AND IN THIS CASE... BOUND BY OUR SIN!

NO... NO, YOU'RE WRONG...!

"DONNIE FOUND RAPH WOUNDED IN THE SEWERS AFTER THE INCIDENT AND TREATED HIS WOUNDS. I THOUGHT THAT HE WAS MAD AT ME BECAUSE I WASN'T THERE FOR HIM, BUT THERE WAS MORE TO IT..."



NO!! STOP
BLAMING ME,
RAPH!! I... I
DIDN'T DO
ANYTHING!!

W...WHAT
DID YA
SAY??

I JUST
CAME BY TO
PICK UP MY
STUFF,
RAPH. I'M
MOVING IN
WITH APRIL
TO RESTART
MY LIFE
FROM
SCRATCH!

THAT BURDEN AND
THAT BOND OF
YOURS... I DON'T
WANT 'EM!!

...SO STOP HANGING ON TO ME LIKE
THAT! WE'RE NOT 'BOUND'
TO EACH OTHER ANYMORE!

Y...YOLL...
TRAITOR...

ADMIT IT! YOU JUST DON'T HAVE
THE GUTS TO CARRY YOUR OWN
BURDEN ALONE! YOU ATTACK
OTHER PEOPLE AND MAKE THEM
VULNERABLE SO YOU CAN MAKE
THEM SHARE YOUR PAIN!
WELL THAT'S NOT GONNA WORK
WITH ME!! NOT THIS TIME!

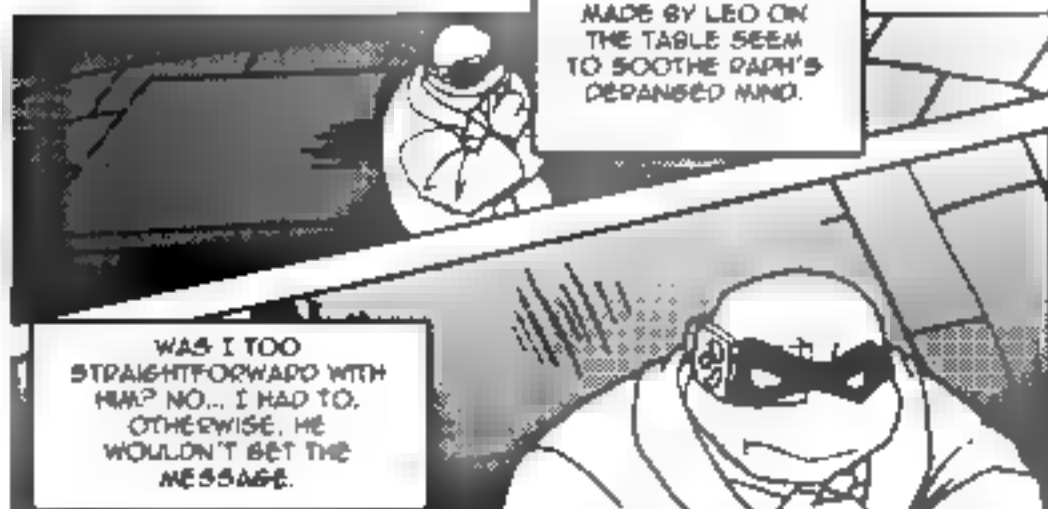
GOT IT,
RAPH?

I'M NOT
YOUR
BRO!

YOU TRAITOR!
I'M GONNA
KILL YA!!!

GO AHEAD,
RAPH! IT WON'T
MAKE ME
CHANGE MY
MIND!

SHUDDAP!
SHUT THE
HELL UP!!



ARE YA GIVIN'
ME THE SILENT
TREATMENT?
EHP?



...



KNOCK IT
OFF,
RAPH!



IF YOU'RE THAT
DESPERATE FOR
ATTENTION, THEN GO
PAY CASEY A VISIT! I
DON'T HAVE TIME TO
WASTE!



INDEED. RAPH
WOULDN'T
UNDERSTAND ME
HE WAS STILL
HANGING ON TO
HIS OWN VISION
OF REALITY

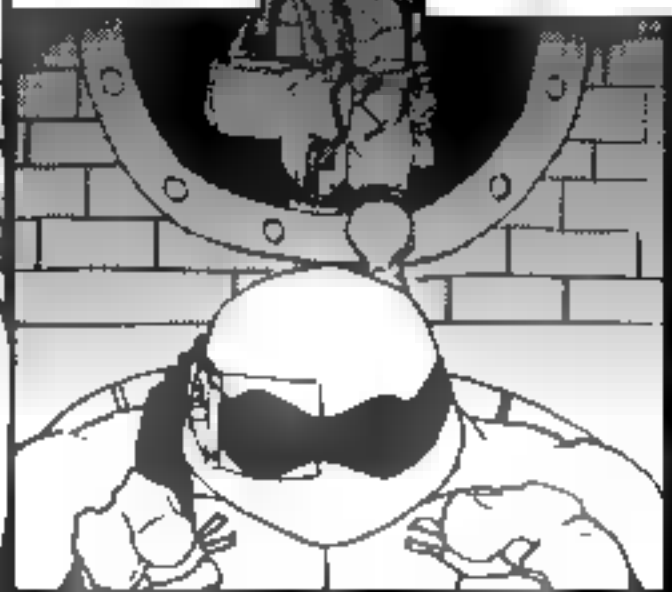
THAT'S WHY WE
EVENTUALLY
SPLIT UP AND
BECAME
DISTANT... IT WAS
HIS DECISION
AFTER ALL

DIDN'T YOU
GET IT THE
FIRST TIME I
IGNORED
YOU?



OR ARE YOU
JUST TOO DUMB
TO UNDERSTAND
THAT I'M BUSY?

YOU KNOW I'M A
WORKAHOLIC BY
NATURE, SO LIVE WITH
IT OR GO AWAY! I
DON'T INTEND TO
CHANGE MY LIFE-
STYLE TO SATISFY
YOUR SILLY WHIMS!





NO ONE IN SIGHT...
GOOD.



RENOIR
SHOULD BE AT
APRIL'S
APARTMENT.



I HOPE HE
DIDN'T GET
CAUGHT BY
THE COPS OR
SOMETHING. I
DON'T WANNA
HAVE TO ASK
DONNIE TO
HELP ME GO
FETCH HIM.



THAT
DONNIE...
WHAT'S
WRONG
WITH HIM...?

MR. 'MIKEY', ARE YOU
SURE IT'S OKAY FOR ME
TO LOOK IN YOUR
PHOTO ALBUM?

YEAH. I THINK YOU
SHOULD. I WANT YOU
TO UNDERSTAND WHO
WE NINJA TURTLES ARE.

HUH... I CAN HARDLY IMAGINE SOMEONE
AS VIOLENT AND GRUMPY AS RAPHAEL
BONDING WITH ANYBODY... THESE
PHOTOS ALMOST SEEM SURREAL TO
ME. WHAT DO YOU THINK, SHADOW?



HEY,
SHADOW?



ZZZ...

AH... OH WELL.
HEY, WAKEY-
WAKEY,
SHADOW!



SSH!! LET HER
SLEEP! I'LL
CARRY HER TO
HER ROOM.

BUT...

SHE DIDN'T SLEEP FOR THE
LAST TWO DAYS. WITNESSING A
CHILDHOOD FRIEND'S DEATH
AND REINCARNATION WOULD
CAUSE ANYONE TO BE
RESTLESS, DON'T YOU THINK?

HUH? HOW DID
YOU KNOW I
WAS HER..



I SHOULD'VE
KNOWN... YOU'RE THE
ONE SHE DIDN'T STOP
TALKING ABOUT FOR
THE LAST THREE
DAYS...



HOWEVER...

...LET'S BE CLEAR ON
ONE THING: I DON'T
TRUST YOU FIRST OF
ALL, WHO ARE YOU?
'RENOIR'? JUST A WILD
MUTANT? NOT A
REINCARNATED HUMAN,
THAT'S FOR SURE...



ALSO, YOU APPEARED
OUT OF NOWHERE, KILLED
A HUMAN, CREATED A
HUGE COMOTION BY
SHOWING UP IN PUBLIC AT
THE DEAD GUY'S
FUNERALS...



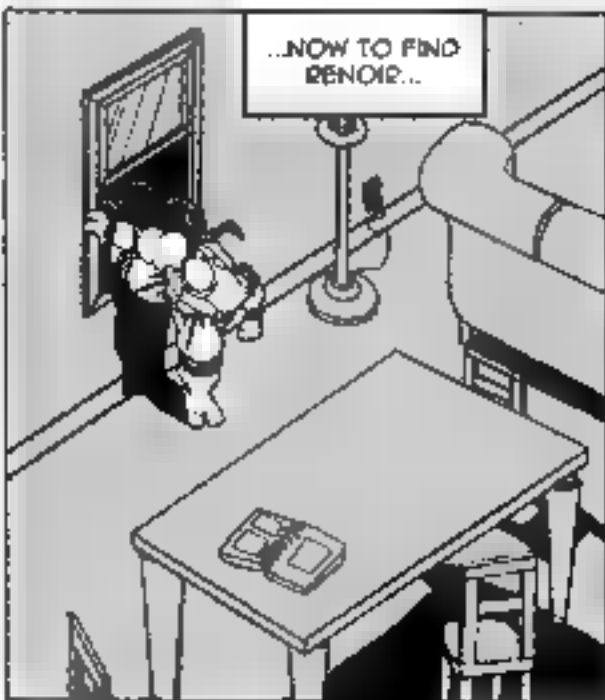
NONE OF THIS ADDS UP.
UNTIL I KNOW YOU CAN
BE TRUSTED, I DON'T
WANT SHADOW TO HAVE
ANYTHING TO DO WITH
SUSPICIOUS MUTANTS
LIKE YOU



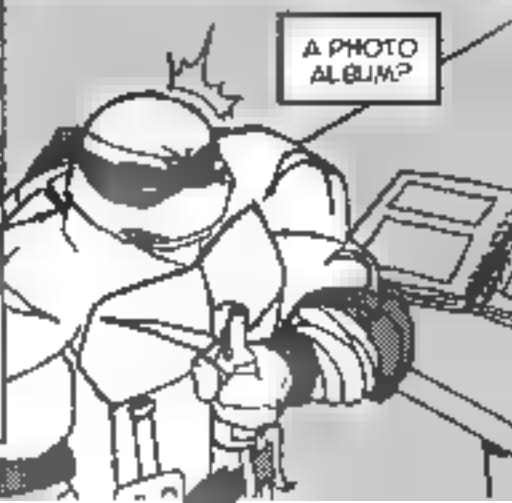
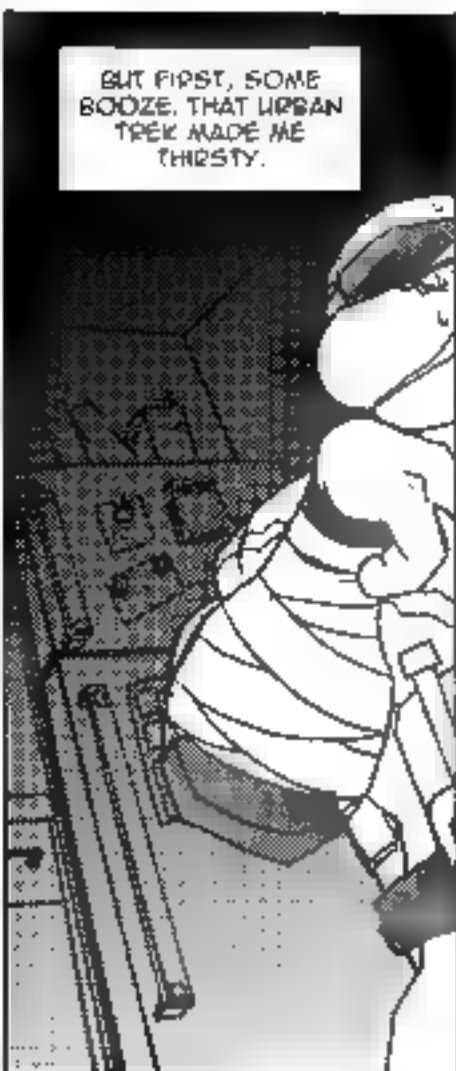
BUT FIRST, SOME
BOOZE. THAT URBAN
TREK MADE ME
THIRSTY.



...NOW TO FIND
RENOIR...



A PHOTO
ALBUM?



I UNDERSTAND IF
YOU DON'T TRUST
ME, BUT THEN...

WHY WOULD YOU GIVE
SO MUCH PERSONAL
INFORMATION ABOUT
YOUR FAMILY TO
SOMEONE YOU DON'T
TRUST?

I MEAN, WE RARELY MET,
AND YOU'RE ALREADY
INSISTING ON LETTING ME
KNOW EVERYTHING ABOUT
YOUR BROTHERS!

THAT YOU ARE OVER-
PROTECTIVE OF SHADOW
BUT DON'T CARE ABOUT
YOUR BROTHERS

DO YOU
HATE THEM
THAT MUCH?

THE GOOD OL'
DAYS...
WHEN WE WERE
STILL A FAMILY..

LEO, DONNIE, MIKEY,
SENSEI ME

WAIT,
WHAT AGE
THOSE...?

NOT YOU'VE GOT - ALL
WRONG! I DON'T HAVE
MY BROTHERS
ESPECIALLY NOT RAPH

OKAY I ADMIT IT... I
I'M WORRIED ABOUT
RAPH BUT HOW CAN I
DO ANYTHING FOR HIM
WHEN HE KEEPS
REJECTING MY HELP?

THAT'S WHY I TOLD YOU EVERYTHING
I WANT YOU TO UNDERSTAND HIM.
BETTER AND HOPEFULLY BE A
BETTER HELP TO HIM THAN I WAS ALL
THIS TIME

YOU, ON THE OTHER HAND, ARE IN A PERFECT POSITION TO REACH HIM IN HIS CURRENT STATE

THIS CASE IS SO DESPERATE AT THIS POINT THAT I'D ENTRUST HIM TO ANYONE IF GIVEN THE CHANCE, EVEN IF THAT PERSON IS AS SUSPICIOUS AS YOU ARE

00116898 9780000000000

権威

IT CAME FROM
THE LIVING
ROOM

L...LOOK AT THOSE PH
PHOTOS. J...(MIC) JUST
LOOK AT HOW JOLLY YOU
WERE... ALL TH...THESE LAST
SEVENTEEN Y YEARS. WH...
WHILE I WAS. ALL
ALOOOOONE.. (MIC)

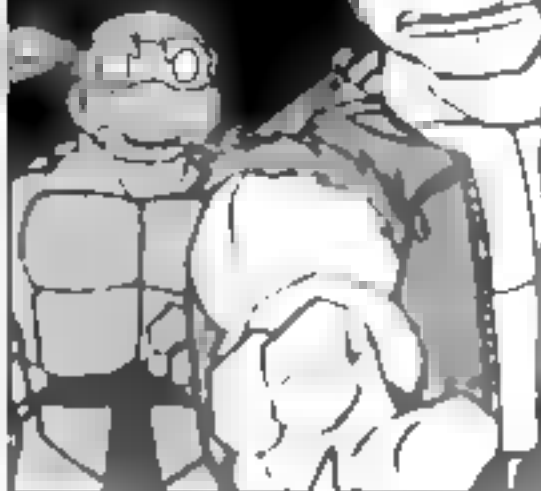
AFTER
A...A... AFTER WE
KILLED OFF TH...
THAT OLD RAT...
TH THE TWO OF
US (MIC)



I... I
HELPED YA K
KILL HIM (MIC)
DID... DID THAT
DID THAT MAKE
YOU HAPPY
TOO?

C'MON (MIC)
THANK ME, BRO.
TH...THANK ME
FOR KILLING
SSSSPLINTER.

ALL THESE EMPTY
BOTTLES DID HE
REALLY...?



THAT THE
OPP. EACH
LET'S

SH...SHUDDAP!! SHUDDAP!! Y...
YA MAKE ME WANNA PUKE!!

W... WE'VE
COMMITTED A SIN!!
Y... YA HEAR? W...
WE KILLED OUR
FATHER!!

WHOA...!

D...DON'T CHA HAVE
A C... CONSCIENCE,
DAMMIT!!

YA HAVEN'T D...
DONE A DAMN
THING TO REDEEM
YERSELF! Y... YA
JUST LIVED YER
H...HAPPY LIFE!!

W... WE DON'T DESERVE TO
ENJOY LIFE!! HELL, WE D...
DON'T EVEN DESERVE TO LIVE!!
WE'RE P...PARASITES, YA HEAR
ME? PARASITES THAT K... KILL
THEIR F...FATHERS!!

WE'RE KILLERS,
MIKEY!
S...SINNERS!
W... WE'RE NOT
WORTHY OF
ANYTHING!!



UM... MASTER
RAPHAEL...

WHAT? W...WHAT
THE FUCK DO
YA WANT,
R...RENOIR?

M-M-M-M-MASTER! I...
I... D... DONATELLO!!
YEAH, DONATELLO!

D...
DONATELLO?

D...DID DONATELLO
FIX THE MACHINE? I
HOPE HE WASN'T UPSET
OO ANYTHING...

DON...NIE...

MY... MY OWN BRO... HE...
HE'S NOT THE SAME
ANYMORE S... SINCE
SPLINTER DIED... H...HE
ALWAYS LOOKS D...
DOWN ON ME A... AND...
AND...

I... I DON'T CARE IF I G... GET
HATED... BUT NOT FAMILY... NOT
BY FAMILY!!
NOT BY DONNIE... OF ALL
P...PEOPLE... WHY HIM...? WHY...?







IT'S ALRIGHT, RAPH.
LET IT ALL OUT. IT'LL
MAKE YOU FEEL
BETTER...

BWAAARGGGHH!!





"I'M HERE FOR YOU, BRO...
JUST RELAX FOR NOW."



CHAPTER 4:
WATCH OUT!
BUSINESS WITH
THE PURPLE
DRAGONS!

THAT'S IT FOR TODAY,
CLASS. NOW BEFORE
YOU LEAVE, I MUST
TAKE ATTENDANCE.

MATTHEW
HARDING.

HERE.

DAVIANNA
WALLACE.

HERE.

SHADOW
JONES.

WAKE UP,
MS.
JONES!

YES
MA'AM!!

THIS ISN'T
YOUR FIRST
OFFENSE
IN MY
CLASS!!

PSST...

SHADOW
JONES.

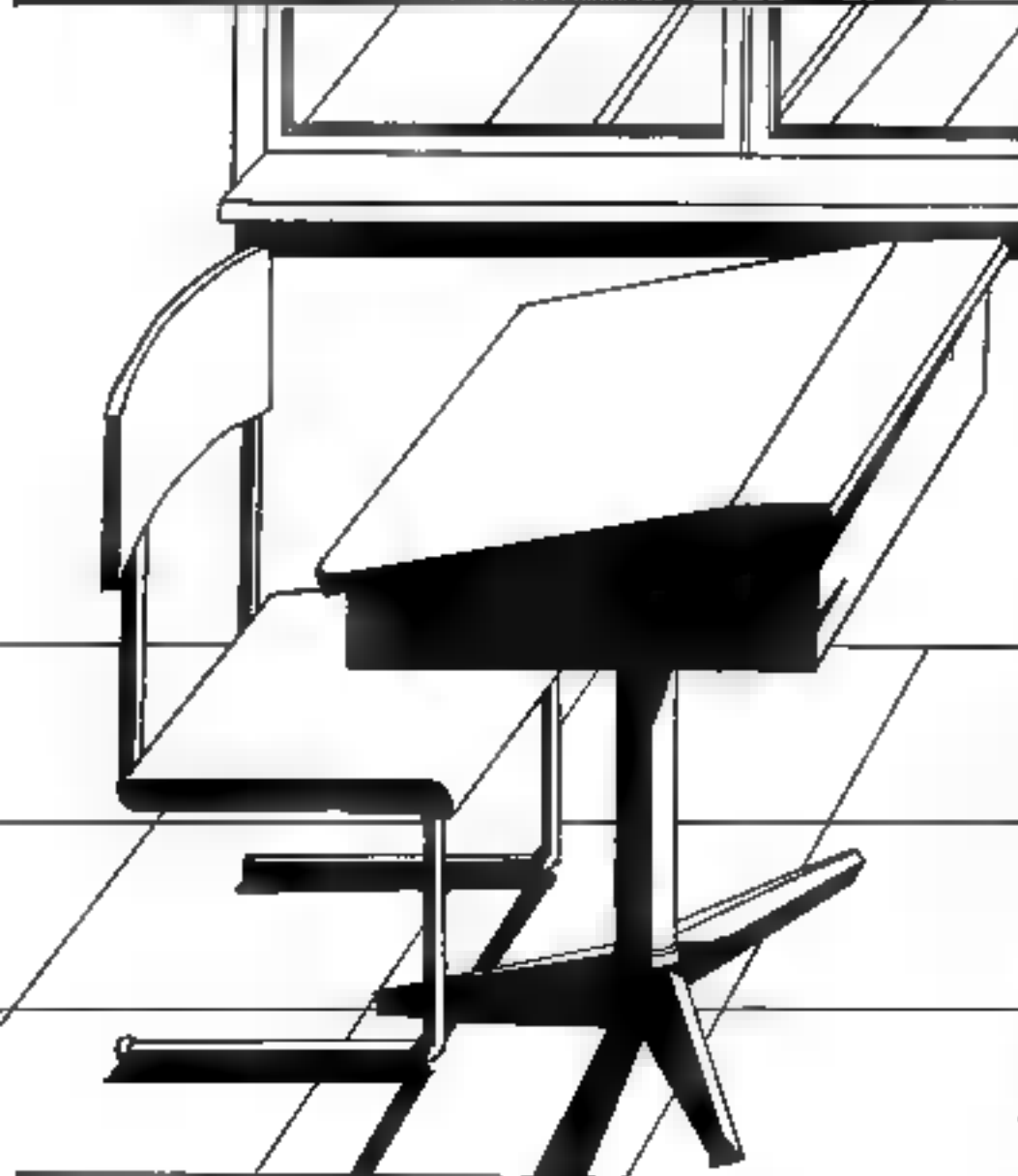
ZZZ...

THANKS TO
LINC' RAPH,
I DIDN'T GET
ANY DECENT
SHUT EYE
LAST NIGHT...

WHAT AM
I TO DO
WITH YOU?

ANDREW
LAVERNE.

HERE.



THEY WERE ALWAYS KINDA CLOSE...

...AND NOW, HE'S OUT OF HER LIFE. POOR DAVIANNA.



HEY, ARE YOU ALRIGHT, DAVIANNA?

OH, I'M FINE, CYNTHIA! JUST DAYDREAMING!



WE'LL SNAP OUT OF IT, 'CUZ THE BOYS HAVE CHALLENGED OUR TEAM TO A SOCCER GAME!

TEENEE!
OKAY!
LET'S SHOW THEM GIRL POWER! ♡



MAYBE I SHOULD BRING HIM BACK HIS STUFF...

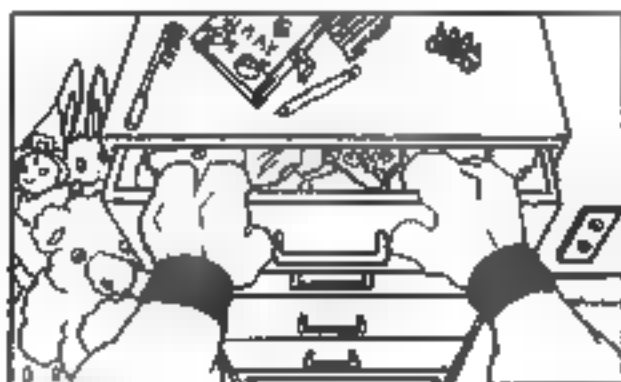


STOLEN LINGERIE AND PHOTOS OF GIRLS CHANGING IN THE LOCKER ROOM.

THAT CREEP. IF HE GOES THROUGH MY STUFF AT HOME... I'LL KILL HIM!!



HEHEHE...



HANDS OFF
THOSE
PANTIES!

UGYA!



LUCKY FOR
YOU, HER
PARENTS ARE
AWAY ON A
SECOND
HONEYMOON.

CASEY
WOULD'VE
KICKED
YOUR ASS...

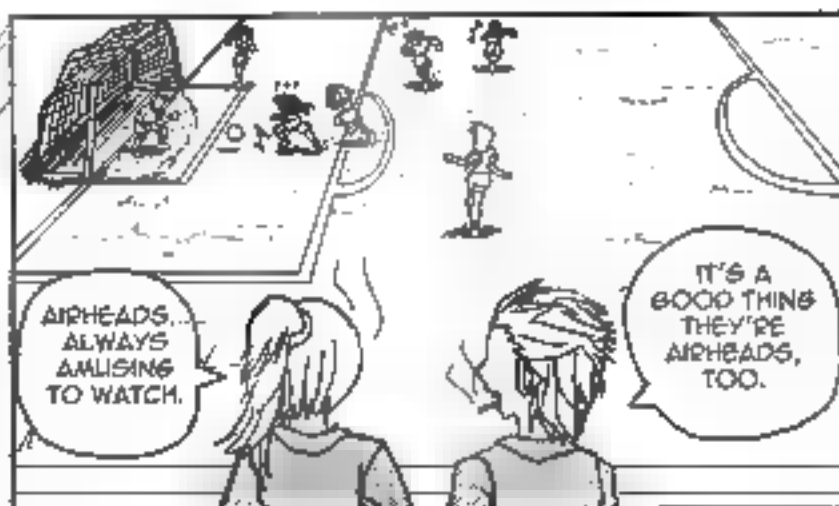
EVEN THOUGH SHE'S A
VIOLENT TOMBOY, HER
CATALOGUE OF LINGERIE IS
SURPRISINGLY GIRLISH!



YOU SICKO!
GIMME
THAT!

NO! GET
YOUR OWN!!





WE SURE
SHOWED THOSE
CHAUVINIST
BOZOS!

MARION, YOU KNOW
YOU DIDN'T HAVE
TO BUMP INTO EVERY
GUY IN THE OTHER
TEAM. NOW THEY'LL
ALL THINK YOU'RE
PLAYING FOR THE
WRONG REASONS...

DAVIANNA?

AH, MARCELLA!
WHAT'S UP?

HAVE YOU GOTTEN
USED TO OUR
SCHOOL, YET?

OH, YES. THANKS FOR WARNING
ME ABOUT THE CAFETERIA'S
MEATLOAF. I NO LONGER GET
INDIGESTIONS ON WEDNESDAYS.

YOU'RE
SUCH A
WHORE!

SO, WHAT CAN
I DO FOR YOU?

I DON'T WANT
HER TO PANIC
WHEN SCHOOL
IS STILL IN
SESSION.

FOR NOW,
I'LL JUST
MAKE SURE
SHE DOESN'T
MEET THAT
GIRL. I CAN
TELL HER
LATER.

AH, THAT'S IT? WELL,
OKAY! WHERE DO WE
MEET?

IF IT'S ABOUT
BIOLOGY CLASS
NOTES, I CAN LEND
YOU MINE. I KNOW
SHADOW STILL HAS
YOURS...

WA...

LET'S TAKE
THE SUBWAY
TOGETHER
AFTER
SCHOOL,
OKAY?

AT THE SCHOOL'S
REAR EXIT, NEAR
THE TRASH CAN!



YOU'RE DAYIANNA'S RIGHT? MARCELLA WANTED ME TO TELL YOU THAT SHE CAN'T MAKE IT. SOME MEETING WITH A COUNSELOR, SHE SAID.



OH, BY THE WAY, I'M A TRANSFER STUDENT. THE NAME'S ERICA! NICE TO MEET YOU!



HEEY! WADDUP!



HEY, YOU! YES, YOU!



WOULD YOU MIND WALKING HOME WITH ME?

MY HOME'S THE OTHER WAY, THOUGH...



WE CAN CHIT-CHAT ABOUT AUGUSTUS ALONG THE WAY!

HE WAS MY FRIEND...



OH WELL... OKAY.



SHE SURE TAKES HER TIME...

THEN WHEN I BROKE UP WITH HER, I TOLD HER SHE WAS JUST A PIECE OF FURNITURE TO ME!

HAHA! YOU HEARTLESS BASTARD!



HOW DID YOU KNOW AUGUSTUS?

WE WERE CHILDHOOD FRIENDS... WE'D WATCH "SHAKESPEARE THE MUTANT NINJA DOOPHIN-TURTLE" TOGETHER ON TV.

I'M SURE HE'S WATCHING THAT IN HEAVEN, RIGHT NOW...

I'M SHAKESPEARE!
THE MUTANT NINJA
DOLPHIN-TURTLE!
EN GARDE!!

UBAYA!

TURN OFF THE DAMN
TV! I'M TRYIN' TO GET
SOME SLEEP HERE!

FOR CRYING OUT LOUD, I'M
TRYING TO ENJOY MY FIRST
"NORMAL" DAY SINCE I TURNED
INTO A FREAK LIKE YOU, SO
LOOSEN UP, OLD TIMER!!

O...

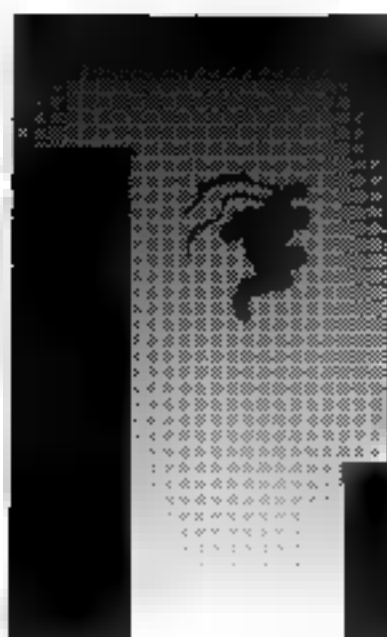
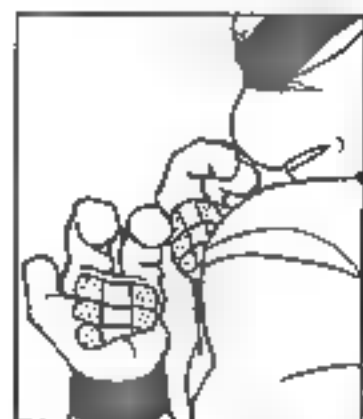
THAT'S EXACTLY WHAT I SEE
IN YOU AND YOU CAN'T
DO ANYTHING ABOUT IT.

WHO SAID I WAS
STILL RECOVERING?

MY... MY
HONOURABLE
MASTER.

OLD
TIMER?

MY POOR SISSY
OF A MASTER.
SEE HOW ALCOHOL
IS BAD FOR YOU?
YOU'RE STUCK IN
BED, RECOVERING.





DAVIANNA? SORRY, DIDN'T SEE HER AFTER THE MATCH.

TOO BAD SHE DOESN'T HAVE A CELLPHONE, HUH?



I WANTED TO LET HER KNOW ABOUT AUGUSTUS... OH WELL.



H...HAS ANYONE SEEN DAVIANNA? SHE MIGHT BE IN TROUBLE!!

THAT... BLONDE GIRL WITH SPIKY HAIR? SHE... TALKED ABOUT SELLING HER TO SOME "PURPLE DRAGONS"?



I...I SHOULD'VE TOLD HER EARLIER!! I SHOULD'VE TOLD HER TO AVOID THAT GIRL!! IT'S ALL MY FAULT...!!

WHA... WHAT? MARCELLA!! ARE YOU TELLING ME ERICA WAS TARGETING DAVIANNA? DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA WHERE THEY COULD BE NOW?

NO WAY!! WHAT IS ERICA DOING HERE?

AM I MISSING SOMETHING?



ERICA USED TO BE OUR FRIEND IN ELEMENTARY SCHOOL, BUT SHE STARTED HANGING OUT WITH BAD CROWDS AND SELLING DRUGS AT ONE POINT AND GOT EXPELLED

THAT'S WHERE I HEARD THEY'D MEET

OH NO... DAVIANNA COULD BE IN TROUBLE!



MARION! GUMME YOUR SPORTS MEMBERSHIP CARD NOW!

OK, BUT WHERE'S YOURS?

DEVOKED! DON'T ASK WHY!



I'M JUST GONNA BORROW SOME "TOOLS" AT THE GYM!

AS LONG AS I HAVE THIS CARD, THEY'RE GONNA HAVE TO LEND ME STUFF!

AND DON'T CALL THE COPS!! I'LL DO THAT MYSELF!!



WHY DOES SHE NEED TOOLS TO CALL THE POLICE?

AM I GONNA SEE MY CARD AGAIN?

I DON'T THINK SO.

HMM... YEAH, WELL,
WE ALWAYS WERE
IN DIFFERENT
SCHOOLS, BUT WE
STILL KEPT IN TOUCH...
WHAT'S HE TO
YOU, DAVIANNA?

WE MET IN
KINDERGARTEN.
I OWE HIM
A LOT - HE LOOKED
AFTER ME WHEN
I FIRST CAME HERE
FROM JAPAN WITHOUT
KNOWING A LICK OF
ENGLISH...

ALONG THE WAY, HE
MADE YOU LICK
SOMETHING ELSE,
HUMP?

ACTUALLY, NO.
HE WAS A PERFECT
GENTLEMAN
WITH ME. IN
FACT, HE EVEN
SWORE HE'D
HOLD BACK
UNTIL...

GOTCHA!!

AAAAH!!

YOU'RE GONNA SPREAD
YOUR LEGS FOR ME
TONIGHT, BITCH!

HELP! DAVIANNA!
HEEELP!!

ERICA!!

SIR! PLEASE
DIAL 911!!

OH... IT'S
JUST SOME
CRAZY CHICK.

MISS, YOU
SAW THIS,
RIGHT? PLEASE...

NO, I
DIDN'T.
BACK OFF.

WHAT
SHOULD
I DO?
ERICA'S
IN DANGER!

I CAN'T
JUST
STAND HERE!

H..HOLD
ON RIGHT
THEEERE!!

LET GO
OF ERICA!



HELLO, UNCLE MIKEY? I NEED YOUR HELP! UGH... YOU, GET OFF THE PHONE AND PASS ME UNCLE MIKEY!

NO, AUGUSTUS! I DON'T HAVE A LEAK AND I DON'T NEED A TAMPON! NOW PASS ME UNCLE MIKEY!



YEAH, WHAT'S THE PROBLEM? IF IT'S YOUR GUEST, I'M KEEPING AN EYE ON HIM.

SORRY.



WHAT?

ME? GO KICK SOME SHELL?



I KNOW, NORMALLY, I CAN HANDLE PURPLE DRAGONS ON MY OWN, BUT THIS TIME IT'S TOO RISKY!

MY FRIEND OAVIANNA'S INVOLVED AND I NEED AS MUCH HELP AS I CAN GET!!



WHAT DID YOUR FRIEND DO TO END UP IN THAT SITUATION...?

LOOK. CALL THE COPS AND LEAVE IT TO THEM AS IT SHOULD BE. YOU'RE NOT THE ONLY DEFENDER OF JUSTICE IN THE CITY. JUST... COME HOME.



NO WAY! DAD TOLD ME PURPLE DRAGONS HAVE CONNECTIONS WITHIN THE POLICE FORCE! WE CAN'T TRUST THEM!

COME ON!! YOU GUYS WERE EVEN LESS "DEFENDERS OF JUSTICE" BACK THEN, BUT YOU STILL PROTECTED INNOCENTS IN THE STREETS OF MANHATTAN, RIGHT?



SIR, IS EVERYTHING ALRIGHT?

NO... NOT THIS
AGAIN...
I DON'T WANT
TO FIGHT,



PAIN.
GRIEF.
LOSS.



THAT'S ALL
I EARNED FROM
PICKING MY
WEAPONS
AND FIGHTING.
I CAN'T TAKE IT
ANYMORE.

I DON'T HAVE TO
ACCEPT THIS!
THIS WAS PART
OF MY FORMER
LIFE AS A
NINJA!



THAT'S WHY I
STARTED A NEW
LIFE! THAT'S WHY
I'M A NOVELIST,
NOT A NINJA!

IF I DON'T
FIGHT, IT'S
PERFECTLY
FINE...
IT SHOULD BE!



HELLO?
HELLO?



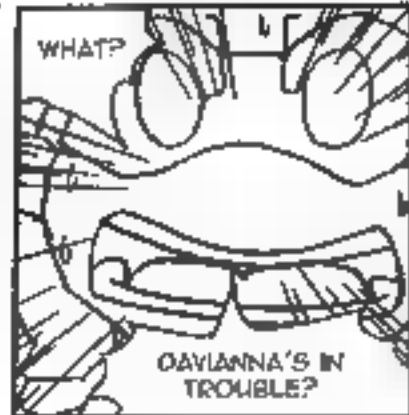
AH... AUGUSTUS?
WHY ISN'T UNCLE
MIKEY ANSWERING?

I DON'T KNOW!
HE'S JUST
STARING AT
THE FLOOR!



I HAD TO TAKE
THE PHONE
FROM HIS HAND...

WHAT?



OAVIANNA'S IN
TROUBLE?

RAPHAEL? HE'S GONE, BUT...
YES... GOT IT. I'LL TELL
HIM THE LOCATION...

SIR! SHADOW TOLD ME
WHERE THE PURPLE
DRAGONS ARE! SHE
NEEDS YOUR HELP!

SIR? ARE
YOU GOING?

SIR, PLEASE! BEFORE
SOMEONE GETS HARMED!!

SHUT UP! I'M NOT GOING
ANYWHERE AND THAT'S
THAT! I'M FED UP WITH
THIS CODE OF JUSTICE-
BUSHIDO OR WHATEVER
THAT'S CALLED!

YOU KNOW WHY I STARTED A
NEW LIFE, RENOIR? IT'S BECAUSE
AT LEAST NOW I'M FREE TO
CHOOSE MY FIGHTS AND REJECT
ANY BURDEN THAT IS NOT MINE!
I'M NOT A SLAVE OF JUSTICE,
SO COUNT ME OUT!!

HAHAH... HAHAH...
YOU UNDERSTAND...
DON'T YOU...

WHAT SHOULD
WE DO NOW?

DO ME A
FAVOR AND
TELL HER
TO COME
HOME.

OKKKAY...
TURN ON
SPEAKERPHONE
AND...

UNCLE MIKEY, YOU'RE JUST A
GUTLESS COWARD! EVEN WHEN
A LIFE IS AT STAKE... EVEN
WHEN I NEED YOU THE MOST...
YOU DON'T GIVE A RAT'S ASS!!



NO WONDER UNCLE RAPH AND
UNCLE DONNIE DON'T LIKE
YOU! NO WONDER THEY SEE
YOU AS A TRAITOR!! YOU
FAKER! YOU WIMP! YOU...



AH... WHO
THE HELL
ARE YOU??

WAIT, SHADOW!
IT'S ME, RENOIR!
AUGUSTUS!

WHO TOLO
YOU TO COME?
THIS IS NOT
A GAME!

WE'RE
MESSING
WITH REAL
CRIMINALS...
THEY'RE GONNA
BE ARMED
AND YOU, YOU
DON'T EVEN
KNOW HOW
TO FIGHT!!

I KNOW! I CAN'T
FIGHT AND I
NEVER DID, BUT...

A FEW DAYS AGO,
WHEN I WOKE UP LIKE
THIS, I THOUGHT
I LOST EVERYTHING.

MY FAMILY,
MY FRIENDS,
MY RAISON-
D'ETRE...

BUT YOU, SHADOW...
YOU CHOSE TO
BELIEVE IN ME.
YOU LOOKED
BEYOND MY
APPEARANCE AND
RECOGNIZED ME!

WHEN NO ONE TRUSTED ME,
YOU DID. NOW IT'S MY
TURN TO RETURN THE FAVOR!
BESIDES... DAVIANNA'S OUR
CHILDHOOD PAL... MAYBE
SHE'LL RECOGNIZE ME
TOO!

TRY
HARDER...?

UNC'
MIKEY...
WHY CAN'T
YOU...?

...THE
HELL?

NOW'S NOT
THE TIME TO
GET ALL
MUSHY,
BOZO!

I STILL THINK THERE IS HOPE
FOR ME... HOPE TO RECLAIM
EVERYTHING I LOST!
I KNOW IT! I JUST HAVE
TO TRY HARD... EVEN IF
IT MEANS RISKING MY LIFE!

GET ■ THE RIGHT
MINDSET TO KICK ASS!
IMAGINE THOSE
PURPLE DRAGON
SCUM FONDLING
DAVIANNA!! WOULD
YOU LET THEM HAVE IT
THEIR WAY? HUH? HUH?
FEEL THE FURYYYY!!

WHAT A
FEARSOME
GIRL!



ERICA'S RIGHT, GUYS. THIS IS BUSINESS. HOLD YOUR "HORSES"!



DON'T WORRY, HONEY. I'M SURE YOU'LL END UP ENJOYING THIS.

WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS? ERICA!!



YOU'RE 50\$ SHORT. SHE'S A VIRGIN, YOU KNOW? I CHARGE MORE FOR THIS.

BRIGHT...



YOU... YOU SOLD MY BODY?



OOPS, I GUESS SHE FINALLY CAUGHT ON... HEEHEE!

LOOK... I'VE EARNED 500\$ THANKS TO YOU! AGENT YOU GLAD? I'LL GIVE YOU HALF...

NO!!



I DON'T WANT YOUR MONEY! JUST LET ME GO! HEEHEE!

DON'T WASTE YOUR BREATH,
HONEY. I LURED YOU TO A
DEAD END. WE'RE SURROUNDED
BY DESERTED BUILDINGS...

BULLSHIT... IF YOU THINK
SCREAMING DURING THE
ACT IS MORE YOUR STYLE,
THEN BE MY GUEST.

LOOK GIRLIE, WE... ERR...
JUST NEED A BREAK
FROM WORK... RELAX,
YA KNOW?

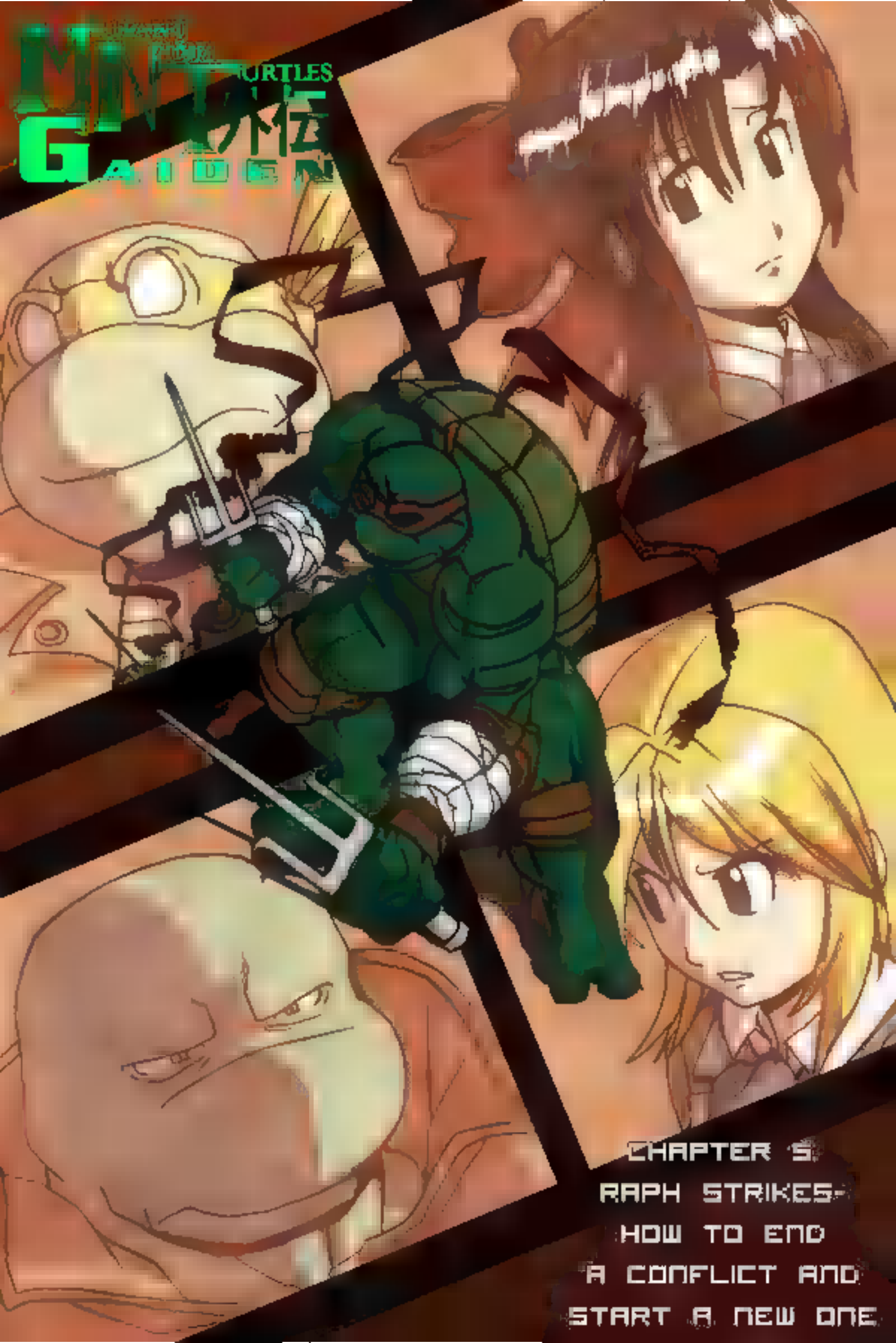
OOH.. LOOK AT HER PALE FACE...
C'MON... DON'T ACT SO TAME!
WILD GIRLS TURN ME ON...

PL
HELP...

HELP!!

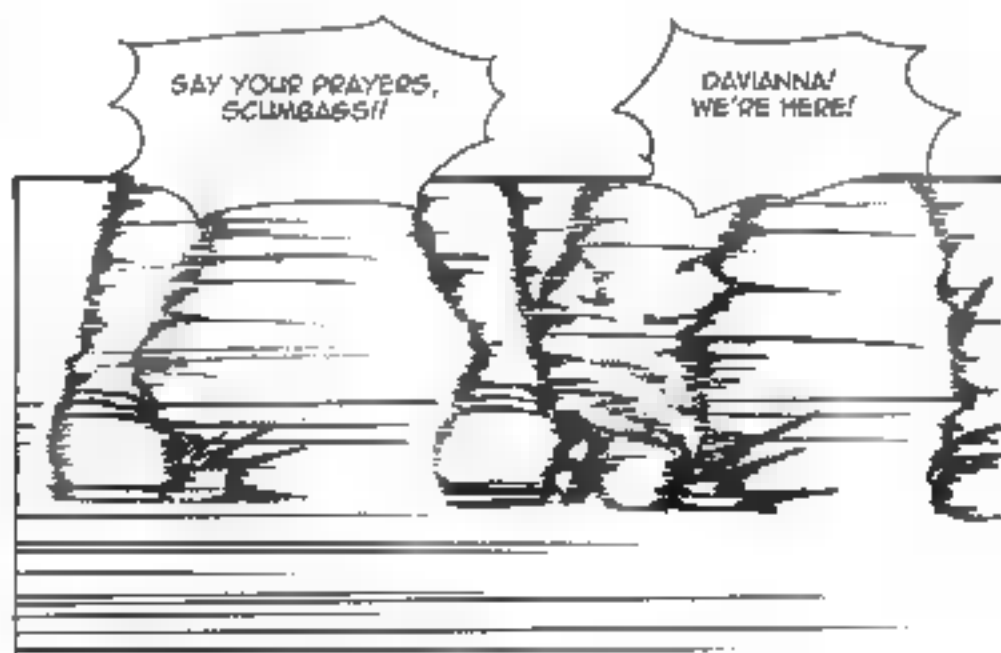






TMNT 外伝
GAIDEN

CHAPTER 5
RAPHAEL STRIKES-
HOW TO END
A CONFLICT AND
START A NEW ONE



H...EEE...
HEEEEEE...

MI... MIAMI MI...
MISTANT...

I DON'T WANNA
DIEEEEE!

SHUT UP! IT'S JUST ONE
OF THOSE UGLY GREEN
FREAKS I KEEP HEARIN'
ABOUT!

OW...

LOOK WHO'S TALKIN'. YA
KNOW, IF YA GOT A BLICK FOR
EVERY TIME SOMEONE THREW
UP IN THE MOUTH JUST BY
LOOKIN' AT YER FACE...

...YOU'D BE A
MILLIONAIRE BY
NOW! SO CHEER
UP, HANDSOME!

I'LL TEACH
YA TO MESS
WITH A PURPLE
DRAGON!!

HOHOHO...

HIYAAAAAH!

タ
ウ
ン

ギ
ギ

バ
ン

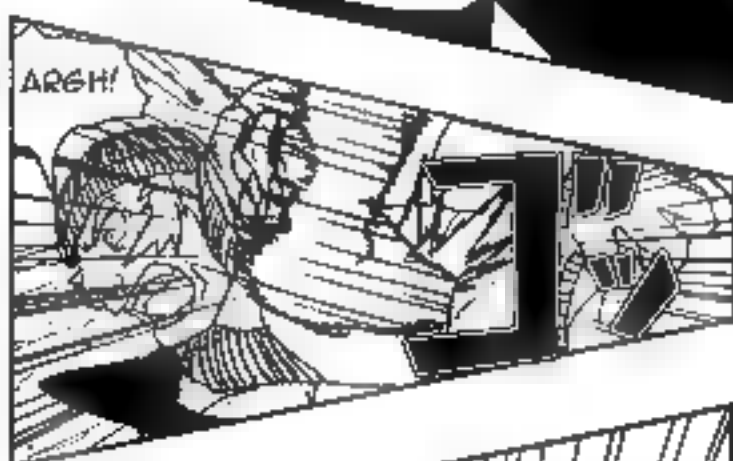
WHA...?

!!

ギ
ン
タ

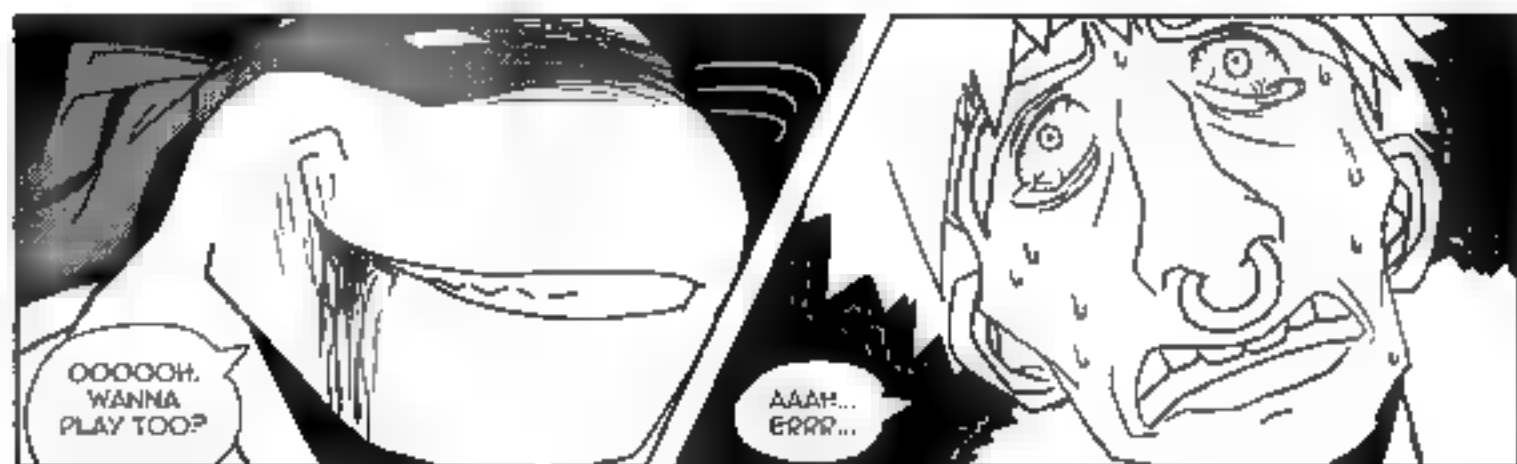


GAHAH!! MY
AAAAARM!!!

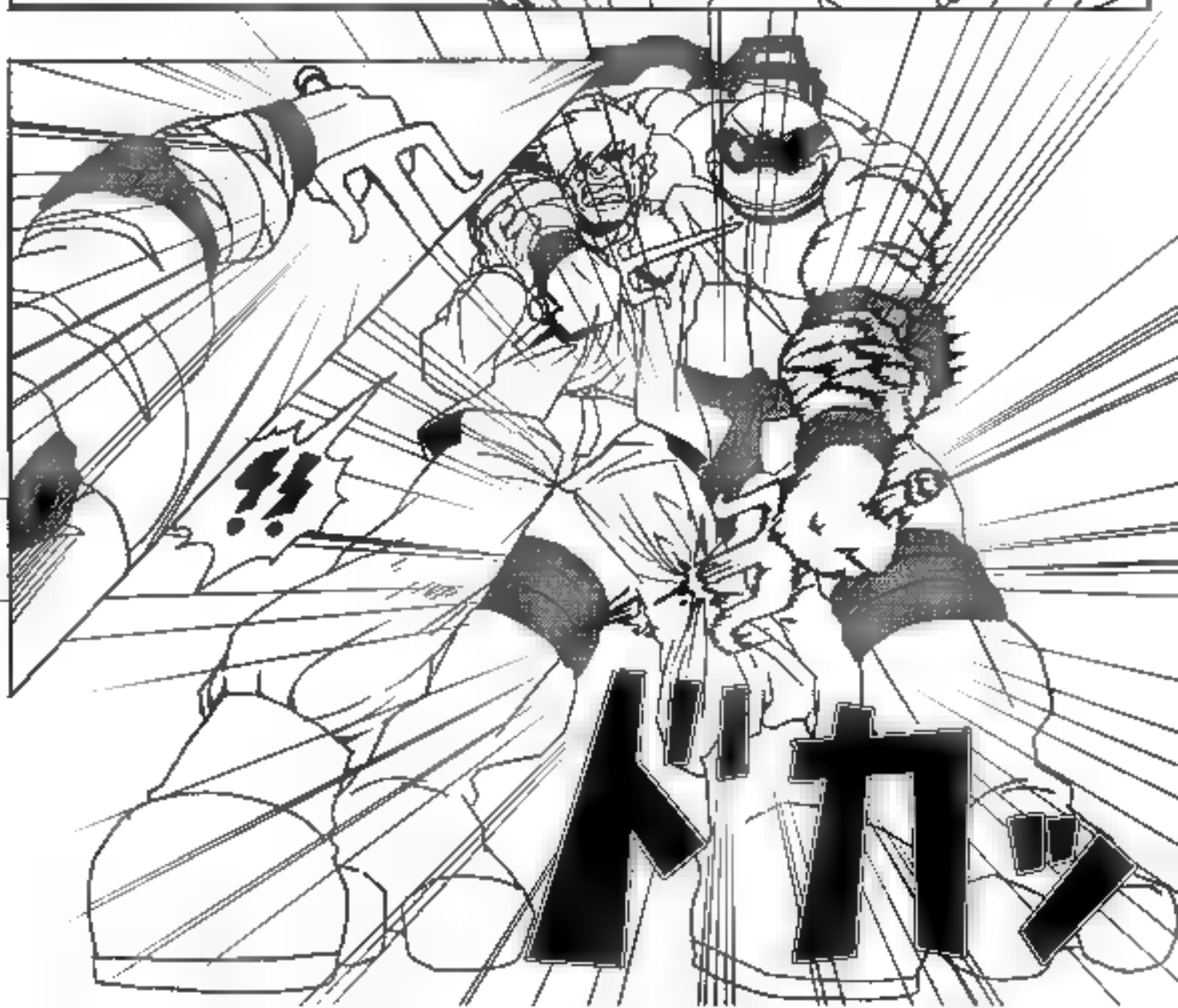


GWANANANA
NANANANANA!

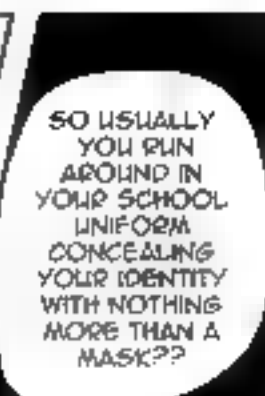




C'MERE AND
JOIN THE FUN!









HUH?



AAH...

AAAAAH!



YOU
OKAY?

OOOH!
YES YES!



MOVE
IT!

GOTCHA!

IT'S GONNA EAT MEEE!



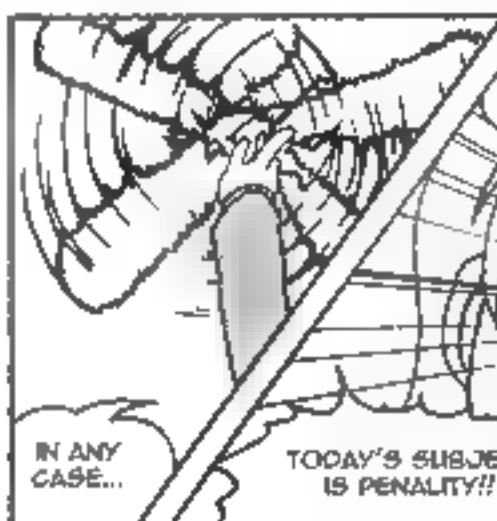
RENOR...
WHAT THE HELL
ARE YOU DOING...?



OOOOUCH!



DON'T WORRY!
YOU'RE A MUTANT!



...IT'S BASEBALL LESSON
TIME FOR THIS NAUGHTY
STUDENT HERE!

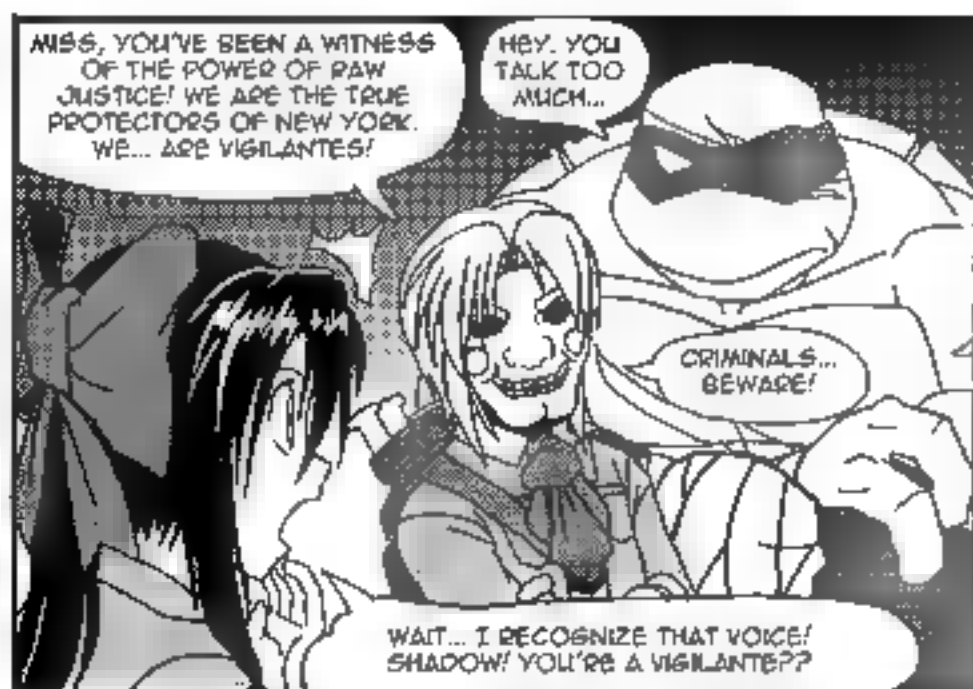


TH...THE
VIGILANTE
GIRL?









OUR CHILDHOOD PAL,
AUGUSTUS AMHERST...



...IS ALIVE.

THAT'S RIGHT!
TELL HER,
SHADOW!



I KNOW IT'S
HARD TO
BELIEVE...

...BUT HE'S
TURNED
INTO A
MUTANT
TURTLE.
HE'S RIGHT
HERE!



HE'S...
NOT
DEAD?

HE'S...
RIGHT
HERE?



SOMEHOW...
I FELT IT TOO.
THE MOMENT
HE SAVED ME.
THE MOMENT
HE SPOKE
TO ME...

...I KNEW
IT WAS
HIM.



OH, AUGUSTUS!
I'M SO HAPPY
TO SEE YOU!





B-B-B-BUT...!!
I... I...!



OHOOOO...?



DAVIANNA, I MISSED
YA TOO, TOOTS! AS
YA CAN SEE, I CAME
BACK TO SAVE YA!

I'M SO GLAD YOU
REMEMBERED THE
OATH WE MADE
TO EACH OTHER
WHEN WE WERE
KIDS!
YOU CAN BE SO
RELIABLE WHEN
YOU'RE NOT
ACTING LIKE A
PERVY CREEP!

I SHOULD BE
HUGGING HER!!



I LOVE IT
WHEN TEACHER
READS US
STORIES ABOUT
BRAVE KNIGHTS
WHO SAVE
PRINCESSES!



HUM... IF I'M
IN DANGER,
WILL YOU BE
MY KNIGHT
IN SHINING
ARMOR?



YAAAY! THEN...THEN ME TOO!
IF YOU'RE IN DANGER, I'LL
BE... HUM... YOUR SUPER
COOL PRINCESS AND I'LL
SAVE YOU!
IT'S A PROMISE! OKAY?

007



OUR...
PROMISE...



SHADOW!
C'MON, SAY
SOMETHING!

WHY DON'T YOU...
URGH... YOU'RE
SUCH A WIMP!

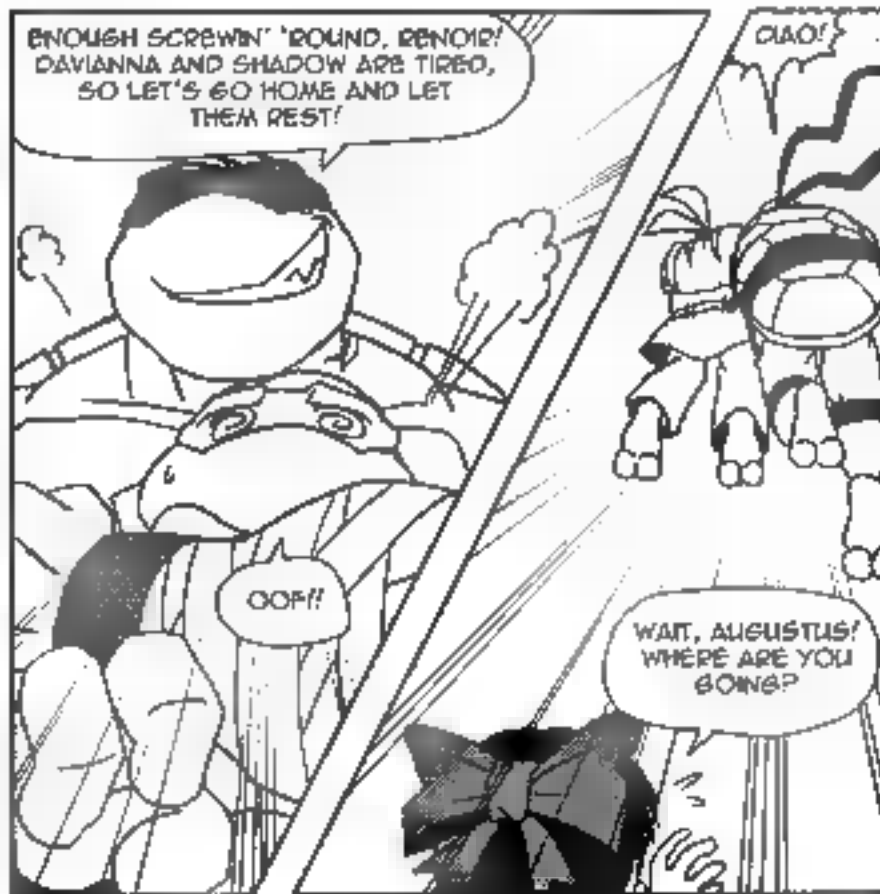


ABOUT
AUGUSTUS...

THIS MUTANT
HERE, HE...



OH!
RIGHT!



WHY DID UNCLE RAPH DECIDE TO LIE TO DAVIANNA ABOUT "RENOIR"'S TRUE IDENTITY? HUH... GUESS I'LL PLAY ALONG FOR NOW.



HE MUST HAVE A GOOD REASON TO KEEP THE TRUTH FROM HER. AFTER ALL, AS LONG AS SHE KNOWS THAT "AUGUSTUS" IS ALIVE, THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH TO LIFT HER SPIRITS



WHAT??

YOU LIED TO HER
SO YOU CAN KEEP
ME FROM DESERTING
YOU??
THAT DOESN'T MAKE
ANY SENSE!!

I'LL SHOW
YOU
DESERTING!

I'M GOING BACK TO SHADOW'S
PLACE!

AND I'LL MEET UP WITH DAVIANNA
AND TELL HER THE TRUTH!!

AND I'LL BE HAPPY... FAR FAR
AWAY FROM YOU!!

ARE YOU SURE YOU WANNA
DO THAT? SHE AIN'T GONNA
LISTEN TO A WORD YOU
SAY, YA KNOW?

I CAN CONVINCE
HER... I KNOW
THINGS
YOU DON'T!

TELL ME...

DID YA HAVE A GOOD
LOOK AT HER WHEN SHADOW
TOLD HER THE "GOOD NEWS"?

HER MIND IS IN A VERY FRAGILE
STATE. IT'S LIKE THE "NEWS"
SHE HEARD WAS ABSURD,
YET SO MUCH BETTER THAN
REALITY THAT SHE DECIDED
THAT SHE'S GONNA BELIEVE
IN IT....

WHEN SOMEONE
PINS ALL HIS
HOPES ON A
DISTORTED VISION
OF REALITY...

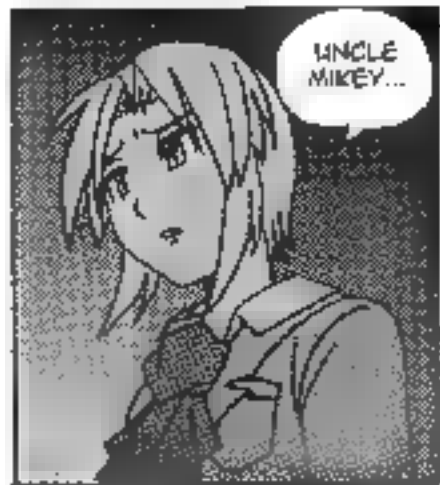
PLEASE... I TAKE
BACK WHAT I SAID...
SO PLEASE...
MASTER...
TELL HER...
THE TRUTH...

PUT ON YER BOXING
GLOVES, RENOID.
WE'RE GONNA SPAR
A LITTLE BIT...
IT'S GONNA GET YOUR
MIND OFF THINGS.

FACE IT. WOULD
REINCARNATIN'
IN A MUTANT'S
BODY MAKE
ANY
SENSE TO
A NORMAL
PERSON?

...THAT PERSON'S GONNA REFUSE TO
ACKNOWLEDGE ANY OTHER "TRUTH"
UNLESS SOMEONE SIGNIFICANT
IN THEIR IDEAL REALITY DOES
SOMETHIN' 'BOUT IT. IN THIS CASE...
THAT WOULD BE ME: HER "AUGUSTUS".

YOU BASTARD...
YOU DIRTY SON
OF A BITCH!!



CHAPTER 6: THE ACTOR
WHO HAS NEVER
PERFORMED BEFORE







I CAN'T BELIEVE IT...
THIS IS NOTHING
SHORT OF A
MIRACLE!

FOR SOME
REASON, HIS
CELLS ARE
CAPABLE OF
REGENERATING
TWICE AS FAST
AS OURS!

YET... HE SEEMS
TO BE A MUTANT
JUST LIKE US...
THEN WHY ARE HIS
CELLS SO
POTENT?

I'LL NEED TO
GET MORE BLOOD
SAMPLES FROM
HIM...

RENOIR...

OVERHEAT
ALERT.
OVERHEAT
ALERT.

EMERGENCY
POWER
ACTIVATED.

THE FUSE!

REMAINING TIME
BEFORE SHUTDOWN:
THREE HOURS.

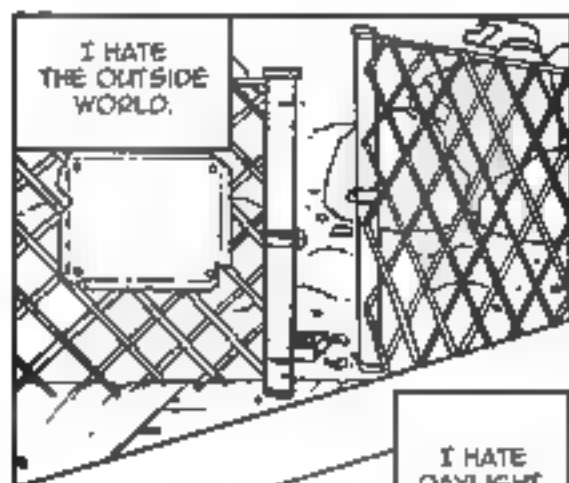
I HAVE NO CHOICE!
I MUST GO TO THE
SURFACE...
INTO BROAD DAYLIGHT!!

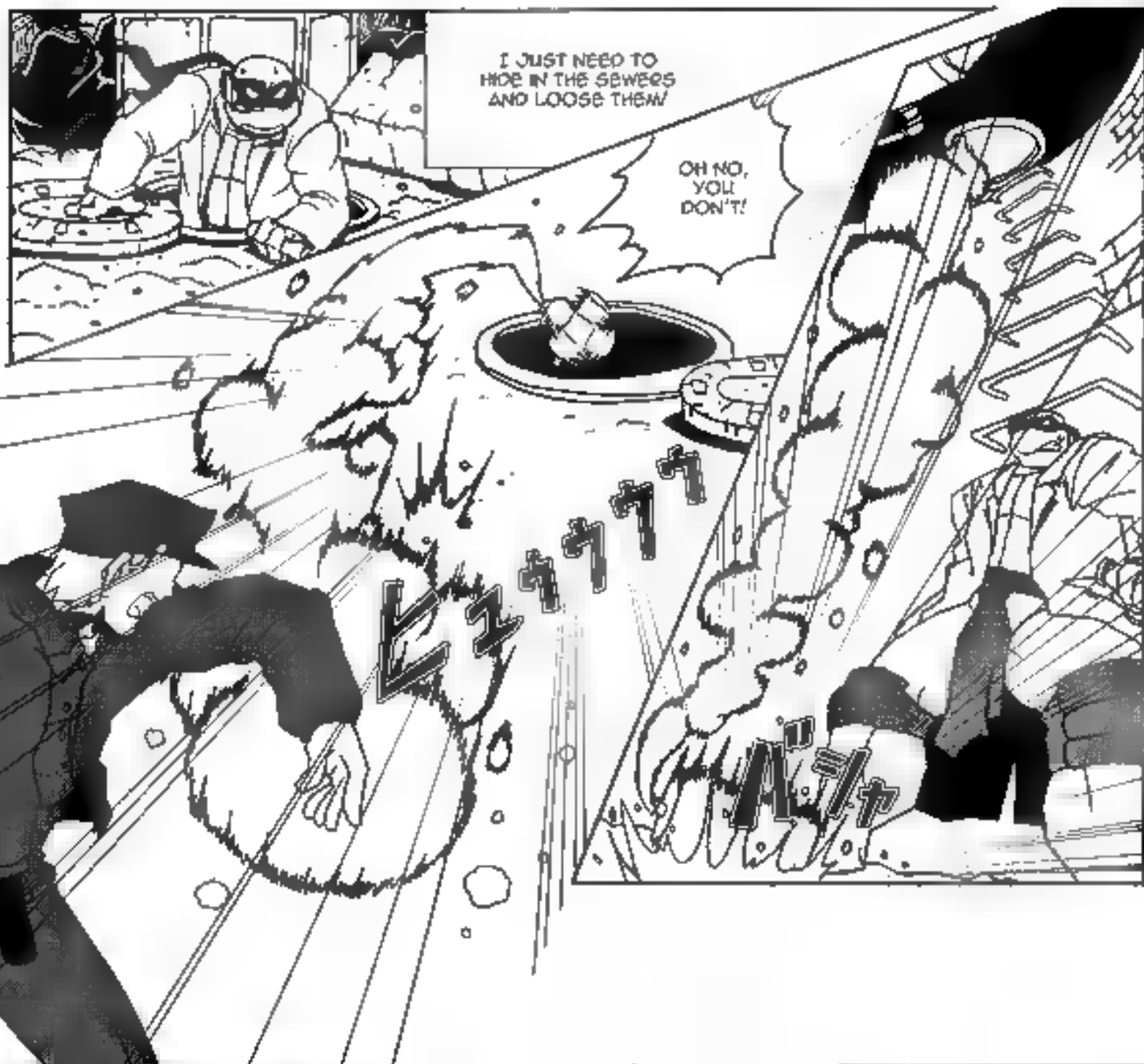
DAMMIT.

I NEED
TO FIND A
FUSE, AND
FAST!

NO... NOT NOW!
NOT DURING
DAYLIGHT!!

OR ELSE, MY LAB
WILL SHUT DOWN...
AND I'LL LOSE
EVERYTHING I DID
SO FAR!!





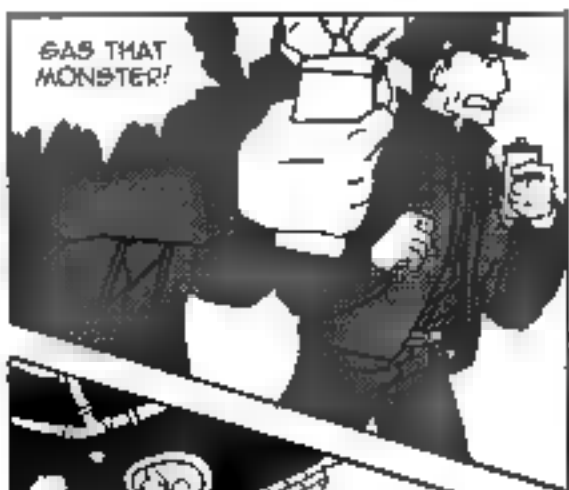
I JUST NEED TO
HIDE IN THE SEWERS
AND LOOSE THEM!

OH NO,
YOU
DON'T!



THIS ISN'T
GOOD!

CALLING ALL UNITS! WE FOUND THE
MONSTER IN A JUNK YARD IN BROOKLYN!
COMMENCE OPERATION "TURTLE SOUP"
WITHIN A FIVE MILE RADIUS!



GAS THAT MONSTER!



DON'T FORGET TO COVER THE MANHOLES!

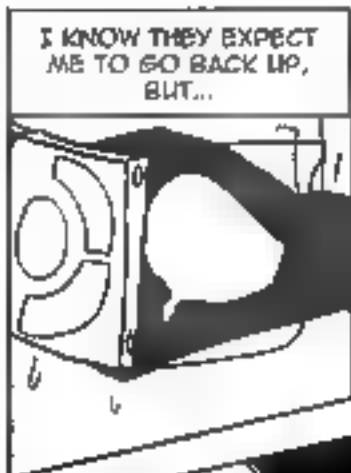


EITHER IT'LL SUFFOCATE TO DEATH, OR IT'LL POP OUT, AND WE'LL KILL IT!



THOSE BASTARDS... I WON'T LET THEM KILL ME... I MUST RETURN TO MY LAB NO MATTER WHAT!

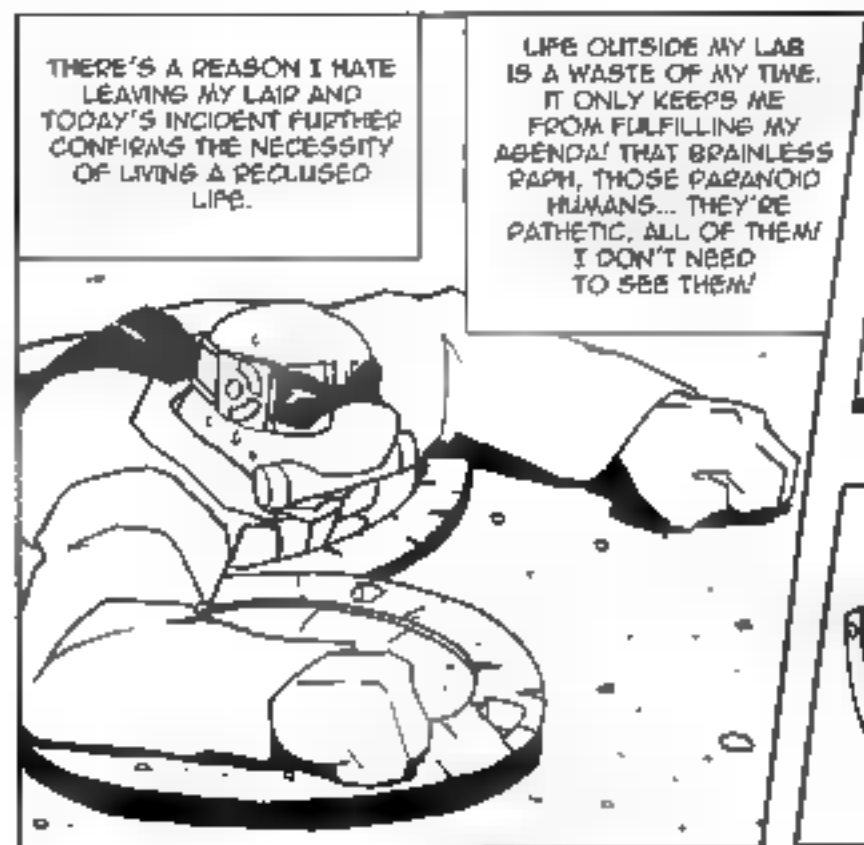
I CAN'T DIE HERE!!



I KNOW THEY EXPECT ME TO GO BACK UP, BUT...



I NEED AIR...



THERE'S A REASON I HATE LEAVING MY LAIR AND TODAY'S INCIDENT FURTHER CONFIRMS THE NECESSITY OF LIVING A RECLUSED LIFE.

LIFE OUTSIDE MY LAB IS A WASTE OF MY TIME. IT ONLY KEEPS ME FROM FULFILLING MY AGENDA! THAT BRAINLESS RAPH, THOSE PARANOID HUMANS... THEY'RE PATHETIC, ALL OF THEM! I DON'T NEED TO SEE THEM!



SPEAKING OF SIGHT, I NEED TO RINSE MY EYES...

THIS DRINKING FOUNTAIN WILL DO.



OOH! AN ACTOR!!

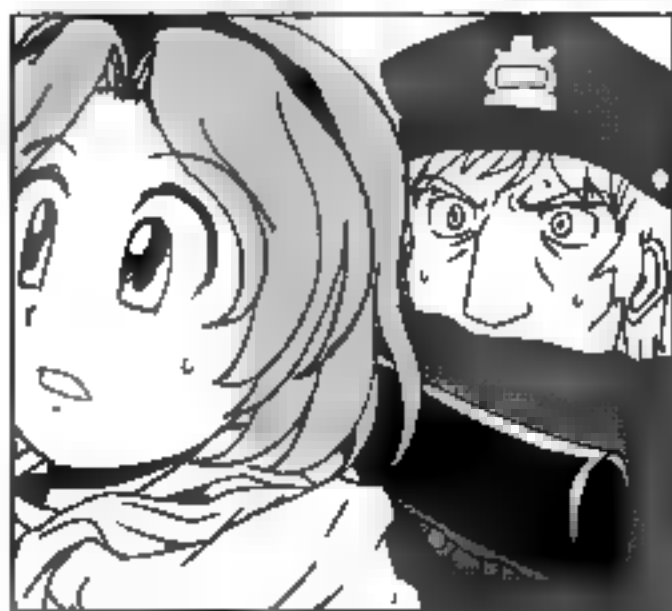


MY BROTHER'S AN ACTOR LIKE YOU TOO, YOU KNOW?

OUR TEACHER TOLD US THAT
THE WATER FOUNTAINS ON THE
PLAYGROUND DON'T WORK...
YOU SHOULD GO TO THE
CAFETERIA ■ YOU'RE
THIRSTY!







HERE'S TO HOPING
EVERYTHING WILL
GO ACCORDING
TO PLAN.



WE HAVE
TO GET HER
AWAY FROM
IT!



I'M ON
IT!



NOT BACKING
OFF, I SEE!
HOW ABOUT
THIS...?



OW, OW!!
MR. ACTOR!
IT HURTS!

THAT
MONSTER
WON'T HAVE
IT'S WAY...



NOT WHILE
I'M HERE!!



THAT'S FAR
ENOUGH,
FREAK!!
LET HER GO
OR I'LL SHOOT!



WHAT?



NO, SHE'S
NOT GOING
TO...!!

EVA...!

IT'S OK...

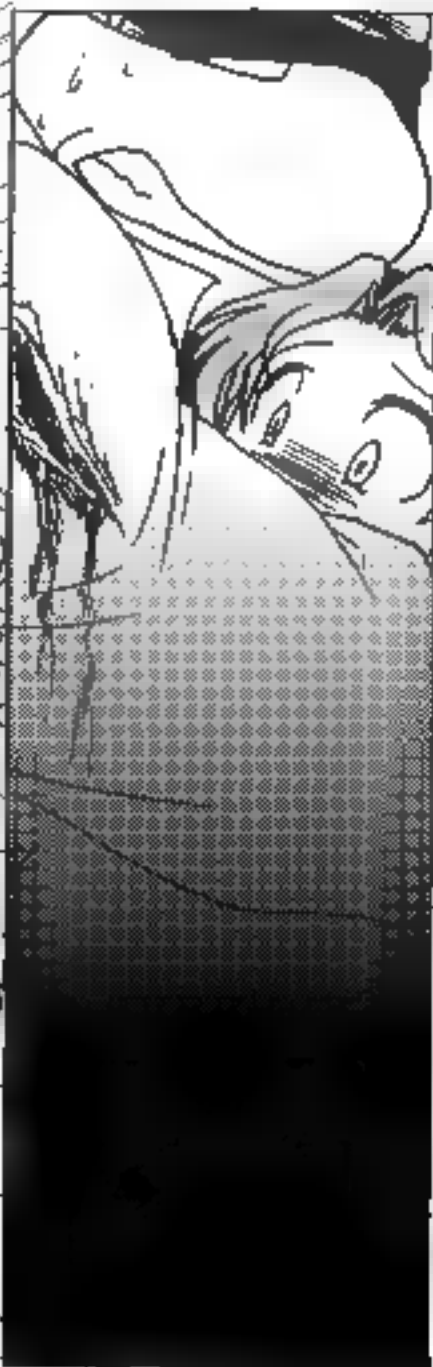
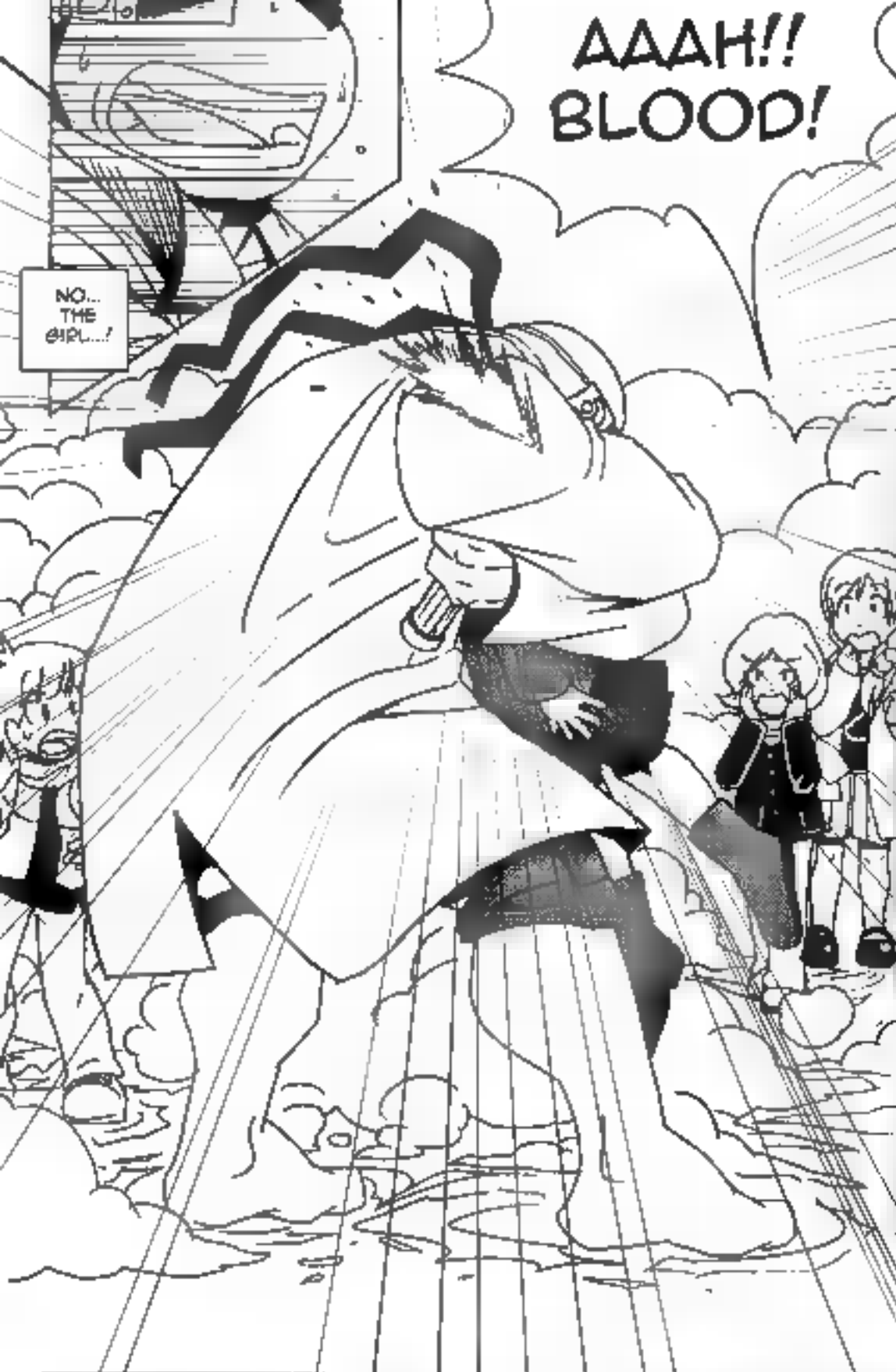


IT'S JUST
LIKE
A HUMAN
TARGET...



AAAHH!!
BLOOD!

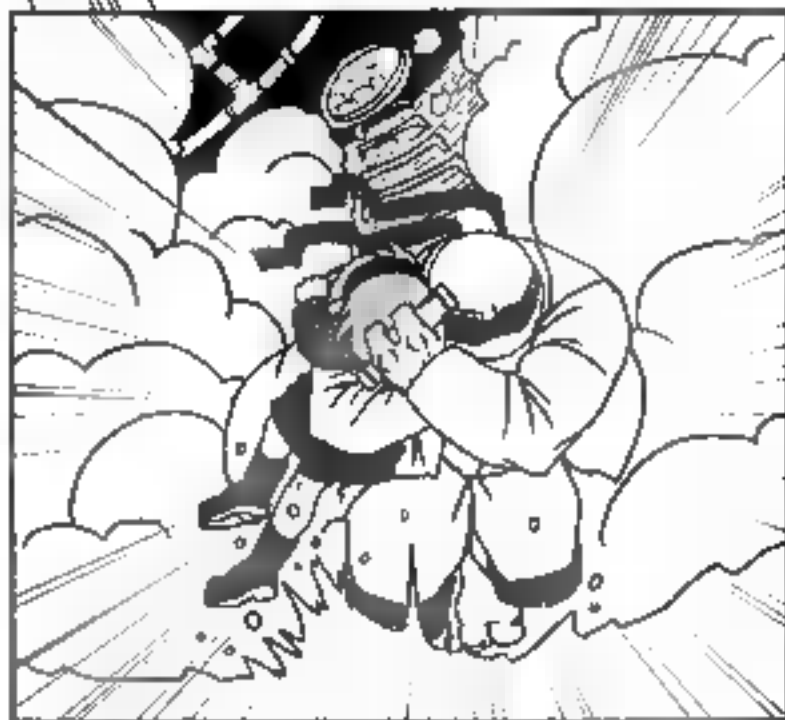
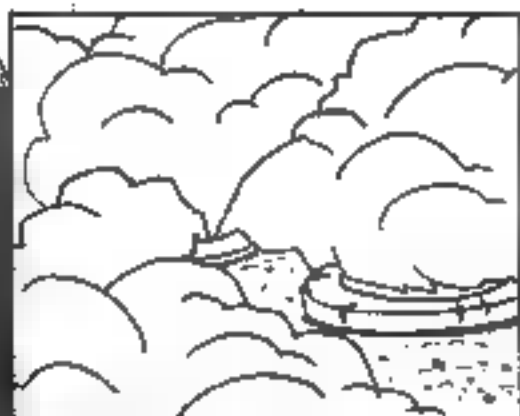
NO...
THE
GIRL...!



YOU DID IT! IT'S
STUNNED! NOW'S
OUR CHANCE!!

I'LL GRAB
THAT GIRL!!





JUST AS I THOUGHT,
MOST OF THIS TOXIC GAS
AROUND HERE HAS BEEN
EVACUATED WHILE I WAS
UP THERE "NEGOTIATING"
WITH THE POLICE.

I GUESS I'M
SAFE NOW.

HOWEVER... DID I
REALLY TAKE A BULLET
FOR THIS MEANINGLESS
GIRL?

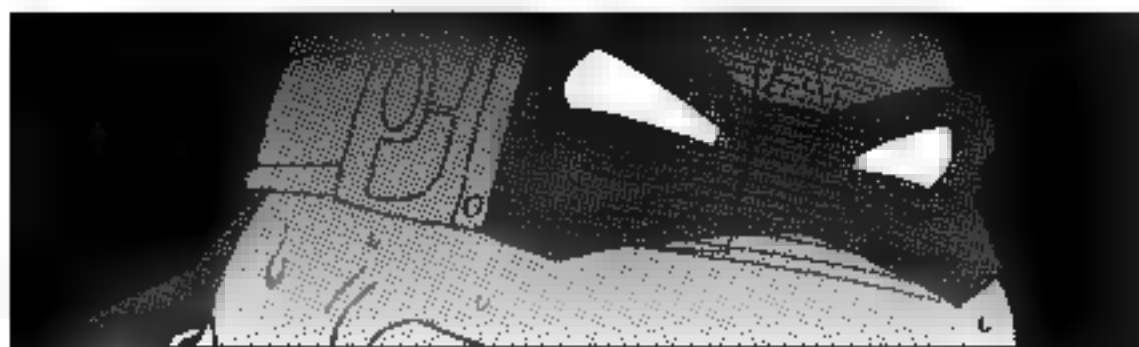
AND WHY DID
I BRING HER
THIS FAR
WITH ME?

SHE IS STILL
ALIVE EVEN
AFTER INHALING SO
MUCH TOXIC GAS...

WHAT SHOULD I
DO WITH HER?
I DON'T NEED
A HUMAN
SHIELD
ANYMORE...

COME TO THINK OF, SHE WASN'T
EVEN USEFUL AS A HOSTAGE.
I UNNECESSARILY RISKED MY
LIFE FOR HER!
MAYBE IT'S THAT ANNOYING
"PROTECTIVE INSTINCT"
FROM "BACK THEN"...

I MUST
NOT TAKE
ANY MORE
CHANCES.



TODAY, IT
WAS MY
ARM.

IF I DIE, EVERYTHING
I DID TILL THIS DAY
WILL GO TO WASTE.

TOMORROW... IT
COULD BE MY
VERY LIFE.

I MUST SURVIVE
AT ALL COSTS.

YES... TO
SURVIVE...
SHE MUST
DIE!

HAAA...
BRO...
I MISS
YOU...

ゴカッ



NO... NO! I'M LOSING IT!
I'M ACTING LIKE A MANIAC!
JUST LIKE LEONARDO!

RELAX DON...
RELAX! YOU'RE
DIFFERENT, YES,
THAT'S RIGHT!

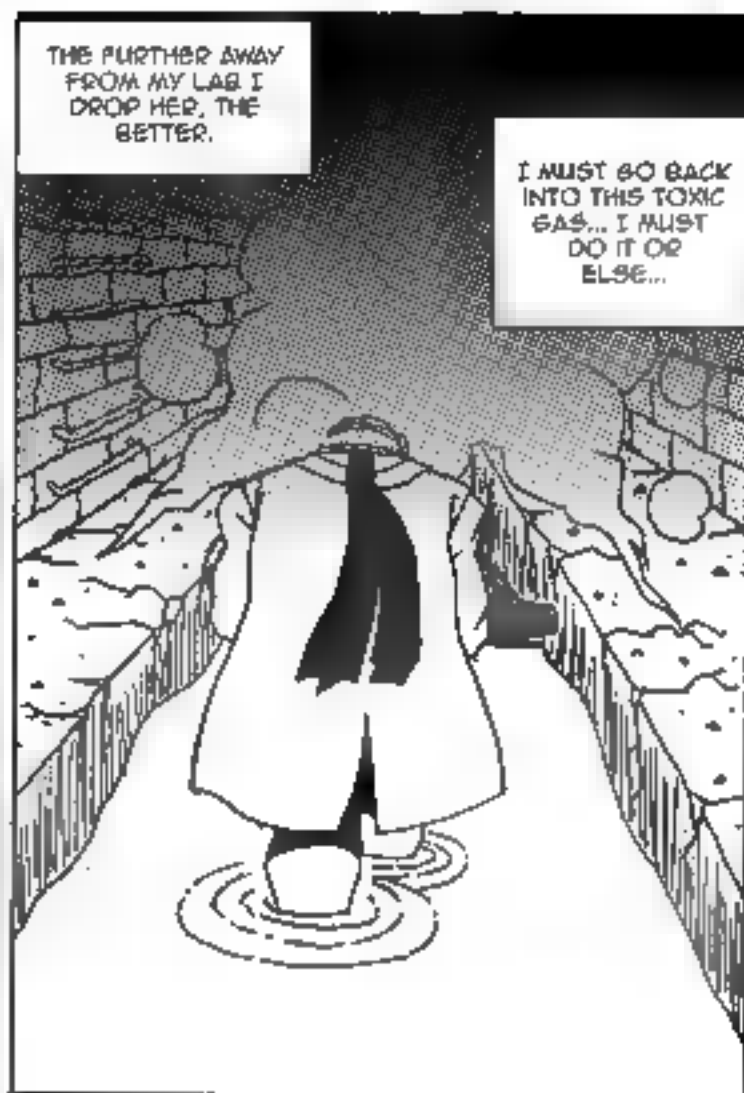
I'M NOT DERANGED LIKE
LEONARDO! I DON'T GO
APESHIT ON RANDOM PEOPLE!
I ACT RATIONALLY!

THIS GIRL REPRESENTS
NO THREAT TO ME RIGHT
NOW, BUT I MUST STILL
DISPOSE OF HER.
I MUST PROTECT MY
LAB!

I KNOW... I'LL
JUST DUMP HER
SOMEWHERE ON
THE SURFACE.
THOSE HUMANS
CAN TAKE CARE
OF THE REST!

THE FURTHER AWAY
FROM MY LAB I
DROP HER, THE
BETTER.

I MUST GO BACK
INTO THIS TOXIC
GAS... I MUST
DO IT OR
ELSE...





PERHAPS I SHOULD REVEAL MY TRUE IDENTITY TO THE WORLD, JUST SO THAT RAPH WOULD CUT ME SOME SLACK ABOUT MY INTEGRITY.



AND WHO KNOWS? MAYBE MY AUDIENCE WILL THINK THAT A MUTANT WRITING NOVELS IS UNIQUE. MAYBE THAT WILL BOOST THE SALES OF MY BOOKS.



ALRIGHT, I'LL PREPARE A STATEMENT TONIGHT AND MAKE A PUBLIC ANNOUNCEMENT TOMORROW...



MR. AND MRS. AMHERST?

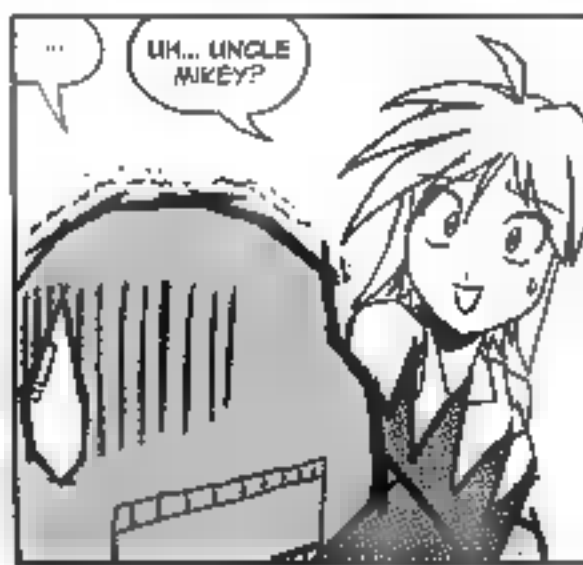
FIRST THOSE MONSTROSITIES TAKE OUR SON AWAY FROM US AND NOW THEY ABDUCT MY DAUGHTER, TAKE HER FOR A DIP IN THE SEWERS AND DUMP HER IN A JUNKYARD! THEY CAME BACK FOR SECONDS, THEY WANTED TO TORTURE US!!

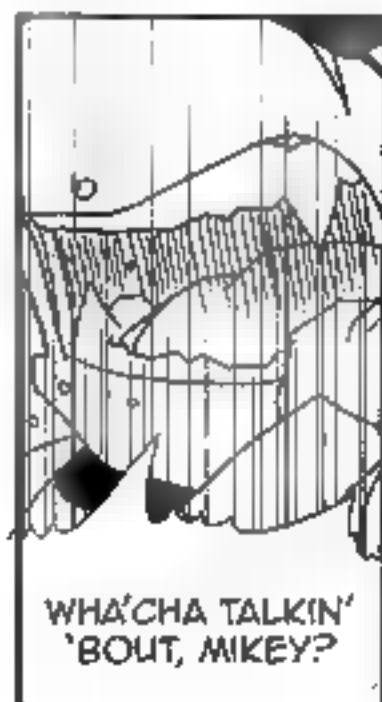


WHY CAN'T THE POLICE HANDLE THEM?



UH... UNCLE MIKEY?





WHA'CHA TALKIN'
'BOUT, MIKEY?



WE DIDN'T STIR UP A RUCKUS
UP THERE 'CUZ I WAS SLEEPIN'
AND RENOIR WAS TRAININ'!

MAY I REMOVE
THOSE NOW?



GEEZ, QUIT WORRYIN' SO
MUCH 'BOUT 'EM PARANOID
HUMANS!

I THINK I'LL
JUST WATCH TV...

IDIOT!!



HE'S NOT A
MILITANT, HE'S
AN ACTOR!



IT WAS SUPPOSED TO
BE A SECRET, BUT SINCE
EVERYONE IS WRONG...
WELL I WANT TO SAY IT!

Carole Amherst, victim

HE LOOKED JUST LIKE MY
BROTHER, EXCEPT THAT HE
HAD A BROWNER SKIN, A PURPLE
MASK AND A MONOCLE! WE DID
A SCENE WHERE HE PROTECTED
ME FROM A BULLET! AND HIS
BLOOD LOOKED SO REAL TOO!
AND, AND I WANT TO SEE HIM
AGAIN ONE DAY!

CAROLE?



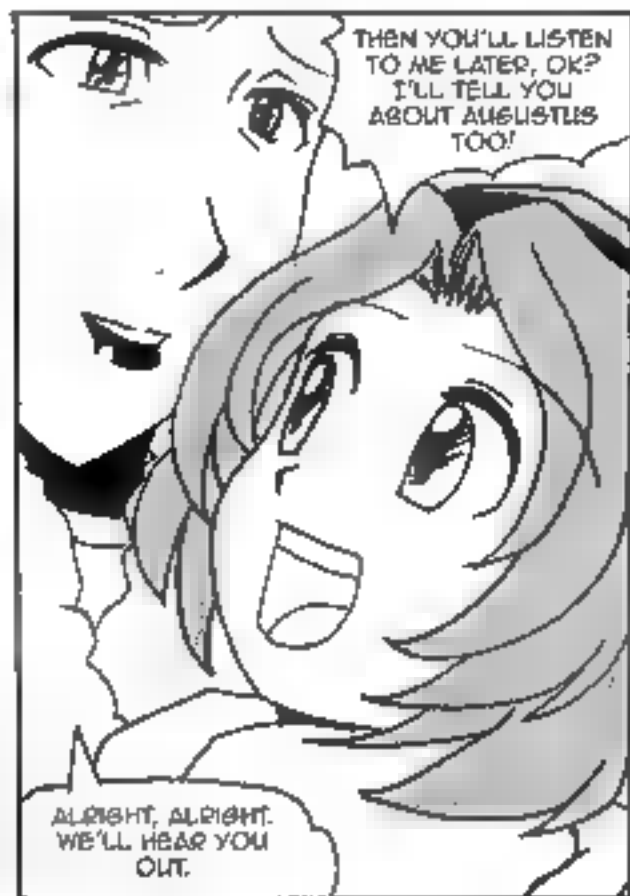
HEARD THAT? TURNED
OUT TO BE DONNIE.

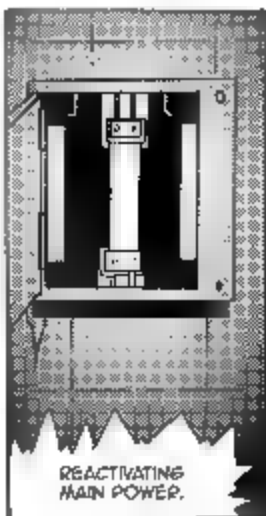
YEAH, SURE, NO
HARD FEELINGS.
JUST SEE WASSUP
WITH HIM FOR ME.
CIAO.



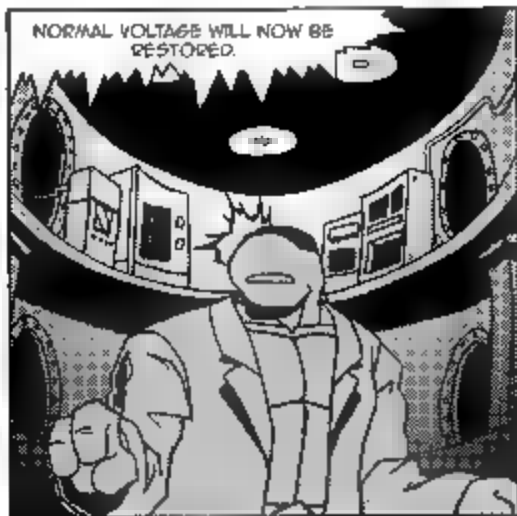
AS FOR YOU!! WHO
ALLOWED YA TO
WATCH TV, HUH? GIT
MOVIN' WIT' THOSE
WEIGHTS, YA
LAZY BUN!

UOYA!





REACTIVATING
MAIN POWER.



NORMAL VOLTAGE WILL NOW BE
RESTORED.



COME ON...
COME ON...

Password
ENTER PASSWORD

Loading...



AN ACTOR WHO
MINDS HIS OWN
BUSINESS IN
THE BACKSTAGE...

HEHEHEHE...



...BUT NOT
FOR LONG.



ONE DAY, THIS
ILLUSIONAL
REALITY WILL
FADE AWAY.

HAHAHA
HAHAHA!!

HA
HA
HA...



Project A38

STATUS

ACTIVE



Breaking news: a girl
survived a mutant attack.

HE'S NOT A
MUTANT, HE'S
AN ACTOR!

SHE'S RIGHT...



IN THIS ILLUSION...
IN THIS REPULSIVE
REALITY, I'M
NOTHING MORE
THAN AN ACTOR.

AN ACTOR WHO HAS NEVER
PERFORMED BEFORE.

DONNE? IT'S
ME, MIKEY!
WHY THE
HELL DID
YOU PICK
ON SOME
HELPLESS
GIRL?

HE...HEHEHE...



ONE DAY,
I'LL RECLAIM
THE REALITY
FROM "BACK
THEN"...

...THE REALITY
THAT WAS TAKEN
AWAY FROM ME
BY LEONARDO.

MUTANT
NINJA
TURTLES
Gaiden
外伝

CHAPTER 7: THE
UNTIMELY CLASH
RAPHAEL VS MICHELANGELO



BUT UNDER THE
TATAMI LAID THE
CORPSE OF...

...THE CORPSE
OF... OF...

cautious

his clan was
the tatami laid
Raphael_

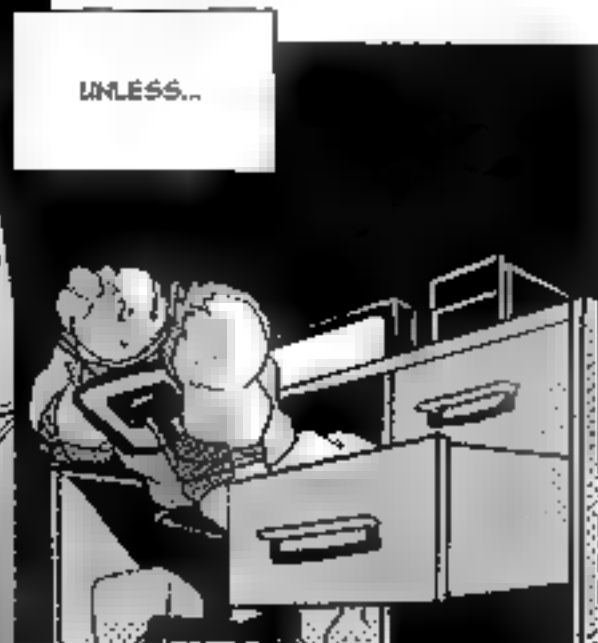
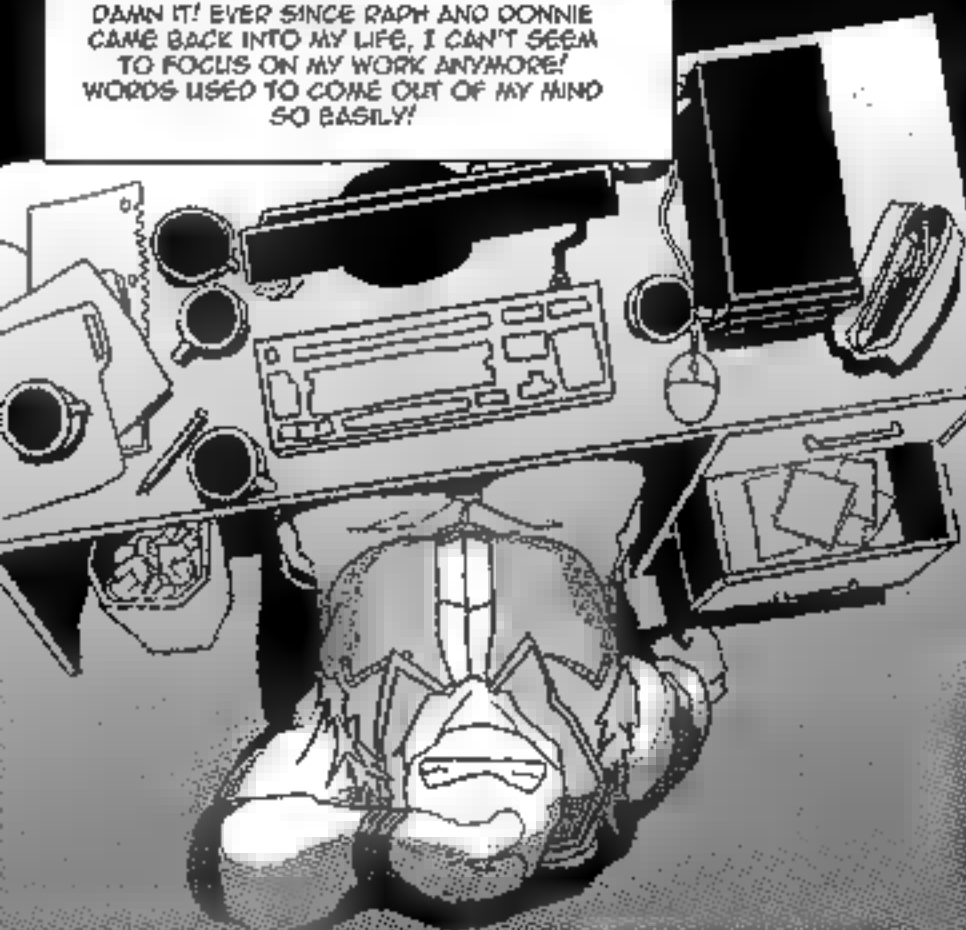
WAIT,
JUST WHAT
AM I TYPING?

I NEED TO SNAP
OUT OF IT... I NEED
TO MAKE SOME
PROGRESS!



DAHN IT! EVER SINCE RAPH AND DONNIE
CAME BACK INTO MY LIFE, I CAN'T SEEM
TO FOCUS ON MY WORK ANYMORE!
WORDS USED TO COME OUT OF MY MIND
SO EASILY!

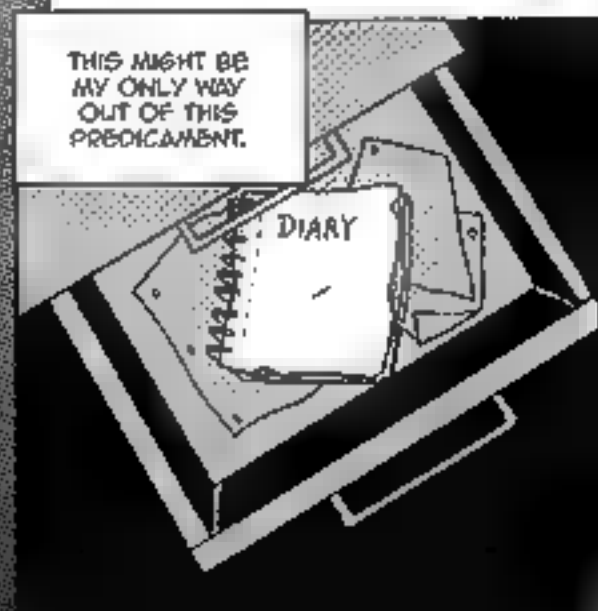
UNLESS...



THIS MIGHT BE
MY ONLY WAY
OUT OF THIS
PREDICAMENT.

THE DEADLINE IS GROWING
NEARER AND NEARER
AND I'M NOT EVEN HALFWAY
DONE WITH MY FIRST DRAFT!

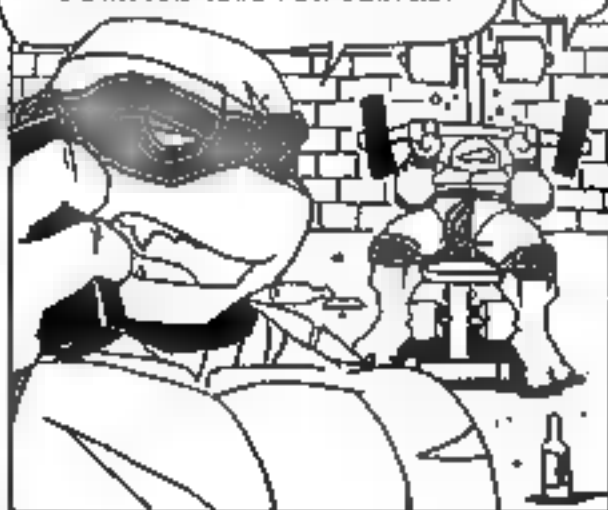
IF I CAN'T LIVE UP TO MY
PUBLISHER'S EXPECTATIONS,
IF I SCREW UP THIS BIG...
I WON'T GET PAID,
MY REPUTATION WILL BE
TAINED AND IT'LL BE HARDER
TO SECURE CONTRACTS
IN THE FUTURE...



HUH... WHO'S CALLING
AT THIS TIME...
NO RENOIR! DON'CHA
EVEN THINK 'BOLT
PUTTIN' THAT DOWN!
KEEP PUMPIN' IRON!



YO, YOU'VE REACHED "SUICIDAL
ALCOHOLICS ANONYMOUS". NOW
HANG UP BEFORE WE TRACK YA
DOWN AND HAVE YOU JOIN US.



HELP!

YOU? HOW'D 'CHA
GET MY NUMBER?



I ASKED SHADOW
FOR IT.
BUT WHY DO YOU
SOUND SO
SURPRISED?

I KNOW WE GREW APART
A BIT SINCE HIGH SCHOOL,
WITH YOU BEING SUCH A...
SWEET-TALKER AND STUFF.
BUT WITH EVERYTHING
THAT HAPPENED, I WOULD LIKE
WE SHOULD RECONNECT,
DON'T YOU THINK?



REDECORATING?

ENJOY
LIFE?



WEIRD... YOU ONCE
TOLD ME THAT ONLY
OLD PEOPLE USE
THIS KIND OF
LANGUAGE.

HUH? WHAT
WAS THAT
NOISE?
ALIBUSTUS?

WHAT DID
I DO...?



AWW, NOTHIN'
BABY!

YOU KNOW, YOU LEFT
SO SUDDENLY THE OTHER
NIGHT. DIDN'T YOU THINK
I'D WANT TO ASK YOU
SOME QUESTIONS AT
LEAST? I'D LIKE TO
SEE YOU AGAIN. TO TALK.



CAN YOU MEET ME
AT OUR USUAL PLACE
FROM THE GOOD OLD DAYS,
TOMORROW EVENING?



GAHH, SURE THING, TOOTS!
SORRY I DIDN'T GIVE YA
A HOLLER! I WAS KINDA
BUSY THESE LAST FEW
DAYS ER...
BEATIN' UP THUGS, TRAININ'...
ERRRR... I MEAN READIN'
BOOKS FOR TEENS,
REDECORATIN' MY
HOME, ENJOYIN' MY
NEW LIFE...
GAHAHAHA!



OH LOOK AT THE
TIME. I'D BETTER
GO TO SLEEP.
YOU'RE NOCTURNAL
NOW, THOUGH,
RIGHT?

THAT'S
WHAT
SHADOW
SAID,
SO...

...SEE
YOU TOMORROW
AT OUR
"USUAL PLACE"
TAKE CARE
AUGUSTUS!



HEY YA
RUNT!

I NAILED SOME KIND
OF A DATE WITH THAT
ASIAN GIRL YER SO
OBSESSED WITH!
SHE WANTS TO
SEE ME AT SOME
"USUAL PLACE"
WHERE'S THAT?



'AIGHT. SO T'WAS THAT
PARK WHERE YA RAN AWAY
TO AND ACTED LIKE
A DAMN DRAMA QUEEN
IN FRONT OF SHADOW.
I'M JUST GONNA TELL THAT
DAVIANNA THAT I, "AUGUSTUS"
AM STILL ALIVE AND KICKIN'.
NOTHIN' MORE.

"COUGH" "COUGH"
PLEASE, OH PLEASE!
LET ME TAG ALONG!
PLEASE... MASTER!



YA KIDDIN' ME? DID'JA
THINK FOR A SECOND
I'D DRAG YER WHINY
ASS WITH ME AND
SPARE YA OF YER
MUCH NEEDED TRAINING?
HELL NO!

TRYIN' TO SLACK
OFF AGAIN, EH?
WELL, I AIN'T
THAT STUPID.
RENOR! YER
STAYIN' HERE!



AAAH, SHUDDAR.. SHE FELL
FOR IT ONCE, SO SHE
PROBABLY WILL THIS TIME
TOO...



BESIDES, IF SHE THOUGHT
I WAS "AUGUSTUS", THAT
MEANS I HAVE A LOT IN
COMMON WITH HER DEAD
FRIEND, 'Y KNOW...

IT'S BEEN A
WHILE WE
DIDN'T MEET
UP HERE.

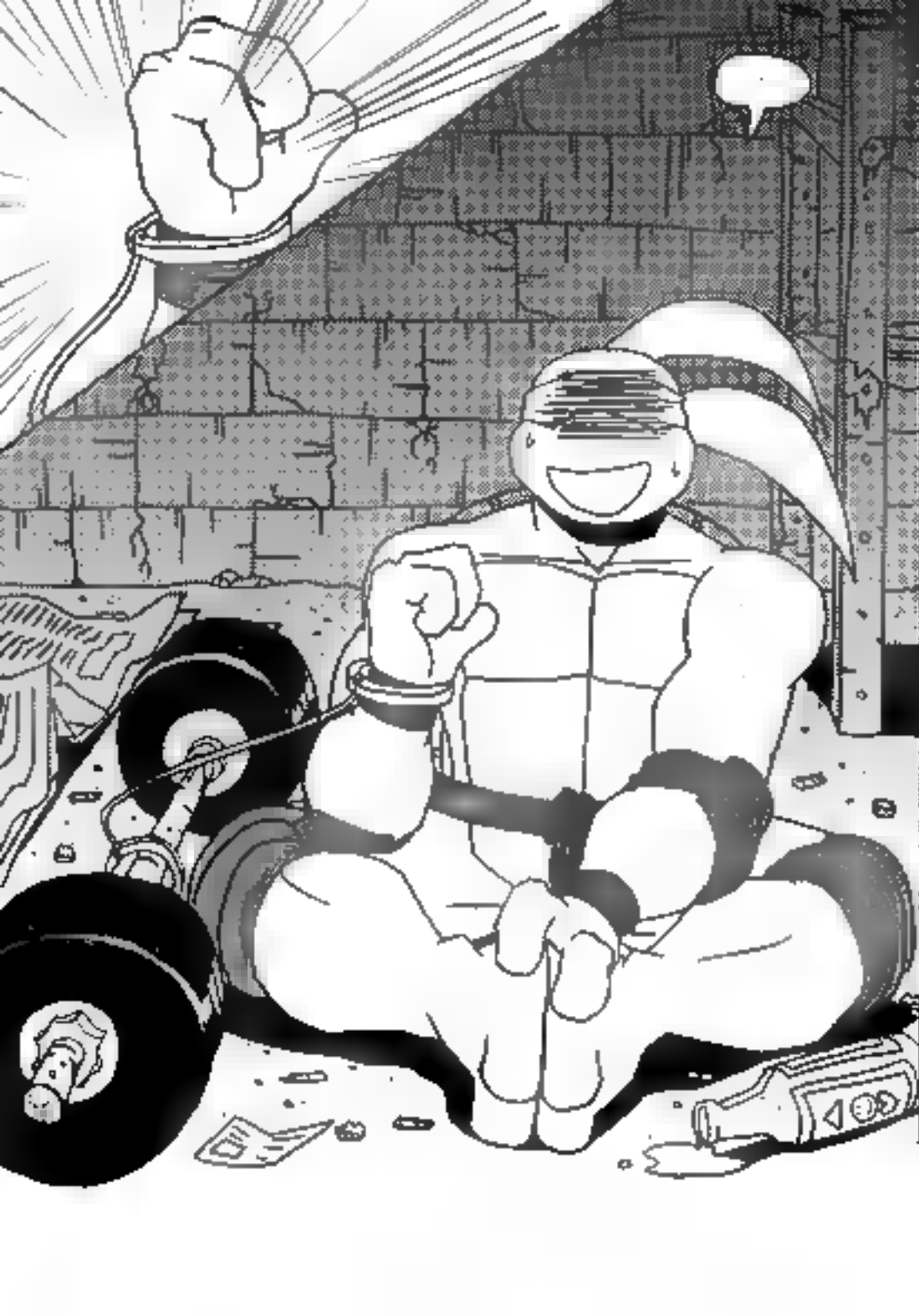
FROM TIME TO
TIME, WE'D TALK
ABOUT THE
GOOD OLD
DAYS, WHEN
WE WERE KIDS,
WHEN WE FIRST
MET.

I'D ALWAYS
TELL HIM
THAT THIS IS
"OUR" PLACE.

I WONDERED IF
HE KNEW WHAT
I WAS TALKING
ABOUT.

I KNEW IT.
HE REMEMBERS.
HE REALLY IS
THE ALLEGUTUS
I KNOW.





PREVENTIVE MEASURE,
THAT MANIAC SAID!!
THE HELL WITH IT!!
I NEED TO SEE
DAVIANNA TOO!



IF ONLY I WASN'T
HANDCUFFED TO
THIS BARBELL...



WAIT, THOSE
ARE SCREWS!

I'M SUCH A GENIUS!
I'LL JUST UNSCREW
THOSE WEIGHTS AND
I'LL BE BY DAVIANNA'S
SIDE IN A JIFFY!!



SCREW YOU,
RAPHAEL...
HAHA! THAT'S
A GOOD ONE...



HEY
THERE.



HEYA.



AAAAH!

バキ

ガ

バキ

ドサ



OH NO! ARE
YOU OKAY?

I'M OK! I'M OK!
DON'CHA WORRY 'BOUT
ME!!



WEIRD. NORMALLY HE'D
SAY SOMETHING OUT
OF PLACE LIKE HIS
DELICATE BUTT BEING
DAMAGED OR SOMETHING.

STUPID
SWING.

IT'S SO
WINDY
TODAY...

ヒューウウ...



ヒューウウウウウ

DON'T LOOK
THERE,
YOU PERVERT!!



WELL, AT
LEAST
THAT
CONFIRMS
THAT HE'S
STILL
HIMSELF.



I DON'T THINK YA MADE
ME COME ALL THE WAY
HERE JUST TO HELP
YA PRACTICE
YER GIRLY SELF-
DEFENSE SKILLS!



ACTUALLY, I WAS JUST
THINKING...



DO YA BELIEVE IN
REINCARNATION?
IF NOT, START BELIEVIN',
'CUZ THAT'S
HOW I CAME BACK.



NOW I WONDER HOW YOU
GOT SO MANY SCARS
AND BECAME SO BIG
AND FAT WITHIN THE
FEW WEEKS THAT FOLLOWED
YOUR 'REBIRTH'.



SUCH A
HEAVY
BROOKLYN
ACCENT...
HAWHA...



AH, DON'T
WORRY, NO
MATTER WHAT
THE EXPLANATION
IS, I WON'T PRY.
IT'S NOT LIKE
THE IDEA OF A
'REBIRTH' IS
RATIONAL ANYWAYS,
SO WHY BOTHER
WITH DETAILS,
RIGHT?

ANYWAYS,
MY NEXT
POINT IS...



LOOK
AT
THIS.



THAT NUMBER
IS THE FRUIT OF
YOUR LABOR... OR
LACK THEREOF.



"64"... EDD... YEAH, SO
WHAT? THAT'S A BAD
NUMBER ACCORDING TO
YER HOROSCOPE OR
SOMETHIN'?

NO, THAT'S
THE GRADE I
GOT FOR THE
BOOK REPORT
I DID WITH YOU
A FEW MONTHS
BACK. READ THE
COMMENTS,
IT GETS BETTER.

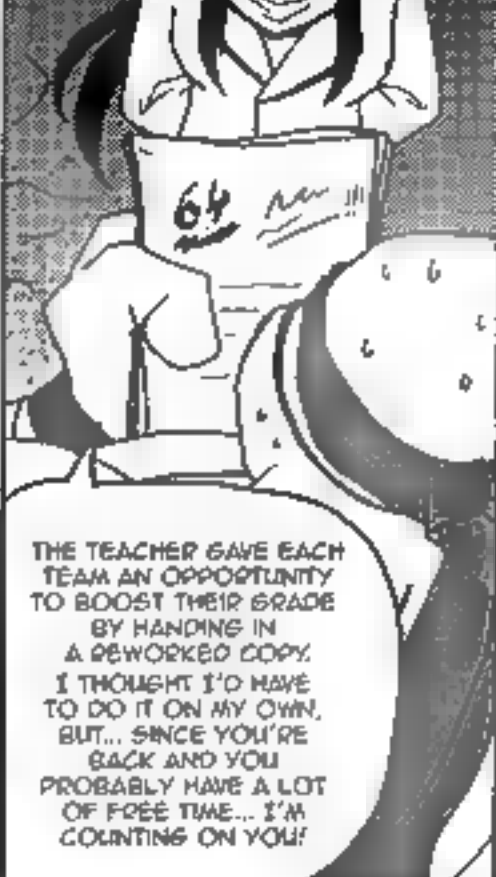
I'M SO LUCKY
TO HAVE YOU BACK!
PLEASE DROP IT IN
MY MAILBOX WHEN
YOU'RE DONE!



"NEXT TIME, DO YOUR
RESEARCH INSTEAD OF
MAKING UP THINGS
ABOUT THE AUTHOR."



THE LINKS
BETWEEN THE
AUTHOR'S LIFE
AND HIS WORK
WAS YOUR PART.
REMEMBER?



THE TEACHER GAVE EACH
TEAM AN OPPORTUNITY
TO BOOST THEIR GRADE
BY HANDING IN
A REWORKED COPY.
I THOUGHT I'D HAVE
TO DO IT ON MY OWN,
BUT... SINCE YOU'RE
BACK AND YOU
PROBABLY HAVE A LOT
OF FREE TIME... I'M
COUNTING ON YOU!



THANK
YOU,
AUGUSTUS!



WHAT'S
THIS
SHT...?

UNCLE RAPH? WHAT?
DAVIANNA'S BOOK REPORT?
I DUNNO... TRY ASKING
RENOIR.

THE
TITLE?

NO, IF RENOIR'S THAT
CONVINCED THAT
HE'S THAT "AUGUSTUS"
GUY, HE PROBABLY SUCKS
AT SCHOOL STUFF LIKE
HIM TOO.

LET'S SEE
HERE...
"DISHONOR,
DESPAIR,
SORROW
AND ILLUSIONS.
BY "MIKAEL
SUONAROTTI".

AAAH!! THAT'S
UNCLE MIKEY'S
PEN NAME!
I DIDN'T KNOW DAVIANNA
AND AUGUSTUS CHOSE
TO DO THEIR BOOK
REPORT ON HIS FIRST
NOVEL!

HEHE, IT'S A SMALL WORLD
AFTER ALL, EH?
WELL I S'POSE HE AIN'T
GONNA MIND IF I DROPPED
BY HIS PLACE!
IT'S A GREAT TUNING TOO, I'M
OUTTA SOOZE.
CATCH YA LATER, KIDDO.

WAIT,
UNCLE
RAPH!
HE...
"CLICK"

DAVIANNA!! I'M HERE AT
LAST! I'LL SAVE YOU
FROM THAT FAT
LUMBERING FAKER!!

COME,
FLY INTO
MY ARMS!!

EHP

MASTER!! I'M
SORRRYYYYY!!

SHADDAP,
RENOIR!!

OH, SO SHE CALLED FOR THE BOOK REPORT?

TOO BAD I CAN'T HELP YOU WITH IT. I DIDN'T ACTUALLY READ THAT BOOK, HAHAHA...

ERR.. THANKS FOR THE RIDE BY THE WAY...

RENOIR, WHY WON'CHA JUST STOP PRETENDIN'?

I KNOW YOU'RE OBSESSED WIT' THAT CHICK, BUT YA SHOULD CALM DOWN. YER JUST GONNA MESS UP HER MIND MORE. Y'KNOW, I PUT UP A HORRIBLE ACT PRETENDIN' TO BE HER DEAD PAL... AND SHE STILL BOUGHT IT. GOES TO SHOW HOW FRAGILE THE STATE OF HER MIND IS RIGHT NOW.

I DUNNO HOW YA KNOW SO MUCH 'BOUT HER PAL, BUT I DON'T EVER WANNA SEE YA POP UP AND TRY TO SLAP YOUR "HUMAN LIFE" FANTASY ON HER FACE AGAIN.

SHE'S NOT THE ONLY ONE TRYING TO MAKE SENSE OUT OF ABSURD THINGS, YOU KNOW. EVER SINCE I WOKE UP LOOKING LIKE THIS... I HAVE A HARD TIME ACCEPTING THAT THIS IS "REALITY".

THAT'S WHY I WANT TO RECLAIM EVERYTHING THAT USED TO BE IMPORTANT TO ME... TO FEEL MORE "REAL"...

...BECAUSE RIGHT NOW, IT'S LIKE I'M LIVING A NIGHTMARE!
I'M NOT "RENOIR"!

MY REAL NAME, AS A HUMAN, IS...

CAN'T 'CHA SEE I DON'T GIVE DAMN?

YOU'RE ALWAYS WHININ' 'BOUT YER DAMN IMAGINARY HUMAN IDENTITY!! WELL I'M FED UP WIT' YER CRAP!! YOU'RE A MUTANT TURTLE LIKE ME, DONNIE AND MIKEY!
SO BEAD WIT' IT AND QUIT PISSIN' ME OFF ALREADY!!

YOU'RE BORN A MUTANT AND YOU'LL DIE AS ONE!!

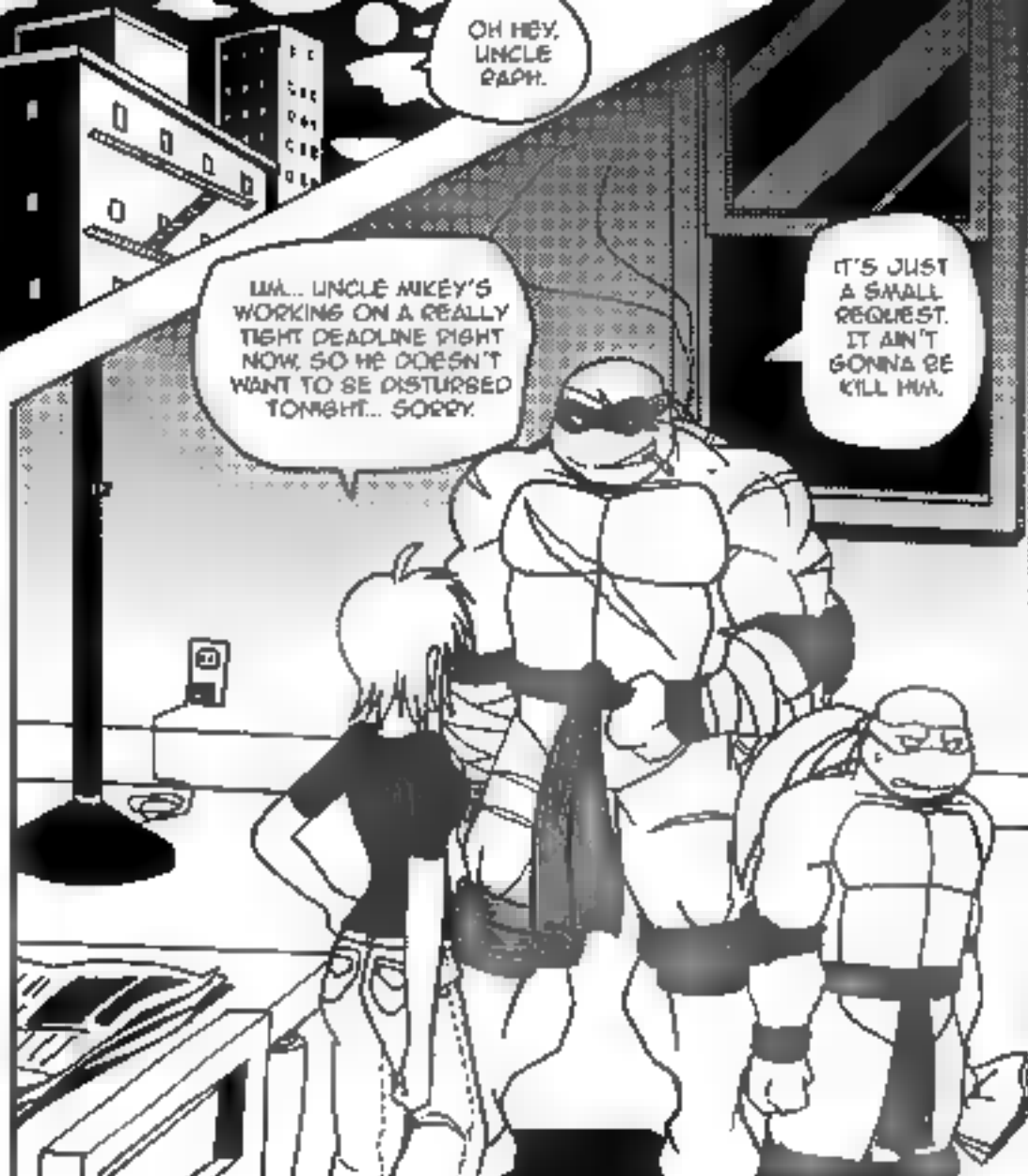
NO!! I...

I HAVE MEMORIES... I...!!

WH'CHA SAYIN'...? AAAH?

CAT GOT YER TONGUE, RENAI?

I WONDER WHY I PUT UP WITH A COLOSSAL JERK LIKE RAPHAEL FOR SO LONG...



OH HEY,
UNCLE
RAPH.

UHM... UNCLE MIKEY'S
WORKING ON A REALLY
TIGHT DEADLINE RIGHT
NOW, SO HE DOESN'T
WANT TO BE DISTURBED
TONIGHT... SORRY.

IT'S JUST
A SMALL
REQUEST.
IT AN'T
GONNA BE
KILL HIM.



HEY AUGUSTUS,
WHY SUCH A LONG
FACE?



STOP CALLIN' HIM
THAT. YER FEEDIN'
HIS FANTASY OF
ONCE BEIN' A
HUMAN. CALL
HIM 'RENOIR'.
THAT'S HIS NAME.



HUH? BUT...

IT'S BETWEEN
HIM AND ME.
DON'T
INTERFERE,
SHADOW.

UHM... OK
WHATEVER
YOU SAY,
UNCLE RAPH.



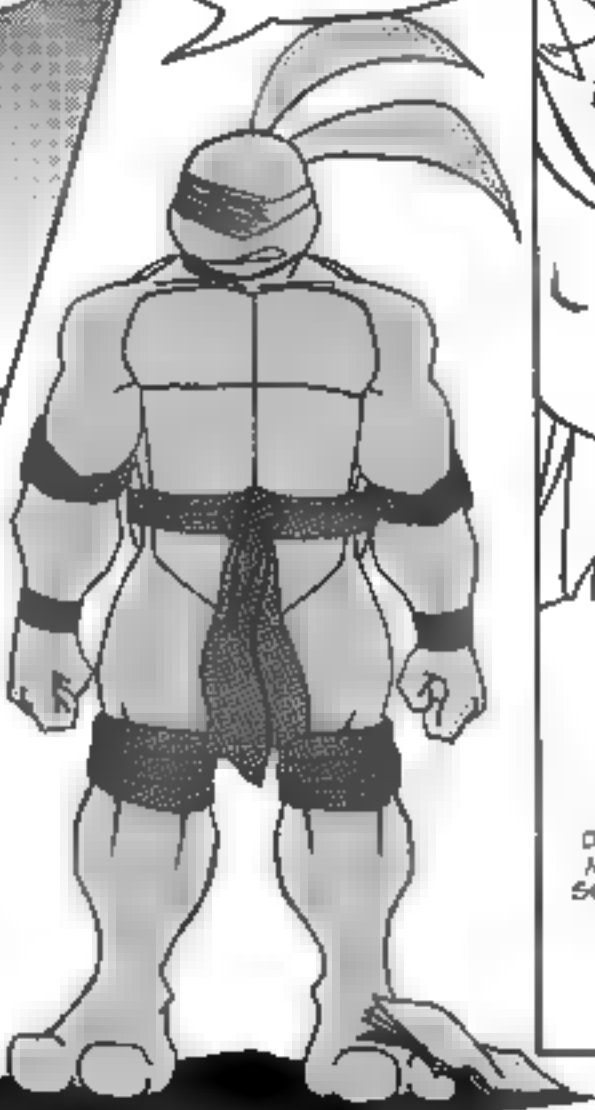
ANYWAYS, HERE'S
A CASE OF BEER.
MAKE IT LAST, OK?
FOR THE BOOK
REPORT, JUST LEAVE
IT TO ME!

EVERYTHING
WILL BE OKAY!
GOOD BYE,
NOW!



THANKS FOR THE BOOZE...

BUT TONIGHT, IT'S MY DUTY AS "AUGUSTUS" TO MAKE SURE THAT PAPER IS CORRECTED AND TO DELIVER IT TO THAT GIRL.



YA KNOW, SHE THINKS I'M HER DEAD PAL, SO SHE BOSSED ME AROUND... THAT AUGUSTUS MUST BE A WIMP, HAHHAH!



THAT'S, ERR... GOOD FOR YOU, UNCLE RAPH. BY THE WAY, YOU DIDN'T KNOW UNCLE MIKEY'S PEN NAME, SO... I SUPPOSE YOU NEVER READ HIS WORKS, RIGHT?



DOES IT LOOK LIKE I READ BOOKS?

AHA, SEE? LIKE I SAID, LEAVE IT TO ME! I READ HIS BOOKS SO I CAN FINISH THIS IN A JIFFY! NOW GO HOME AND ENJOY THE BEER, HAHHAH...



WHO SAID ANYTHIN' 'BOUT READIN' A BOOK? I'M JUST GONNA ASK MY BRO TO DO ALL THE WORK FOR ME! AFTER ALL, HE'S THE AUTHOR OF... A "STORY ABOUT FOUR BROTHERS WHO..."

NO! NO, UNCLE RAPH! YOU WON'T LIKE THE STORY! IT'S... IT'S...!!!



FOUR
BROTHERS.

"....WHO LOST ALL TRUST IN
EACH OTHER AND CAUSED THE
DEATH OF THEIR SENSEI..."

MIKEEEEEYYYY...

UNCLE
RAPH!!
WAIT!

アアア

MIKEY!!

WHAT THE...

RAPH? WHAT WAS
THAT ALL ABOUT?
LOOK, I'M BUSY
RIGHT NOW, SO...

TOO BAD...
'CUZ I CAME
TO GIVE YA
SOMETHIN'
ELSE TO BE
BUSY WITH...!!

RAPH?

DIARY





GET
UP.

I TOLD YA TO
GET UP!!

RAPH!!
H... HAVE
YOU GONE
MAO?

YA "HUMAN"
SCUM! YA REALLY
OUTDID YERSELF,
HAVEN'T YA!!
YOU'RE THE LOWEST
OF THE LOW!



UNCLE RAPH!! WHAT'S
WRONG WITH YOU??
UNCLE MIKEY... HE'S...
HE'S BLEEDING!!!

YOU! STAY OUTTA
THIS! IT'S JUST
BETWEEN ME
AND THIS PIECE
OF SHIT HERE!

UNCLE
RAPH!!
CALM
DOWN!!



PLEASE!
LET GO
OF HIM!!



RENOIR!!
HE'S YOUR
MASTER!! YOU
KNOW HIM
BETTER THAN ME!
STOP HIM!!

RENOIR!!



I'M... I'M
AUGUSTUS.

LET'S SETTLE
THIS SCORE, YA
LOWLIFE.
RIGHT HERE,
RIGHT NOW.





IT TOOK ME A WHILE TO
RECOVER FROM THE TRAUMA
CAUSED BY SPLINTER'S DEATH.



MY FIRST STEP TOWARDS THIS RECOVERY
WAS ADDING A DETAILED ENTRY IN MY
DIARY ABOUT THE EVENT THAT TORE OUR
FAMILY APART.

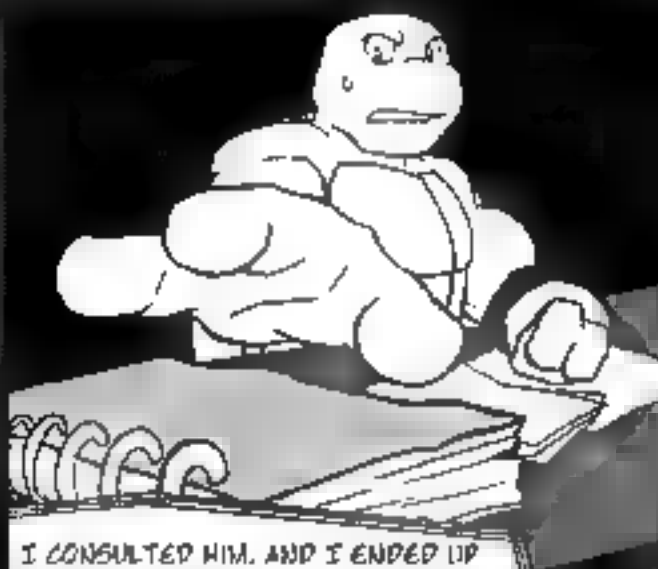


STORING MY PAST
IN A DIARY MADE
ME FEEL LESS
GUILTY ABOUT
FORGETTING IT.

THE NEXT THING I KNEW, I WAS STRUGGLING TO
FIGURE OUT WHAT COULD MAKE MY PITIFULLY BORING
NOVEL MORE ENGAGING AND 'READABLE.'



I SWORE NEVER TO LOOK BACK INTO MY HORRIBLE
PAST, BUT AT THAT TIME, I NEEDED TO CONSULT
MY OLD SELF...



I CONSULTED HIM, AND I ENDED UP
DOING MUCH MORE THAN JUST
GETTING INSPIRED

UNFORTUNATELY, IT SEEMED THAT MY INSPIRATION
WAS BOUND TO MY LOST MEMORIES. MY STATE OF
MIND WAS DIFFERENT BACK THEN. I WAS HAPPY AND
LIGHT-HEARTED I WAS ABLE TO USE MY IMAGINATION,
BUT TIME CHANGES PEOPLE, I CHANGED MY
IMAGINATION WAS GONE.

NO MATTER WHAT I DO,
MY PAST ALWAYS ENDS UP
CATCHING UP WITH ME,
WHETHER I LIKE IT OR
NOT...





YA DENY YOUR
NINJA PAST TO LIVE
LIKE A HUMAN...

AND YET YA KEEP
YOUR WORST
MEMORIES TO
TURN 'EM
INTO CASH
AND FAME!

OUR
MEMORIES!
OUR PAST!
OUR SENSEI!



UNCLE
MIKEY!



REN... NO! I MEAN,
AUGUSTUS! SNAP OUT
OF IT!



THERE! I CALLED YOU BY YOUR REAL
NAME, OKAY? NOW PLEASE, I BEG
YOU, DO SOMETHING ABOUT YOUR
MASTER!!!

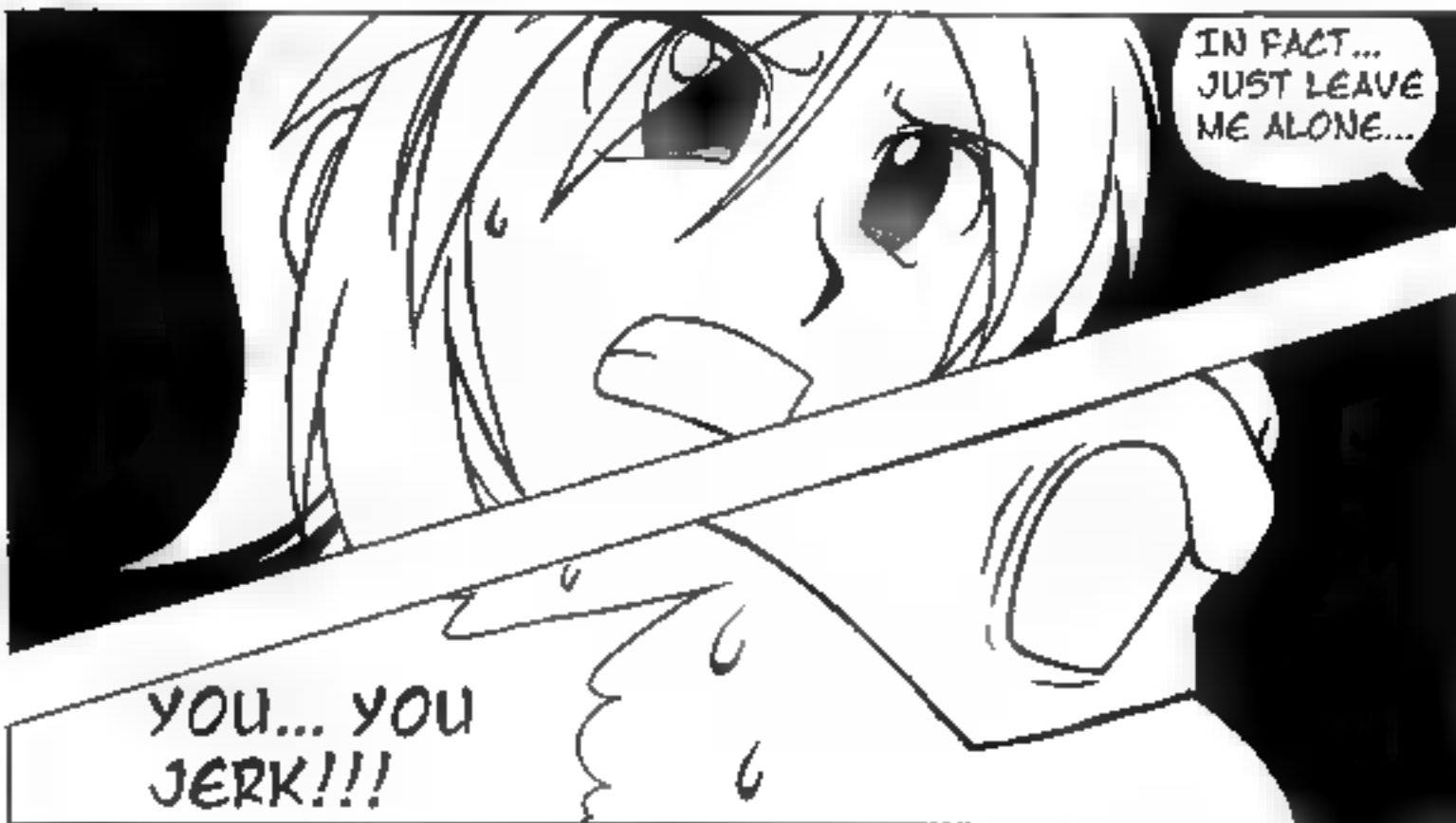


UNCLE RAPH
WON'T
LISTEN TO
ME, BUT IF
YOU TALK
TO HIM,
PERHAPS...

T... THIS IS NOT MY PROBLEM.
I... I'M AUGUSTUS, RIGHT?
NOT... NOT 'RENOIR'...? I'M NOT
THAT OBNOXIOUS ALCOHOLIC'S
DISCIPLE...!



AND I DON'T KNOW THAT GUY YOU CALL
'MIKEY'... I'M NOT RELATED TO THEM, CAN'T
YOU SEE, SHADOW? I'M HUMAN! WHY
SHOULD I CARE?



IN FACT...
JUST LEAVE
ME ALONE...

YOU... YOU
JERK!!!

TELL ME, DEAR BROTHER...

HOW DOES IT FEEL TO
MAKE CASH OFF YOUR OWN
DEAD FATHER...

...THE ONE THAT WE
BOTH KILLED...!

I...
DIDN'T...
KILL...
MASTER
SPLINTER!!!

DENY,
DENY,
DENY
...

WHEN WILL YA
EVER STOP
DENYING REALITY,
DAMMIT!!!

S...SO
WHAT?

SURE, I DENY MY PAST LIFE,
BUT AT LEAST THE PRESENT
AND THE FUTURE DON'T
SCARE ME AT ALL... YOU
ARE THE ONE WHO IS
RUNNING AWAY FROM
EVERYTHING!

WHO
ISOLATED HIMSELF
FROM THE WHOLE WORLD
WHEN NO ONE ACTUALLY FORCED
HIM TO? WHO DECIDED TO LIVE
HIS LIFE MISERABLY ALL ALONE?

A FEW YEARS
AGO, DONNIE TOLD ME
THAT YOU'VE STOPPED LOOKING
AT YOURSELF IN A MIRROR BECAUSE
YOU HATED WHAT YOU'VE BECOME...
YOU'RE RUNNING AWAY FROM
THE PRESENT AND THE
FUTURE, AREN'T
YOU, RAPHAEL...

...AND THAT'S
WHY YOU TOOK
RENDIR IN, DIDN'T YOU!

WHO STARTED
DRINKING AND
SMOKING DAILY
TO FORGET
ABOUT THE
PAST?

SO YOU CAN USE HIM AS A
REFLECTION OF YOUR OLD SELF AND
PRETEND TO LOOK AT YOUR ACTUAL
SELF! ARE YOU THAT DESPERATE
TO LIE TO YOURSELF?

RRR...RRRRHH...



WHY CAN'T YOU TRY TO SEE
THINGS MY WAY?

OH, I UNDERSTAND... YA
SOLD US TO HUMANS!



STOP... BLAMING
ME!!!

WHAT 'CHA WAITIN'
FOR... C'MON, LIFT
ME UP..

ガハッ

OR MAYBE
YOU FELT THE WEIGHT
OF OUR SIN... THE ONE THAT
I'VE BEEN CARRYING ON MY OWN
UP UNTIL NOW!!

ガハッ

THAT'S WHAT YHA GET
FOR DOIN' NO TRAININ'!
YA TURN INTO A Sissy...



OH YEAH? WELL, I
THINK IT'S THE
THOUSANDS OF
GALLONS OF ALCOHOL
YOU DRANK AND THE
MILLIONS OF
CIGARETTES YOU
SMOKED THAT
MADE YOU SO
HEAVY!!!

FOR 17
YEARS,
MIKEY...

FOR 17 DAMN
YEARS YOU'VE
BEEN AVOIDIN'
THE BURDEN OF
OUR SIN! AND
TO TOP IT
OFF YA MAKE
A DAMN
CIRCUS
OUT OF OUR
TRAGEDY!

16 YEARS,
RAPH... I
HAD TO
PONDER ON
MY DECISION
FOR THE
WHOLE FIRST
YEAR...WHEN
I FINALLY
PUBLISHED MY
NOVEL, I
KNEW WHAT I
WAS DOING!

AS FOR
YOU... IT
TOOK YOU
LESS THAN
THIRTY
SECONDS
TO DECIDE
THAT
BECAUSE
OF THAT
SPECIFIC
DECISION,
I'M A
TRAITOR...

17 YEARS... OUR SIN...
MINE... AND YOURS!!!

MY 365 DAYS OF MEDITATION...
AND YOUR 30 SECONDS!!!

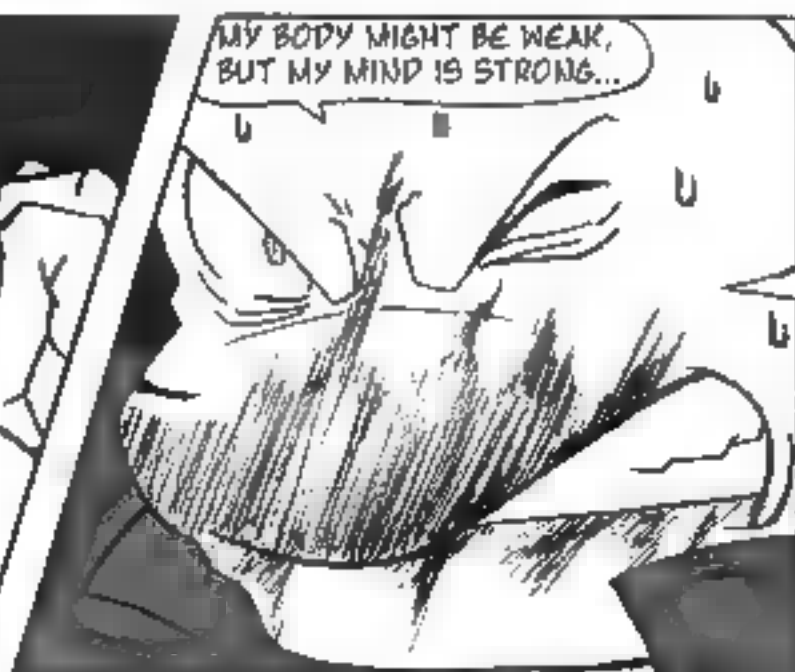
YOU
PIECE
OF
CRAP!!!

TAKE THAT
BACK, YOU
MANIC-
DEPRESSIVE
SICKO!!

THWAP



DO YA SERIOUSLY THINK YOU
CAN WIN 'GAINST ME, HUH?
DO YA? YA WEAKLING!



MY BODY MIGHT BE WEAK,
BUT MY MIND IS STRONG...

STRONG
ENOUGH TO
SHRUG OFF
YOUR
INVITATION
TO A
COLLECTIVE
POINTLESS
GUILTY TRIP,
NO MATTER
HOW MUCH
YOU BEAT
ME UP!!!



GAAAAH!!
YOU...
YOU
CRAZY...!

WHAT'S A NOVELIST'S
WORTH IF HE CAN'T
WRITE, TELL ME...



NOTHING... YA HEAR? AND
THAT'S HOW LEO FELT AS
A LEADER WHEN HE
ABSORBED THE
RESPONSIBILITY OF OUR
SIN FOR US... FOR YOU!

YOU IGNORANT HERMIT... I CAN STILL TYPE ON A KEYBOARD WITH MY OTHER HAND!

I'LL FIX THAT...

TOO BAD YOUR GENES WILL HEAL YOU...TCH.

GWAAAH!!

GGHRRRRHHH...

Y...YOU KNOW THIS SATISFACTION OF KICKING MY ASS IS JUST EPHEMERAL, DON'T YOU...

YOU BROKE MY HANDS, YOU DISFIGURED ME, YOU'RE NOW HAPPY... AND THEN WHAT? DO YOU EXPECT SPLINTER COME BACK IF YOU MAKE ME SUFFER ENOUGH?

TIME MAKES EVERYTHING EPHEMERAL, RAPH...OUR FEELINGS, OUR PAIN... EVEN MASTER SPLINTER'S DEATH! WHY CAN'T YOU JUST LEAVE THE PAST BEHIND AND MOVE ON TO SOMETHING ELSE?

IT'S ONLY BECAUSE YOU'VE DECIDED TO LINGER ENDLESSLY IN OUR TRAGIC PAST THAT YOU'RE CONSUMED BY GUILT! EVERYTHING COMES AND GOES, NOTHING IS STATIC EXCEPT YOU, RAPH! YOU'VE NEVER DONE ANYTHING FOR YOURSELF! SO STOP BLAMING ME FOR YOUR OWN MASOCHISTIC DECISIONS!!!

SHUDDAP!

MASTER SPLINTER'S DEATH...

YA ONLY THINK SO 'CUZ YA
PRETEND TO BE CLEAN!!!



...WAS ANYTHING BUT EPHEMERAL!!!



IT WAS OUR SIN! AND YOU'RE
THE ONE WHO STARTED IT!!!



YA DIRTY, SELFISH
COWARD!!!

I...I'LL MAKE SURE YOU'LL NEVER
WRITE AGAIN!!!



MIKEEEEEEEY!!!



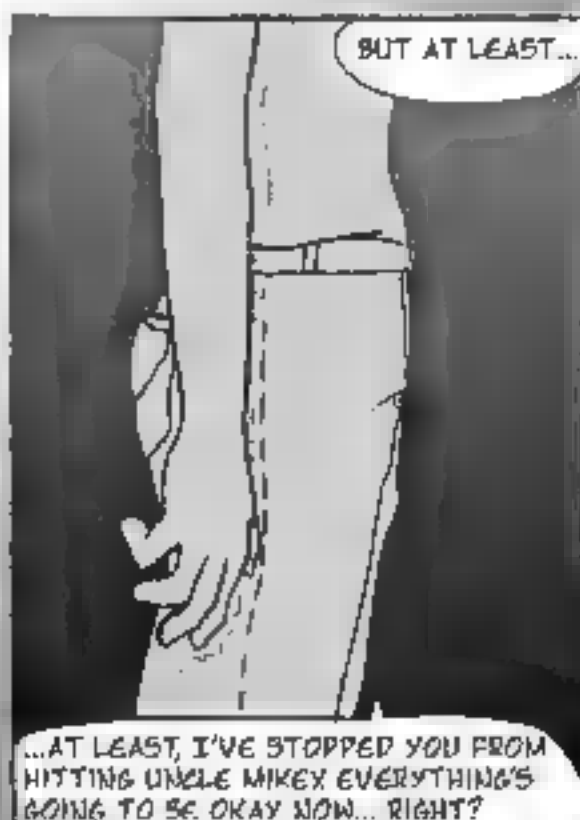
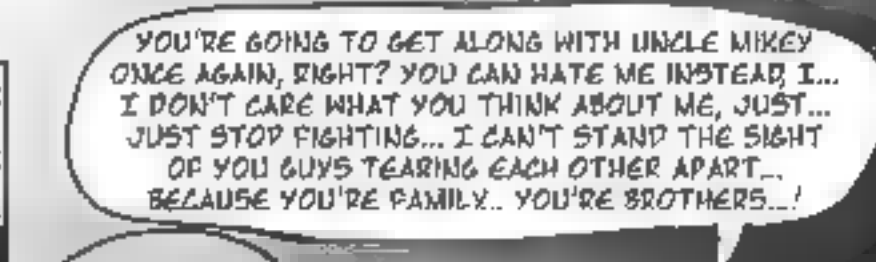
SHADOW! NO!

SHE HAS NOTHING TO
DO WITH THIS, RAPH!

LET HER GO! LET
HER GO!!!

RRHH...
RRRGHHH...





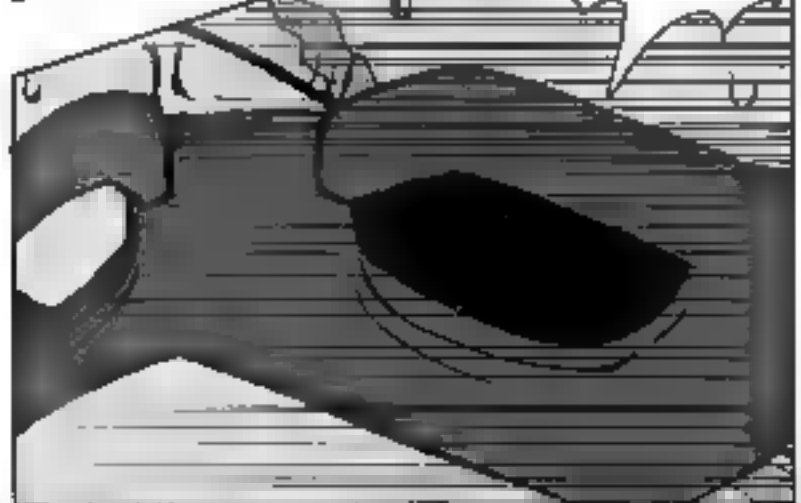
OH NO...
I... I...



D... DON'T TELL
ME I REALLY...



MIKEY!!!



OH...
CRAP..



Y... YOU OKAY,
MIKEY..?





MIKEY.. LISTEN, I...

IT'S OKAY..
RAPH.

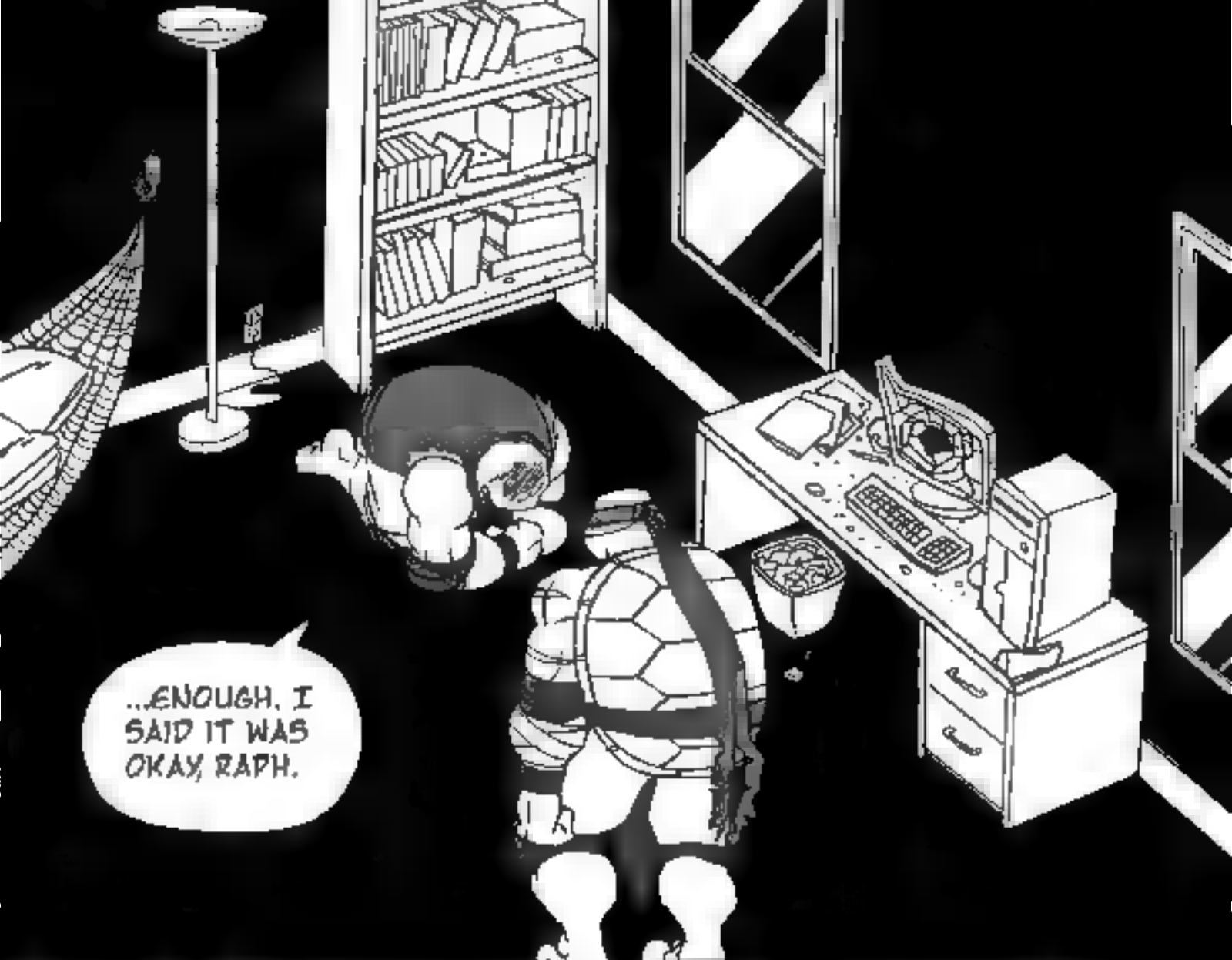
RAPH.

NO! IT
AIN'T
"OKAY"!!!
I ALMOST
KILLED YA!
I... I....!

I... I KNOW!
HIT ME,
MIKEY!

...OR SLASH
ME WITH
SOMETHING
SHARP! WE'LL
BE EVEN
AND...

ENOUGH!



...ENOUGH. I
SAID IT WAS
OKAY, RAPH.

WE'VE BOTH HAD OUR SHARE
OF HARDSHIPS TONIGHT.

LET'S NOT MAKE THINGS WORSE THAN
THEY ALREADY ARE.

L... LEMME AT
LEAST HELP YA
UR!

DON'T
TOUCH ME.

パチ

JUST... RETURN
TO YOUR LAIR...

パチ

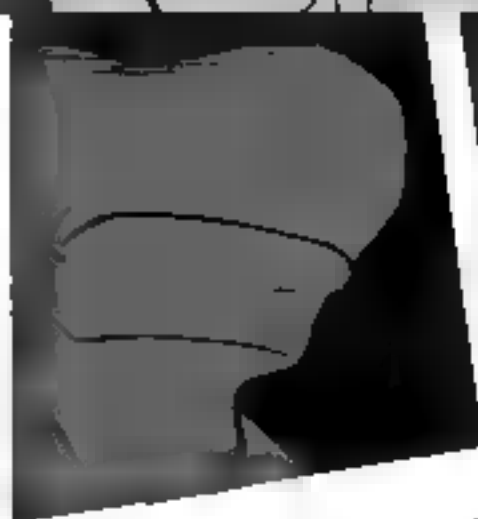
RETURN
TO YOUR LAIR...

I GET THE
MESSAGE
NOW.



RENOIR, MOVE YER
LAZY ASS. WE'RE GOIN'
HOME.

STOP CALLING ME
"RENOIR"...



GO AHEAD! HIT ME
LIKE YOU ALWAYS
DO! I DON'T CARE!

IN FACT, I DON'T
CARE ABOUT YOU
ALTOGETHER! GO AWAY!



I...

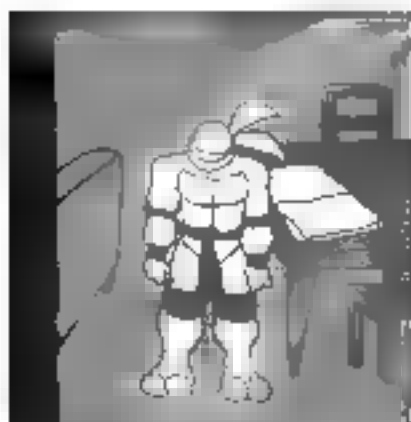




...I HATE Y

I KNOW... YOU HATE
ME... SO WHAT...?

I'VE STOPPED
EXPECTIN' THE
WORLD TO THINK
OTHERWISE 'BOUT
ME 17 YEARS
AGO... RENOIR.



WHAT THE HELL'S YOUR
DAMN PROBLEM?!



YOU SELFISH
JERK!!!

NOW YOU LISTEN
TO ME, SHADOW!



RAPH... NO, "THAT SADISTIC
MANIAC"! ALL HE DID UNTIL
NOW WAS TO MAKE ME
SUFFER FOR HIS OWN PLEA-
SURE! I'VE HAD ENOUGH!!!

ARE YOU RETARDED OR JUST HEARTLESS? CAN'T YOU
SEE THAT BEING PUT DOWN BY YOUR SNOTTY
ATTITUDE IS THE LAST THING HE NEEDED?



WHAT ABOUT ME, SHADOW? MY IDENTITY! HE BLACKMAILED
ME WITH IT TO CONTROL ME LIKE A PUPPET! HE CAN GO
ROT IN HIS LITTLE SEWER HOLE ALONE, I DON'T CARE!



YOU SELFISH
JERK... ALL YOU
CAN DO IS WHINE!



WHY CAN'T YOU DO
SOMETHING
USEFUL FOR A
CHANGE...?

CAN'T YOU SEE...



CAN'T YOU SEE HE COUNTED ON
YOU TO EASE HIS PAIN? DON'T
YOU FEEL SORRY FOR HIM?

NO! NOT ONE BIT!
SERVES HIM RIGHT!

HE WAS HANGING ON TO THE EDGE
OF AN ABYSS WITHIN HIS CONSCIENCE!
HE EXPECTED YOU TO HAUL HIM UP!!!



THEN HE'LL HAVE TO DEAL
WITH THAT "ABYSS" ON HIS
OWN!

..EUZ I'M
NEVER, EVER GOING
BACK TO THAT CRAPPY SO-
CALLED "LAIR" OF HIS!
NEVER!!!

US MUTANTS ARE BEING HUNTED
EVERYWHERE ON THE SURFACE. YOU
WON'T LAST VERY LONG ON YOUR OWN.
EVEN A TRENCHCOAT AND A HAT WON'T
CUT IT THESE DAYS.

NOT A CHANCE,
RENOIR. NOT A
CHANCE...

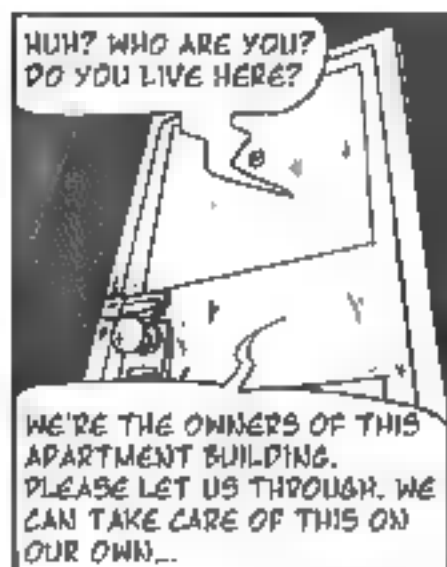
BUT... I...

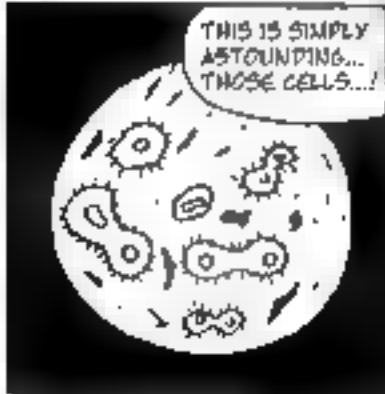


I WANT YOU DOWN
THERE, KID IN THE
SEWERS. RAPH IS
WAITING FOR YOU...
HE NEEDS YOU.

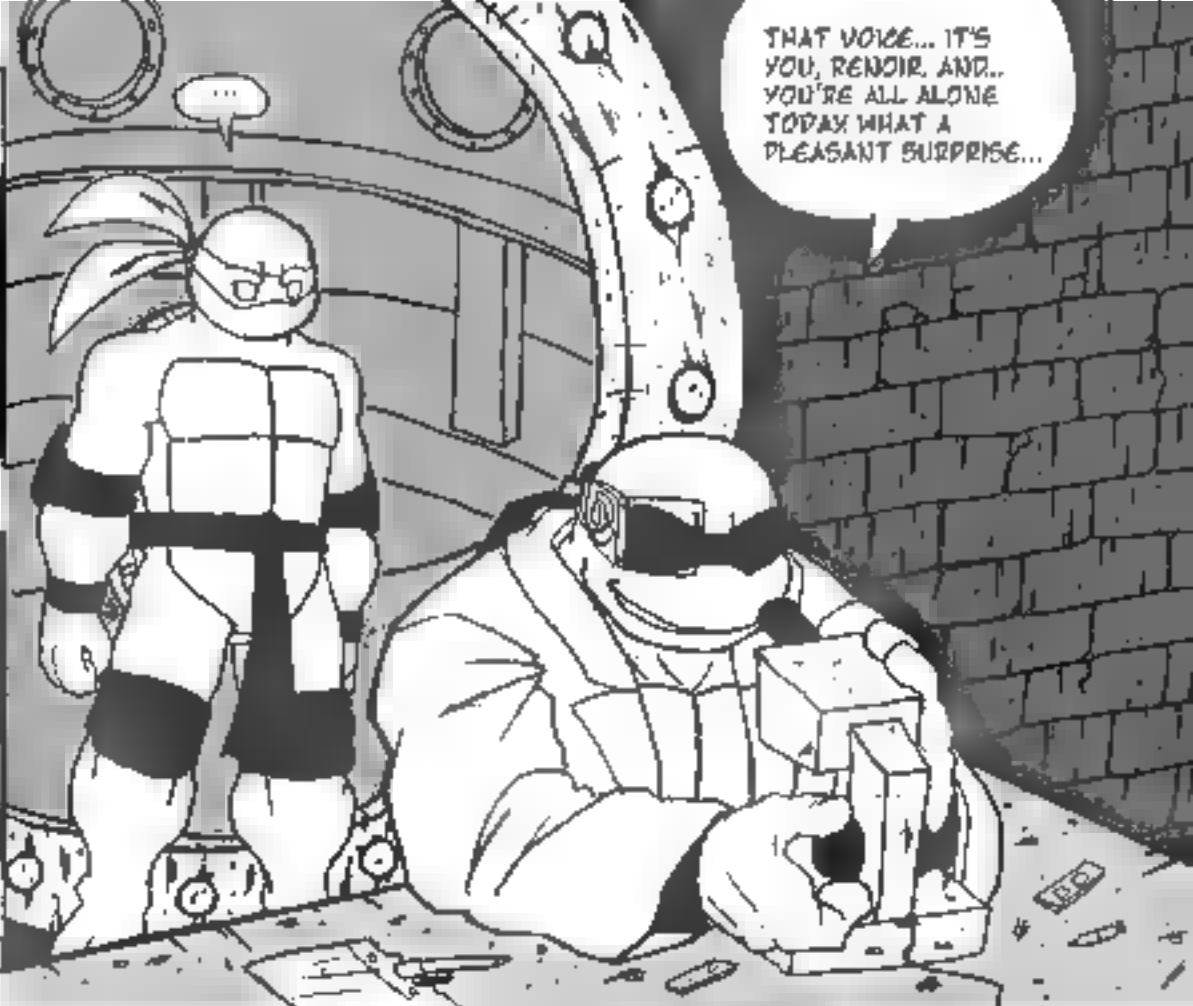
FINE. SO WHERE
DO YOU PLAN
TO LIVE FROM
NOW ON?

...OR DID YOU PLAN
TO CRASH IN OUR
APARTMENT?






THIS IS SIMPLY
ASTOUNDING...
THOSE CELLS...




THAT VOICE... IT'S
YOU, RENAI. AND...
YOU'RE ALL ALONE
TODAY WHAT A
PLEASANT SURPRISE...



EXCUSE ME,
MR. DONATELLO...




YOU PROBABLY GOT FED UP WITH RAPH TOO,
DIDN'T YOU? I KIND OF SAW THAT COMING.



BUT FIRST, IT
SEEMS TO ME
YOU'VE GOT
SOMETHING ON
YOUR MIND YOU
NEED TO RELIEVE
YOURSELF FROM.
I CAN READ IT ALL
OVER YOUR FACE.

IF YOU PLAN TO MOVE IN, I HAVE A
FEW VACANT SPOTS IN MY LAB, YOU
KNOW? JUST MAKE YOURSELF AT
HOME, RENAI.



ACTUALLY, YES.
IT'S A RATHER
LONG STORY, BUT
PLEASE LISTEN
TO IT...



I SEE...



SEEMS HE'S IN HIS
RAGE FIT AGAIN...

"RAGE FIT"?
WHAT DO YOU
MEAN BY THAT?

SELF-HATRED.
REMORSE.
DESPAIR.
ANY POSSIBLE
NEGATIVE EMOTIONS.

THAT'S WHAT HE GETS FOR
CONSTANTLY "CRYING OVER SPILT
MILK" FOR NOTHING... THOSE
THOUGHTS ARE ENGRAVED WITHIN
RAPH EVER SINCE OUR FATHER'S
DEATH BUT HE TRIES TO
OVERCOME THEM. AFTER A CERTAIN
PERIOD OF SELF-CONTROL, HE'LL
GRADUALLY LOSE IT. AT THAT
POINT, IT TAKES VERY LITTLE TO
AWAKEN HIS BITTER MEMORIES.
AND WHEN THAT HAPPENS... HE
GOES BERSERK.



THEN, HE LASHES OUT AT
ANYONE AROUND HIM
UNTIL HIS RESTLESS
GUILT DIES DOWN AGAIN...

...THAT IS, OF COURSE, ■
THERE ARE PEOPLE
AROUND HIM. OTHER-
WISE, HE'LL TURN HIS
RAGE AGAINST HIMSELF





CRAP! I... I CAN'T CONTROL MY
ANGER...! AT THIS RATE... I... I
WON'T GET DRUNK ANY
SOON...!... I NEED TO FORGET
ABOUT EVERYTHING... ABOUT MY
CURSED PAST...!!!

DAMMIT...



D...DAMMIT
ALL!!!

COUGH! *COUGH!*
COUGH! *COUGH!*
COUGH!



CRAP...
I...I'M
GIVIN'
IN...!





HAS HE ALWAYS BEEN LIKE THIS?



YEAH, EVER SINCE OUR FATHER DIED AND IT WORSE DAY AFTER DAY

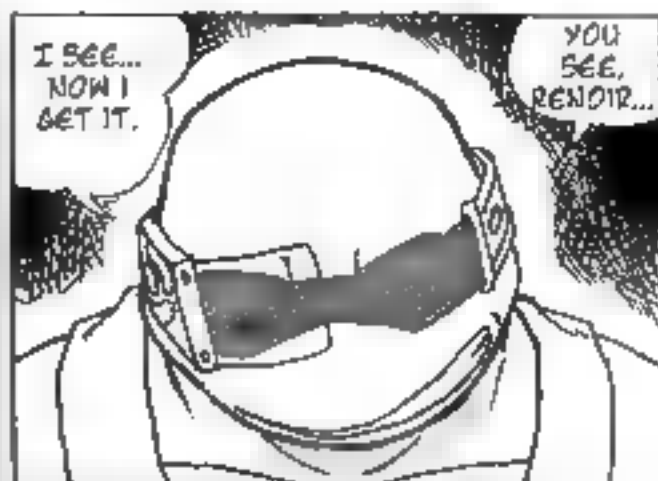
MAKES ME WONDER...



YOU'VE BEEN LIVING WITH HIM FOR THE LAST FEW MONTHS... AND YOU'VE NEVER SEEN HIM GET INTO THIS STATE BY HIMSELF...



I... I DON'T KNOW WHY... SO FAR, THE ONLY TIME HE GOT ALL WORKED UP WAS WHEN HIS OTHER BROTHER WAS WITH HIM.



I SEE... NOW I GET IT.

YOU SEE, RENDIR...



HE NEEDED A REASON TO LIVE... SOMETHING TO KEEP HIS MIND AWAY FROM HIS PAST...

EVEN IF HE STAYS AWAY FROM US, HE CAN'T HELP BUT THINK ABOUT IT WHEN HE'S ALONE.

THAT'S WHY HE NEEDED YOU TO BE THERE FOR HIM.

SO THAT'S WHY
RAPHAEL WAS
OBSESSED WITH
TURNING ME INTO
A NINJA...

THAT'S ALL HE CAN
THINK ABOUT THAT
DOESN'T REMIND HIM
OF HIS SIN... THAT'S ALL
HE CAN DO TO EVADE
HIS GRIER..

WHICH MEANS THAT...
HE DEPENDS ON ME...?



NO! NO! NO! THIS IS NONE OF MY
BUSINESS! HE MADE ME SUFFER
FOR HIS OWN PLEASURE! HE
DESERVES TO BE ON HIS OWN!

I SUPPOSE HE NEEDED SOMEONE
WHO CAN BE WITH HIM ALL THE
TIME... MIKEY AND I BOTH HAVE
OUR OWN BUSINESSES TO TAKE
CARE OF AND ALL HIS OTHER
FRIENDS ARE ON THE SURFACE.

AND I HAVE TO ADMIT... YOU
CHANGED HIM A LOT. BEFORE
YOU CAME, WHENEVER RADH
WAS NOT PICKING FIGHTS WITH
PUNKS ON THE SURFACE, HE
WOULD SIMPLY ISOLATE
HIMSELF IN HIS LAIR...

AND NOW, HE ACUTALLY
TALKS TO MIKEY AGAIN... IT'S
AS IF YOU HAD A POSITIVE
EFFECT ON HIM.

THAT'S
STUPID... WHY
ME? WHY NOT
ANYBODY
ELSE?

THEN YOU CAME... A MUTANT
TURTLE, JUST LIKE HIM, WHO
DIDN'T HAVE ANY OBLIGATIONS IN
LIFE...

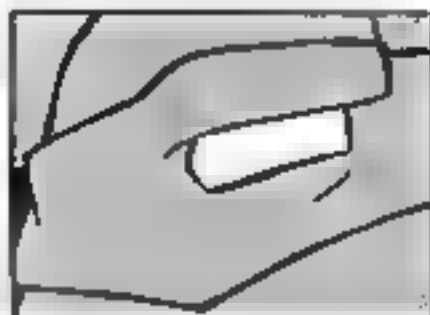
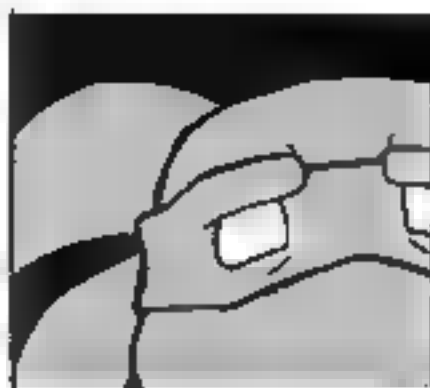




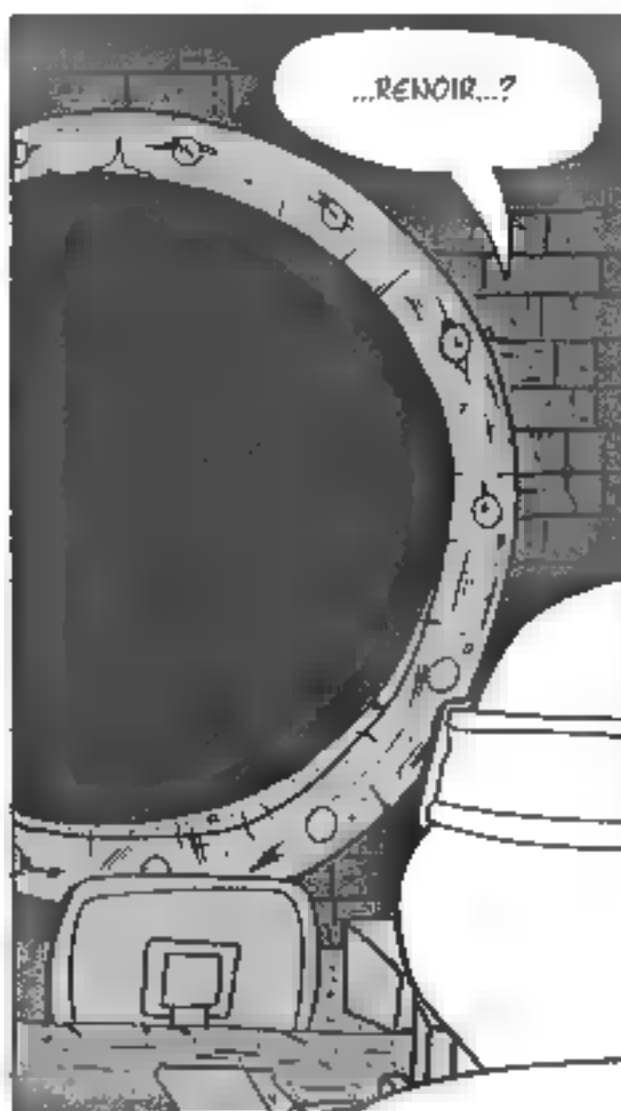
BUT NOW,
YOU'RE HERE...
AND IT'S
BETTER THIS
WAY.



THINK ABOUT IT... YOU WON'T HAVE TO
STAND RAPH ANYMORE. HE CAN DEAL WITH
HIS RAGE ALONE. HE'LL JUST HAVE TO
BREAK THINGS IN HIS LAIR OR CARVE A
LITTLE DEEPER INTO HIS SCARS...



NOW, RENOIR, BEFORE I
FORGET, PLEASE COME OVER
HERE FOR A SEC...




...RENOIR...?




HUMPH... I TALKED
TOO MUCH... BUT
THERE WILL ALWAYS
BE A NEXT TIME...

CRAP... I OVERDID
IT... MAYBE I'M
DEAD...


I CAN FEEL SOMEONE
SHAKIN' ME BY THE
SHOULDER... HEN, HELL'S
WELCOMING COMMITTEE?



WHAT THE...
THAT'S...
THAT'S ME...!



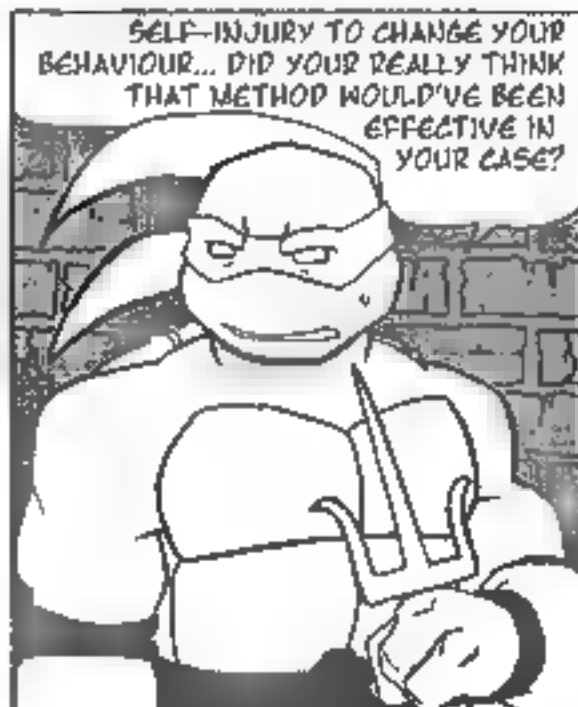
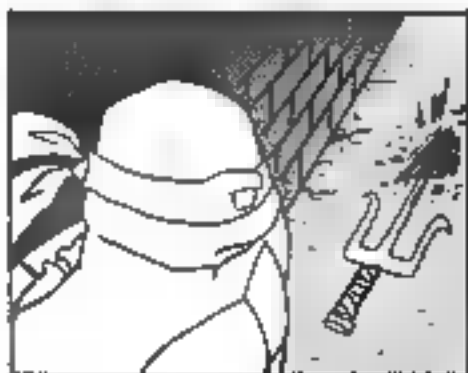
I... I HATE
THAT FACE... I
HATE IT...!



I... I HAVE
TO GET RID
OF IT...!





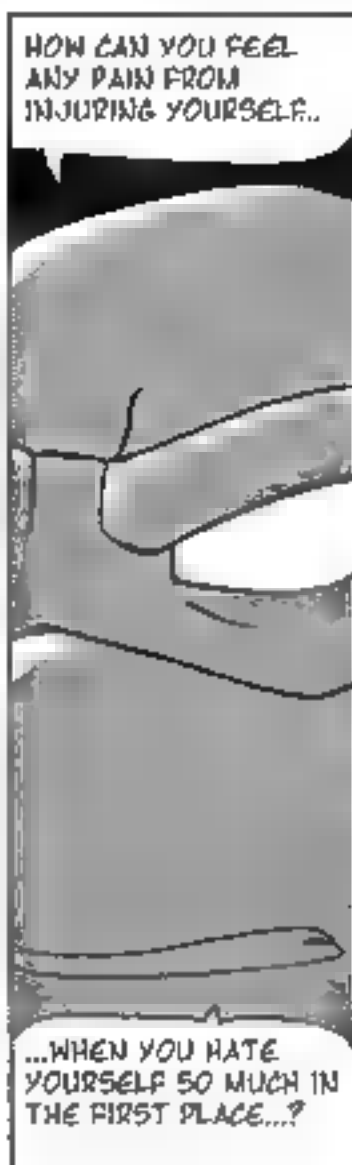


SELF-INJURY TO CHANGE YOUR BEHAVIOUR... DID YOU REALLY THINK THAT METHOD WOULD'VE BEEN EFFECTIVE IN YOUR CASE?



DID YOU REALLY THINK YOUR BRAIN WOULD RECOGNIZE IT AS A PUNISHMENT FOR YOUR ACTS...

...WHEN YOU DON'T REALLY CARE ABOUT YOURSELF IN THE FIRST PLACE?



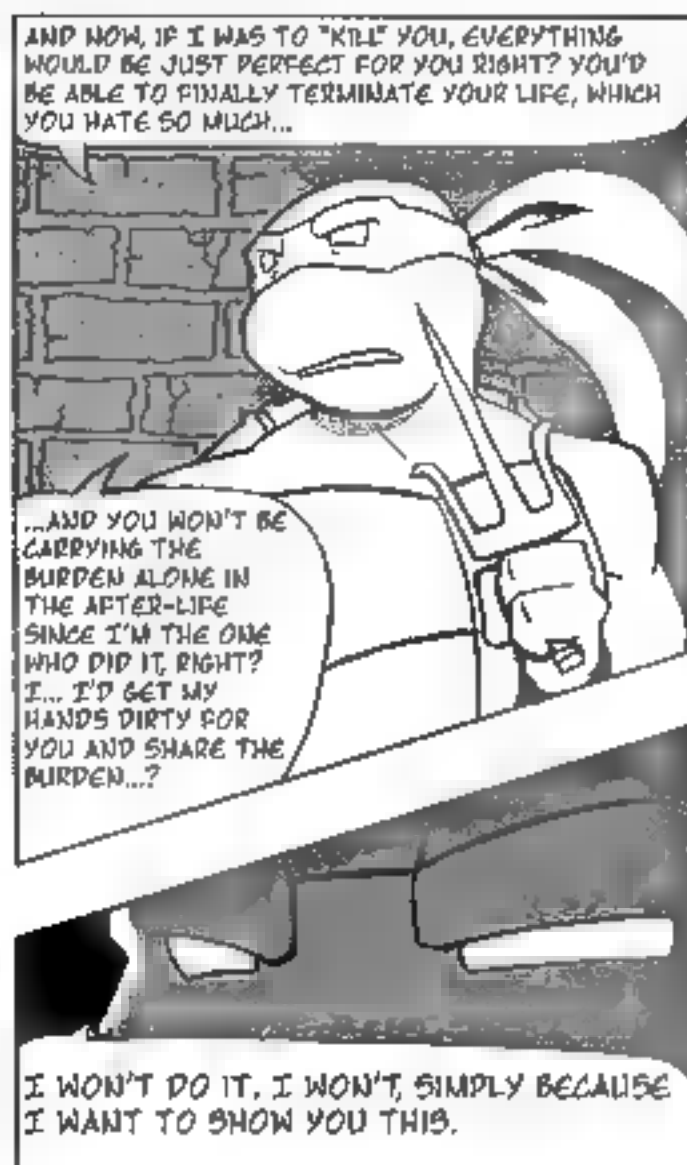
HOW CAN YOU FEEL ANY PAIN FROM INJURING YOURSELF...

...WHEN YOU HATE YOURSELF SO MUCH IN THE FIRST PLACE...?



THAT'S WHY NO MATTER HOW MUCH YOU TRY...

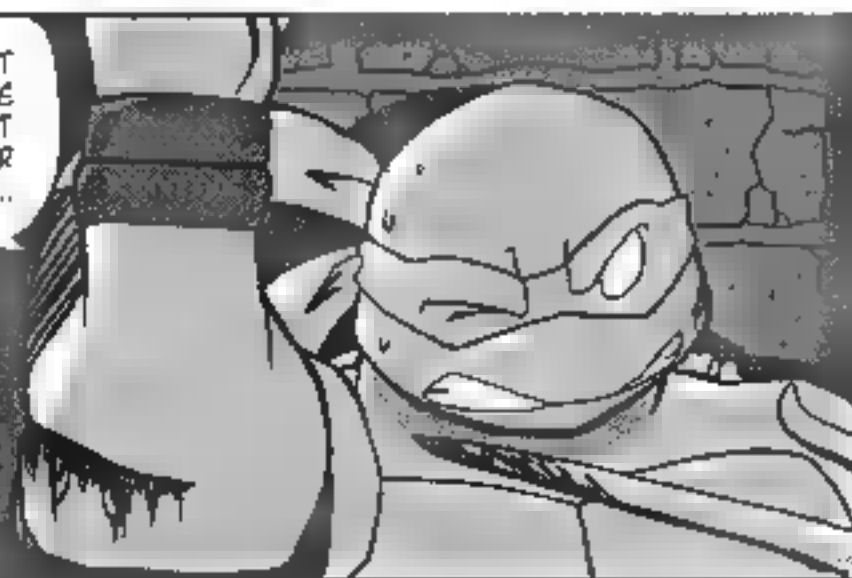
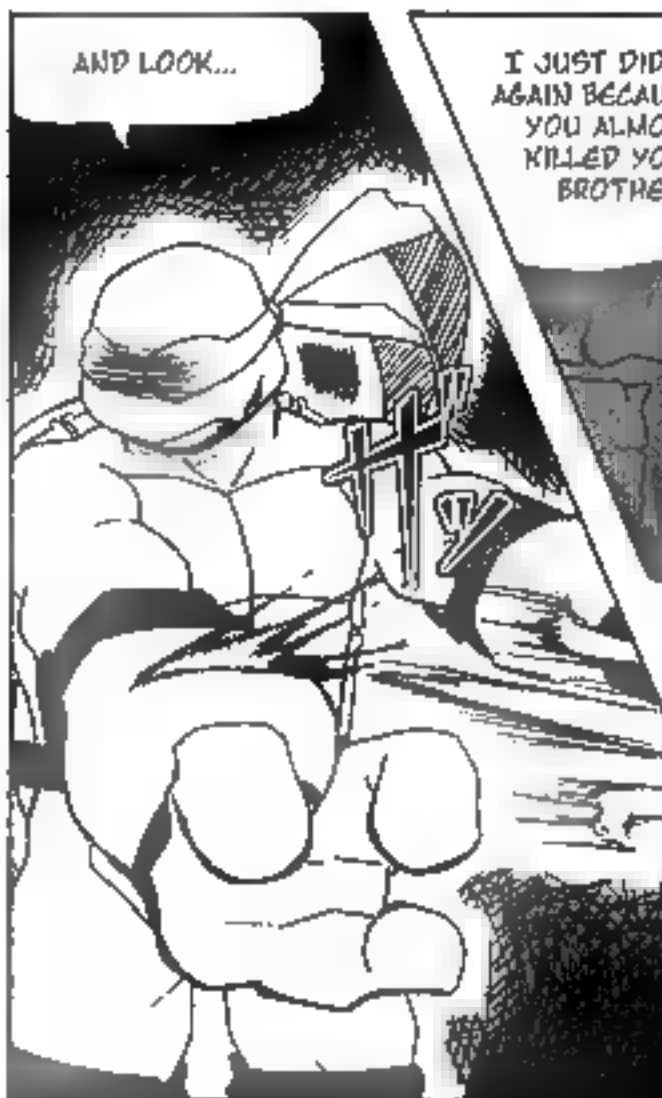
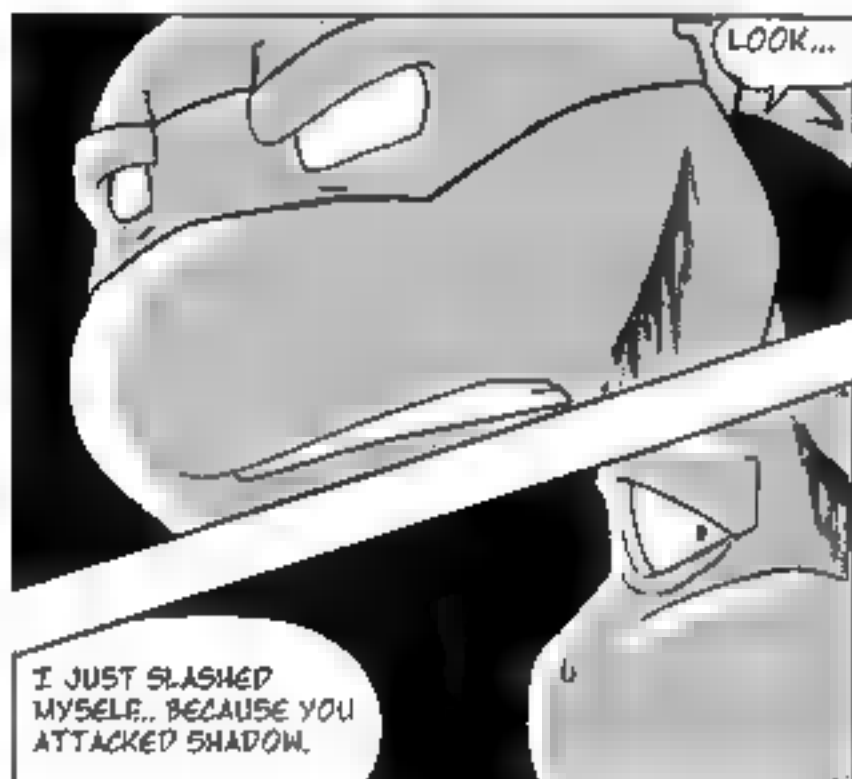
...YOU'VE NEVER EVEN REMOTELY HAD THE FEELING THAT YOU'VE PUNISHED YOURSELF ENOUGH FOR HURTING OTHER PEOPLE AND DONE JUSTICE TO THEM...



AND NOW, IF I WAS TO "KILL" YOU, EVERYTHING WOULD BE JUST PERFECT FOR YOU RIGHT? YOU'D BE ABLE TO FINALLY TERMINATE YOUR LIFE, WHICH YOU HATE SO MUCH...

...AND YOU WON'T BE CARRYING THE BURDEN ALONE IN THE AFTER-LIFE SINCE I'M THE ONE WHO DID IT, RIGHT? I... I'D GET MY HANDS DIRTY FOR YOU AND SHARE THE BURDEN...?

I WON'T DO IT. I WON'T, SIMPLY BECAUSE I WANT TO SHOW YOU THIS.





CONSIDER THIS THE
REAL CONSEQUENCE OF
THE RAGE YOU
UNLEASHED ON OTHER
PEOPLE.



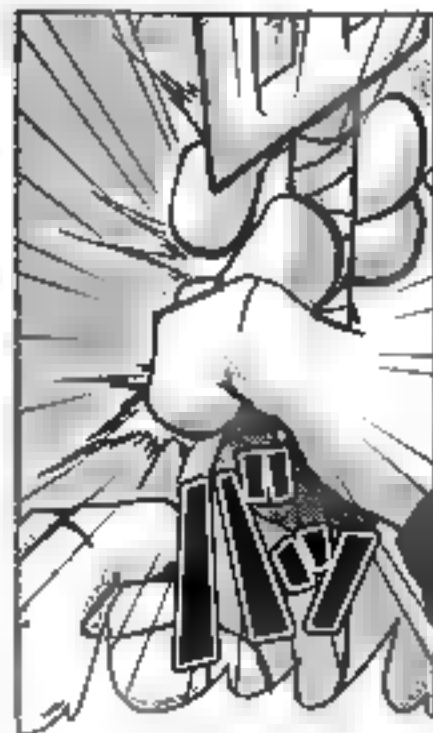
THE PAIN AND ANGUISH
YOU ARE FEELING
RIGHT NOW ARE WHAT
YOUR PREVIOUS
PUNISHMENT
SHOULD'VE BEEN LIKE.



WHAT MAKES YOU FEEL SO DAMN
IMPORTANT ALL OF A SUDDEN! "LIFE
SUPPORT"... "SANITY"...
ARE YA HIGH ON
SOMETHIN', YA
BRAT?



WHAT ARE THE ODDS
THAT YOU'LL FIND ANOTHER
MUTANT TURTLE LIKE ME, WHO
CAN HELP YOU GET OVER YOUR
REGRET AND SORROW FROM
THE PAST? IF I'M NOT HERE...
TO WHOM WILL YOU BE
TEACHING NINJA ARTS? HOW
WILL YOU DEAL WITH YOUR
LONELINESS?



YOU DAMN
KID...!

I GOT IT, YA HEAR? I GOT IT! NOW STOP
SCREWIN' 'ROUND WITH MY SAI!!!



I DON'T
KNOW
WHAT
DONNIE
TOLD YA...

...BUT
HE'S
WRONG...



I... I DON'T
NEED YA...

WHATEVER PATH I CHOSE TO WALK, I GOTTA DO
IT ALONE... NO MATTER WHAT HARDSHIP COMES
TO ME, I GOTTA COPE WIT' IT ALONE. AND I'M
PERFECTLY CONTENT WIT' IT. I CAN'T FORCE IT
UPON ANYONE ELSE...



YOU'RE FREE LIKE THE WIND, RENOIR. YOU
ALWAYS WERE. I SHOULDN'T HAVE FORCED YA
TO REMAIN WIT' ME. YOU'RE STILL YOUNG AND
INNOCENT. YOU DON'T NEED TO KEEP COMPANY
TO AN OLD HERMIT LIKE ME... 'KAY?



HABA...AHAHAHABA!



AHABA... OH GOD... I NEVER EXPECTED YOU TO REACT LIKE THIS... I MEAN, YOU SHOULD'VE SEEN YOUR FACE... I DIDN'T RECOGNIZE YOU!!!



AH...! DON'T HIT ME TOO HARD, OKAY?



AND YOU CALLED YOURSELF "OLD"...! OH, THIS IS JUST PRICELESS...!

RENOIR...



WELL... WHEN YOU FIND OUT THAT YOU ARE A FUNCTIONAL PART OF SOMEONE'S LIFE... DON'T YOU FEEL SOME KIND OF PRESSURE? CAN YOU REALLY SIT BACK IDLY AND NEGLECT YOUR DUTIES WHEN SOMEONE DEPENDS ON YOU?

I HAVE A CONSCIENCE... JUST LIKE EVERYONE... JUST LIKE YOU.



IF ANYTHING WAS TO HAPPEN TO YOU... IF YOU WERE TO LOSE YOUR MIND OVER YOUR PAST... I'D FEEL ENTIRELY RESPONSIBLE...

...RENOIR...
...YOU...



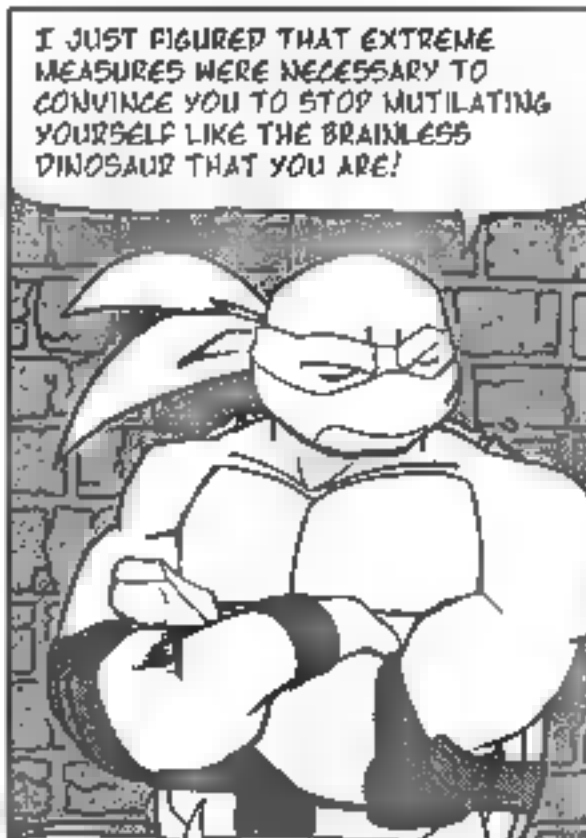
WHY DID YA COME BACK TO ME? WHY GO AN FAR AS HURTIN' YERSELF LIKE THAT?



2... DON'T GET THE WRONG IDEA, THOUGH! YOU'RE JUST A BURDEN TO ME!



AND I... I STILL HATE YOU FOR STEALING MY IDENTITY!



I JUST FIGURED THAT EXTREME MEASURES WERE NECESSARY TO CONVINCE YOU TO STOP MUTILATING YOURSELF LIKE THE BRAINLESS DINOSAUR THAT YOU ARE!

AND IN THE END, EVERYTHING I DID WAS FOR **ME**, YOU KNOW?



I GOT TO PUNISH YOU! I GOT TO MAKE YOU SUFFER! I GOT TO LECTURE YOU! AND I ENJOYED EVERY SINGLE SECOND OF THAT!

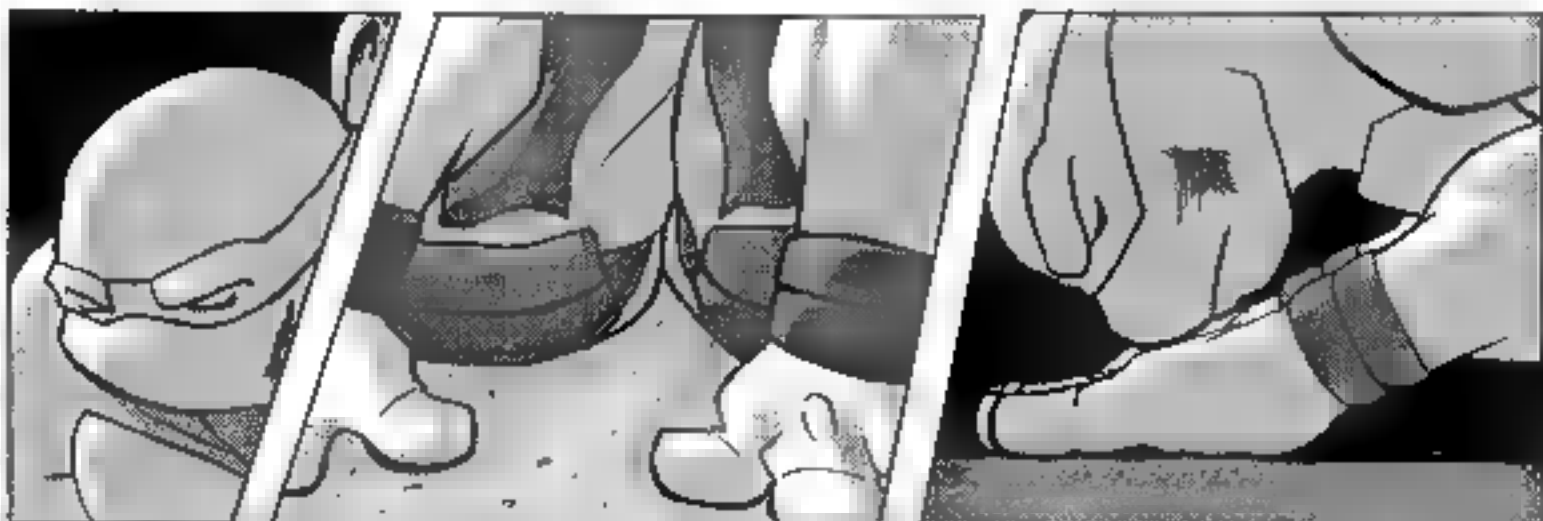
THOSE WERE WELL WORTH MY SELF-INFLICTED CUTS!



AND UNFORTUNATELY FOR ME, THERE IS STILL ONE LAST THING I NEED TO DO... FOR MY CONSCIENCE.

AND THIS... WILL BE TO MAKE SURE THAT YOU WON'T DO ANYTHING STUPID AGAIN...

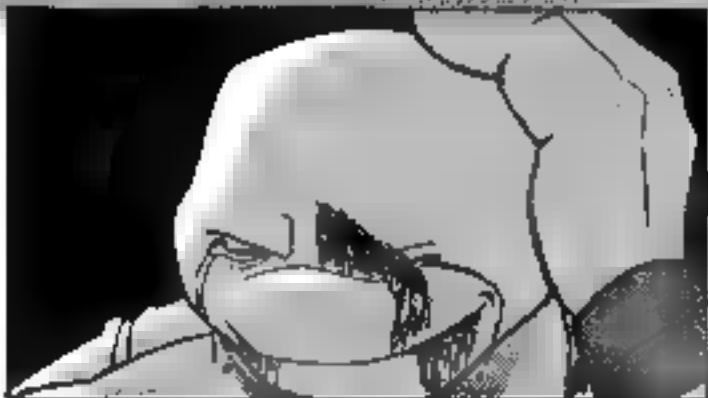





I'M HOME, MASTER
RAPHAEL...



...AND I'M
HERE TO
STAY





WELCOME BACK...
MY STUDENT...



CHAPTER 10: RATIONAL VOICE?
ENTER CASEY AND APRIL!!!



PLEASE TELL ■
BUONAROTTI...

...THAT IS NEW CREATION ■ A
MIRACLE!



WE'VE TOPPED THE CHARTS FOR
THIS CHRISTMAS! I'VE NEVER
SEEN ANYTHING LIKE THIS!

I MUST ADMIT, I WAS
SKEPTICAL WHEN HE
SENT ME JOURNAL
ENTRIES INSTEAD OF
A CONVENTIONAL
NOVEL...

BUT HE HIT THE BULL'S
EYE! THE READERS
ACTUALLY DIG HIS NEW
APPROACH AT STORY-
TELLING! NOT TO
MENTION HIS
DETAILED DESCRIPTIONS... SOME PEOPLE
EVEN BELIEVE THEY
ARE BASED ON REAL
FACTS!

TELL ME... ABOUT
THOSE
INFORMATIONS...
DID HE REALLY
MAKE THEM
UP? OR...
DID HE HAVE
A RELIABLE
SOURCE OF
INFORMATION?

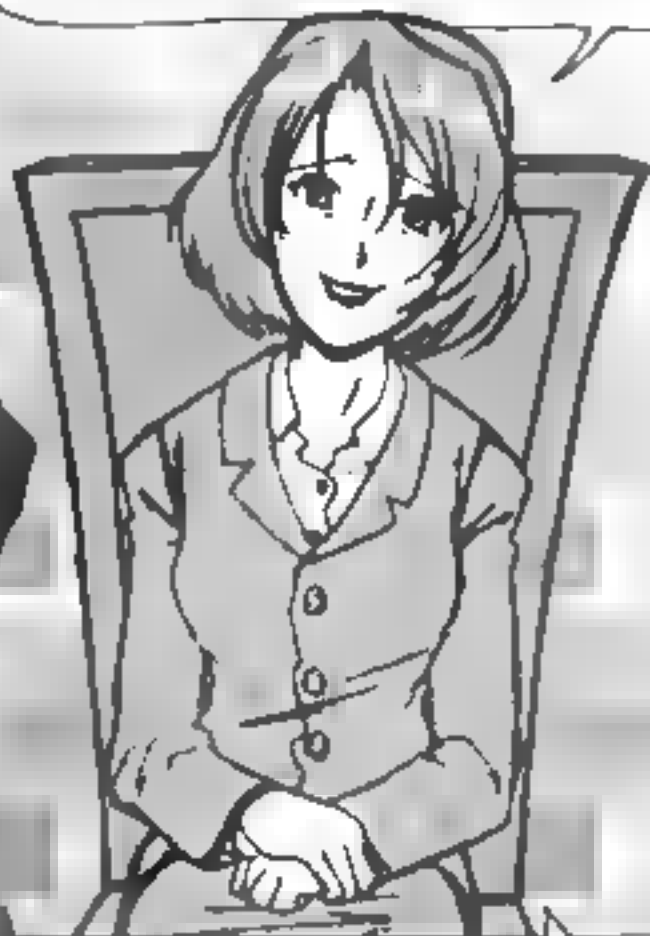


I'M SORRY
WE DO NOT
KNOW.



I KNEW IT WAS GONNA COME DOWN TO THIS... TRYIN' TO GET SOME INFO OUT OF US, EH? EVEN THOUGH HE AGREED NOT TO DISCUSS ABOUT THE ORIGINS OF HIS INSPIRATION?

I'M AFRAID MY HUSBAND'S RIGHT, M. CARLSON. OUR CONTRACT STATES THAT YOU ARE NOT SUPPOSED TO INQUIRE US ABOUT HIS PRIVATE LIFE.



IF THIS IS THE ONLY REASON WHY YOU SUMMONED US REPRESENTATIVES OF M. BUONAROTTI HERE TODAY I BELIEVE WE HAVE NOTHING ELSE TO SAY TO EACH OTHER.



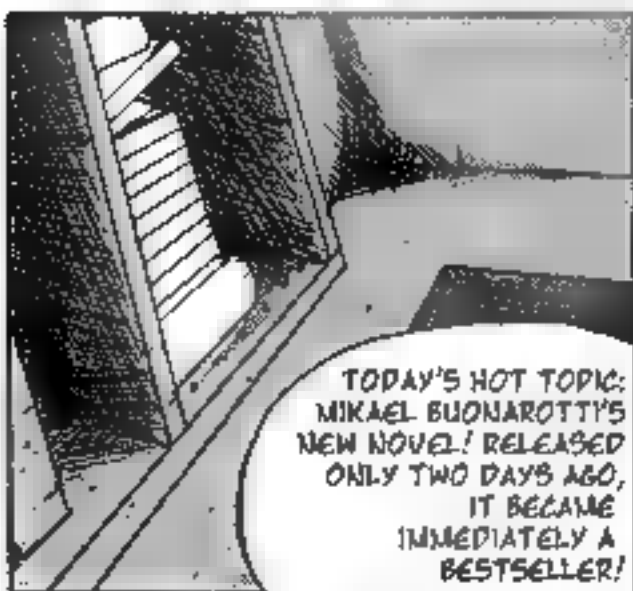
WAIT HON WE'RE NOT DONE YET!! THIS GREEDY GUY WAS ASKING FOR IT!



C'MON! LET'S TAKE IT OUTSIDE! JUST YOU AN' ME!



SORRY




TODAY'S HOT TOPIC:
MIKAEL BUONAROTTI'S
NEW NOVEL! RELEASED
ONLY TWO DAYS AGO,
IT BECAME
IMMEDIATELY A
BESTSELLER!




THAT'S RIGHT, PAUL. WE WERE
ALL TAKEN BY SURPRISE BY
HIS BOOK "ON THE TRAILS OF
PURPLE DRAGONS"!

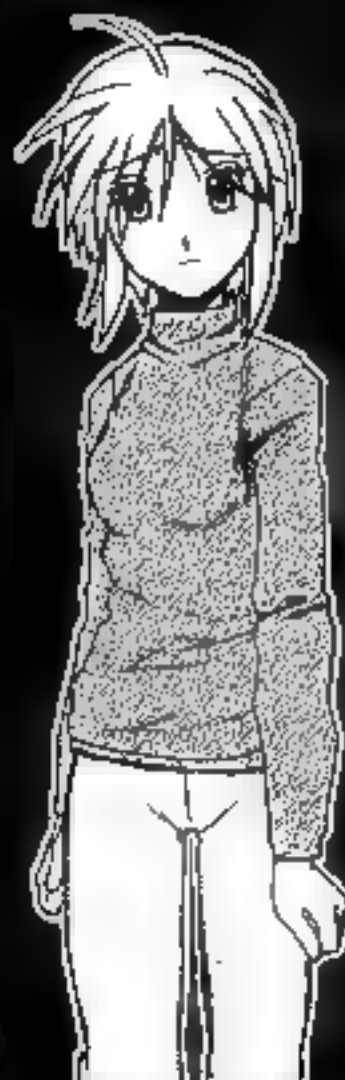
I WAS ESPECIALLY IMPRESSED BY
THE NARRATION. BECAUSE THE STORY
IS TOLD THROUGH JOURNAL ENTRIES,
A FEELING OF INTIMACY ■ CREATED
BETWEEN THE READER AND THE
PROTAGONIST. THE EVENTS IN THIS
BOOK ARE SO CONVINCING THAT I
HAVE A HARD TIME BELIEVING
IT'S ALL FICTIONAL.



AND THE DETAILS ABOUT THE
PURPLE DRAGONS, PAUL. THE
POLICE HAS ACTUALLY CONFIRMED
THAT SOME OF IT ARE AUTHENTIC!



UNCLE MIKEY,
ARE YOU
FEELING OKAY?



I... I REALLY DID
IT THIS TIME. I
SOLD OUT MY
OLD SELF FOR
MONEY.



MY MEMORIES...
THEY WERE
ENCLOSED IN
THAT DIARY!

MEMORIES OF A LIFE
FILLED WITH
SADNESS AND MISERY.
NORMALLY I
SHOULDN'T CARE... SO
WHAT AM I SO
ANXIOUS ABOUT...?





IT'S UNCLE RAPH,
ISN'T IT? HE NEVER
GAVE HIS OPINION
ABOUT THIS BEFORE,
SO YOU DIDN'T
REGRET ANYTHING
YOU DID BUT NOW...

YOU KNOW ... I ONLY THOUGHT
ABOUT MYSELF WHEN I "GOT RID"
OF MY PAST LIKE THIS. I REALLY
DIDN'T CARE ABOUT MY MEMORIES...
BUT RAPH STILL DID..



MAYBE...



UNLIKE ME, RAPHAEL
THOUGHT DEARLY OF THOSE
SAD MEMORIES. AND YET... I
MINDLESSLY TURNED THEM
INTO PRODUCTS OF MASS
CONSUMPTION... FOR HUMANS...
TO THROW AWAY MY PAST...
THROW AWAY... OUR MEMORIES.
I... I'M THE WORST...





UNCLE MIKEY... IT'S NOT NECESSARILY A BAD THING THAT UNCLE RAPH'S OPINION MADE YOU FEEL THAT BAD



ACTUALLY, I'M QUITE RELIEVED TO HEAR THAT.

AFTER WHAT HAPPENED, I REALLY THOUGHT THAT YOU WOULD WANT TO CUT TIES WITH UNCLE RAPH...



...BUT IT SEEMS THAT YOUR CONSCIENCE WON'T LET GO OF HIM.

YOUR REGRET IS A SIGN THAT DEEP INSIDE, YOU STILL CARE ABOUT HIM...



C'MON, CHEER UP UNC' MIKEY! WIDE THAT PITIFUL LOOK OUTTA YOUR FACE AND GOOF OFF! MAKE PRANKS! LIKE WE DID WHEN I WAS YOUNG!



AH...!! AHANA! SURE! SURE THING, SHADOW! POINT TAKEN!

YOU KNOW MY SKULL IS STILL FRACTURED.



WHOA, ADRI! WAS RIGHT. ONE ADULT MUTANT REALLY WAS THIS HAMMOCK'S MAXIMUM CAPACITY



ANHOY, MATEYS! WE'RE
BACK FROM THE
PUBLISHING HOUSE!

WHAT
HAPPENED...?

A...AFFIRMATIVE, MOM!
WE'RE PERFECTLY FINE!


WE HEARD A
LOUD THUD
FROM INSIDE
THE
APARTMENT
JUST NOW.
IS
EVERYTHING
ALRIGHT?

APRIL! CASEY!
PLEASE TELL ME...
HOW DID IT GO?

NOTHING MUCH... THE
BOSS JUST NAGGED
US FOR SOME
INFORMATION.


OH
GOOD.

...SO, HAVE YOU
TRIED CALLING
RAPHAEL WHILE WE
WERE OUT, MIKEY?




WHY DO YOU LOOK
SO STARTLED ABOUT
THAT? HE'S FAMILY,
YOU KNOW?

...HAVE
YOU
CALLED
HIM AT
ALL?



HOW CAN YOU EXPECT UNCLE
MIKEY TO TALK TO HIM
AFTER WHAT HAPPENED? I
TOLD YOU BEFORE, MOM:
UNCLE RAPH WENT CRAZY
AND ALMOST SPLIT UNCLE
MIKEY'S SKULL OPEN! EVEN
I HAD TO INTERVENE!
SHOULDN'T WE LET THINGS
COOL DOWN BETWEEN THEM
FOR NOW?

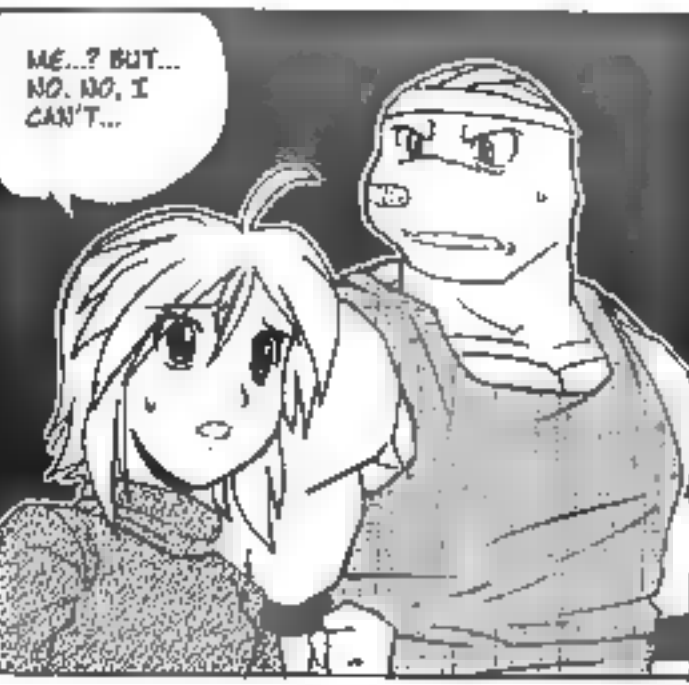
SHADOW, I
WASN'T JUST
TALKING TO
MIKEY..



I ALSO HAD
EXPECTATIONS
FROM YOU, MY
DEAR. THAT
MIKEY DOESN'T
WANT TO TALK
TO RAPHAEL, I
UNDERSTAND,
BUT...

WHAT ABOUT YOU?
RAPHAEL PROBABLY
DOESN'T HAVE
ANYTHING AGAINST
YOU... IT WOULD
PROBABLY EVEN HAVE
MADE HIM HAPPY TO
HEAR YOUR VOICE,
YOU KNOW?

IF YOU WERE
ABLE TO
GATHER
ENOUGH GUTS
TO STAND UP
TO HIM
BEFORE, WHY
CAN'T YOU
DO THE
SAME NOW?

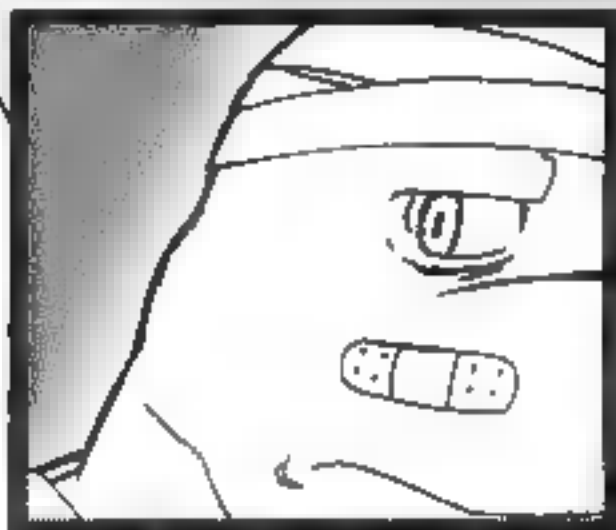


ME...? BUT...
NO. NO, I
CAN'T...



BECAUSE... I'VE
BEEN BAD... I...

...I LET DOWN A FRIEND IN
NEED HE CLEARLY SHOWED ME
WHAT HIS PROBLEM WAS, I
KNEW I WAS THE ONLY ONE
WHO COULD HELP HIM.



INSTEAD, I TOLD HIM
HOW INSIGNIFICANT
HIS PROBLEMS WERE
COMPARED TO UNCLE
RAPH'S AND FORCED
HIM TO LEAVE. I
DIDN'T GIVE HIM A
SINGLE BIT OF THE
PEACE OF MIND HE
NEEDED.. MAYBE..
MAYBE I MADE HIM
FEEL LIKE HE
DOESN'T EVEN
EXIST.



IF I WAS TO CALL
UNCLE RAPH AND
GET HIM ON THE
LINE INSTEAD.. I
WOULDN'T KNOW
WHAT TO TELL
HIM... AFTER WHAT
HAPPENED..

SHADOW...



I CAN'T JUST LIE AND
TELL HIM THAT I
SHOULD'VE PICKED
HIM OVER MY
FAMILY...



...EUZ
UNCLE MIKEY
WAS GETTING
KILLED AND UNCLE
RAPH WAS ALMOST
SUICIDAL! I KNEW
MY PRIORITIES!
I HAD NO CHOICE!

AND YA DID THE
RIGHT THING, SHADOW.
I DUNNO 'BOUT YOUR
FRIEND, BUT I THINK
HE'S THE ONE BEING
UNREASONABLE.



WHAT'S HE GOT TO
DO WITH RAPH,
ANYWAYS?

I... I'M AUGUSTUS, RIGHT? NOT... NOT
'RENOIR'...? I'M NOT THAT OBNOXIOUS
ALCOHOLIC'S DISCIPLE...!



AND I DON'T KNOW THAT GUY YOU
CALL 'MIKEY'... I'M NOT RELATED TO
THEM, CAN'T YOU SEE, SHADOW? I'M
HUMAN! WHY SHOULD I CARE?

JUST HIS ROOMMATE.
I HAPPENED TO BE
FRIENDS WITH HIM LONG
AGO... WELL, I HAVE
HOMEWORK TO DO, SO
I'LL BE IN MY ROOM IF
YOU NEED ME.



WAIT...



バグッ

AND I THOUGHT YOU UNDERSTOOD ME,
SHADOW...



WHAT? WHILE
WE WERE
AWAY ON A
SECOND
HONEY-
MOON...



...ANOTHER MUTANT
TURTLE LIKE YOU GUYS
HAS APPEARED?



YEAH. ALL I KNOW ABOUT HIM IS THAT HE PRETENDS TO BE A HUMAN AND THAT RAPH ACTS AS HIS MASTER...

I SEE. SO THAT MUTANT IS THE REASON WHY SHADOW IS SO UNEASY? WHERE IS IT RIGHT NOW?

...SHADOW AND I ENTRUSTED RAPH TO HIM THAT EVENING. HE MUST BE AT RAPH'S LAIR.



RAPH...

CASEY?



RAPH!

Y...YOU BASTARD!

EH?

HE BETTER NOT HAVE DONE IT YET!!!

WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU?

CASEY! WAIT UP!!!

HARDER!
HARDER!

ガッ

I CAN
BARELY FEEL
YOUR
PUNCHES!

ゴッ

'KAY THAT'S IT
FOR TODAY YA
REALLY NEED TO
WORK ON YOUR
STAMINA. ON THE
BATTLEFIELD,
YOU'RE GONNA BE
GIVEN NO BREAK,
RENOIR.

REMEMBER
TO HIT
HARD IF A
FOE AIN'T
FLINCHIN'
AFTER A
CLEAN HIT,
YOU'RE
DEAD



O... OKAY!
GOT IT!

...GOOD
WORK,
RENOIR.





SORRY FOR
BARGING
IN...

SO RAPH... YOU'VE TAKEN IN
A DISCIPLE WHILE I WAS
AWAY...

YA HAVEN'T DONE
THE HAZING
WITHOUT ME, EH?

HAZING...

CASEY, APRIL!
WELCOME
BACK!

DON'T
WORRY.
I DIDN'T
DO A
THING
WITHOUT
YOU...

MRS. O'NEIL?
MR. JONES?

...GOOD.
LET'S
GET
DOWN
TO IT,
RAPH.



C'MON, RENOIR!
SHOW US WHAT 'CHA MADE OF! CASEY,
LET'S GIVE HIM TEN MORE BOTTLES!







CRAZY, YES. JUST AS
CRAZY AS HUMANOID
TURTLES ROAMING THE
EARTH, EH, RADH? YET,
YOU GUYS DO EXIST.

ERRRRHHH...

WHY DENY THE
PARANORMAL
WHEN YOU ARE
PARANORMAL
YOURSELF?

SEE? THEY
HAVE FAITH
IN ME!

HAHA! YA GOT DISSED,
RADH!



HA-HA-HA!

YOU! WIPE
THAT SMILE
OUTTA YOUR
FACE!


UGYA!

オホ


AUGUSTUS...
SHADOW TRULY
REGRETS WHAT
SHE DID TO
YOU...

CAN YOU POSSIBLY
GIVE HER A CALL
AND SORT THINGS
OUT A LITTLE BIT?

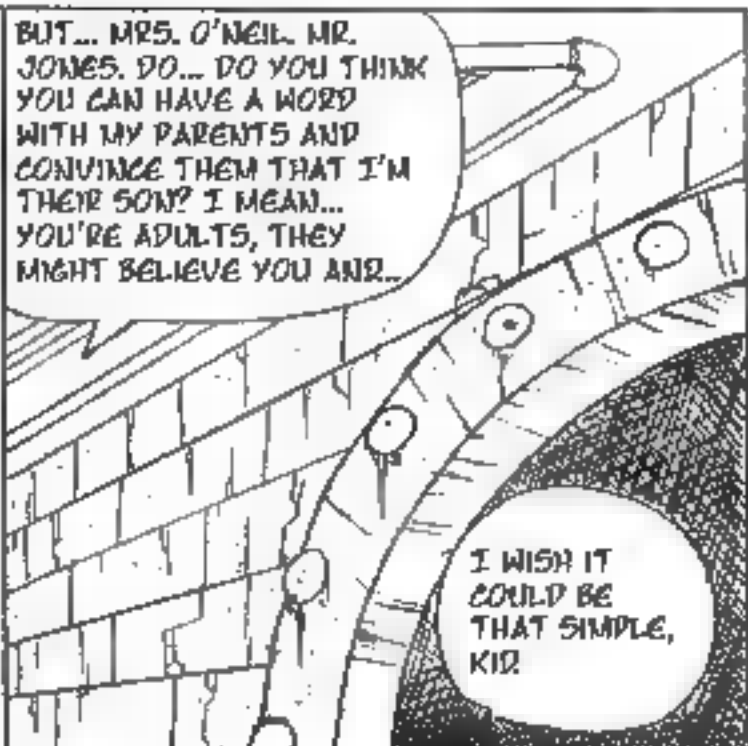




I'M SORRY, MRS. O'NEIL.
I'M AFRAID I WON'T BE
VERY RECEPTIVE TO
HER WORDS IF I CALL
HIM NOW...




IT'S OKAY,
I UNDER-
STAND...




BUT... MRS. O'NEIL. MR.
JONES. DO... DO YOU THINK
YOU CAN HAVE A WORD
WITH MY PARENTS AND
CONVINCE THEM THAT I'M
THEIR SON? I MEAN...
YOU'RE ADULTS, THEY
MIGHT BELIEVE YOU AND...

I WISH IT
COULD BE
THAT SIMPLE,
KID



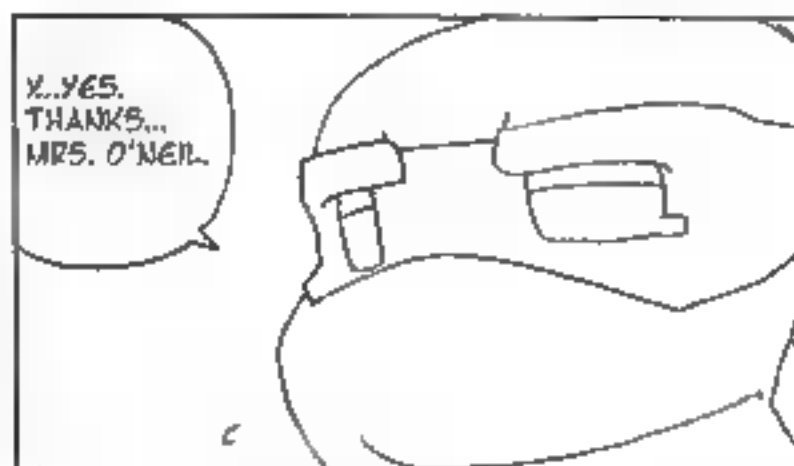
LIFE ■ NOT A
COURTROOM. IT'S
GONNA TAKE MORE
THAN PROOFS AND
WITNESSES TO OPEN
YOUR PARENTS'
EYES.
NO MATTER HOW
CONVINCING WE
SOUND, NO MATTER
HOW LOGICAL OUR
ARGUMENTS ARE... IF
YOUR PARENTS ARE
NOT READY TO
ACCEPT THE TRUTH,
WE'RE JUST GONNA
BE WASTIN' OUR
TIME.

WE'RE USED
TO UNREAL
STUFF.. BUT
YOUR PARENTS
AREN'T.



I UNDERSTAND
SORRY FOR ASKING
A FAVOR SO
SUDDENLY.

IT'S JUST THAT
IT'S ALMOST
CHRISTMAS AND I
THOUGHT THAT
MAYBE... JUST
MAYBE... I COULD BE
WITH THEM...



I DON'T
WANNA SEE
"HIS" FACE.

FORGET
IT.



HEY...



LOOK! I KNOW I ALMOST
KILLED MIKEY, 'KAY? I KNOW I
SHOULD BE SORRY 'BOUT IT
AND APOLOGIZE!



BUT ANOTHER PART OF
MYSELF STILL CAN'T
FORGIVE THAT BASTARD
FOR MAKIN' CASH OUTTA
OUR PAST!

AND YA KNOW WHAT?
I TRIED MAKIN' UP
FOR WHAT I DID, BUT
HE REJECTED ME!
ONLY RENOIR WAS
THERE FOR ME...
ONLY HE TRULY
CARED 'BOUT ME!



RAPHAEL!

READ THE
LAST PAGE.
NOW.



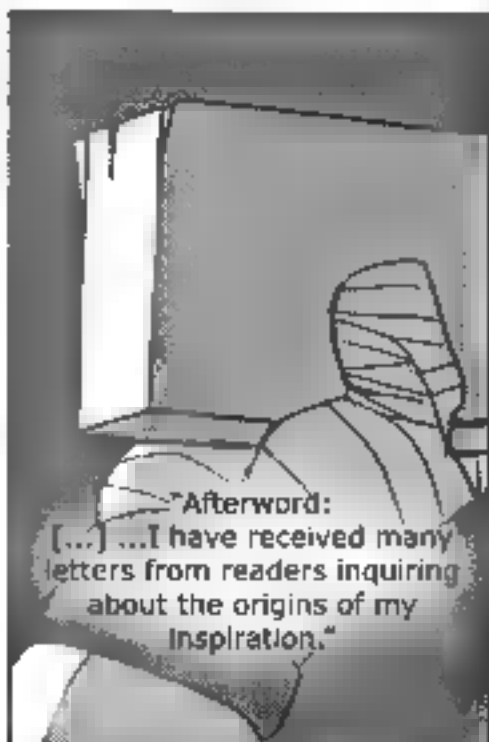
MIKEY'S NEW BOOK?
WHY...?



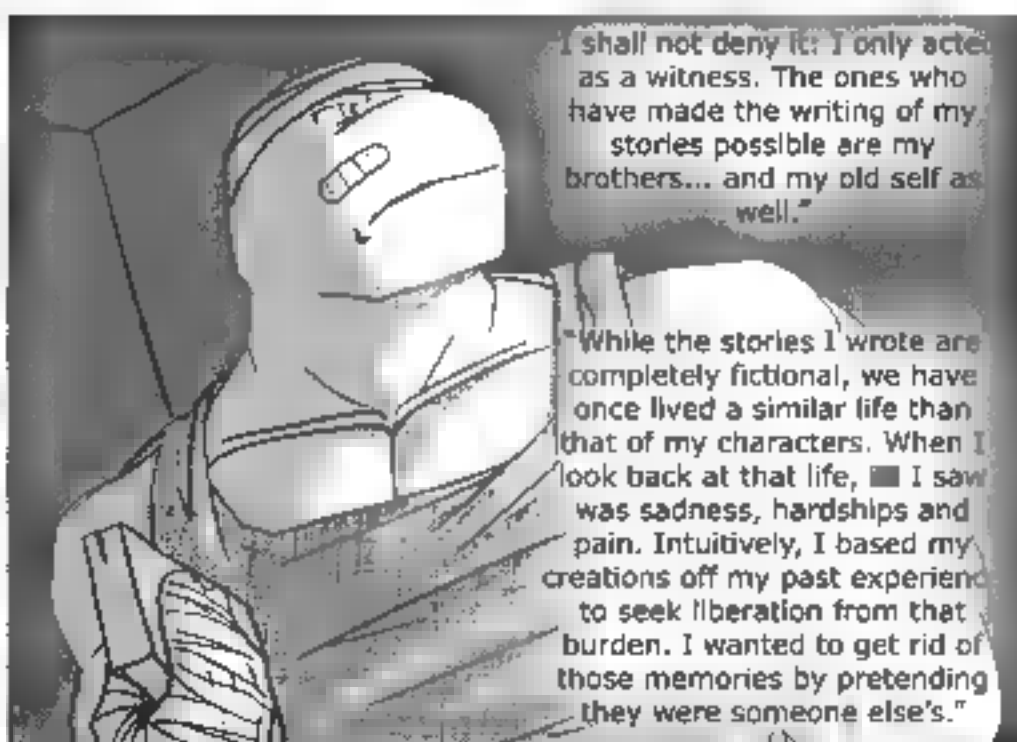
NOW.



ERRH...

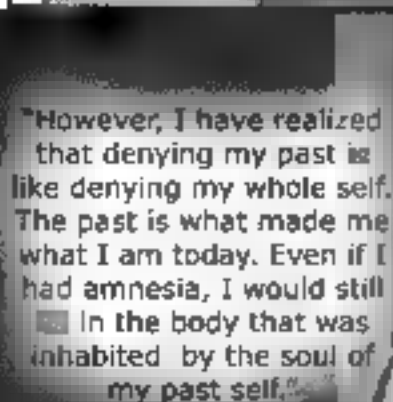


"Afterword:
[...] ...I have received many
letters from readers inquiring
about the origins of my
inspiration."



"I shall not deny it: I only acted
as a witness. The ones who
have made the writing of my
stories possible are my
brothers... and my old self as
well."

"While the stories I wrote are
completely fictional, we have
once lived a similar life than
that of my characters. When I
look back at that life, ■ I saw
sadness, hardships and
pain. Intuitively, I based my
creations off my past experienc
to seek liberation from that
burden. I wanted to get rid of
those memories by pretending
they were someone else's."




"However, I have realized
that denying my past is
like denying my whole self.
The past is what made me
what I am today. Even if I
had amnesia, I would still
■ In the body that was
inhabited by the soul of
my past self."




"Even so, I am not ready to
accept my past yet. I doubt I
ever will. However, one day,
the cogs of fate will turn and I
will have to confront my past."

"Destiny is a cruel mistress."



MIKEY WASN'T
ALL ABOUT
MONEY YOU
KNOW?

HE IS NOT A
SOULLESS
WRITING MACHINE
THAT VOMITS ITS
MEMORIES!




HIS MEMORIES MEAN
SOMETHING TO HIM...
HE MAY NOT CHEERISH
THEM...

BUT AT LEAST HE
NOW REALIZES
THAT THEY ARE
PART OF HIM!



ALL THESE YEARS, MIKEY
THOUGHT HE FINALLY
WENT ON WITH HIS LIFE...

BUT IN FACT, HE DIDN'T!
HE UNCONSCIOUSLY
WRITES ABOUT HIS PAST...
BECAUSE A PART OF HIM
STILL CLINGS ON TO IT!



I GET IT,
APRIL...
I GET IT...

I'LL BE
THERE...



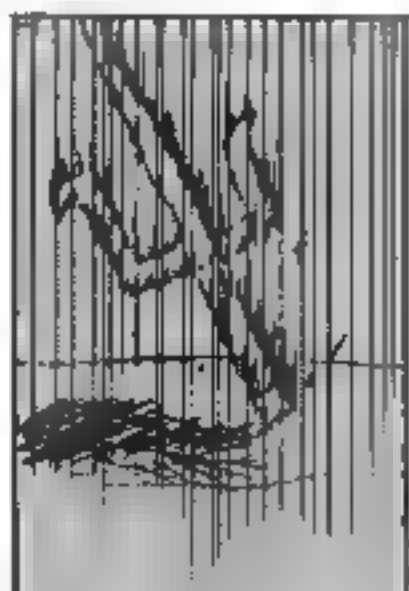
YA KNOW, HON, I
THINK RAPN GOT
THE POINT, THANKS
TO YOU. BUT...
DOWNA THINK YA
WENT A BIT TOO
FAR?

YA KNOW THAT IN
RESPONSE TO
STRESS OR SHOCK,
HE TENDS TO
MUTILATE HIMSELF..?



IT'S ALRIGHT, CASEY I
KNEW I WAS DOING.
RAPHAEL WILL BE FINE.
AFTER ALL...





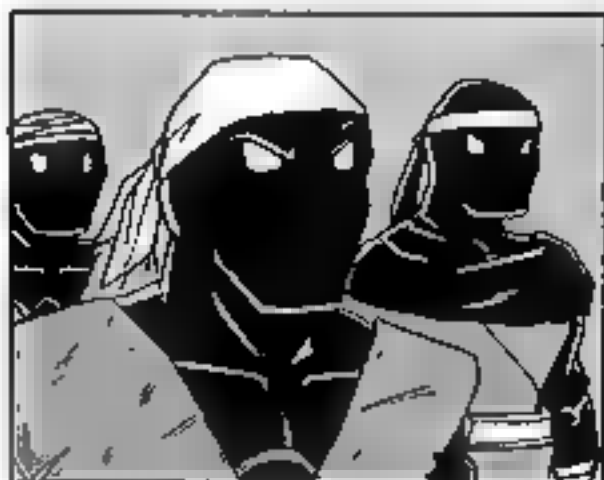
...HE IS NOT
ALONE ANYMORE.



MNT THE **GAIDEN**
外伝



CHAPTER 11 :
A PRELUDE TO...



EVER SINCE THAT
TURTLE PUBLISHED
HIS BOOK ABOUT
THE FOOT CLAN...

...THE COPS ARE HOT ON
OUR TRAIL... TEN OF OUR
MEN HAVE ALREADY BEEN
APPREHENDED.



LONG AGO, OUR EX-LEADER,
KARAI, HAS MADE A TRUCE WITH
THE TURTLES AFTER THEY
HELPED HER PUT AN END TO AN
INTERNAL WAR WITHIN THE FOOT
CLAN. ALL FOOT NINJAS ARE TO
RESPECT HER DECISION.

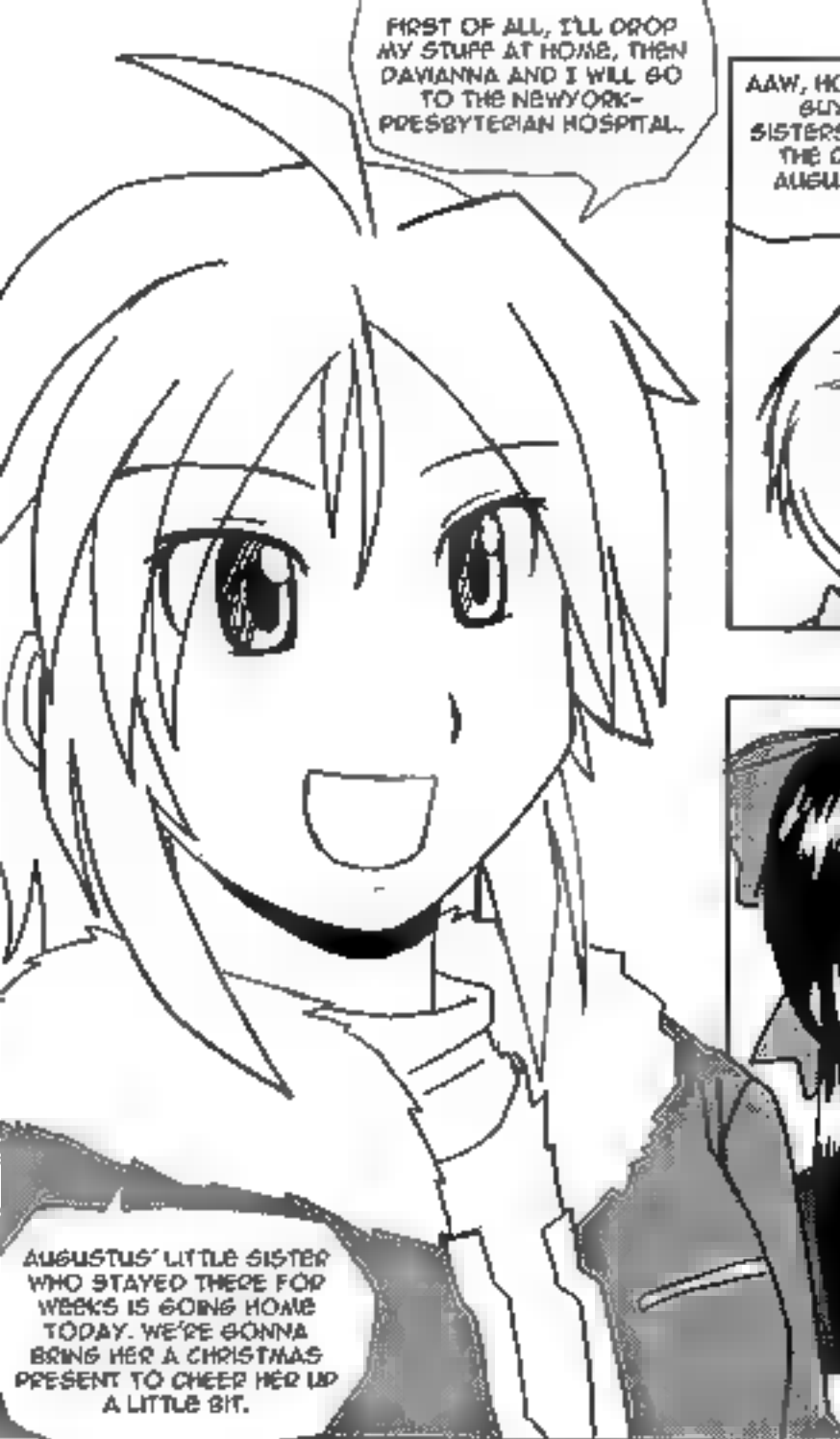
HOWEVER, WE ARE
DIFFERENT. WE ARE THE
ONLY REMAINING
MEMBERS OF THE FOOT
CLAN IN NEW YORK... WE
ARE INDEPENDANT.

AS THE SOLE SURVIVOR
OF THE REBELLION FORCE
AGAINST KARAI, I WILL
ELIMINATE ANYTHING
THAT GETS IN THE WAY
OF OUR AMBITION,
INCLUDING TURTLES.
THEREFORE...



MICHELANGELO
HAMATO HAS
TO DIE!





FIRST OF ALL, I'LL DROP MY STUFF AT HOME, THEN DAVIANNA AND I WILL GO TO THE NEWYORK-PRESBYTERIAN HOSPITAL.



AAW, HOW SWEET! YOU GUYS ARE LIKE SISTERS TO HER SINCE THE DAY YOU MET AUGUSTUS, RIGHT?

REALLY?



SPEAKING OF WHICH, WE PROBABLY SHOULD BE LEAVING SOON...

EEEK! SOMEONE GRABBED MY BUTT!!!



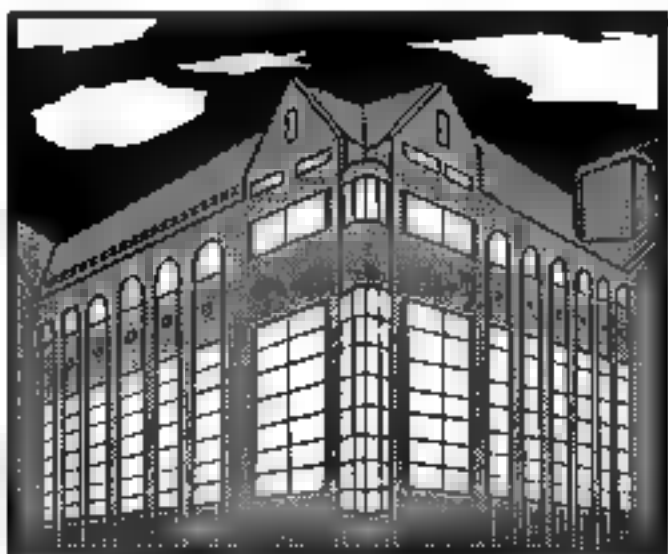
CAUGHT IN THE ACT YA PERV!

JUSTICE KICK!!!!

AAAAH! HE DID IT! HE'S THE ONE!

THANK YOU, YOUNG LADY!

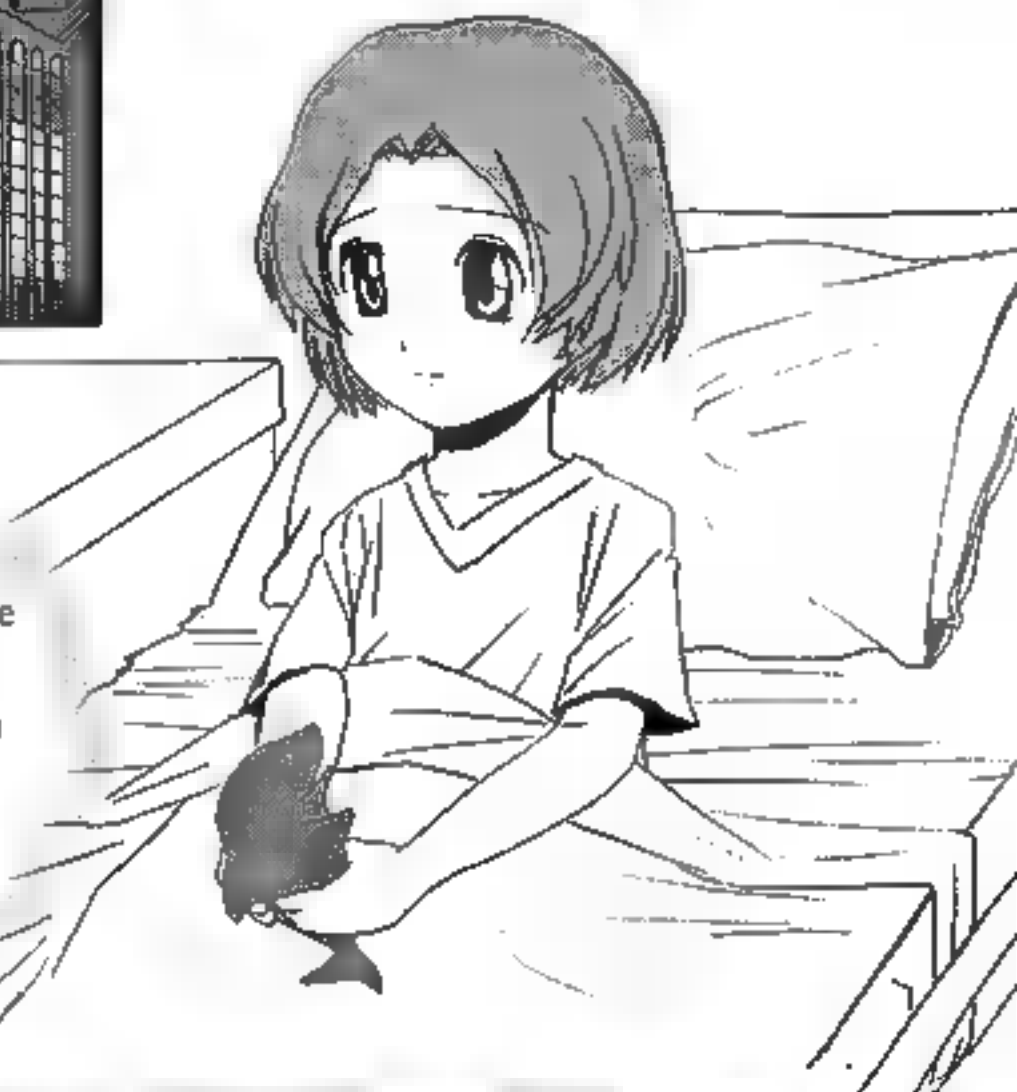
BLARG!



I WONDER HOW BIG BRO ■ DOING...
THE LAST TIME I SAW HIM WAS AT THE
CEMETARY...

WHY WON'T HE EVEN VISIT ME?
IS IT BECAUSE HE IS TOO BUSY WITH
WORK?

IS IT BECAUSE HE IS DOING
ANOTHER MOVIE WITH ALL THOSE
OTHER GREEN ACTORS?



...IT'S NOT EVEN
SNOWING OUTSIDE.
THIS YEAR'S
CHRISTMAS IS GOING
TO BE SO BORING...



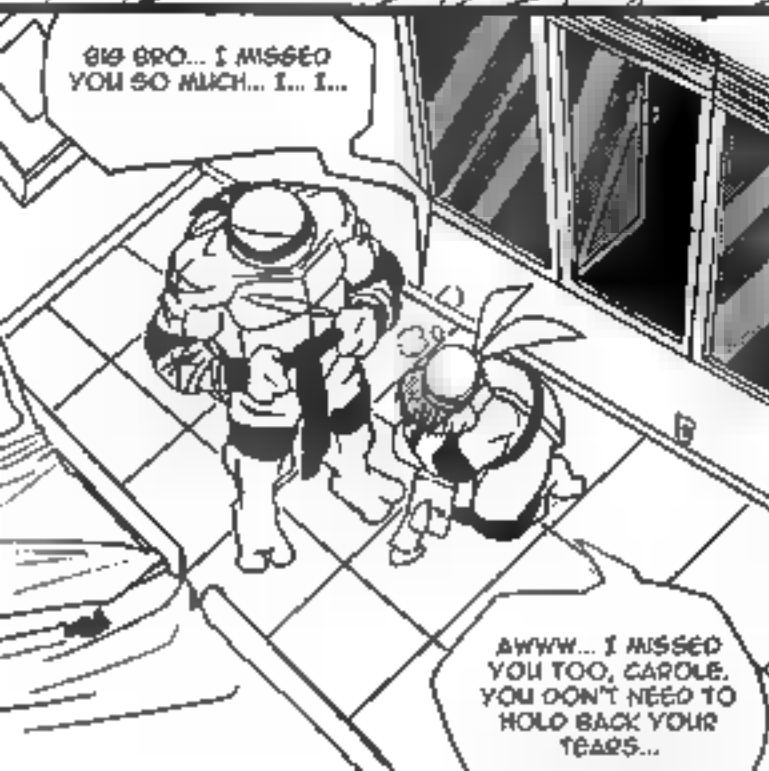
HUM?



YAY! BIG BRO!
I KNEW YOU'D
COME!



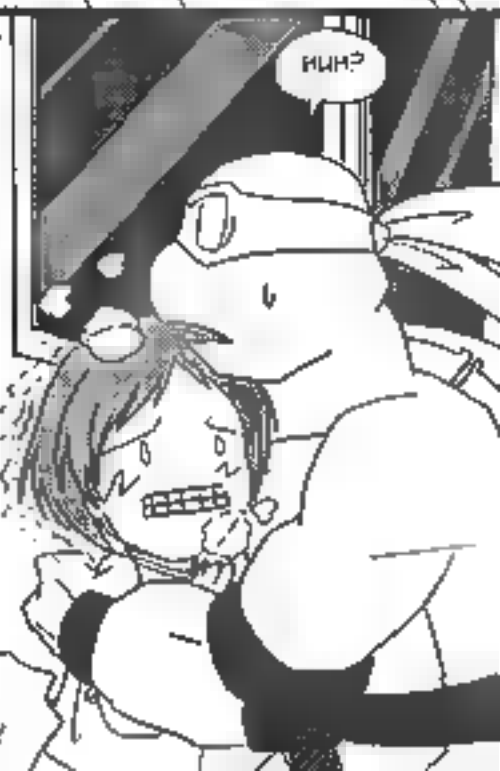
HELLO, CAROLE!
OPEN THE
WINDOW, WILL
YOU?



BIG BRO... I MISSED
YOU SO MUCH... I... I...



SHE AIN'T CRYIN'
SHE'S SHIVERIN' 'CUZ
SHE'S FREEZIN'!



HUH?

AWWW... I MISSED
YOU TOO, CAROLE.
YOU DON'T NEED TO
HOLD BACK YOUR
TEARS...

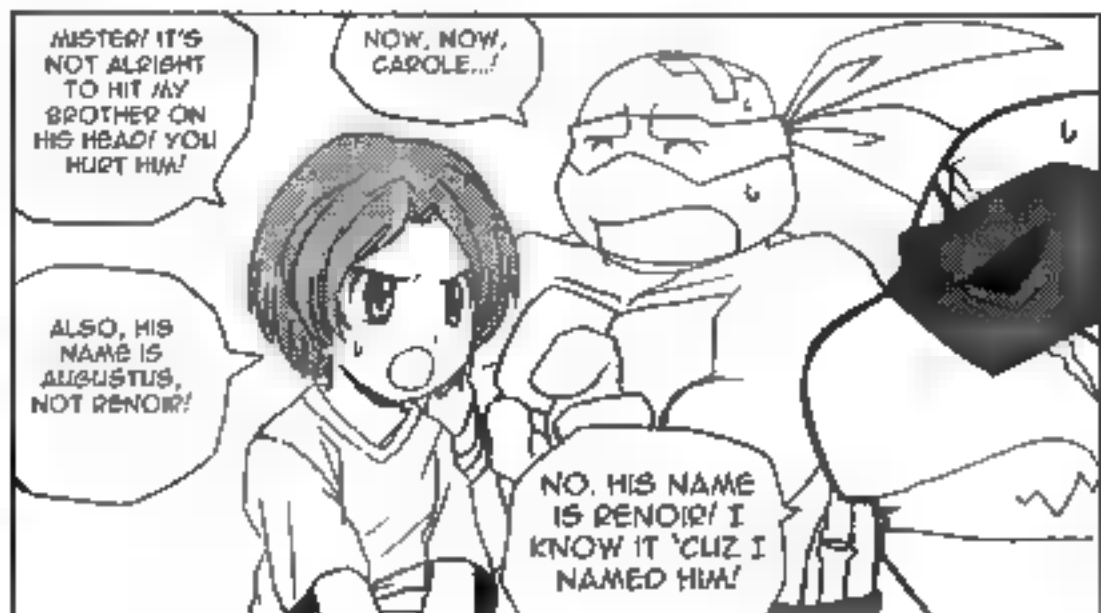
CLOSE
THAT
WINDOW!



THE TRUTH IS, I CUT IT OFF MINE IN A HURRY... SORRY I CAN'T GIVE YOU ANYTHING BETTER FOR CHRISTMAS...

IT'S OKAY! I LOVE IT, BIG BRO! WITH THIS, IT'S GONNA BE AS IF YOU'RE WITH ME ALL THE TIME!

HURRY UP... IF A NURSE COMES IN...



YOU CAN'T
RENAME
HIM!

WHEN HE WAS
BORN, MOMMY
CALLED HIM
"AUGUSTUS"!

MOMMY HURT
HER TUMMY TO
MAKE BIG BRO,
SO IT'S ONLY
HER WHO IS
ALLOWED TO
GIVE HIM A
NAME!



WHOA! BAD BAD GIRL!
MR. RAPHAEL IS AN
ADULT! DON'T BE RUDE
TO GROWN-UPS,
REMEMBER?

BUT
THAT
MAN...

OH NO. NOW LOOKIE HERE! YOU'VE
HURT MR. RAPHAEL'S FEELINGS! HE'S
BECOME SO SAD THAT NOT EVEN
CHRISTMAS PRESENTS WILL BE ENOUGH
TO CHEER HIM UP!
BE A GOOD GIRL AND APOLOGIZE TO
HIM, ALRIGHT?

HAVE I
BEEN A
GOOD
GIRL?

YES.

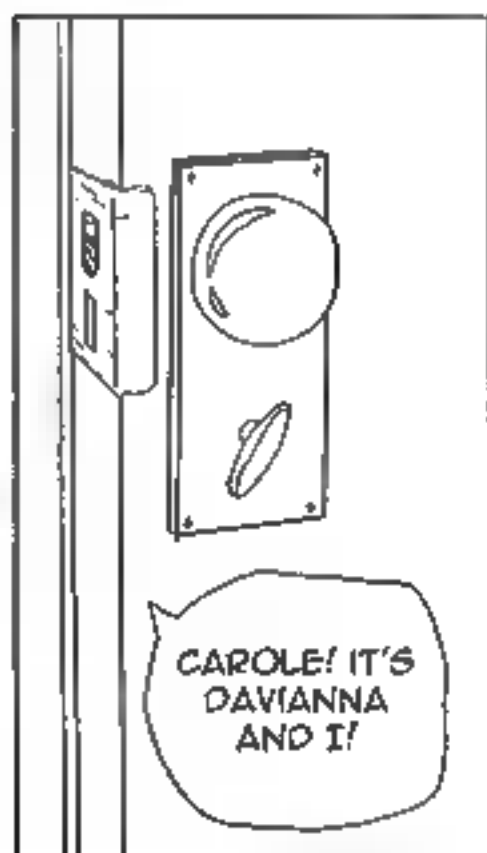


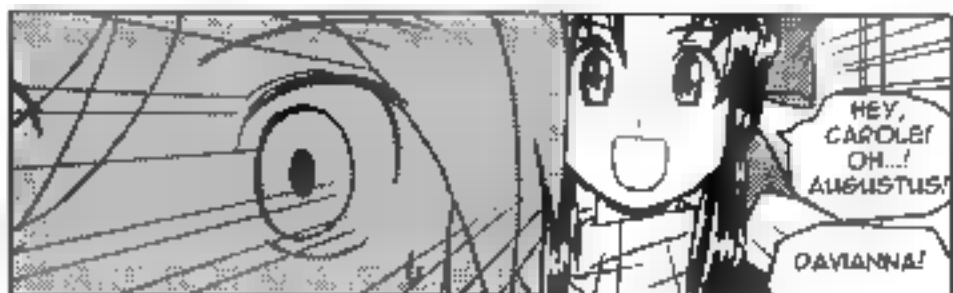
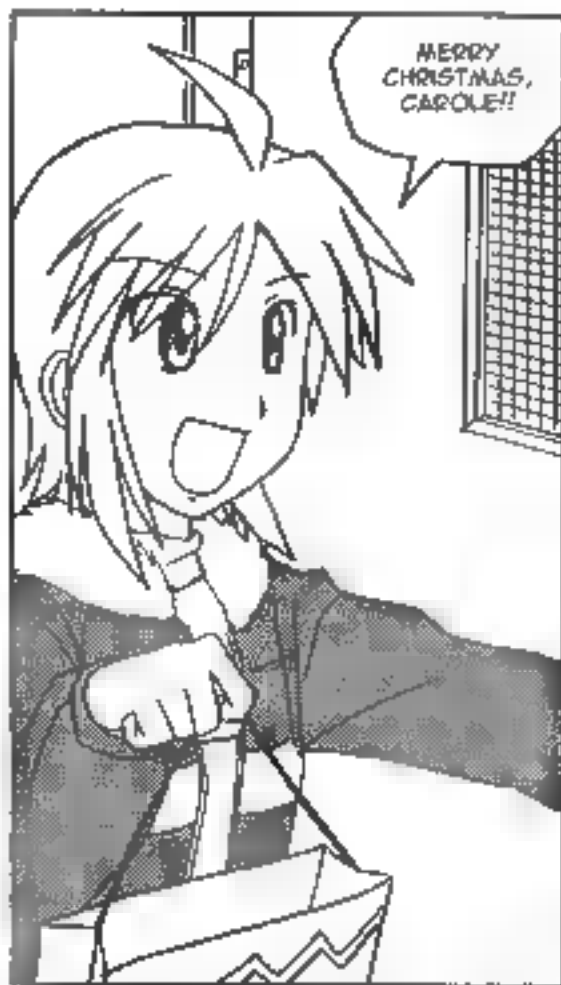
I'M SORRY I
WAS RUDE,
MR. RAPHAEL.



YOU'RE THE
NICEST LIL'
SIS EVER,
CAROLE!

I LOVE
YOU, BIG
BRO!







OH WELL. DO YOU WANT TO SEE WHAT WE GOT YOU FOR CHRISTMAS?



LISTEN, ABOUT THE OTHER DAY...

LATER, LATER... SO CAROLE, DO YOU LIKE IT?

A DIARY WITH PICTURES OF TURTLES ON IT, WOW!



SHADOW, I REALLY THINK YOU WERE...



WHEN YOU'LL GROW UP, YOU MIGHT FORGET BITS OF YOUR CHILDHOOD... SO MAKE SURE YOU WRITE IN IT EVERYDAY, OKAY?

WHY AREN'T YOU LISTENING TO ME...?

...PLEASE, TRY TO FORGET ABOUT THE OTHER DAY FOR NOW... WE'LL TALK LATER.



NO WAY! I DON'T WANNA FORGET ABOUT IT! YOU BETRAYED ME! YOU SENT ME TO THAT PSYCHO RAPHAEL'S LAIR!



WHAT MUST I DO TO PROVE YOU THAT I'M AUGUSTUS? WHY WON'T YOU TREAT ME LIKE A HUMAN BEING???



NOW YOU'RE
REALLY BEING
STUPID!

AAH!!
SHADOW!
WHY DID YOU
HIT HIM?

WHAT DID
HE DO TO
YOU?

TELL ME,
SHADOW

TELL HER IT'S
BECAUSE TO YOUR
EYES I'M NOT
YOUR FRIEND, BUT
A FREAKY MUTANT
CALLED "RENOIR"!

WHICH MEANS
I'M NOT
WORTHY OF
ATTENTION
ANYMORE...

IDIOT...

YOU DON'T GET IT
AT ALL!

I KNOW YOU'RE A MUTANT...
AND I KNOW YOU'RE
AUGUSTUS! I SENT YOU TO
RAPH BECAUSE I TRUSTED
YOU! I THOUGHT I COULD
COUNT ON YOU! I DIDN'T
TRY TO GET RID YOU!

WHY DO YOU
ALWAYS BRING UP
THIS "IDENTITY
CRISIS" OF YOURS?

I WOULDN'T LET
ANY OF THAT
CONTROL MY LIFE,
THAT'S FOR SURE!

'CUZ I'M NOT YOUR
MUTANT FRIEND, I'M
YOUR HUMAN FRIEND!
YET YOU TREAT ME LIKE
TRASH! WHAT WOULD
YOU DO IF YOU BECAME
ONE YOURSELF AND
EVERYONE STARTED
LOOKING AT YOU
DIFFERENTLY?



I DON'T KNOW WHAT HAPPENED, BUT IT'S CHRISTMAS. SHOULDN'T WE ALL BE SMILING AND LAUGHING TOGETHER NO MATTER WHAT? WEREN'T YOU GUYS BEST FRIENDS?

CADOLE

WHAT ABOUT CHRISTMAS SPIRIT...?




SORRY I GOT CARRIED AWAY CADOLE

AUGUSTUS, LISTEN BY TRYING TOO HARD TO CONVINCE YOURSELF AND THOSE AROUND YOU THAT YOU'RE HUMAN, YOU FORGOT TO ACT LIKE ONE YOU CAN'T EVEN ENJOY LIFE LIKE YOU USED TO.



IT'S LIKE THAT'S ALL YOU'RE THINKING ABOUT DON'T YOU REALIZE YOU'RE WASTING YOUR LIFE DOING THAT?

YOU EVEN BRING IT UP IN FRONT OF YOUR SISTER ON CHRISTMAS EVE



WHY DID YOU BRING
ME OUT HERE,
AUGUSTUS? WHAT
ABOUT YOUR
SISTER?

JUST ADMIRE THE
VIEW, BABY. AIN'T
NEW YORK PURTY,
EVEN WITHOUT
SNOW?

YEAH... I
LOVED THIS
CITY, EVER
SINCE I
MOVED HERE
AS A CHILD. I
STILL DO

SAY, DO YOU
REMEMBER
OUR FIRST
MEETING?

WE WERE IN
FIRST
GRADE...

OH, SURE,
PUMPKIN!

YOU WERE CUTE
AS HELL AND I
WAS A PERVERTED
BOAT!

CUTE AS
HELL...?
PERVERTED
BRAT?

WHAT?

AH, ERR... HEMEME!

WELL, YOU
WERE CUTE
BACK THEN,
RIGHT? EHP

HAHAHAHAHA

A...
ANYWAY...

SHADOW
GAVE ME OUR
BOOK REPORT'S
CORRECTION THE
OTHER DAY,
SAYING YOU PUT
A LOT OF EFFORT
INTO IT...

ACTUALLY NIKKI DID IT

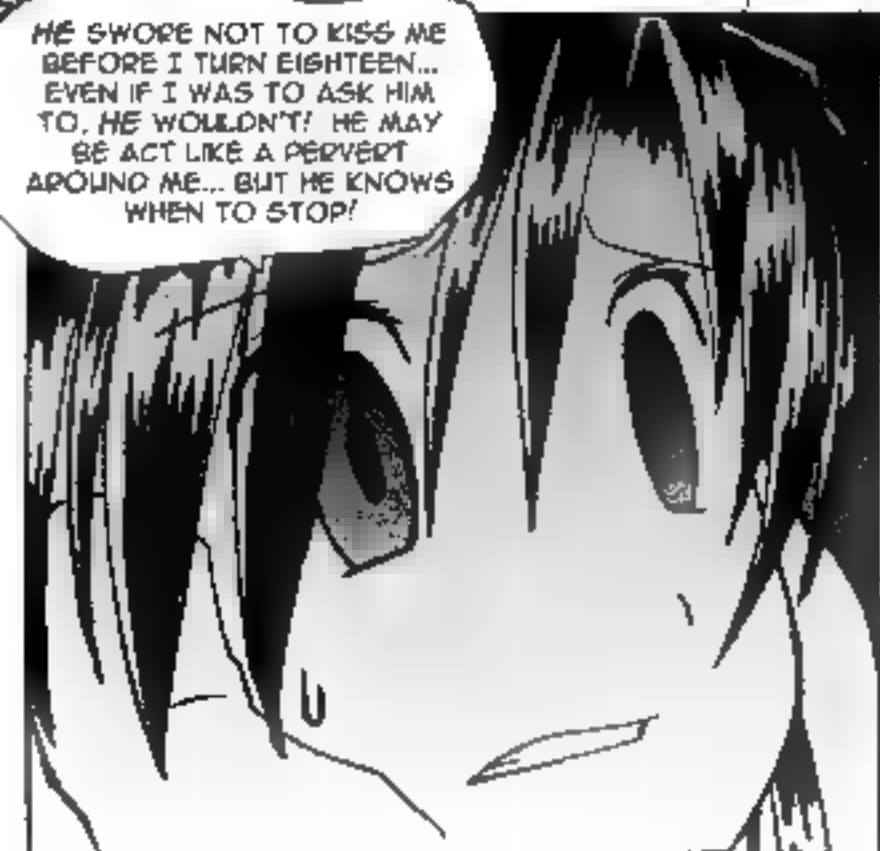
OH...
YEAH,
YEAH.

THANK
YOU...

I REALLY
APPRECIATE IT,
AUGUSTUS...



YOU ARE
NOT
AUGUSTUS.




HE SWORE NOT TO KISS ME
BEFORE I TURN EIGHTEEN...
EVEN IF I WAS TO ASK HIM
TO, HE WOULDN'T! HE MAY
BE ACT LIKE A PERVERT
AROUND ME... BUT HE KNOWS
WHEN TO STOP!




HE SWORE... AND HE
ALWAYS KEEPS HIS
PROMISES!

JUST WHO ARE
YOU?




SHADOW, BIG BRO,
PLEASE STOP
FIGHTING! I DON'T
LIKE IT WHEN YOU
GUYS FIGHT!

THERE, THERE,
CAROLE. IT'S JUST
A NORMAL
DISCUSSION THAT
GOT OUT OF
HAND. IT'S OKAY
NOW IT'S OVER.



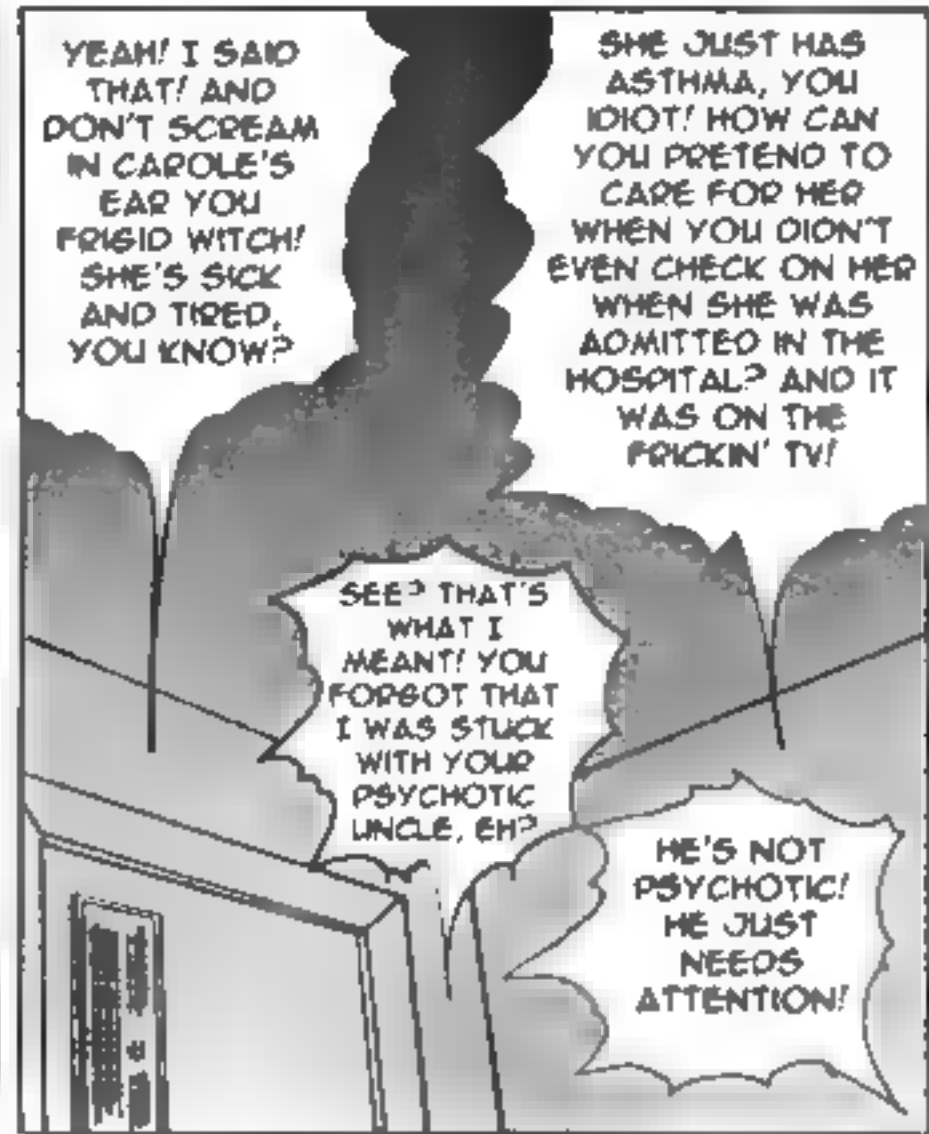
HA. THERE YOU GO
AGAIN, ACTING LIKE
AN OMNISCIANT
MEDIATOR, AS IF
YOU WERE IN
POSITION TO JUDGE
US ALL...
MICHELANGELO,
RAPHAEL, MYSELF...

ALL YOU EVER DID
WAS TO FORCE YOUR
WAY OF THINKING
UPON US,
REGARDLESS OF OUR
CIRCUMSTANCES.
WHY CAN'T YOU BE
THE LEAST
CONSIDERATE
TOWARDS OTHERS?



W...WHAT DID
YOU SAY?
I'M NOT
CONSIDERATE?
ME?

NO! PLEASE
DON'T FIGHT!



YEAH! I SAID
THAT! AND
DON'T SCREAM
IN CAROLE'S
EAR YOU
FRIGID WITCH!
SHE'S SICK
AND TIRED,
YOU KNOW?

SHE JUST HAS
ASTHMA, YOU
IDIOT! HOW CAN
YOU PRETEND TO
CARE FOR HER
WHEN YOU DIDN'T
EVEN CHECK ON HER
WHEN SHE WAS
ADMITTED IN THE
HOSPITAL? AND IT
WAS ON THE
FRICKIN' TV!

SEE? THAT'S
WHAT I
MEANT! YOU
FORGOT THAT
I WAS STUCK
WITH YOUR
PSYCHOTIC
UNCLE, EH?

HE'S NOT
PSYCHOTIC!
HE JUST
NEEDS
ATTENTION!

WHAT IS
HAPPENING
HERE?



WE HEARD YOU
GUYS ARGUING
WITH SOMEONE
AND... CAROLE?
WHY ARE YOU
CRYING?

ANY HI HI, NO.
AND NOS.
AMHERST! DON'T
WORRY!



WE WERE JUST
DOING A SKIT
AND CAROLE
HERE PUT UP A
VERY CONVINCING
PERFORMANCE,
RIGHT?

MUM
YES

OH, IS THAT
SO...? WELL, WE
APOLOGIZE FOR
INTERRUPTING
YOUR SMALL
GAME, BUT WE'RE
HERE TO TAKE
CAROLE HOME

WE'RE HOSTING THE
CHRISTMAS PARTY
THIS YEAR. SO THE
WHOLE FAMILY WILL
BE COMING
EXCEPT.
W..WELL, ANYWAYS,
PUT ON SOME WARM
CLOTHES, HONEY

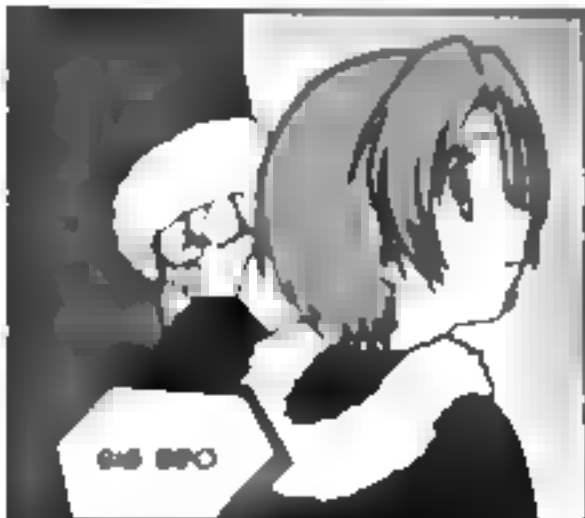


THANK YOU FOR
ALWAYS LOOKING
AFTER HER,
SHADOW CAROLE.
WHAT DO YOU SAY
TO SHADOW?

THANK YOU
SHADOW

PLEASE GIVE
OUR BEST
WISHES TO
YOUR PARENTS,
SHADOW!





PLEASE WAIT!
LET US DO ONE
LAST SKIT!



I'LL BE AN
ANGEL WHO
DELIVERS
MESSAGES TO
HEAVEN YOU,
CAROLE, WILL BE
YOURSELF

WHAT WOULD
YOU LIKE THE
ANGEL TO TELL
ANGUSTUS IN
HEAVEN ON A
DAY LIKE THIS?



I KNOW I'M NOT
SUPPOSED TO
TELL MOM AND
DAD HE'S UNDER
THE GEO, BUT... I
WANT TO AT
LEAST SAY
GOODBYE

I KNOW YOU'VE BEEN
A VERY GOOD
PERSON THIS YEAR! I
HOPE YOU'LL GET
LOTS OF PRESENTS!

I ALSO WANT YOU TO
KNOW THAT MOM AND
DAD MISS YOU, BUT I
MISS YOU TEN TIMES
MORE!



MERRY CHRISTMAS,
ANGUSTUS! I HOPE
YOU'LL COME HOME ONE
DAY! I LOVE YOU LOTS!

RAPHAEL YOU LIE
TO ME ABOUT
AUGUSTUS BECAUSE
YOU WERE WORRIED
ABOUT MY SANITY?
WHY? WHAT DO YOU
KNOW ABOUT ME?

LOOK WHEN PEOPLE ARE
FACED WIT' LIFE AND DEATH,
THEIR MINDS GET ALL MESSED
UP. I KNOW IT 'CUZ ONE OF
MY BROS WENT THROUGH
THAT WE FORCED REALITY
INTO HIS MIND, AGAINST HIS
WILL... AND HE LOST IT

SO... IT WAS ALL
THE LIE...
AUGUSTUS IS
REALLY DEAD...?
AND EVEN
SHADOW EVEN
MY OTHER
CHILDHOOD
FRIEND LIE TO
ME ABOUT IT...?

SHE JUST
FOLLOWED MY
LEAD, SHIE SHE
PROBABLY
DOESN'T EVEN
KNOW WHY WE'RE
DOIN' THAT.
DON'T BLAME
HER.

LISTEN YOUR
"AUGUSTUS". I
DON'T THINK HE'S
DEAD HE'S
ACTUALLY...

THAT'S
ENOUGH... TO
MY EYES, HE
ALREADY DIED
TWICE

PLEASE...
STOP PLAYING
WITH MY
EMOTIONS

ENOUGH.



LOOK, I'M
SORRY I DIDN'T
MEAN TO MAKE
YA FEEL BAD

DON'T PRETEND 'O
FEEL SORRY FOR ME
HOW CAN I KNOW
YOU MEAN IT AFTER
LYING TO ME LIKE
THAT...?

WHAT WAS THE
USE OF YOU AND
SHADOW SAYING
ME THE OTHER
DAY, IF IT WAS TO
TOY WITH MY
EMOTIONS IN
SUCH AN INSULIAN
WAY ?

YOU YOU
DON'T
UNDERSTAND
HOW I FEEL
ABOUT
ALBUSTUS



BUT BUT SHADOW
DOES YET SHE
DIDN'T TELL ME A
THING SHE SHE
MADE FUN OF ME
SHE PLAYED WITH MY
EMOTIONS ' A CLOSE
CHILDHOOD FRIEND
OF MINE , TO DO
SUCH A THING TO
ME



C'MON,
DON'T
CRY



DON'T TOUCH
ME! I DON'T
EVEN KNOW
YOU!

I DON'T HAVE
ANYTHING TO DO
WITH YOU!



I'M GOING
BACK TO THE
HOSPITAL ON
MY OWN!
PLEASE DON'T
FOLLOW ME
AND STAY OUT
OF MY LIFE!



HOW LONG DO
YOU INTEND TO
STAY UNDER
THAT BED?
THEY'RE GONE.
YOU KNOW?

SHUT UP
AND CALM
DOWN.
NOW THAT SHE'S
GONE, YOU'LL
LISTEN TO EVERY
WORD I SAY
FIRST, ABOUT
WHAT YOU SAID
JUST NOW...



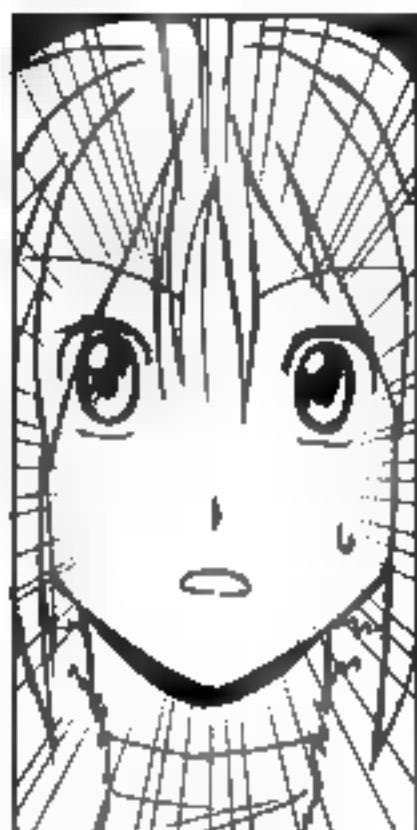
FIRST, YOU
HUMILIATE ME IN
FRONT OF
CAROLE...

THEN, YOU STEAL
HER AFFECTION
FROM ME...!

...
SCREW YOU.
YOU MADE A
COMPLETE ASS
OUT OF YOURSELF
IN FRONT OF YOUR
SISTER AND
DROGGED ME
ALONG WITH YOU
YOU WANTED TO
CONFRONT ME AT
A BAD MOMENT,
YOU GOT IT.

IS
SOMETHING I
BORROWED
FROM YOUR
SISTER... AND
IT'S YOURS

OUT
THIS



YOU'RE ALL
NOTHING BUT
LIARS! COLD-
HEARTED LIARS!

WAIT,
OAVIANNA!

OAVIANNA!

SORRY SHADOW
I KNOW I
SCREWED UP BIG
TIME I'LL GO
AFTER HER

NO, IT'S
OKAY. I'D
BETTER
GO MYSELF.

I HAD THE TRUTH
FROM HER TOO
BUT AS HER
FRIEND, WHAT I
DID WAS MOST
UNFORGEABLE.

YOU GUYS GO
AHEAD AND
LEAVE
WITHOUT ME..
I'LL MEET YOU
ALL AT MY
APARTMENT
LATER





M...MASTER!
NO, RAPHAEL!
YOU YOU



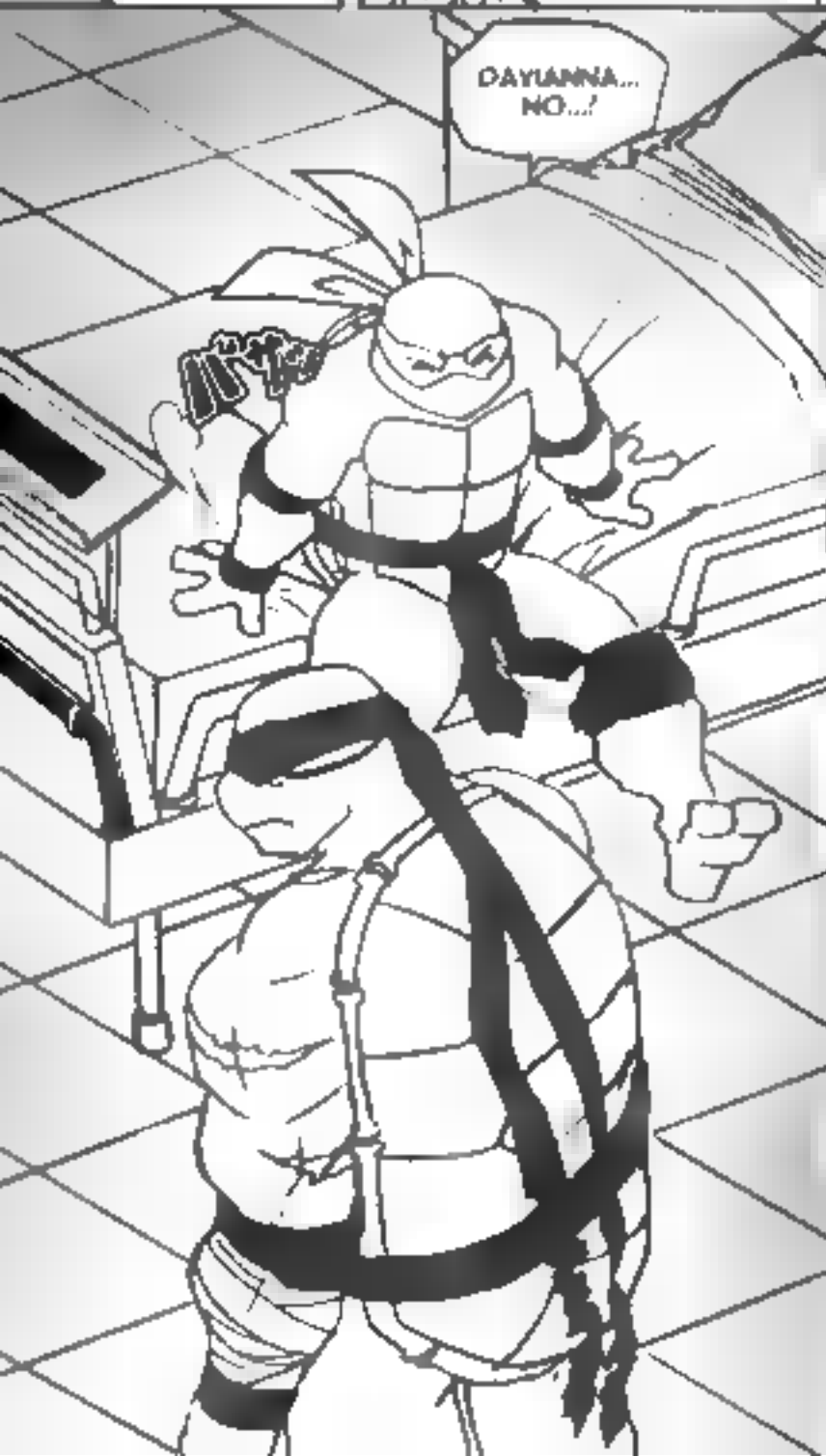
WHAT
THE FL

EVEN AFTER SHE
BLEW MY COVER, I
TRIED TELLIN' HER
THAT YOU'RE HER
"AUGUSTUS".



SORRY.
BUT...

SHE DIDN'T
BUY IT.



DAYANNA...
NO...!



EVEN THOUGH IT
WAS TOO LATE...
WHY DID YOU
INSIST ON
TELLING HER
THAT? DOES IT
MEAN YOU...?



...WHATEVER... ANYWAYS,
IT'S 'BOUT TIME YA
START MOVIN' IN THE
CITY ON YER OWN, SO
LET'S EACH GO OUR
OWN WAY. I'LL
MEET'CHA AT THE
JONES' LATER.





SMOKE
BOMBS?


POW
POW
POW
POW

DAVIANNA! BOAD V
ADM! I'LL GET YOU
OUTTA HERE!



POW
POW



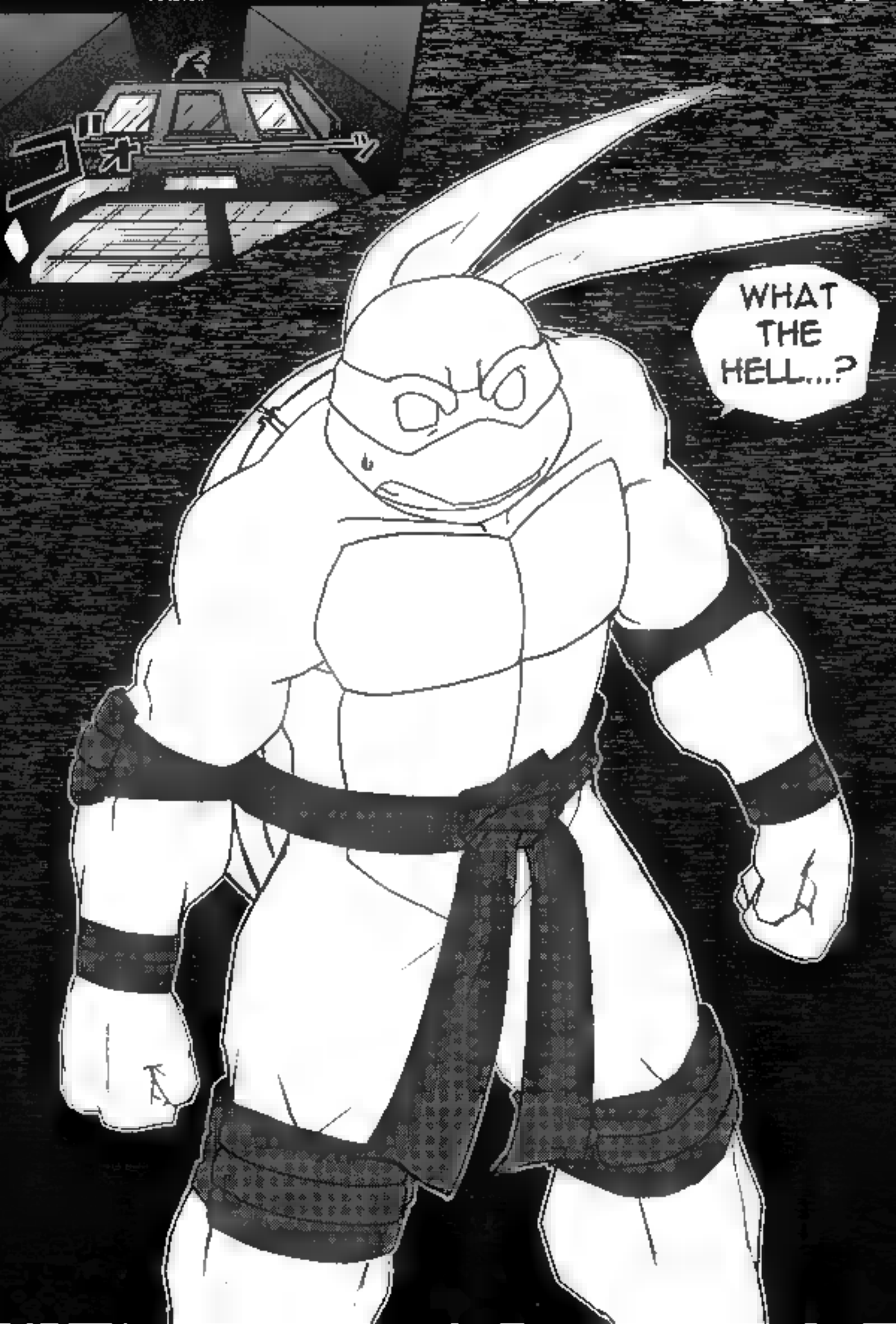


SORRY WE BROUGHT IN
SOME EXCESS GARBAGE
SHE WOULDN'T LET GO OF
OUR TARGET

THAT'S EVEN BETTER THE
MORE THE MERDER

"TIME FOR PHASE B
LIKE THE INSECT OUT"
UP IT'S HOME PLACE
AND SQUISH IT

THAT MUTANT TURTLE
WOULDN'T HESITATE TO
JUMP IN THE LINE OF FIRE
TO SAVE TWO INNOCENT
HUMAN GIRLS FROM
DANGEROUS NINJAS
ISN'T THAT RIGHT, MISS
JONES ?



WHAT
THE
HELL...?

MUTANT
NINJA
TURTLES
G AIDEN 外伝



CHAPTER 12

THE CRIMSON CHRISTMAS



ACHOO!

COLD WEATHER
WE'RE HAVING, EH
DONNIE?

WE'RE GLAD TO
HAVE YOU WITH
US THIS YEAR...
HERE, HAVE
SOME HOT
COCOA.

HEH, THANKS APRIL. I JUST
HAPPENED TO HAVE A GAP
IN MY "SCHEDULE" THIS
YEAR, SO I DECIDED TO
DROP BY AND SAY "HI"...
YOU SAID RAPH'S GONNA
COME WITH THAT RENOUR
GUY TOO, RIGHT?



AA...















SOMETHING'S ON
YOUR MIND?



YEAH... A
WHOLE BUNCH
OF THINGS.



BUT DONCHA
WORRY APRIL. IT
AIN'T NO BIG
DEAL...



ERR... WASSUP WIT'
MIKEY? HOW COME HE
AIN'T HERE IN THE
LIVIN' ROOM?

...I THOUGHT
YOU'D NEVER
ASK, RAPH.



HE'S IN HIS ROOM
WRAPPING PRESENTS. HE'S
A BIT OBSESSED WITH THE
"SURPRISE" ASPECT OF
CHRISTMAS, SO HE'D LIKE
ALL OF US TO KEEP AWAY
FROM HIS ROOM UNTIL
HE'S DONE.

POOR SANTA. HE'S
MISSING HIS
FAITHFUL LITTLE
HELPER SO HE'S
ON HIS OWN...



YO! DONCHA MAKE FUN OF
KLINK, DONNIE! MIKEY
LIKED THAT CAT AND SO DID
I... AND YA DID TOO,
DAMN! WHAT THE HELL'S
WRONG WIT' YA?

WHOA! WHOA!
NO FIGHTING
ON CHRISTMAS
EVE, BOTH OF
YOU!



RAPH, WHY DON'T YOU
HELP OUT A LITTLE BIT
WHILE WAITING FOR
SHADOW, AUBUSTUS
AND MIKEY? YOU
KNOW, THE CHRISTMAS
TREE HASN'T BEEN
TRIMMED YET AND I
WONDERED IF YOU
COULD...

ARRH... YA
GOT ME
THERE, APRIL.
YA KNOW I
LIKE CUTTIN'
THINGS! HOPE
YA STILL GOT
THOSE
BUTTERFLY
KNIVES.

I BELIEVE YOU HAVE
THE RIGHT TO KNOW
WHAT WE HAVE A
PLAN FOR YOU AND
YOUR FRIEND HERE
SONNY

YOU SEE, YOUR UNCLE MICHELANELO
HAS BEEN A LITTLE TOO CHATTY
ABOUT US IN HIS BOOKS LATELY.

AND THIS IS BAD FOR
OUR BUSINESS... SO BAD
WE ARE FORCED TO TAKE
DRASTIC MEASURES, SUCH
AS SILENCING HIM...
FOREVER

USING YOU AS A DECOY,
WE'LL LURE HIM INTO AN
ABANDONED FACTORY IN
THE NEAREST HARBOR!

WE'LL RUN
STRAIGHT INTO
AN AMBUSH...
ALONG!!

ONCE HE SEES A
PICTURE OF HIS
PRECIOUS NIECE
AND HER FRIEND BEING
HELD HOSTAGE,
HE WON'T GIVE A
SECOND
THOUGHT ABOUT
THE COURSE OF
ACTION HE
SHOULD TAKE

THEN WE'LL MAKE HIM
SUFFER...! WE'LL SKEWER HIM
AND MAKE HIM SCREAM HIS
LUNGS OUT FOR MERCY UNTIL
BLOOD LOSS DOES HIM IN!

AAAAH!!

WAAAAH!!

が!

バ!

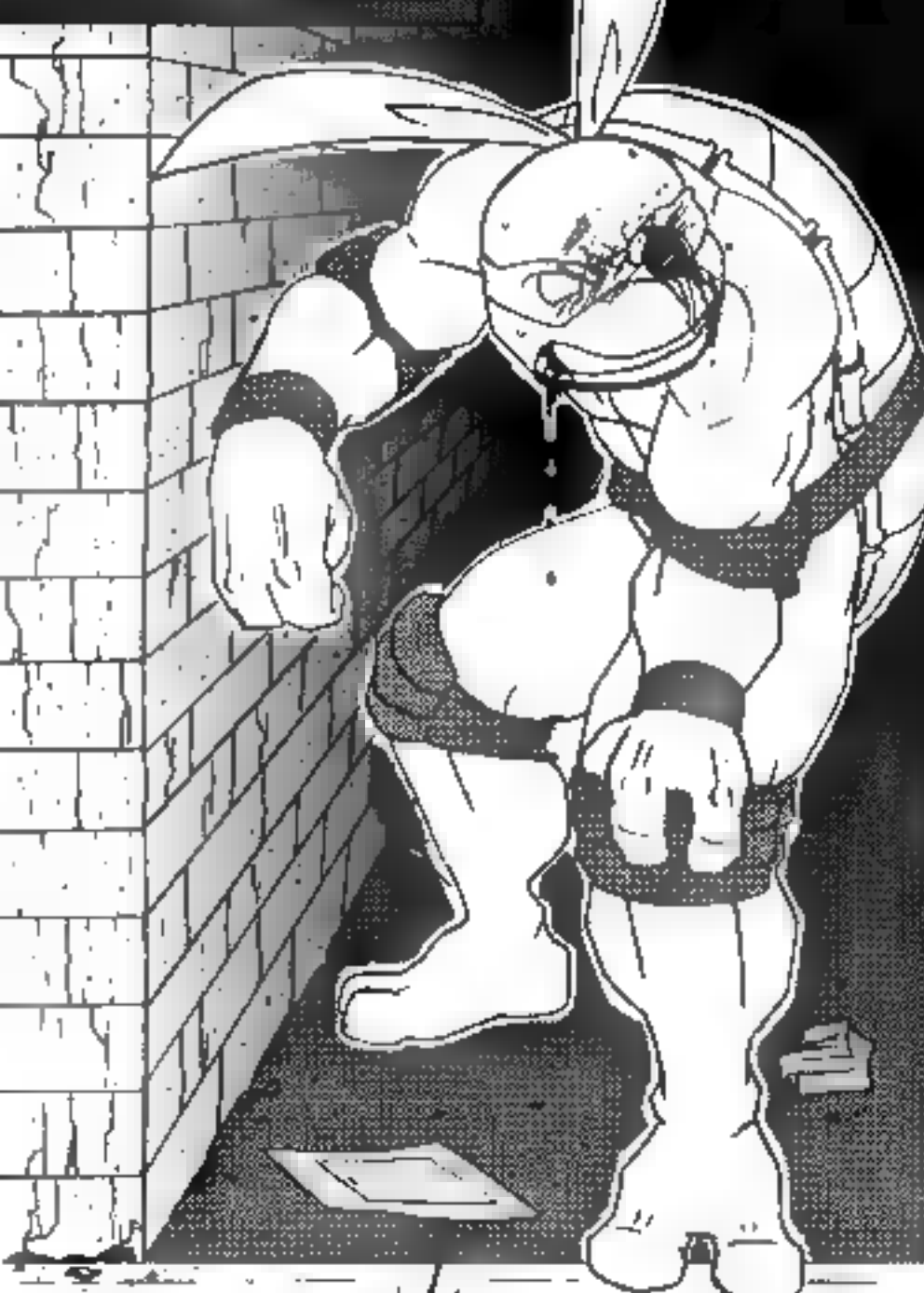
や!

BEHAVE OR
I'LL KILL
YOU HERE
AND NOW!!

YOU KNOW SOMETHING FROM HERE ON, WE
DON'T NEED THOSE GELS ANYMORE SINCE
THAT TITTLE WILL COME NO MATTER WHAT..
BUT WE WILL NEED A LIE OUT TO MAKE
THINGS MORE... INTERESTING.

...WHICH IS GOOD NEWS FOR US ONE MORE
BECAUSE THE GELS LAST CHEATING WILL

I UNDERSTAND FROM YOUR REACTION THAT
YOU DON'T WANT TO SEE YOUR UNCLE
DIE... IS THAT RIGHT?
DON'T WORRY WE CAN HELP YOU WITH THAT





HOLY CRAP!



THE TURKEY!

IT'S ON FIRE!!



OH, HONEY... DON'T WORRY. I'M SURE IT'S STILL EATABLE NONETHELESS

YA SUCK



SORRY APRIL. THINGS USUALLY GO SMOOTHLY WHEN FAKEY TAKES CARE OF THIS... YA KNOW I'M NO GOOD AT THIS KIND OF STUFF...

THE CHEF



MAN, IS THIS CHRISTMAS TREE PERFECT, OR WHAT?

YA KNOW BUYS, I ALWAYS THOUGHT I WOULD MAKE A GREAT BARBER IF I REALLY GOT DOWN TO IT SERIOUSLY. DO YOU THINK SO?

YEAH, RIGHT, YOU'D NEED CUSTOMERS WITH SCALPS AS WIDE AS THIS TREE TO DO YOUR JOB RIGHT, YA DUMMIE!



MY MY...



WHAT IS TAKING SHADOW SO LONG? THE NEW YORK-PRESBYTERIAN HOSPITAL IS NOT THAT FAR FROM HERE...



I SAW HER!

SHE TOLD ME SHE'S GONNA COME LATER!!



I SEE...



B...BLACK CAR...
LOOKING FOR... FOR
BLACK CAR...

IT LOOKS
WOUNDED... I
DON'T THINK IT CAN
HARM ANYBODY IN
ITS CURRENT
STATE...

EEW! HOW
FREAKY! IT'S
MISSING AN
EYEBALL! AND
IT'S TALKING
LIKE US!!

I HEARD IT
DEVoured
A GUY A
FEW
MONTHS
AGO...

B...BLACK
CAR... H...
HAVE YOU...
SEEN IT..?



B...PLEASE
HELP...

LOOKING
FOR... B...
BLACK CAR...
FAST...

DEAR GOD... SUCH A
GROTESQUE SIGHT...
AND ON CHRISTMAS
EVE, NO LESS!



PLEASE... HELP ME...

I... I'M HUMAN
TOO...! I...

IT... IT HURTS... MY
EYE... IT HURTS SO
MUCH... PLEASE
HELP...

UGH... WHAT AN
ABOMINATION... IT
SHOULDN'T BE
ALLOWED TO LIVE...

LET'S PIN IT ON
THE GROUND
UNTIL THE POLICE
COMES!

SH...SHADOW...
D...DAVIANNA...
SHADOW...
DAVIANNA...!!

GRAAH!

S... GET
OUTTA MY
WAY!

IT'S
ANGRY!

WHA!

GET
OUTTA MY
WAY!!

I'M A MONSTER!
I'M A MONSTER!

AND I'M GONNA
EAT ANYONE THAT
GETS IN MY WAY!!
ANYONE!!!

HEY! IT'S
GETTING
AWAY!

R...RUN AWAY
EVERYONE!!!

IT'S GONNA
KILL US!!

IT'S GOING
FOR THE
ROOFTOPS!

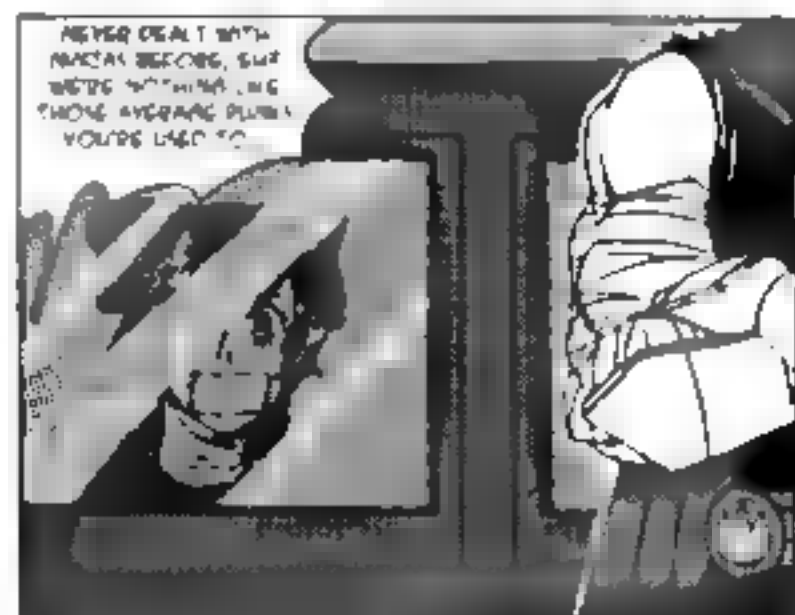


DONE AT
LAST.

WELL, THAT'S ONE PART
OF MY LONG LIST OF
TASKS COMPLETED FOR
THIS CHRISTMAS

NOW, FOR THE
NEXT AND
UNPLEASANT ONE..
GO OUT THERE AND
STAND GUARD FOR THE
REST OF THE NIGHT

A SHURIKEN...
AND A
LETTER...

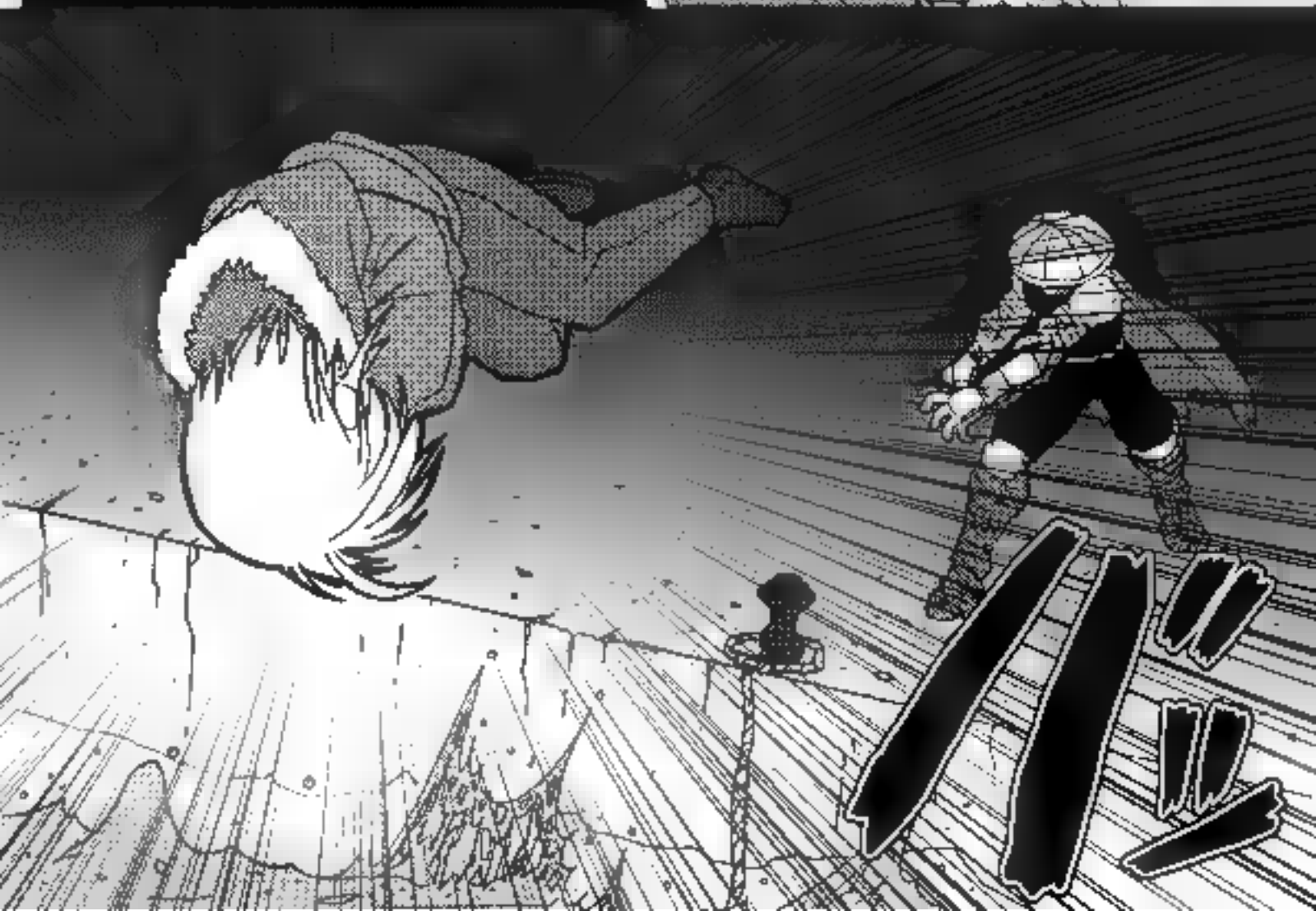




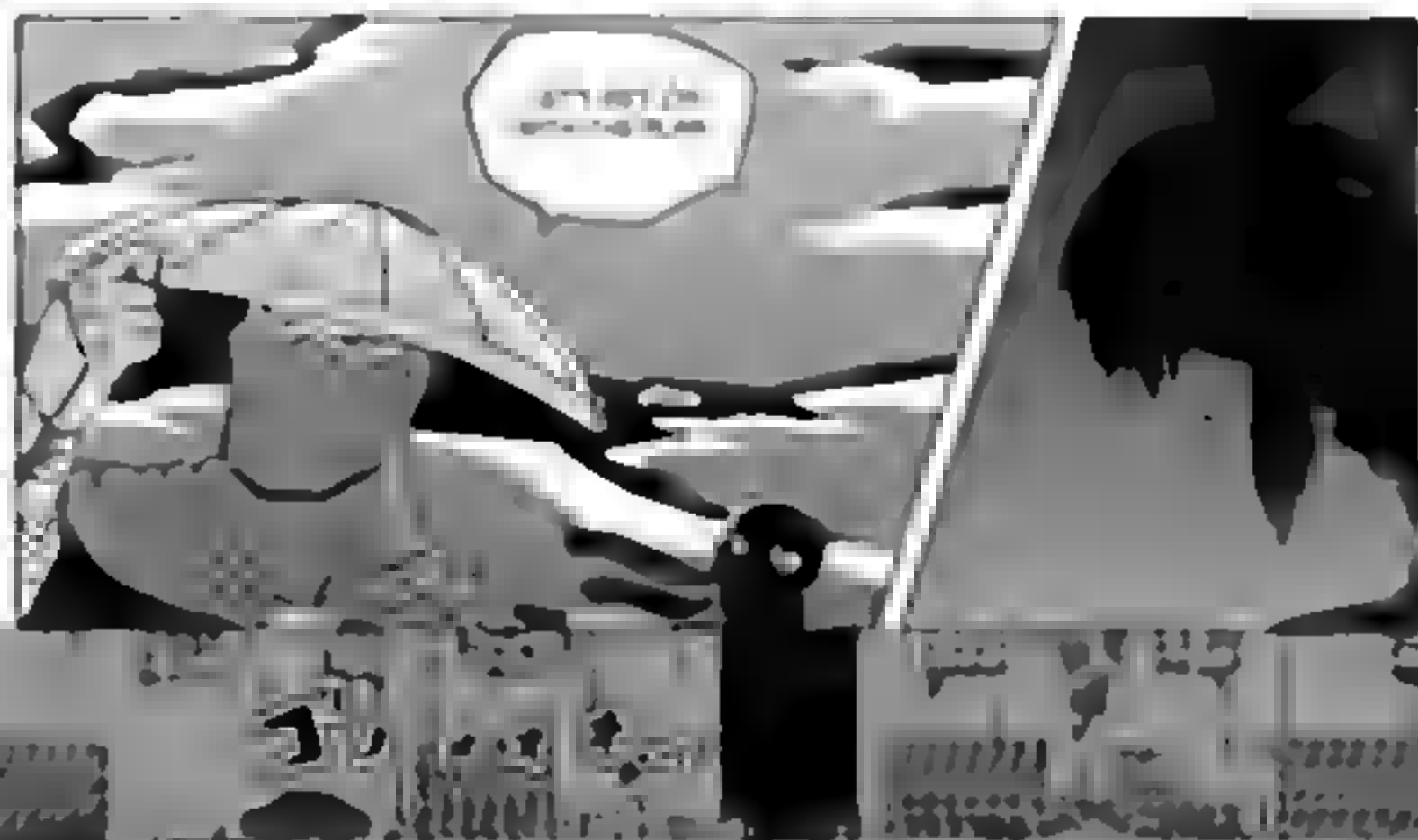
SOMEBODY...
HELP ME...
HELP ME...!!

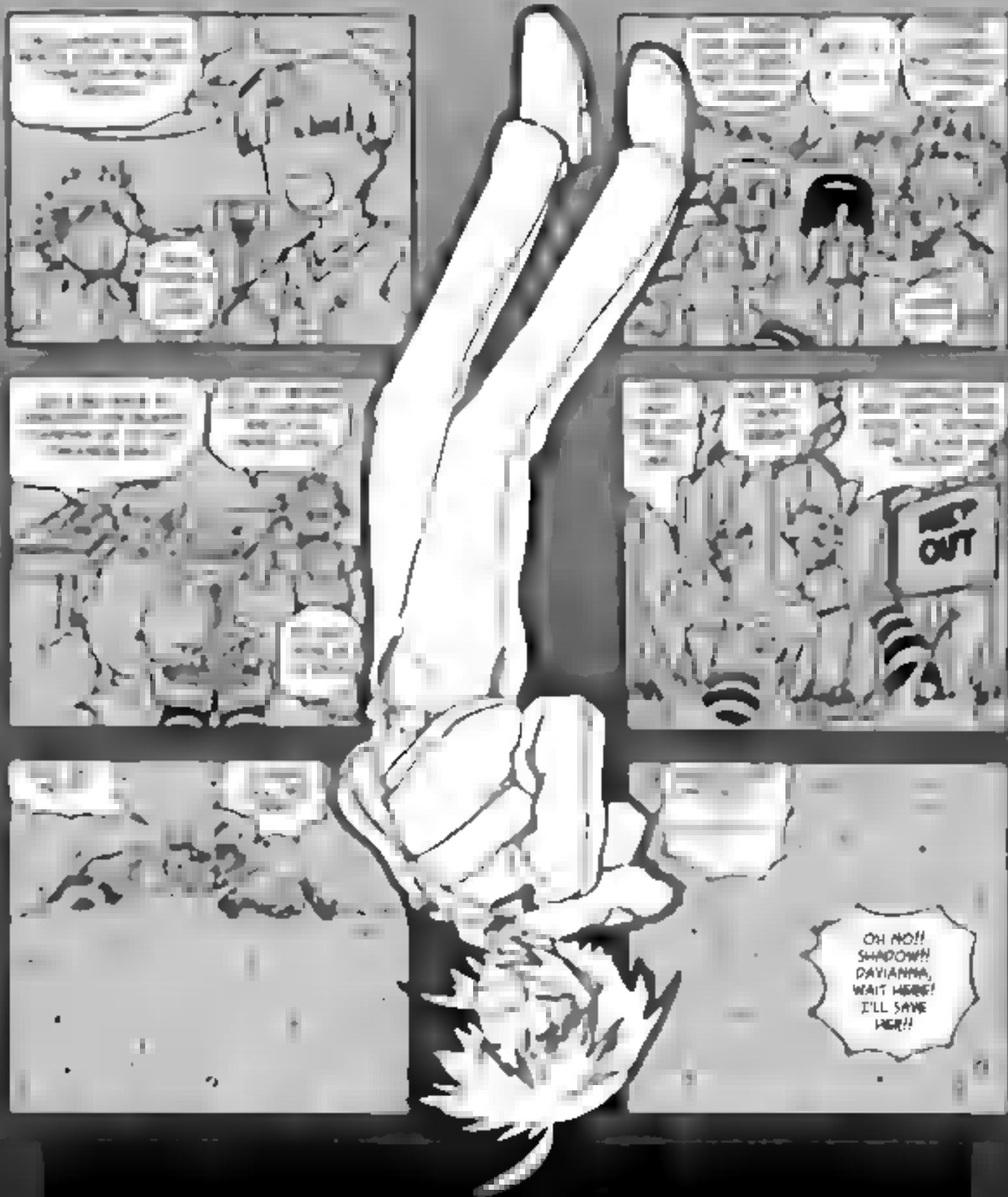
I DON'T
WANT TO
DIE!! I
DON'T
WANT TO
DIE!!

GOOD NIGHT,
MISS JONES!



フシギ





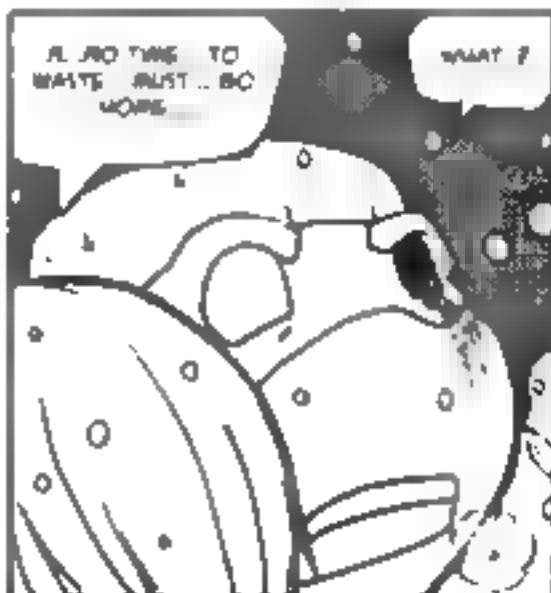
AFTER EVERYTHING I'VE DONE TO YOU AND DAVIANNA...

"I DON'T CARE ABOUT THAT NOW, SHADOW! I WAS SO SCARED...
WHEN YOU DIDN'T OPEN YOUR EYES, I... I..."

...STOP CRYING, YOU WIMP.







THE MORE I STRAY
AWAY FROM MY
PAST...

BACK INTO THE
WORLD OF
DARKNESS, THEN.

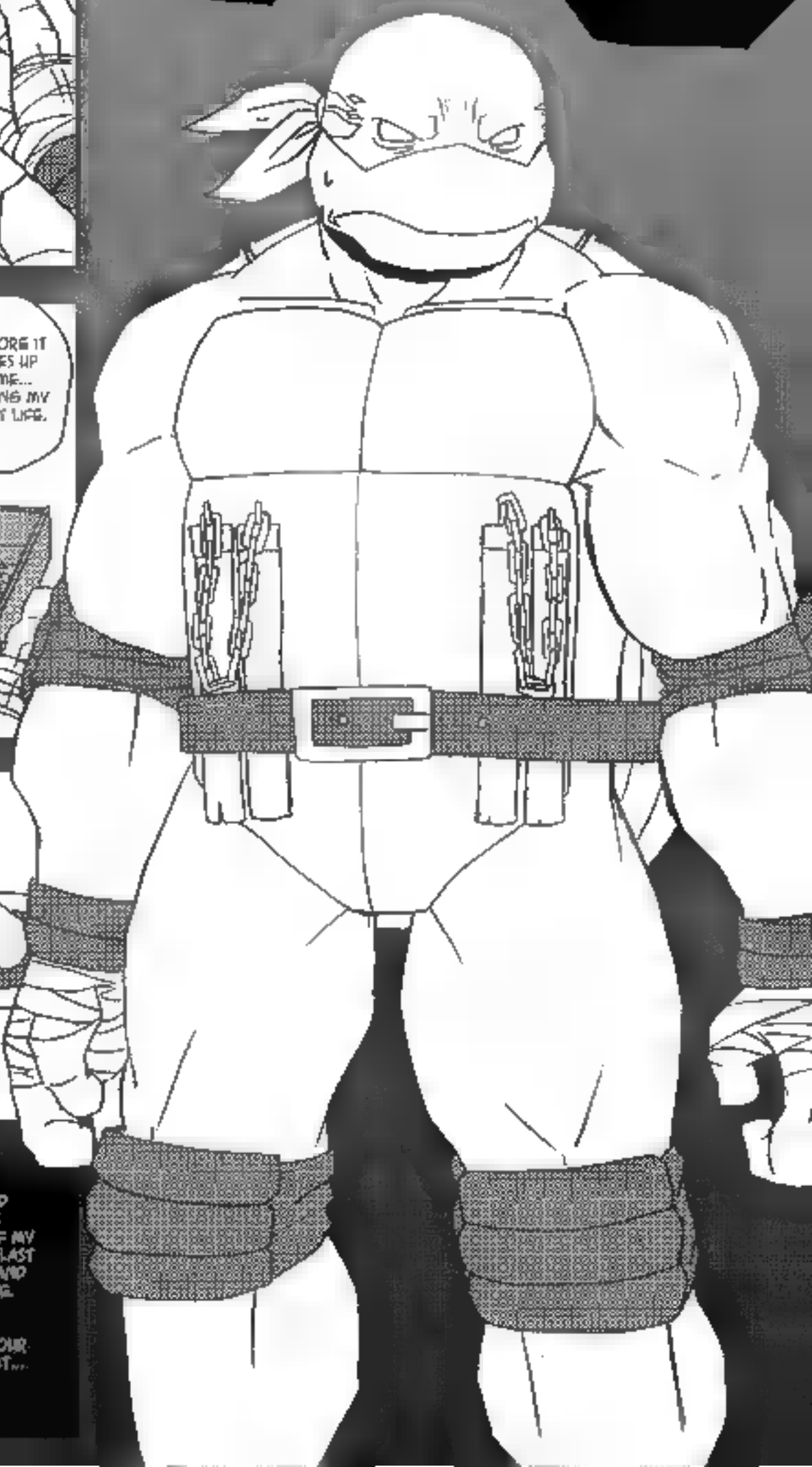
PAIN... I'M READY
TO DIVE INTO YOUR
ARMS NOW.

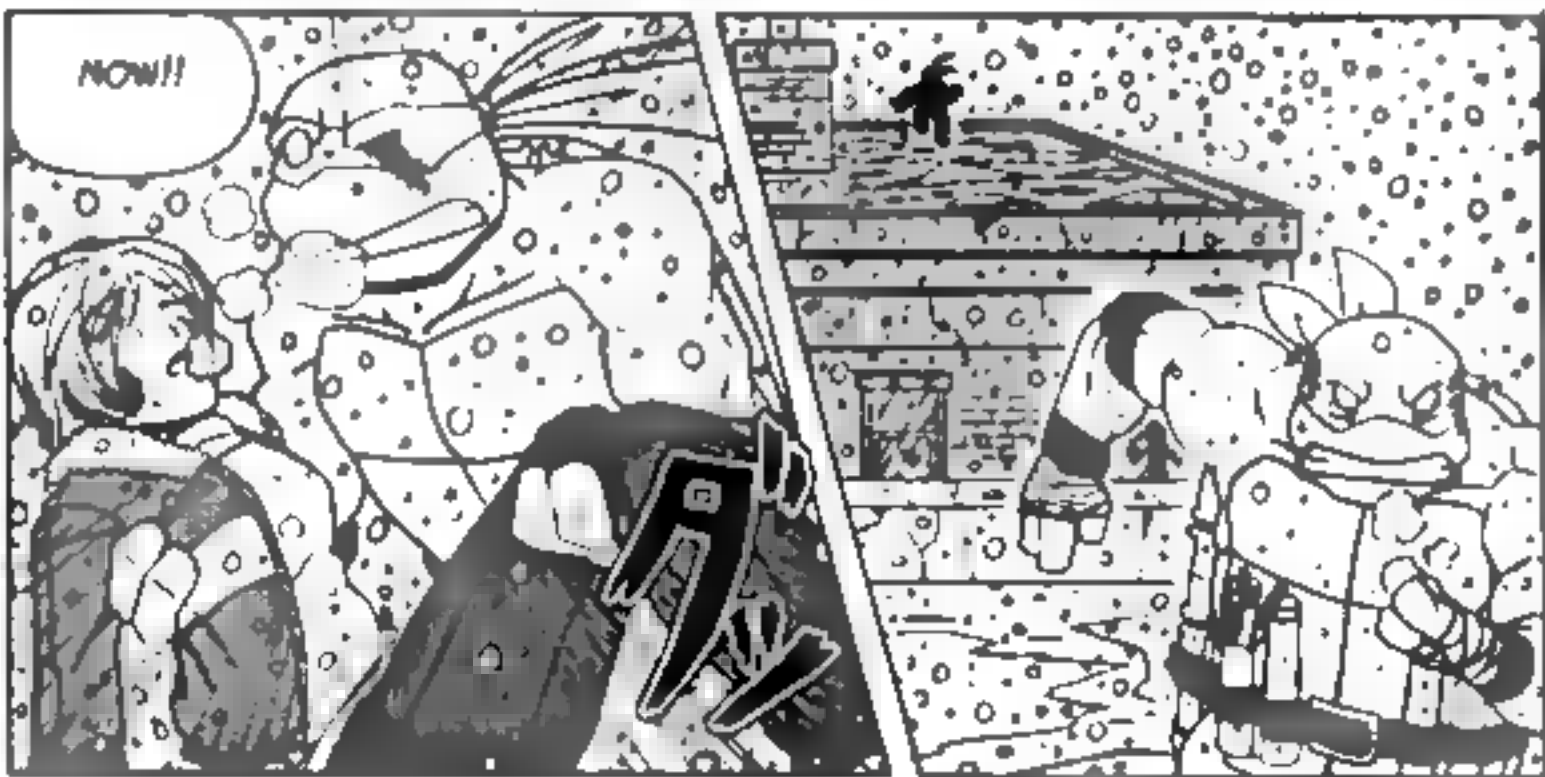
...THE MORE IT
CATCHES UP
WITH ME...
POISONING MY
CURRENT LIFE.

TONIGHT,
THERE'S NO
ESCAPE. NO WAY
I CAN KEEP
DENYING.

...BECAUSE SOMEONE CALLED
MICHELANGELO HAMATO IS
SCREAMING AT THE BOTTOM OF MY
SOUL, TELLING ME WE HAVE AT LAST
TOUCHED COMMON GROUND AND
THAT WE SHOULD COOPERATE.

WE BOTH WANT TO PROTECT OUR
LOVED ONES NO MATTER WHAT...







RENOIR!!

SHADOW!!



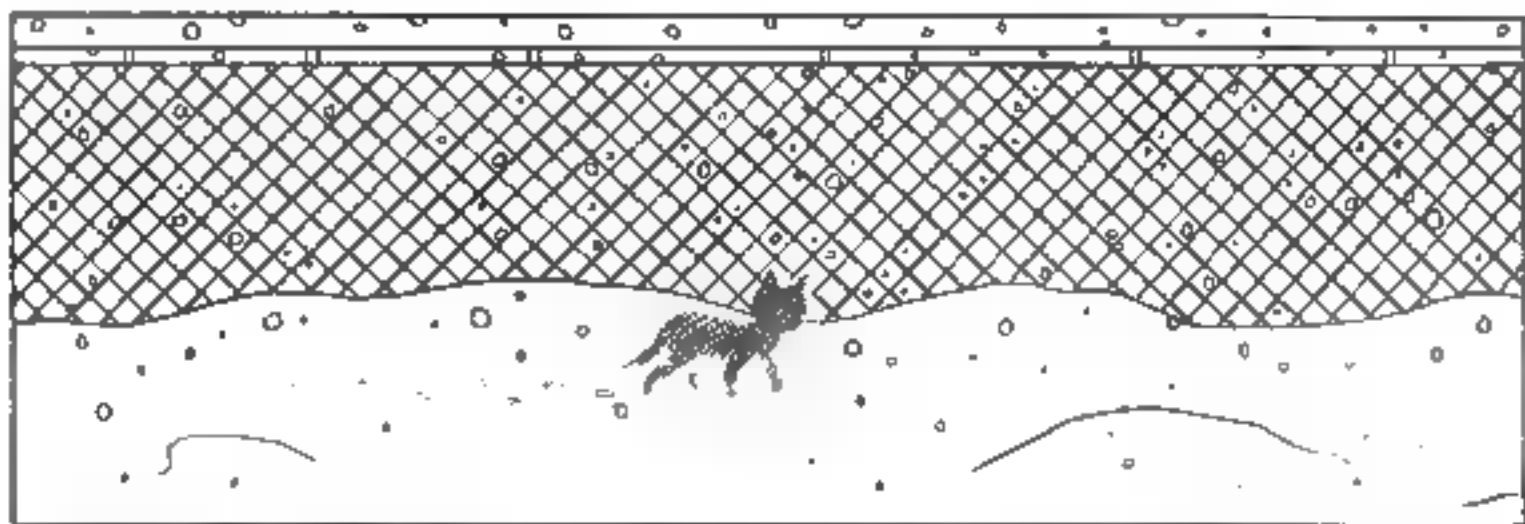
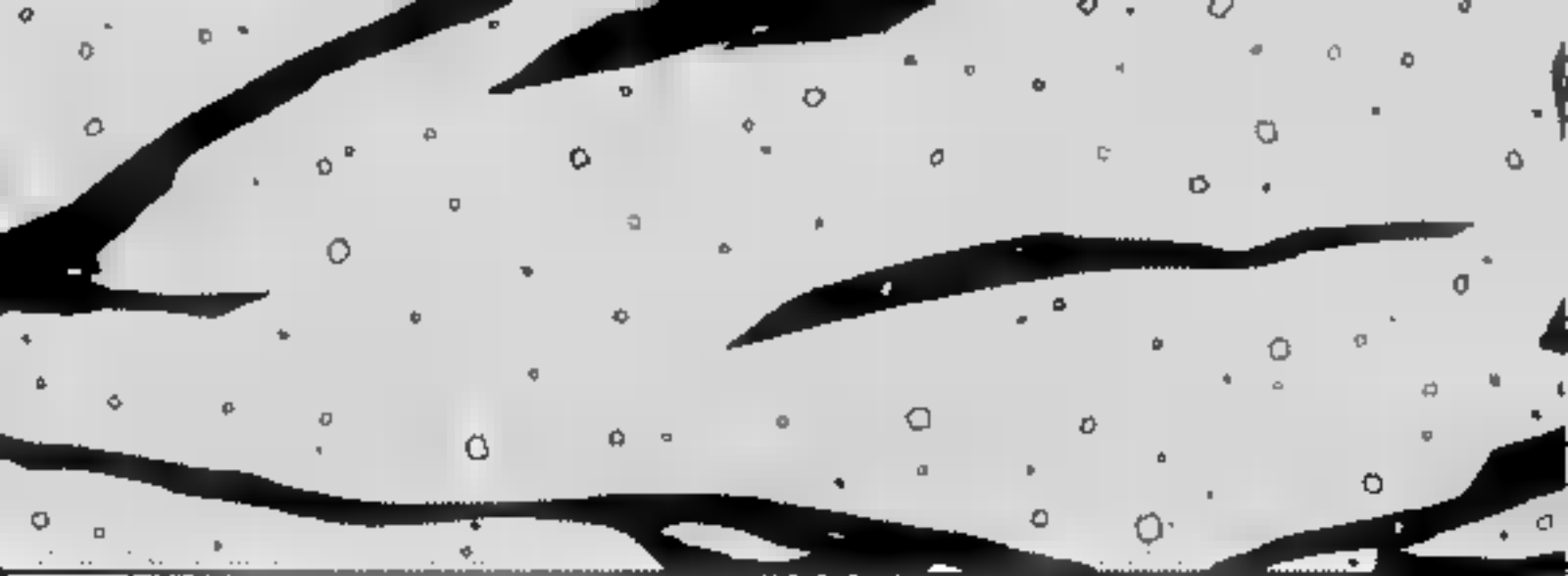
AT LAST...
MADE IT...

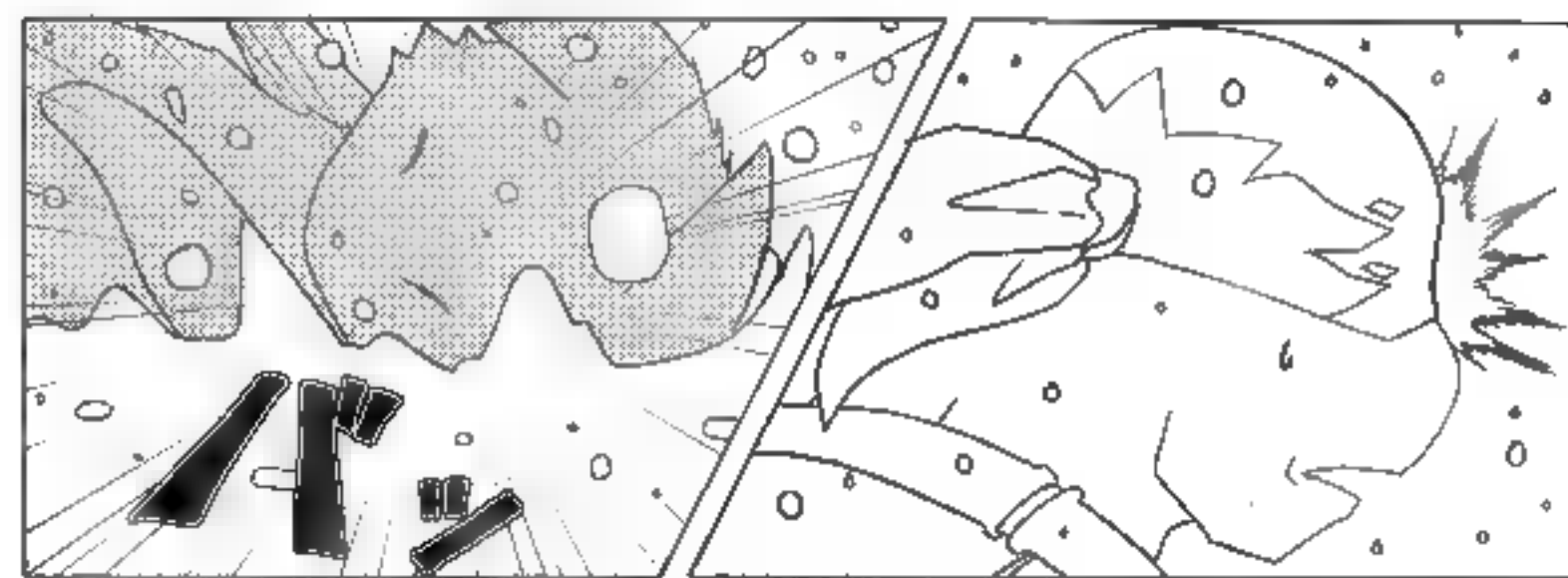
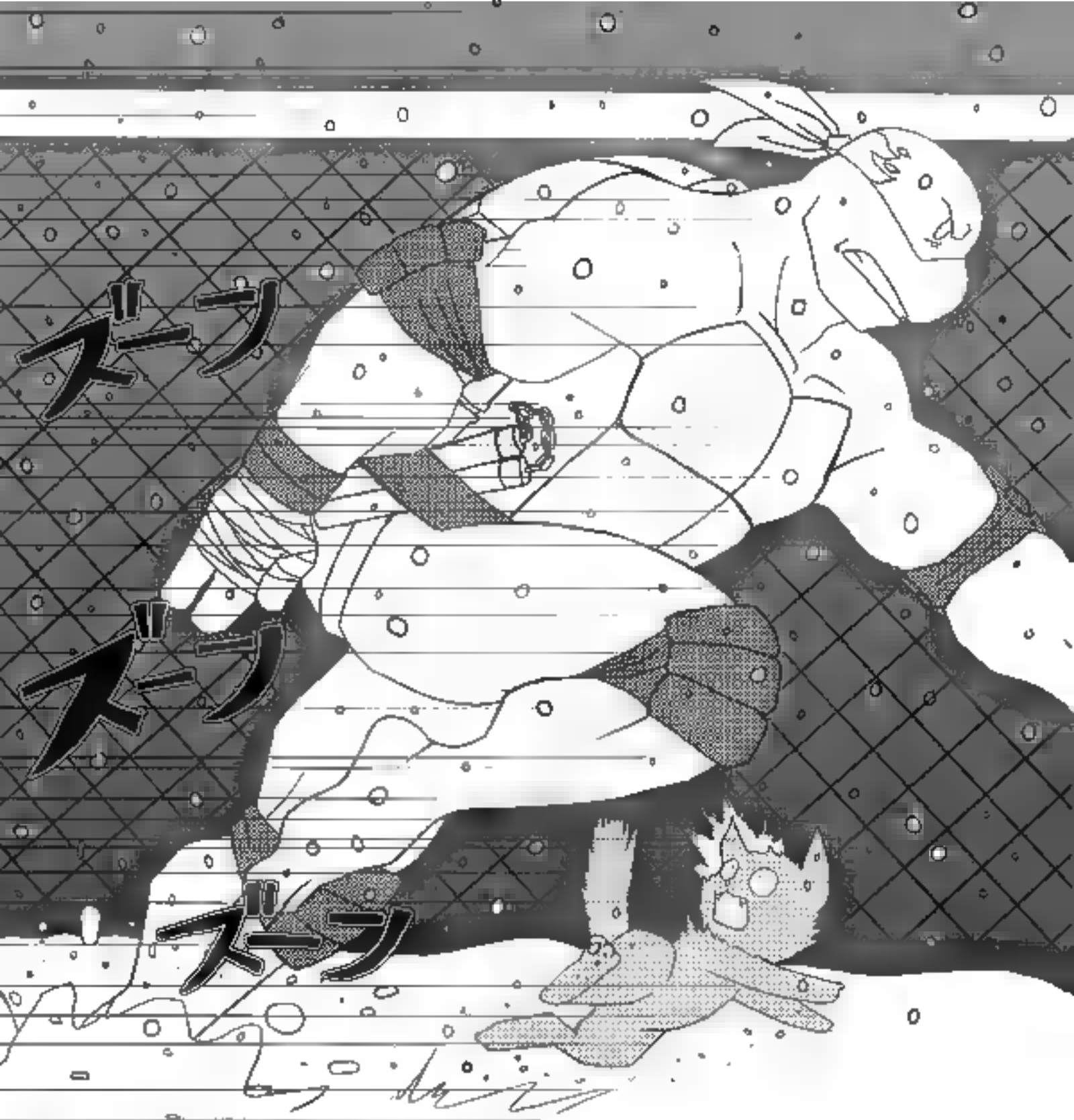
UNCLE MIKEY... HE..
HE MUST NOT...
LEAVE... IT'S... IT'S
AN AMBUSH...!

MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
G A I D E N
外伝



CHAPTER 13
BACK INTO THE SHADOWS







I JUST REMEMBERED
MY FIRST CHRISTMAS EVE IN THE
HUMAN WORLD.

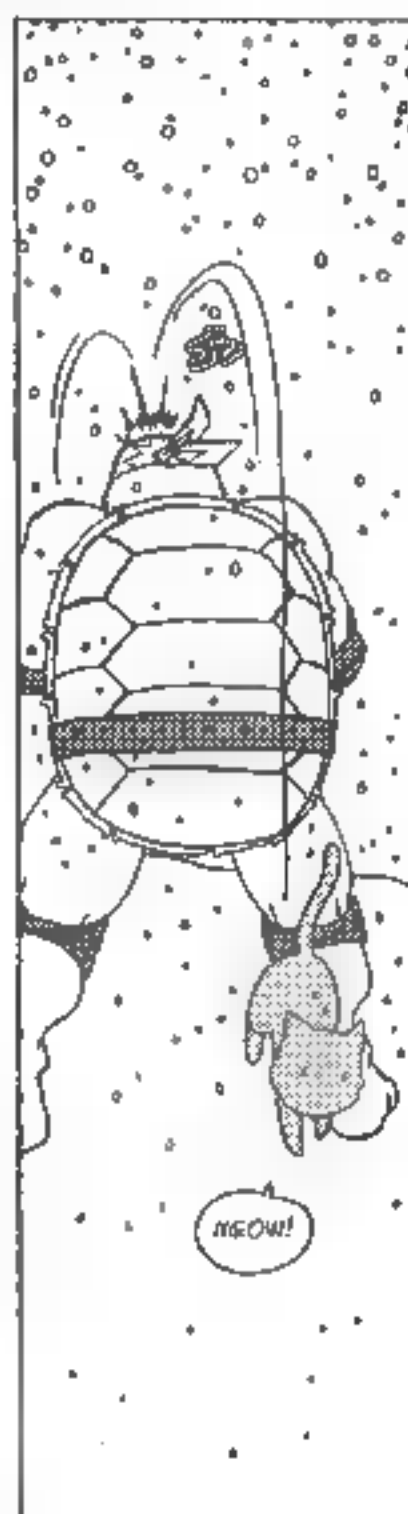
I FOUND A STRAY CAT FREEZING IN
THE SNOW AND TOOK HIM...

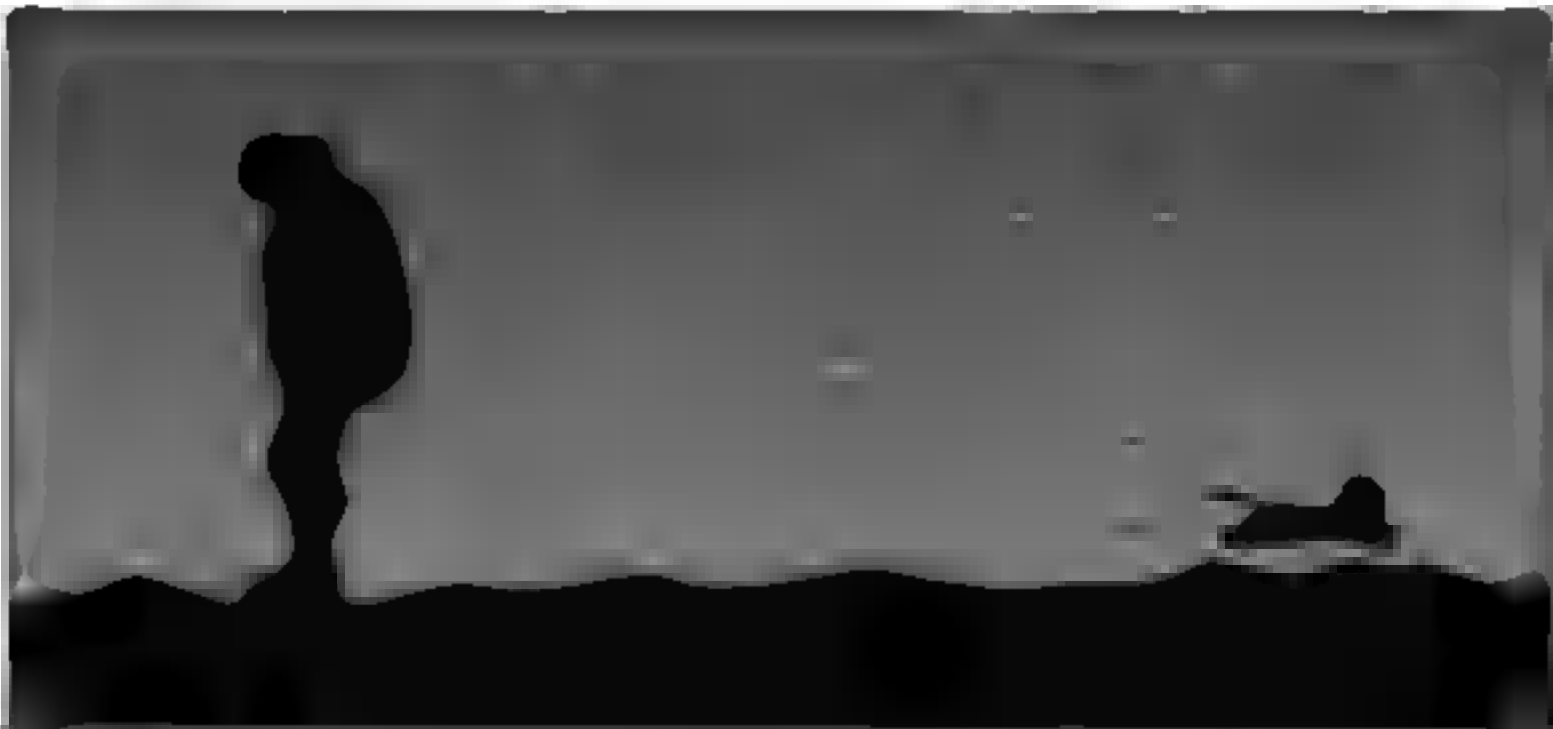
I CALLED HIM "KLUNK".
HE BECAME PART OF OUR FAMILY.

WHAT ARE THE ODDS OF ME
ENCOUNTERING A CAT THAT LOOKS
EXACTLY LIKE KLUNK, ON CHRISTMAS EVE,
THE DAY I DECIDE TO REVISIT MY PAST?

COULD IT BE THAT THIS OMEN IS MORE
THAN JUST A COINCIDENCE?

MY REJECTED PAST... IT'S RESONATING IN
MY REALITY MORE THAN EVER.





ド
MIKEY, 'TIS
CASEY HERE!
C'MON, LET US
IN!

VA KNOW WHAT? I
THINK HE'S JUST
CURLED UP IN A BALL
CRYIN'!! WAIT TILL I
BREAK DOWN THIS
DOOR, I'LL...

His window's
open! He's
already gone!

THAT
MEANS HE'S
GOIN'.

...AFTER FOOT
NINJAS ALONE?

OH,
BROTHER.

I WONDER IF MIKEY
CAN SEND OFF FOOT
NINJAS AFTER ALL
THESE YEARS...

WELL, HE DID
WORK OUT TO
STAY IN SHAPE
BUT NO NINJA
TRAINING, SO

UNC'
MIKEY

WURRRGGHH!!
THAT
SHITHEAD!!

WHY'D HE HAVE TO
INVOLVE SHADOW
AND RENOIR!?

RADH...
PLEASE CALM
DOWN

AAAAH
HE'S AT
IT
AGAIN...

WAIT! WHERE DO YOU
THINK YOU'RE BOMB?

HEADING OUT EMPTY
HANDED WITH ABSOLUTELY
NO CLUE AS TO WHERE
MIKEY THAT GIRL AND THE
FOOT NINJAS ARE... DON'T
MAKE ME LAUGH

SAVE
DAVIANNA
AND KICK
SOME ASS
VILLAIN
MIKEY'S!!!

THE ODDS THAT YOU
ACTUALLY FIND THEM
ARE AS LOW AS
0001% THAT BEING
THE CASE WHERED BE
SUDDENLY METED
WITH TELEPATHY

OKAY, GENIUS!!

I'LL SHOW
YA MY
TELEPATHY!!





RAPH...!
HAVE YA
GONE
NUTS?

URGH...
WHAT THE
F...!

JUST 'CUZ
YOU'RE UPSET
DOESN'T
MEAN YA CAN
DO STUPID
THINGS LIKE
VENT OUT
YOUR ANGER
ON YOUR
OWN FAMILY!

WHY
CARE?



WHY DO YA SINGLE ME OUT,
CASEY.. WHEN YA FEEL
EXACTLY THE SAME!!

BEING SO MAD THAT
YA WANNA BEAT THE
CRAP OUTTA EVERY-
THING THAT PISSES YA
OFF.. DONCHA FEEL
LIKE THAT TOO?!

RAPH! JUST
WHAT ARE YOL



YOUR OWN KID
CASEY... YOUR OWN
FRICKIN' KID BOT
THRASHED 'CUZ OF
MIKEY!! AND 'CUZ
OF US!!

WE SAT BACK, LET HIM
HAVE HIS WAY ALL THOSE
YEARS AND NEVER
STOPPED HIM!!

HOW CAN YA
WANT TO STAY
PUT KNOWIN'
WE LET THIS
HAPPEN?



THAT'S
'CUZ.. WE
REGRET...
NOTHING...
UNC' RAPH...

WHAT?

DON'T BE STUPID!
YA ALMOST GOT
KILLED!

ALMOST... B... BUT
LOOK...! UNCLE
RAPH... I'M STILL
HERE... RIGHT?
AND YOUR
"STUDENT" TOO...

W...WE GOT BEATEN UP
REAL B... BAR BUT WE'RE S...
STILL ALIVE AND KICKING...
UNCLE MIKEY'S ON H...HIS
WAY TO A HUGE FIGHT...
HE, TOO, IS STILL ALIVE...
DAVIANNA R...PROBABLY IS
TOO... N...NOTHING'S OVER
YET... NOTHING'S
IRREVERSIBLE YET...
T...THERE NOTHING TO GET
UPSET ABOUT YET!!

SO WE MUST (COUGH) STOP
WASTING T...TIME AND
(COUGH) GO HELP...(COUGH)
I...I'LL (COUGH) I'LL SHOW
THE WAY (COUGH) (COUGH)

RAPHAEL, LISTEN. LIFE IS TOO
SHORT TO WASTE IT REGRETTING
THE PAST. WE MUSTN'T FORGET
TO JUST... "LIVE AND LET LIVE".

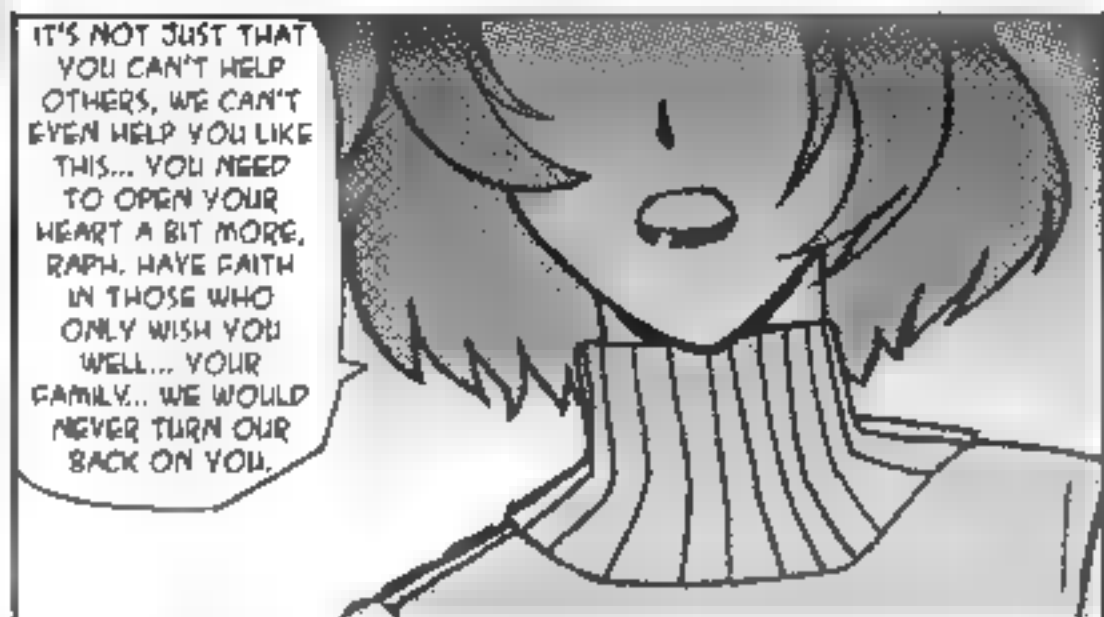
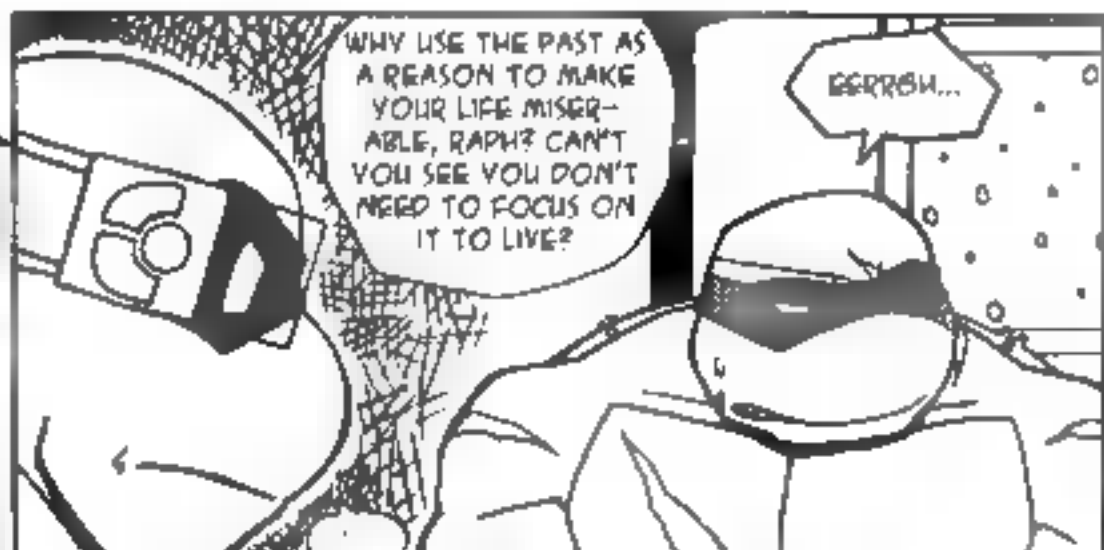
THAT'S WHY THE LEAST WE
SHOULD ALL DO IS NEVER LOOK
BACK ON DECISIONS THAT COME
FROM THE HEART... AND DEAL
WITH THE CONSEQUENCES.

MIKEY DECIDED
TO FOLLOW HIS
HEART AND
BECAME A WRITER.
WE FOLLOWED
OURS TOO.
THAT'S WHY WE
SUPPORTED HIM,
AND ALWAYS WILL.

YOU ARE GOING NOWHERE,
YOUNG GIRL! AN AMBULANCE IS ON
ITS WAY, SO JUST LIE DOWN AND
REST FOR NOW!

...YA CAN'T
EXPECT ME TO
SEE GLITTERIN'
RAINBOWS AND
FLYIN' UNICORNS
IN MY LIFE LIKE
YOU DO, APRIL!

RAPH! I'M NOT ASKING YOU TO DISTORT YOUR VIEW ON REALITY! I KNOW YOU WENT THROUGH A LOT, BUT YOU HAVE TO STOP LETTING YOUR PAST POISON YOUR LIFE!



HOW COULD I BE SO BLIND...! SHE TOOK ON FOOT NINJAS! AT SUCH A YOUNG AGE! HEHEHE... YA REALLY MADE YER DAD PROUD, SHADOW... NEXT TIME, TRY NOT TO GET BEATEN UP 'KAY? NOW, TAKE A BACKSEAT AND LET US VETERANS HAVE OUR SHARE OF THE ACTION...

...'CUZ WE'RE GONNA TEACH THOSE SCUMBAGS A LESSON AND BRING YA BACK YOUR FRIEND AND MIKEY IN ONE PIECE!

OH, DEAR DO NOT CONDONE VIOLENCE, CASEY.

W. WOW... THANKS DAD TH... THAT MEANS A LOT TO ME...

ALRIGHT, LET'S DO IT!

NOW, TELL US WHERE THOSE FOOT NINJAS ARE!

IT WAS...
...A...
...PORT...
HUM...

WITH...
...FACTORIES
AROUND IT...
AND ERRR...

R..DON'T REMEMBER
MUCH... (COUGH)
(COUGH) ..TOO
DISTRACTED BY ANGER...

THEN... (COUGH)
..I..TOO EXHAUSTED..
(COUGH) T..TO OPEN
EYES... (COUGH)

DON'T DIE!

SHADOW, I'M
NOT SO PROUD
OF YOU AFTER
ALL...

OUR ONLY
LEAD...

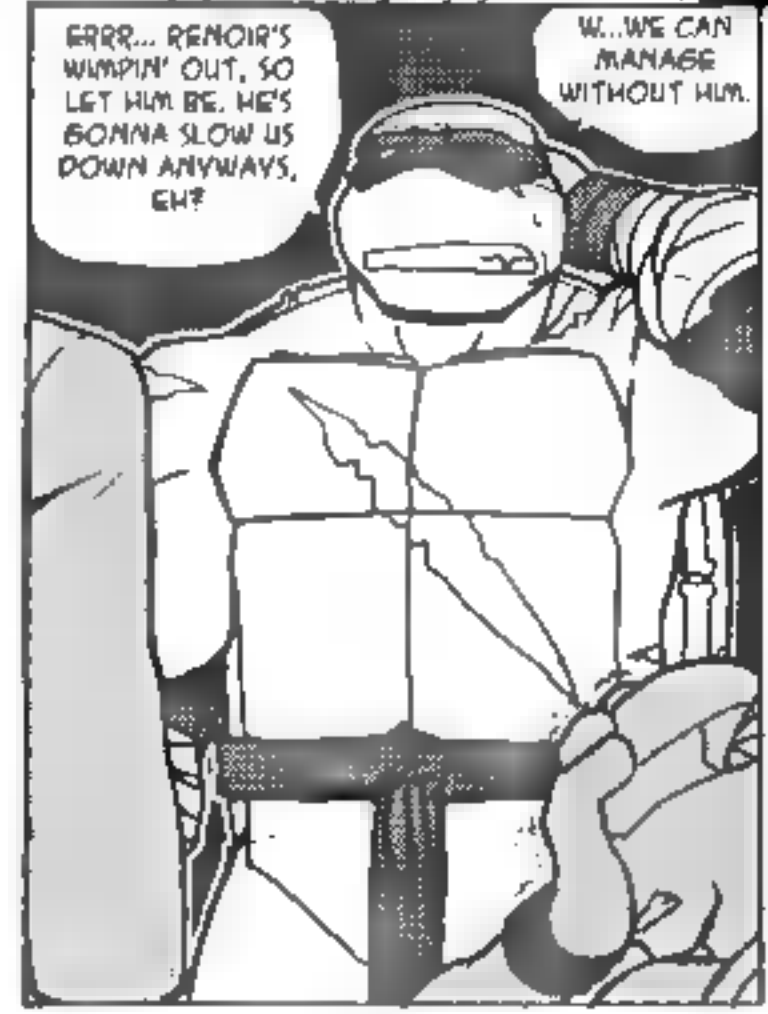
WAIT! SHE GOT
CARRIED HERE
BY...

CARRIED... SO HE
MUST KNOW WHERE
THEY WERE...

HMM...




N... NO!!
NO!!
I DON'T
WANNA DIE!!



ERRR... RENOIR'S
WIMPIN' OUT, SO
LET HIM BE. HE'S
GONNA SLOW US
DOWN ANYWAYS,
EH?

W...WE CAN
MANAGE
WITHOUT HIM.



NO, WE CAN'T. TIME IS
RUNNING OUT.
HE'S OUR ONLY
LEAD, SO HE'S
COMING WITH US.

DOMINE!
GIVE HIM
A DAMN
BREAK!
CAN'TCHA
SEE HE'S
HAD
ENOUGH
OF IT
ALREADY?

I SEE. SO RENOIR SHOULD BE ALLOWED TO SIT THIS ONE OUT JUST BECAUSE HE'S "HAD ENOUGH OF IT"?

LIVES ARE AT STAKE, YET YOU'RE NOT WILLING TO ASK HIM TO PUSH HIS LIMITS A LITTLE BIT?

YOU PERSECUTED MIKEY FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS, AND WHY? JUST BECAUSE YOU WANTED HIM TO SHARE YOUR STATE OF MIND AND SUFFER WITH YOU. NO LIVES AT STAKE HERE.

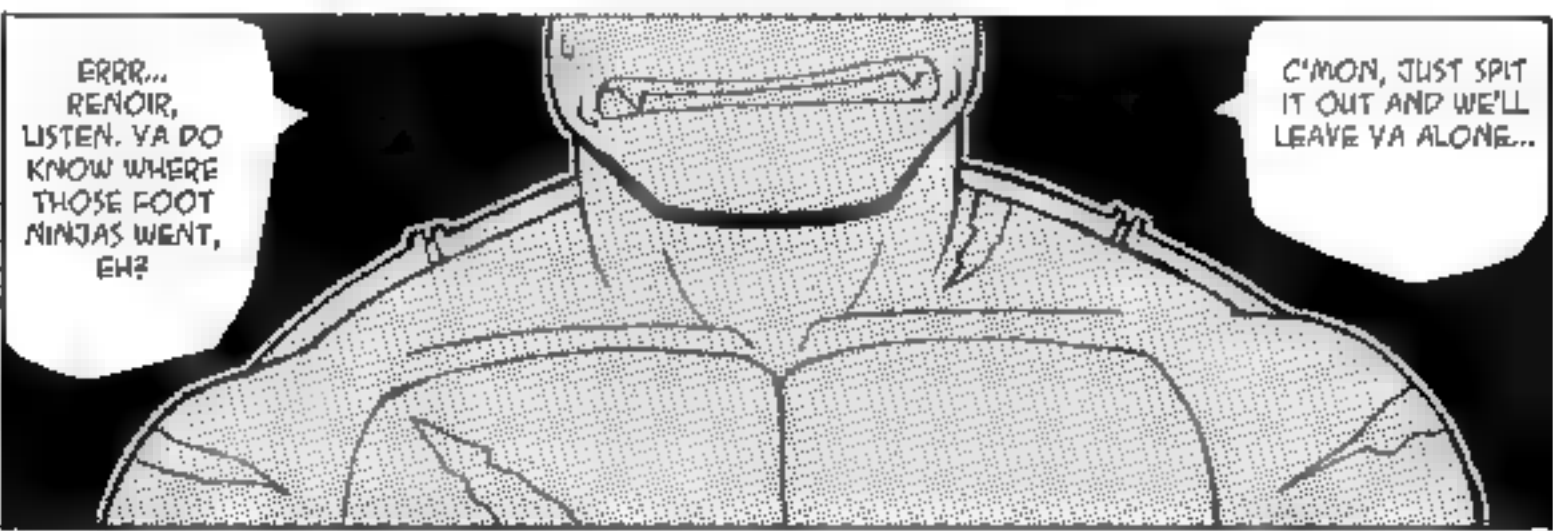
I JUST LOVE HOW YOU ACT SO AMBIGUOUSLY ALL THE TIME, RAPHAEL.

MIKEY'S AFRAID OF PAIN AND DEATH. SO IS RENOIR. YET YOUR BROTHER'S GONE TO FACE HIS FEARS ON HIS OWN... YOUR 17 YEARS OF "HARD WORK" HAVE FINALLY PAID UP, EH?

OH, AND RENOIR? NAH, HE'S EXCUSED BECAUSE YOU WANT IT... EVEN IF HE'S NEEDED NOW.

...TO YOUR OWN BROTHER, RAPHAEL?

TSK TSK. NOW ISN'T THIS SITUATION INFINITELY UNFAIR...




ERRR...
RENOIR,
LISTEN. YA DO
KNOW WHERE
THOSE FOOT
NINJAS WENT,
EH?

C'MON, JUST SPIT
IT OUT AND WE'LL
LEAVE YA ALONE...



A PORT...
AN OLD
FACTORY...

THAT'S ALL
I KNOW...



WELL, THIS WON'T DO...
WE NEED YOU TO
PHYSICALLY COME WITH
US. FROM THE ROOFTOPS,
YOU HAD A PERFECT VIEW
OF YOUR SURROUNDINGS.
IN ADDITION, YOU DID
CARRY SHADOW YOURSELF
FROM THAT FACTORY TO
HERE, SO YOUR VISUAL
MEMORY IS PROBABLY
GOOD ENOUGH FOR US.

SHADOW'S DOWN, SO
THAT LEAVES ONLY YOU,
RENOIR. THINK ABOUT
THE GIRL THAT THEY ARE
HOLDING HOSTAGE. IF
YOU DON'T COMPLY
WITH US, WE WON'T BE
ABLE TO DO ANYTHING...
AND SHE'S A GONER.



I'M TIRED,
OKAY? I'M
TIRED OF
BEING
FORCED TO
PRETEND TO
BE WHAT
I'M NOT
AND
SUFFERING
FROM IT!

MY FRIEND
DAVIANNA'S IN
DANGER BECAUSE
OF THAT
"MIKEY"! HE'S
YOUR BROTHER,
SO TAKE
RESPONSIBILITY
AND STRAIGHTEN
THINGS OUT
YOURSELVES!
DON'T LUMP ME
WITH YOU
NINJAS!




SCREW YOU, YA LI!
SHIT! I WANTED 'CHA
TO STAY, BUT IT AIN'T
GONNA HAPPEN,
CAPICHE?



YOU KNOW, I
FEEL TERRIBLE
FOR AUGUSTUS...
OR RENOI AS
RAPH CALLS HIM.


YAH, I FEEL THE
SAME TOO, BUT
LET'S TRUST RAPH
ON THIS ONE.






LOOK, IF YOU'RE
GONNA THROW
AWAY YOUR NINJA
IDENTITY, JUST
DO IT.

I DON'T CARE
ANYMORE. IT'S
NOT LIKE IT'S
GONNA CHANGE
ANYTHIN'!




HOWEVER, KNOW
THIS... EVERYTIME YA
GIVE SOMEONE YOUR
WORD, THAT'S WHEN
YA SHOW YOUR TRUE
SELF



ONLY ONCE YA GAVE ME
YOUR WORD, KID NOT AS A
NINJA TURTLE OR AS
RENOIR, BUT JUST AS A
PERSON WHO DIDN'T WANNA
GIVE UP ON ME, EVEN IF I
AIN'T WORTH IT... THAT'S
WHAT I SAW IN YOU.




NO ONE'S A
NOBODY IN
THIS WORLD...
WE ALL HAVE
AN IDENTITY...
AND IF THERE
WAS ONE FOR
YA THAT WE'D
PROBABLY
BOTH AGREE
ON...



IT'S GOTTA
■ THAT
ONE.







THE NINJA
TURTLES
HERE.



HE'S ALONE,
AS PLANNED.



GOOD. SEND HIM A
"WELCOMING COMMITTEE"
TO KEEP HIM BUSY WHILE
WE MAKE SOME
PREPARATIONS HERE.



YOU KNOW, YOUR
BITCHY FRIEND HIT
ME REAL HARD IN
THE BALLS.

NOW THAT SHE'S
DEAD... YOU'RE
GONNA PAY FOR
WHAT SHE DID.

DON'T...DON'T TOUCH ME!!



WHERE
SHOULD I
START...

IDIOT!



UUURRHHH!

DON'T LOWER
YOURSELF TO THE
LEVEL OF THOSE
PUNY PURPLE
DRAGONS! WE ONLY
KILL, WE DON'T
DISHONOR AND
RAPE WOMEN!



SHHH!! MY
JAW!!!

LOWEST
OF THE
LOW...



THAT'S WHAT
YOU ARE...

...NO MATTER
WHAT YOU SAY...

HOW CAN YOU SEE MORE DIGNITY IN "KILLING" THAN "RAPING"?

WHO SAID ANYTHING ABOUT DIGNITY?

BOTH ACTS ARE JUST AS IMMORAL AND UNFORGIVABLE!!

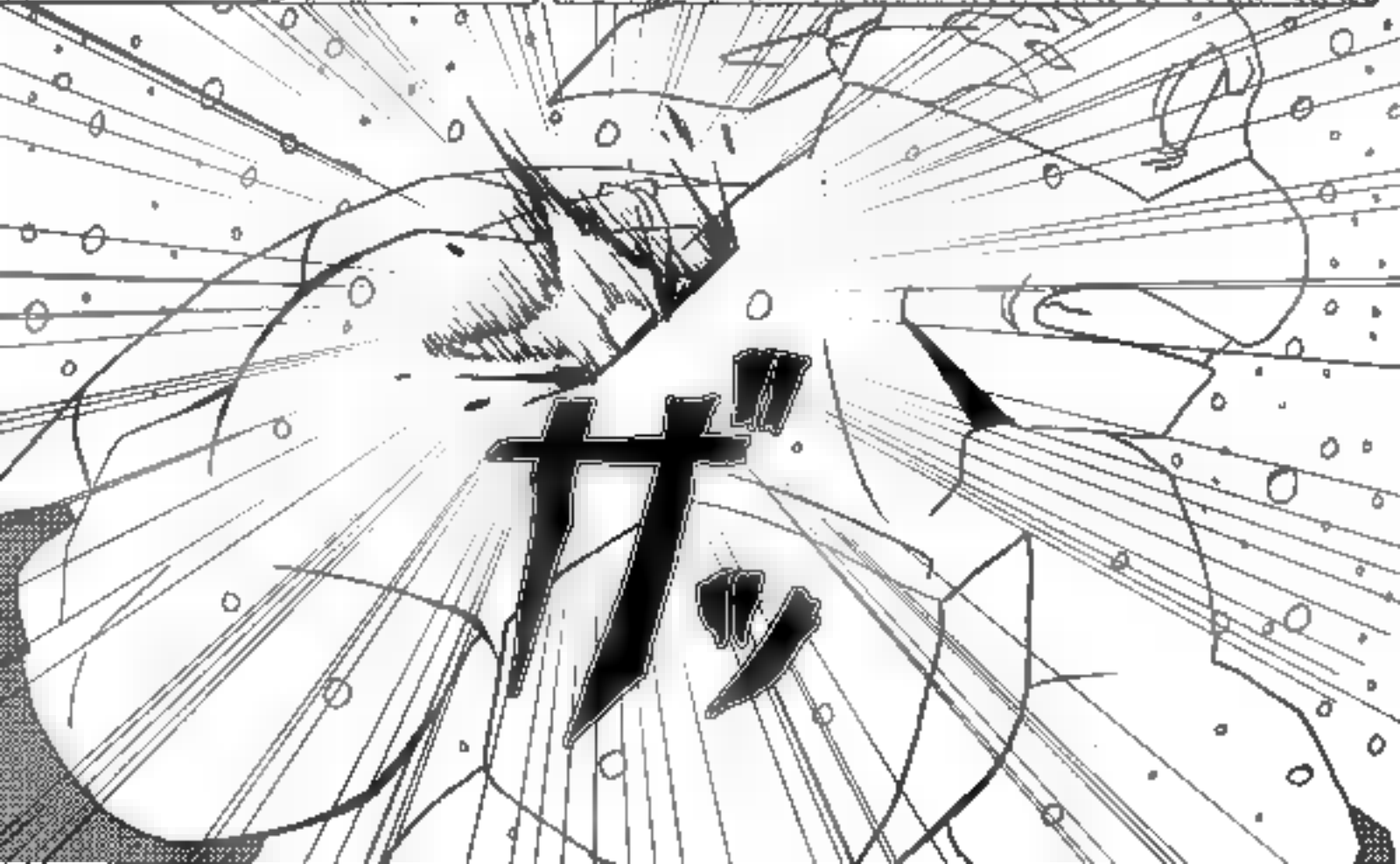
I WAS SIMPLY IMPLYING THAT THE PURPLE DRAGONS ARE INFERIOR BECAUSE THEY ACT ACCORDING TO THEIR INDIVIDUAL NEEDS AND IMPULSES. THEY LACK AMBITION.

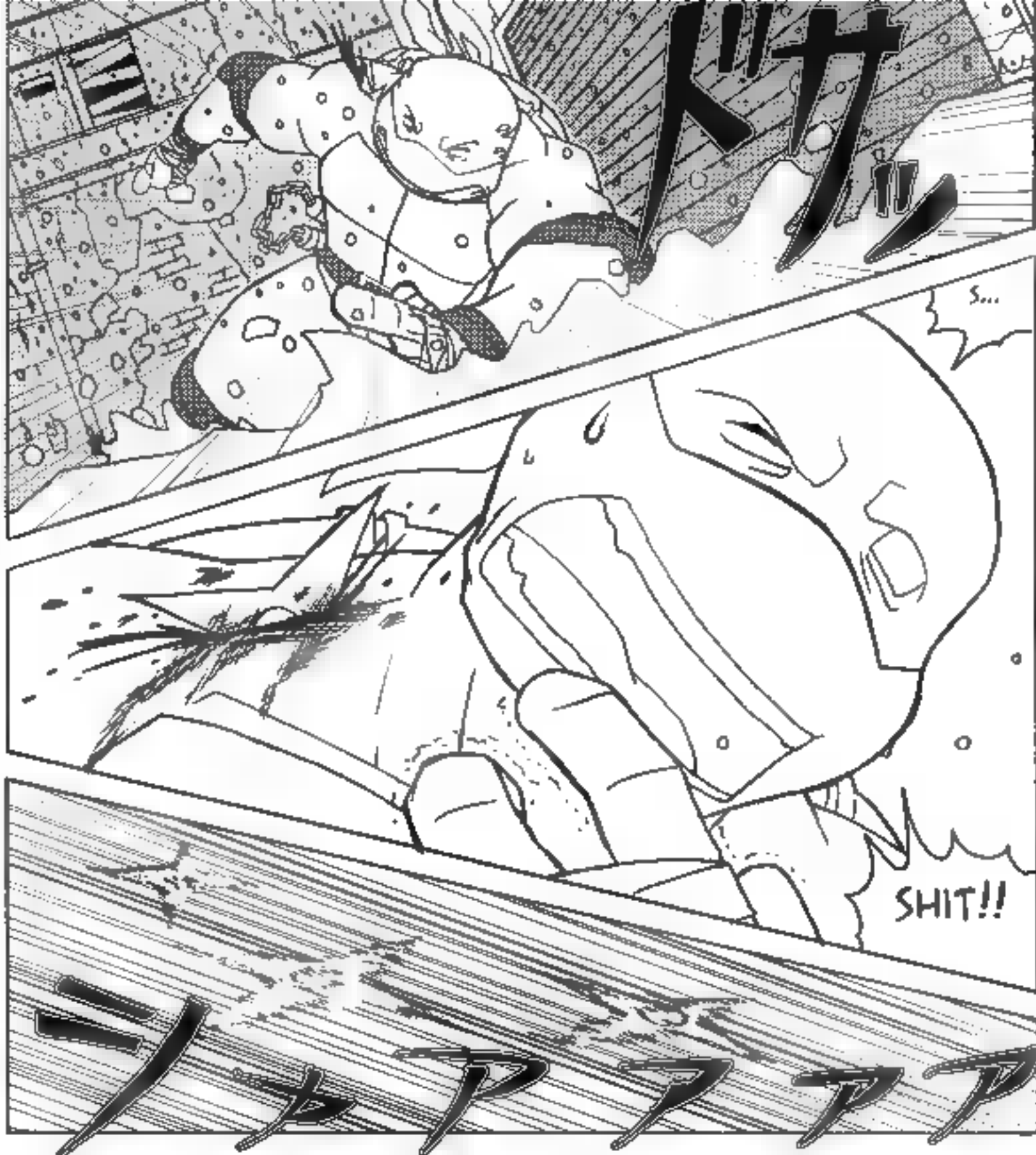
UNLIKE THEM, WE FOOT PUEJAS ACT AS A WHOLE. WE ONLY FOCUS ON COMMON OBJECTIVES SO THAT EVERYTHING WE DO IS PROFITABLE TO OUR INDEPENDANT CLAN. THIS... WE ARE SUPERIOR TO THOSE WORTHLESS GANGSTERS

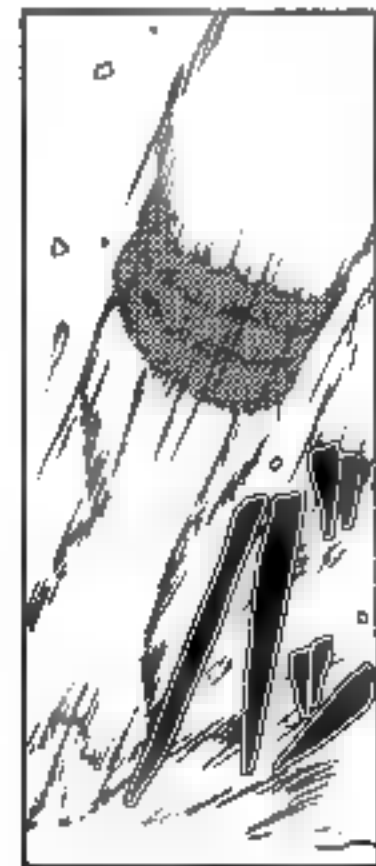
FOR EXAMPLE, YOUR FRIEND'S USEFULNESS WAS LR.. SO WE COULD ALLOW OURSELVES TO DISPOSE OF HER TO GET RID OF EXCESS SABBAGE...

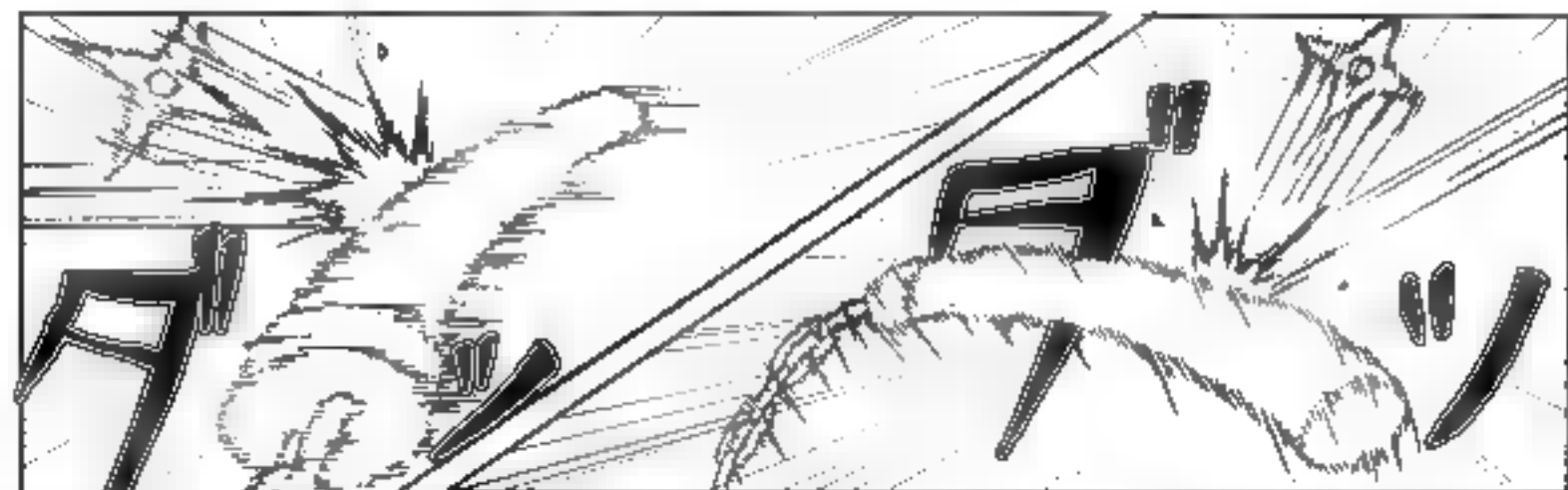
...SPEAKING OF WHICH, IT'S ALMOST TIME FOR YOU TO FULFILL YOUR PURPOSE... THAT'S WHY I WANTED YOU TO REMAIN ALIVE AND HEALTHY

WE NEED SOME INCENTIVE FOR OUR GUEST ONCE HE GETS HERE... A SCREAMING GIRL WITH A BLADE AT HER THROAT WOULD BE APPROPRIATE, DON'T YOU THINK?

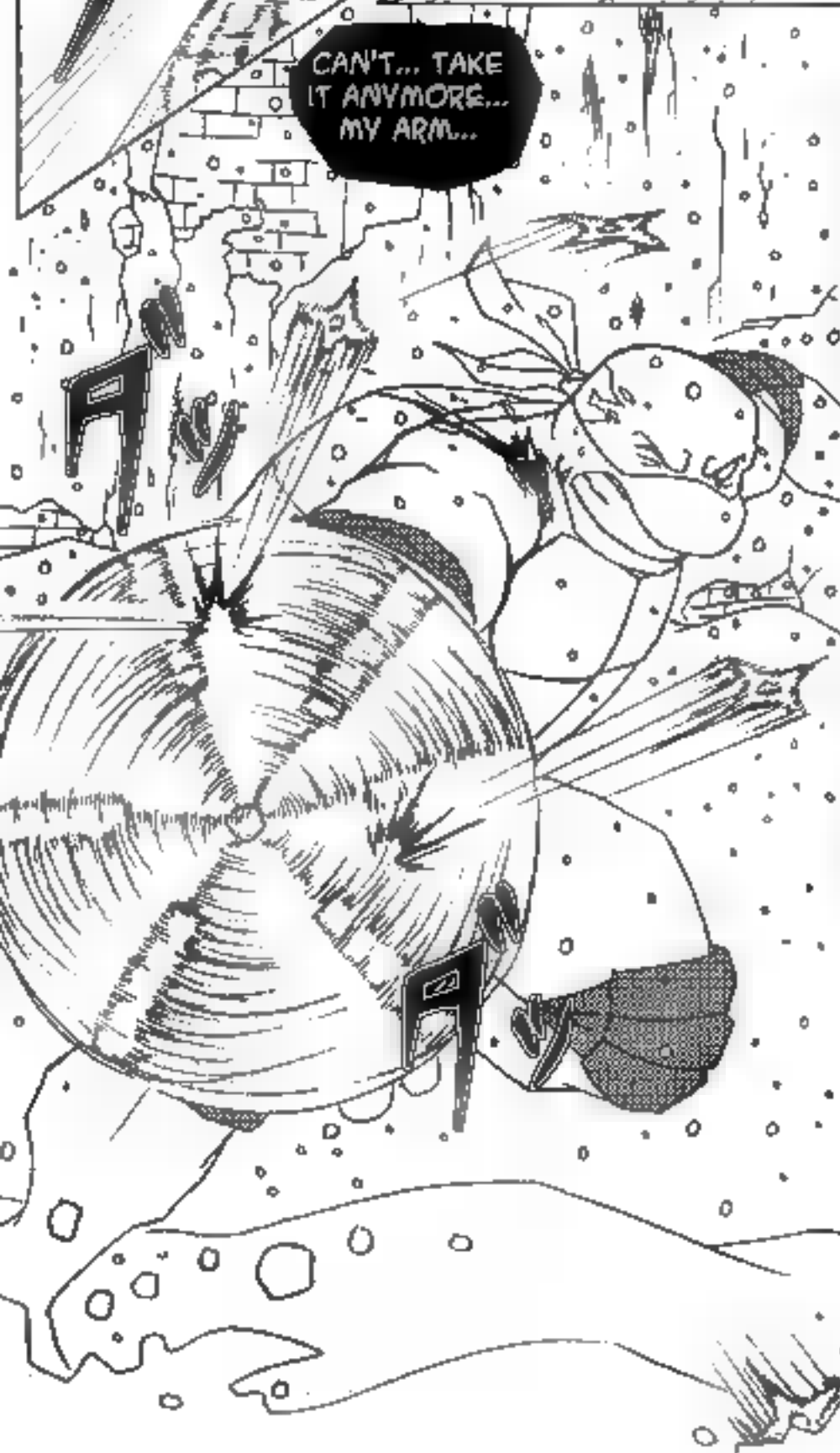








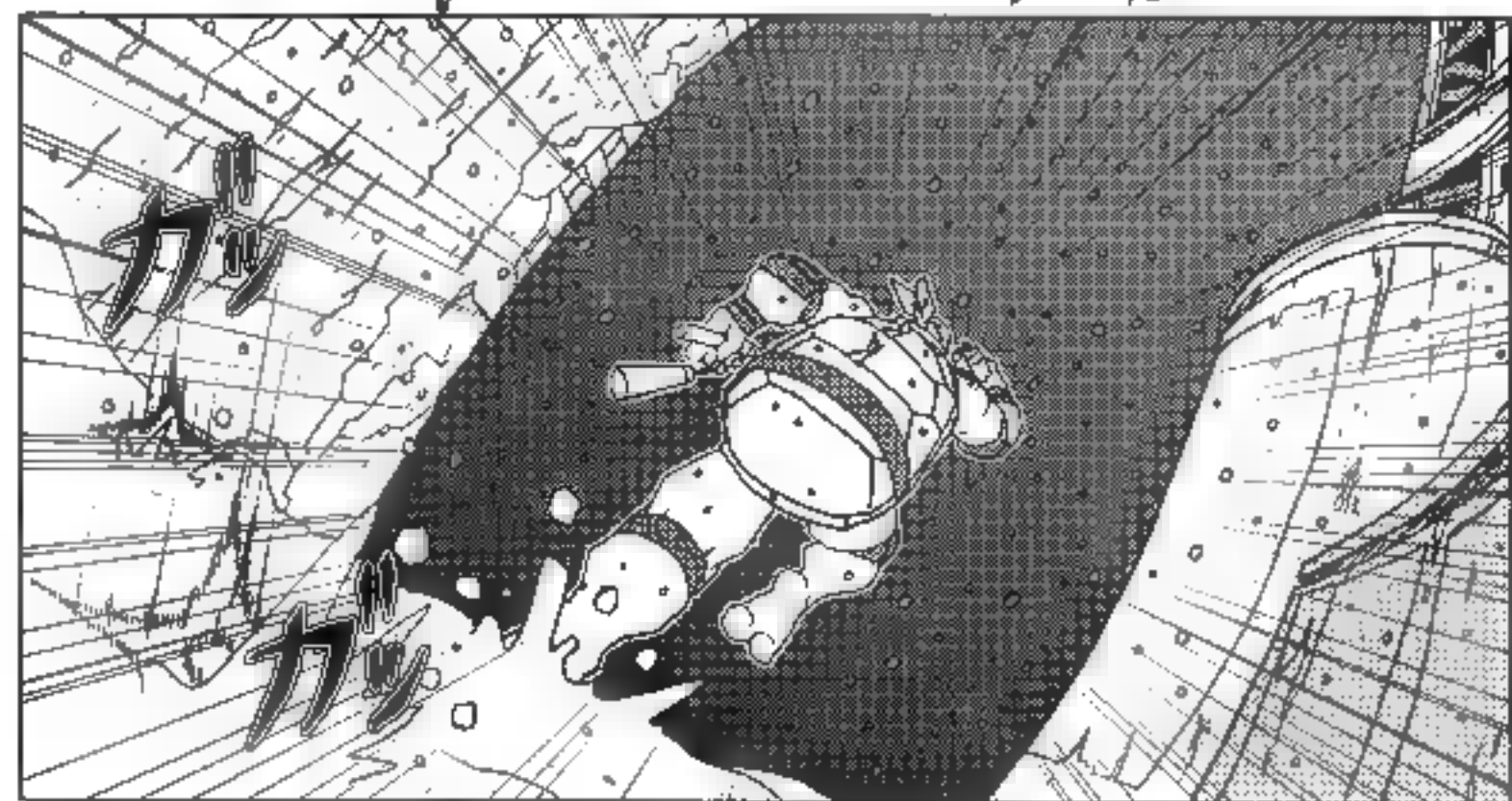
CAN'T... TAKE
IT ANYMORE...
MY ARM...



IT... IT
HURTS...!

I HAVE TO DO
SOMETHING...!







DONNIE! I FOUND MY SHELL CELL!

GOOD, PASS IT TO CASEY!



THANKS, HON.

CATCH!

LIKE I SAID, WE'LL SPLIT INTO TWO GROUPS TEMPORARILY.



CASEY, HAVE RENOIR GUIDE YOU TO WHERE HE LAST SAW THE FOOT NINJAS AND SCOUT YOUR SURROUNDINGS! THAT'S OUR ONLY LEAD, BUT CHANCES ARE THEY HAVEN'T MOVED FAR FROM THERE! JUST MAKE SURE YOU STAY WELL HIDDEN!



MEANWHILE, RAPH AND I WILL SO GRAB OUR WEAPONS IN OUR LAIR. WE'RE UP AGAINST FOOT NINJAS SO WE MUSTN'T TAKE ANY CHANCES! WITHOUT THEM, WE'RE AS GOOD AS DEAD...

THEN WE'RE GOING TO JOIN YOU GUYS USING OUR SHELL CELLS' RADARS AND RAPH'S MOTORCYCLE... OKAY?

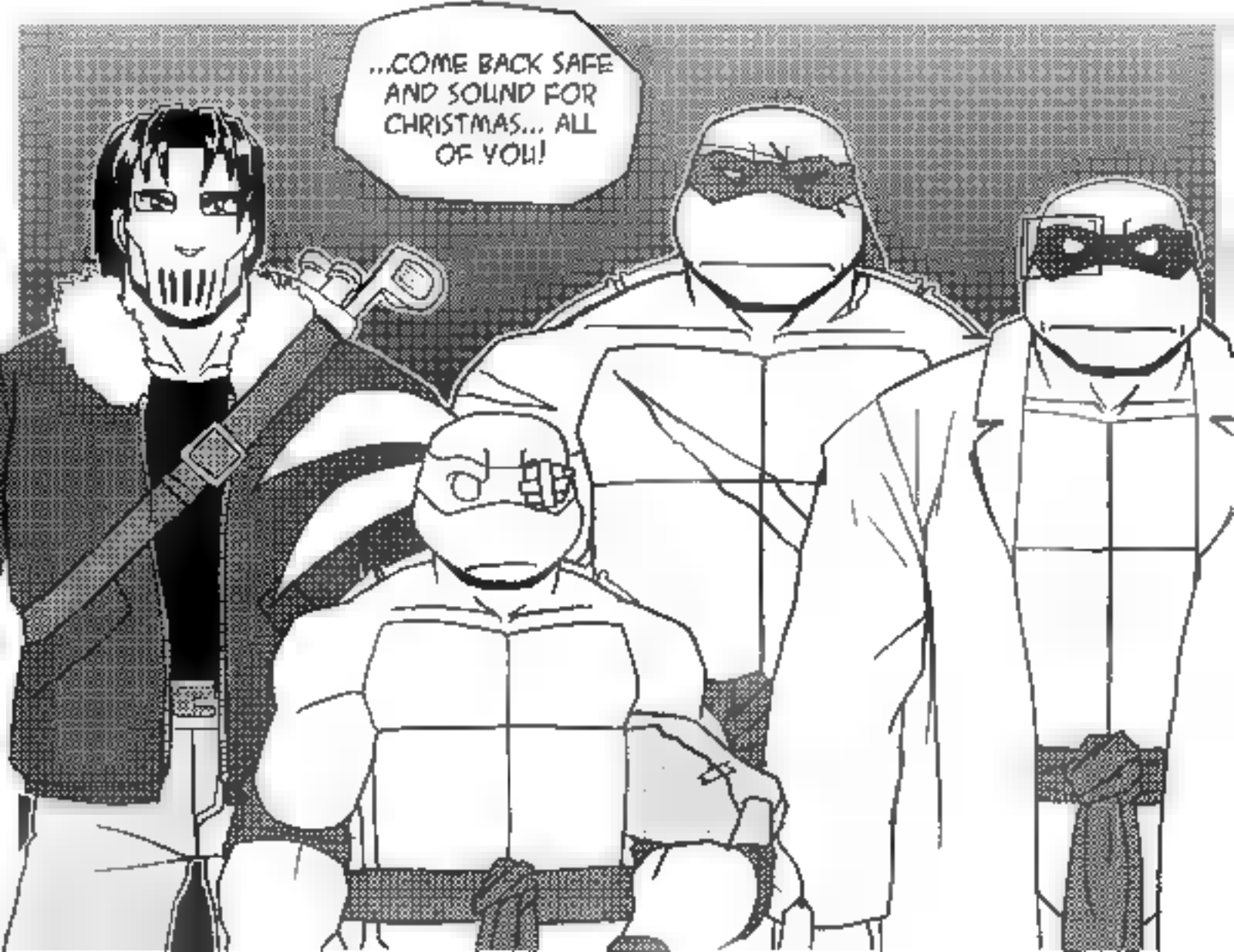
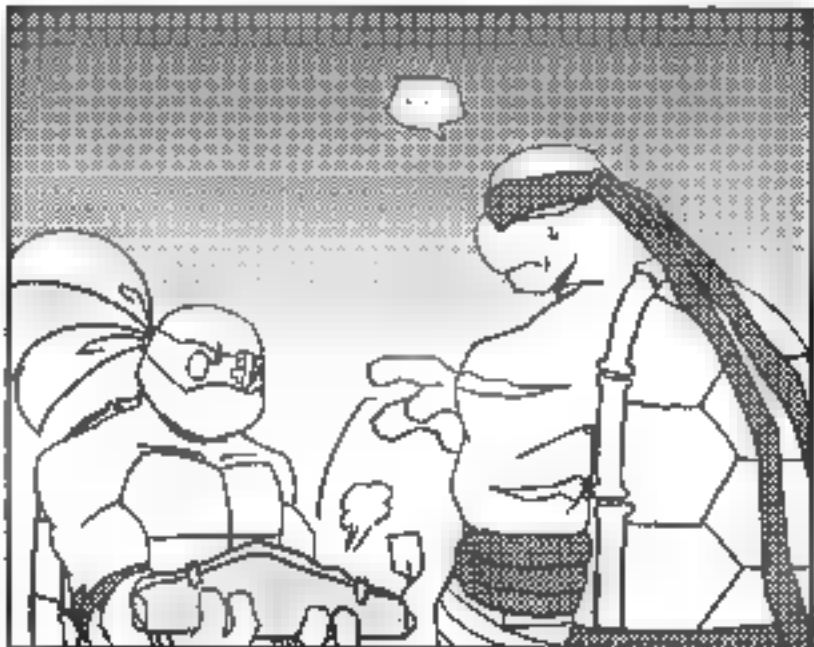


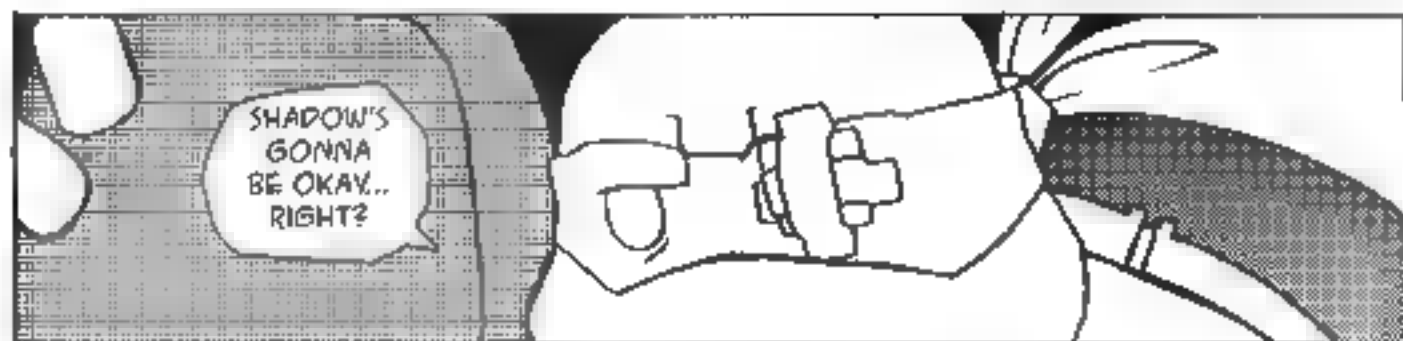
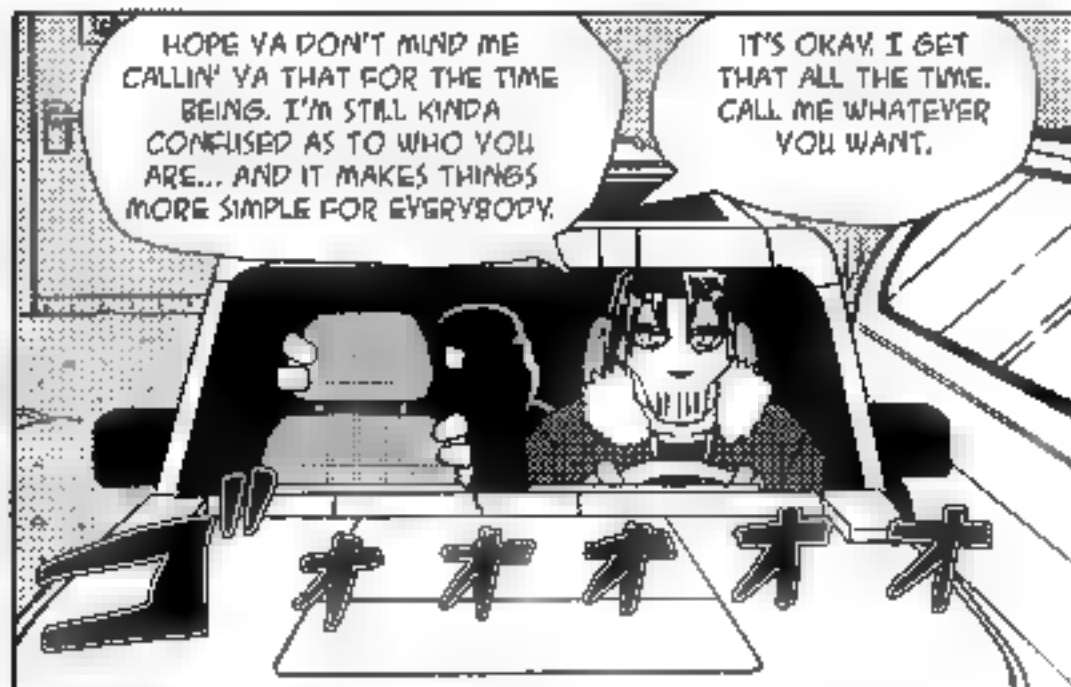
C'MON, ROOKIE! LET'S HIT THE ROAD!

Y... YES, MR. JONES!

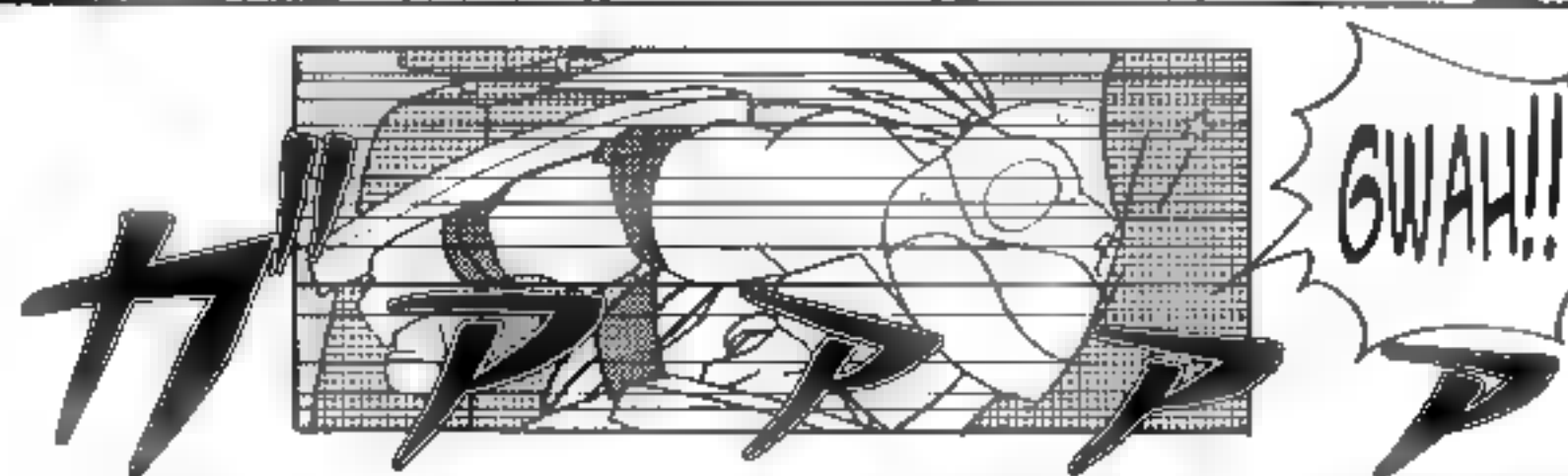
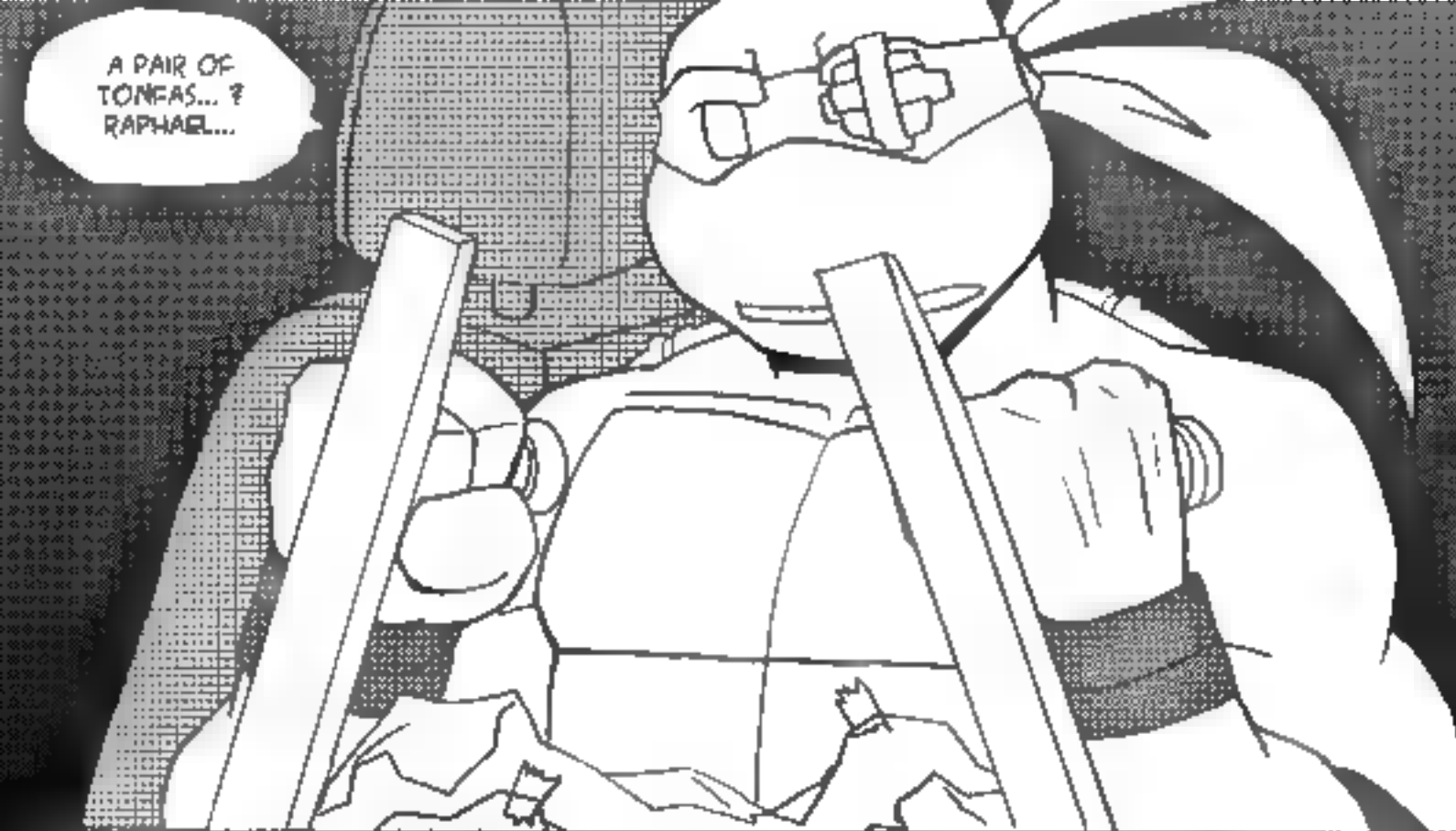


WAIT, RENOIR!



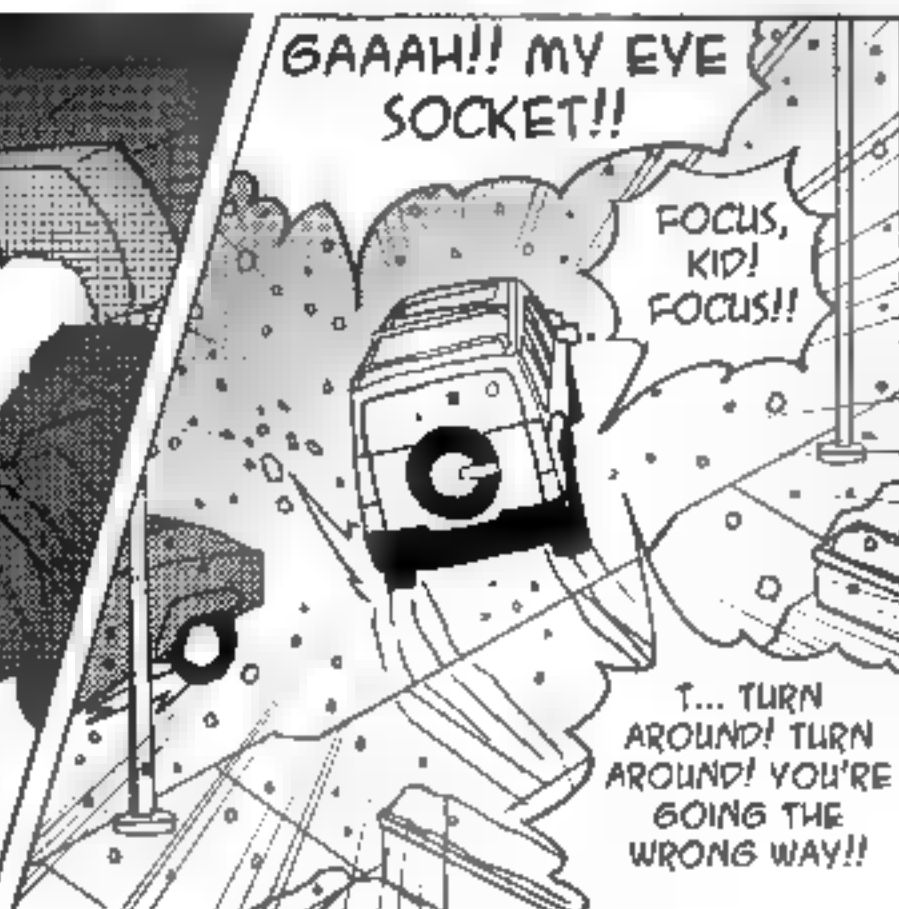


A PAIR OF
TONGUES... ?
RAPHAEL...



ENOUGH TALKIN'!
LET'S MAKE THOSE
SCUM PAY FOR WHAT
THEY DID TO
SHADOW!!

I'M COUNTIN' ON
YA, RENOIR! SHOW
ME THE WAY!!



GAAAH!! MY EYE
SOCKET!!

FOCUS,
KID!
FOCUS!!

T... TURN
AROUND! TURN
AROUND! YOU'RE
GOING THE
WRONG WAY!!

GRAB YOUR SAYS AND
MEET ME AT MY PLACE,
GOT IT?

SINCE WHEN DID YA CARE
SO MUCH FOR YOUR
FAMILY, DONNIE? WHY THE
SUDDEN CHANGE OF
HEART?

AWW...
C'MON,
MIKEY'S
MY BRO,
RIGHT?
I CARE
FOR
HIM...

HUMPH

YEAH, I LIKE IT WHEN
YOU'RE HONEST LIKE
THIS! YOU'RE FULL OF
GOOD INTENTIONS, AS
USUAL...

YOU KNOW ME
TOO WELL...

I KNOW YOU'RE
PUTTIN' UP THIS ACT
'CUZ THERE'S
SOMETHIN' IN FOR YA!

LUCKY FOR YA,
THINKIN' HURTS MY
HEAD RIGHT NOW.

UNDUST MY
MOTORCYCLE
IF YA WILL, MR.
NICE GUY.

OBVIOUSLY, THERE IS
SOMETHING IN
FOR ME, RAPH.
EVERYTHING HAS BEEN
PRECALCULATED.

HEHEHE...



WURGH!!

"NO
MATTER
HOW WELL PREPARED
YOU ARE, IF YOU ARE
ATTACKED BY AN INVISIBLE ENEMY,
YOUR CHANCES TO SURVIVE ARE VERY
SLIM, MICHELANGELO!"

RUNNING
AWAY JUST
MAKES IT
WORSE...

I MUST
HANDLE THIS...
LIKE A NINJA
WOULD

"YOU'RE A NINJA,
MICHELANGELO! ONE WITH
THE GIFT OF ABILITY! IF
ANYONE, YOU CAN EASILY
TURN THE TABLES IF YOU
WANTED TO!"

LEO!
WHAT
WOULD YOU
TELL ME?

"STEALTH, MY SON!
STEALTH! AS A NINJA,
YOU MUST BECOME ONE
WITH THE SHADOWS!
THEN YOU MIGHT BE
ABLE TO REIN THE
TURTLES."

"WHAT
DO YOU
MEAN
THE
DRAW
LINE?"

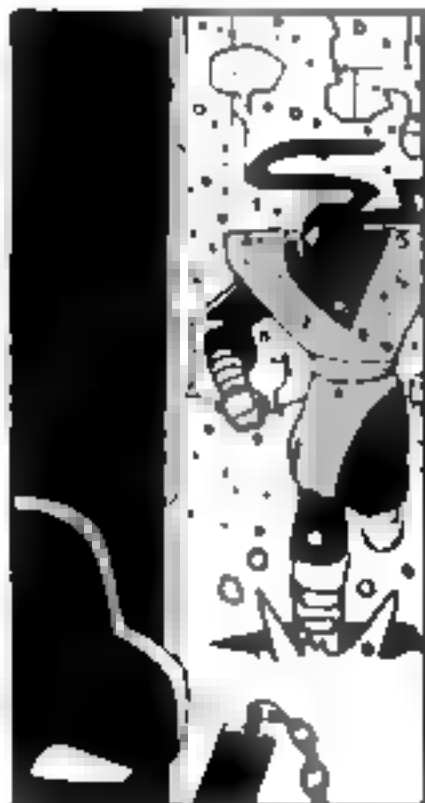
"YES,
IF YOU
PUT IT
THAT
WAY..."

"LEO!
SENSEI'S
ORDER!
SHOW ME
YOUR CAT
STREET!"

"YOU MEAN THAT
'CAT THING' THAT
LEO DOES TO FREAK
CASEY OUT?"

"E...
GGH?!"

"DUNKER AND
I THOUGHT WE
NINJA TURTLES
WERE
INVINCIBLE!"





MICHELANGELO
HAMATO. WE
KNOW YOU ARE
HERE

THEY
KNOW
THEY
KNOW
THEY

THANK YOU FOR
JOINING US
TONIGHT...

WHY ARE YOU
CONCEALING
YOURSELF? DO YOU
NOT WANT TO TALK
FACE-TO-FACE
WITH US?

HOW RUDE... AND
OUR LITTLE FRIEND
HERE WAS EXPECTING
YOU TOO...



NO!!
NO, PLEASE
DON'T
COME OUT!
RUN AWAY
WHILE YOU
STILL CAN!!


NOTHING GOOD
WILL COME OUT
OF IT! IT'LL
MAKE NO
DIFFERENCE!

THEY'LL
KILL ME
EITHER
WAY!!

JUST LIKE
THEY
KILLED
SHADOW!!

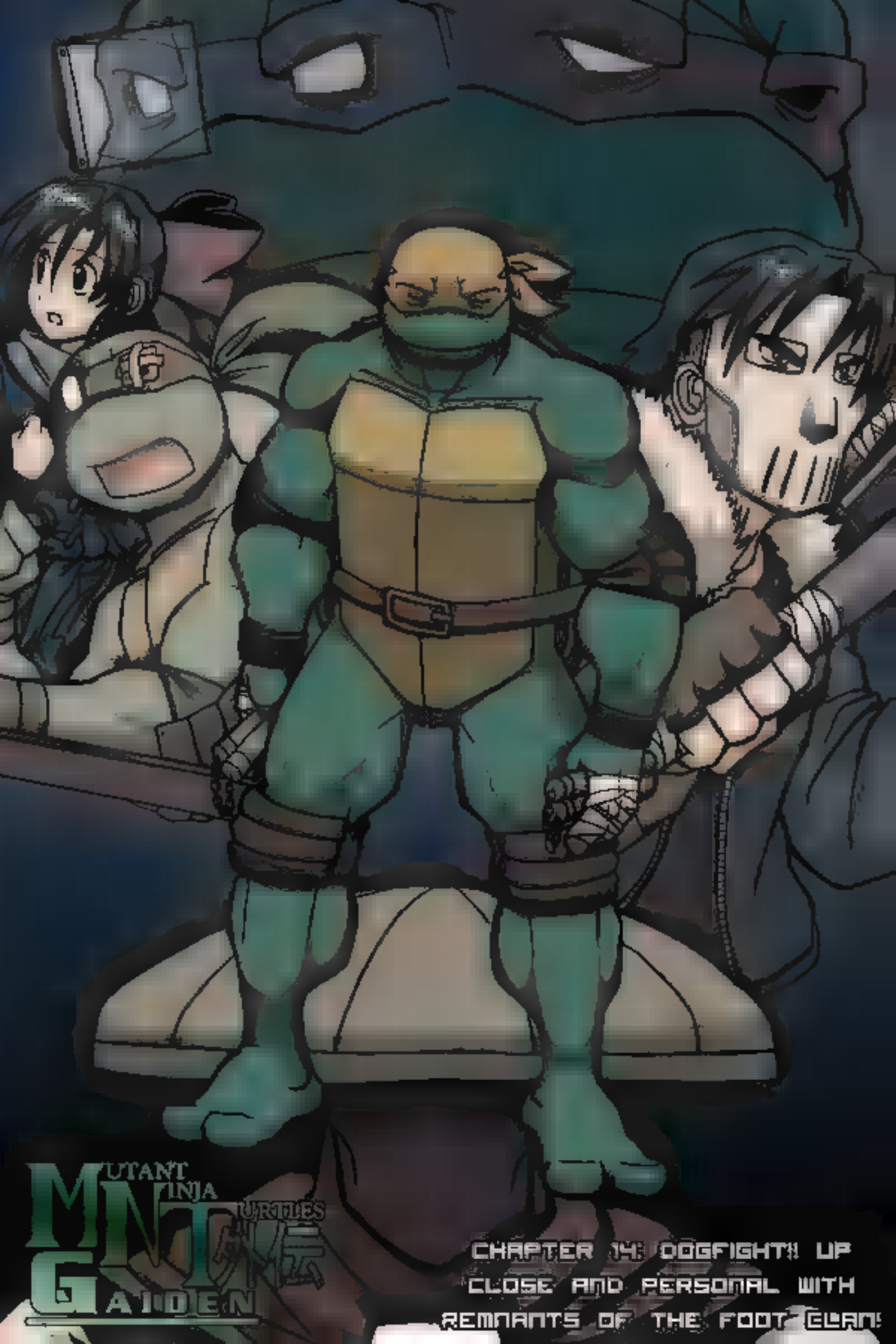
SHADOW
IS...

...DEAD!!



INDEED ONLY ONE
INNOCENT LIFE
REMAINING. YOU COWER
AWAY, SHE DIES HERE AND
NOW YOU SHOW US SHE
"MIGHT" LIVE.

THE QUESTION
IS WITH ONE
GONE, IS
THE OTHER ONE
STILL WORTH IT?



MUTANT
NINJA
TURTLES
MNT
G
A IDIEN

CHAPTER 14: DOGFIGHT! UP
CLOSE AND PERSONAL WITH
REMNANTS OF THE FOOT CLAN!

WHERE TO
NEXT,
DONNIE?

TURN LEFT ON
LAIRD STREET!

GOTCHA!

WE'RE GONNA HAVE TO
TAKE SHORTCUTS TO
AVOID ENCOUNTERING
HUMANS! THE LAST
THING WE NEED NOW IS
TO BE SLOWED DOWN!

STATIN' THE
OBVIOUS,
AREN'T 'CHA?

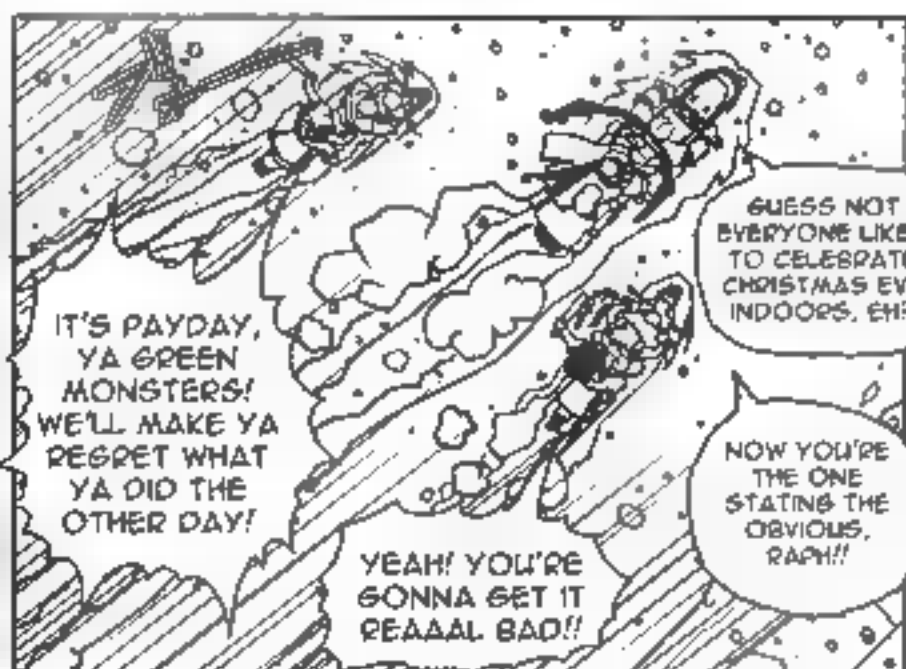
HUH?

THERE THEY ARE!!



YOU'RE DEAD
MEAT, FREAKS!

JUST OUR
LUCK...!
PURPLE
DRAGONS!



IT'S PAYDAY,
YA GREEN
MONSTERS!
WE'LL MAKE YA
REGRET WHAT
YA DID THE
OTHER DAY!

YEAH! YOU'RE
GONNA GET IT
REAAAL BAD!!

GUESS NOT
EVERYONE LIKES
TO CELEBRATE
CHRISTMAS EVE
INDOORS, EHP?

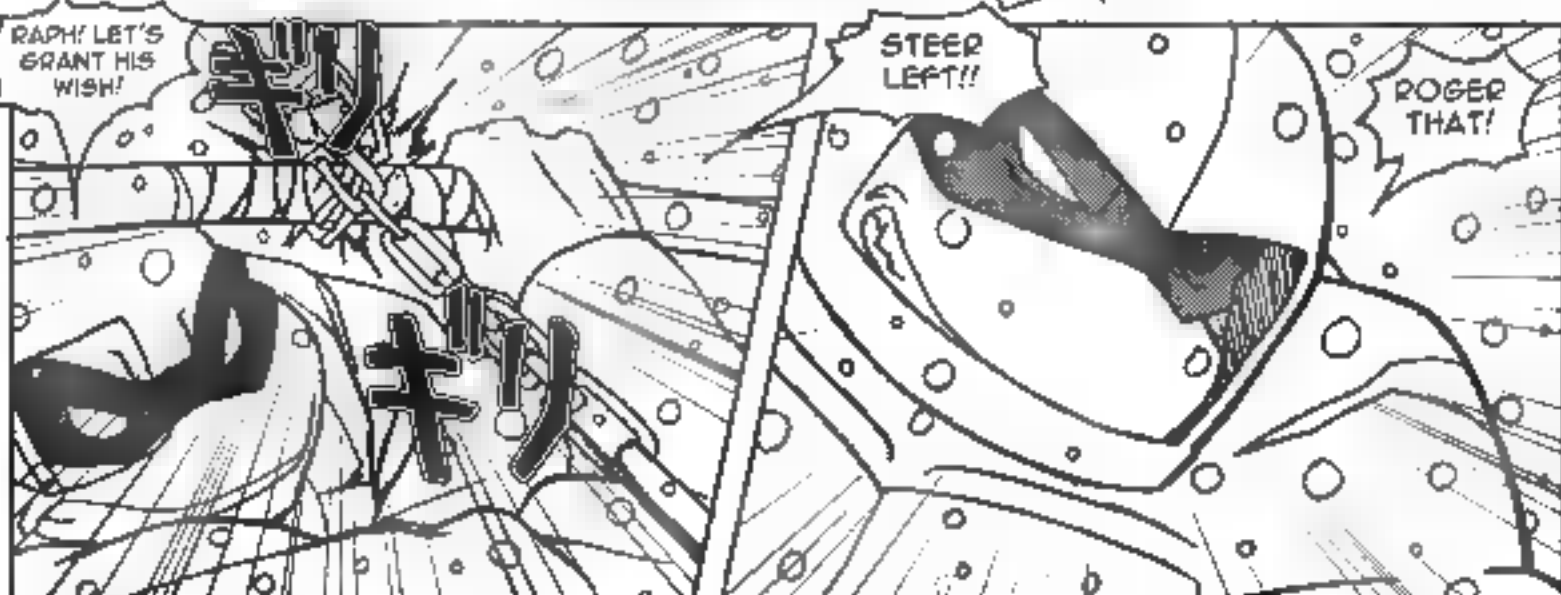
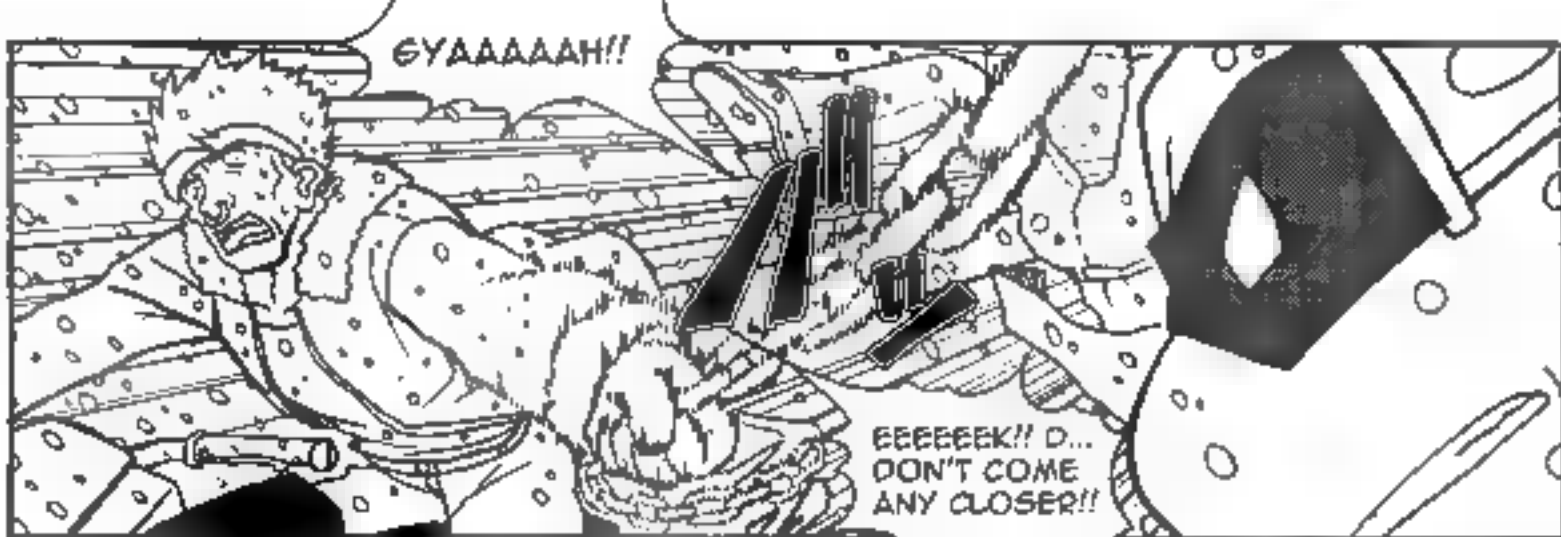
NOW YOU'RE
THE ONE
STATING THE
OBVIOUS,
RAPH!!



I'LL TAKE CARE OF
THEM! RAPH, STEER
RIGHT A LITTLE BIT!

YOU? FIGHT?
HEH, I'D LIKE TO
SEE THAT!





THAT TACKLE
WAS...

...PATHETIC.

ABSOLUTELY NO
FINESSE,
WHATSOEVER. AS
USUAL.

YA BORE ME TO
TEARS! STOP WASTIN'
MY TIME, LOSERS!

AAH!

カッ

GWAAH!

YO... TO TELL YOU THE
TRUTH, I THINK THAT
WITH A NAME AS CORNY
AS "PURPLE DRAGONS"
WE START OFF AS
LOSERS ANYWAYS.

SHUT UP!!

OOF!

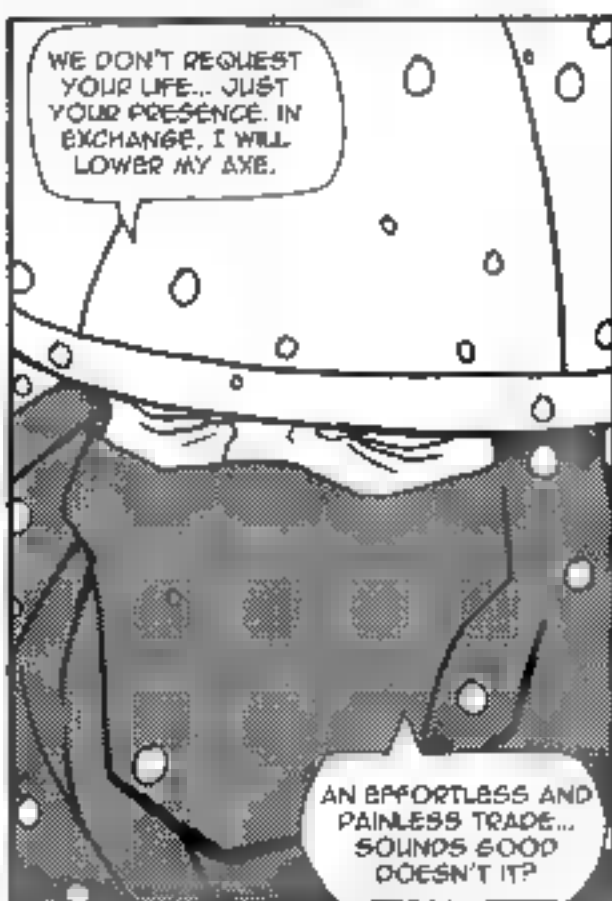


LET'S MAKE THIS BRIEF, TURTLE.



HMPF!!

HMPF!

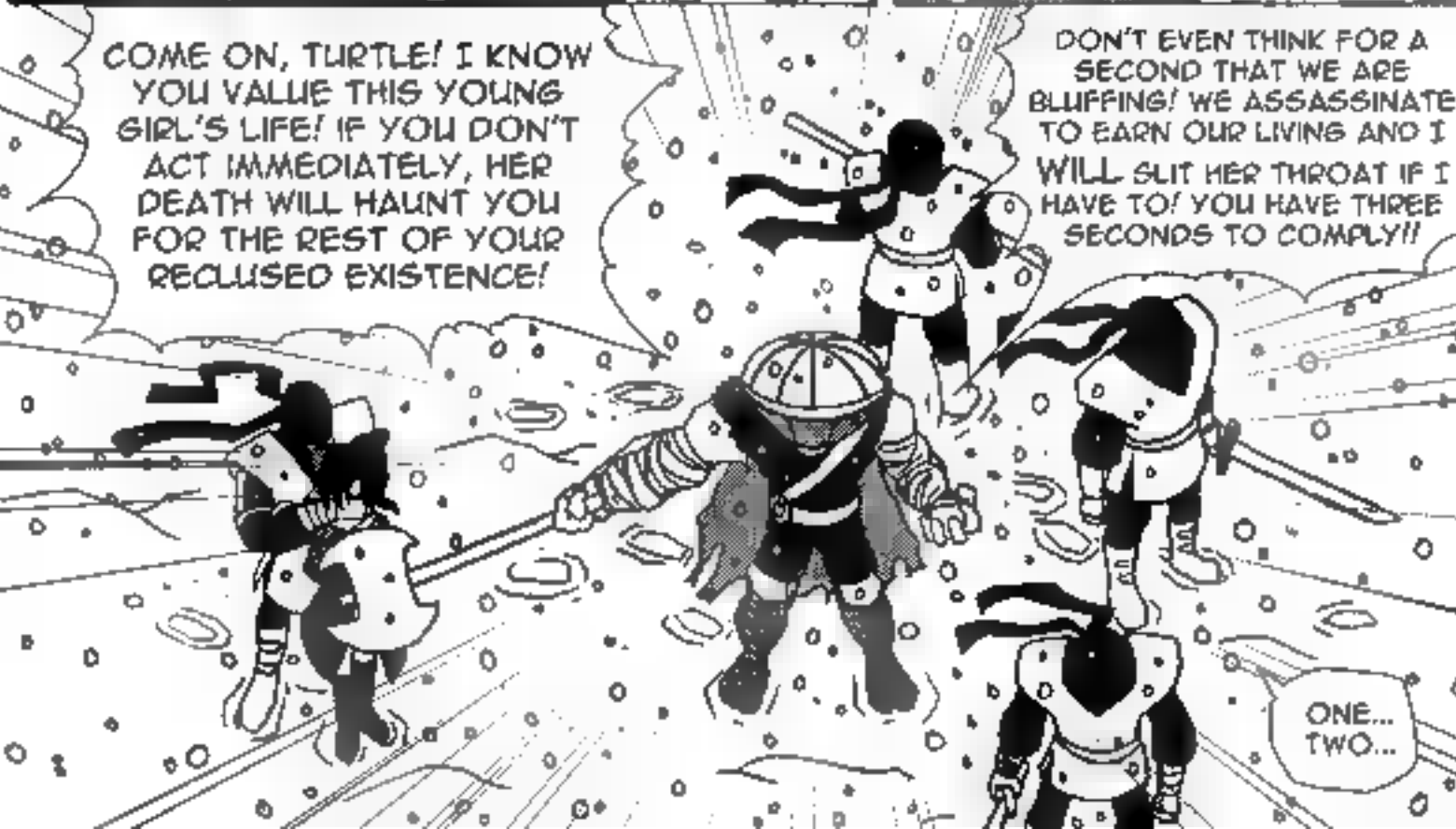


WE DON'T REQUEST YOUR LIFE... JUST YOUR PRESENCE. IN EXCHANGE, I WILL LOWER MY AXE.

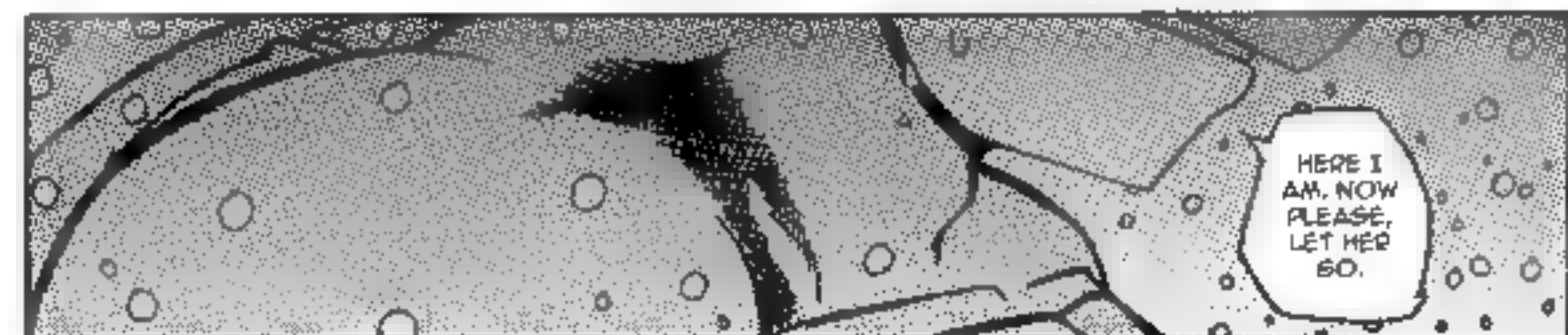
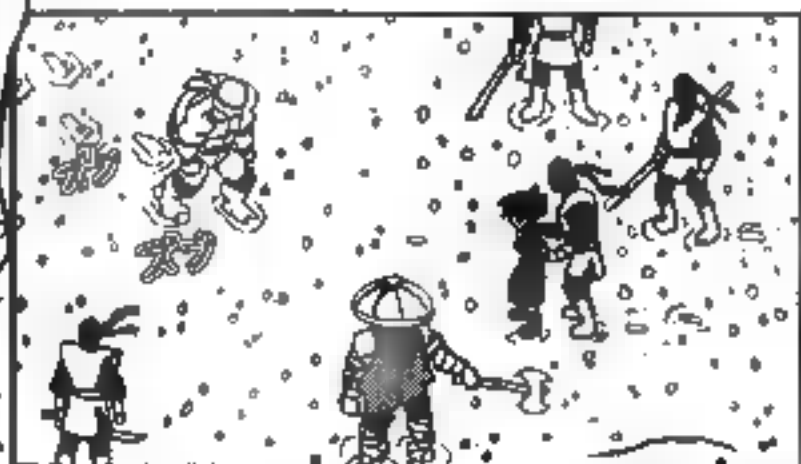
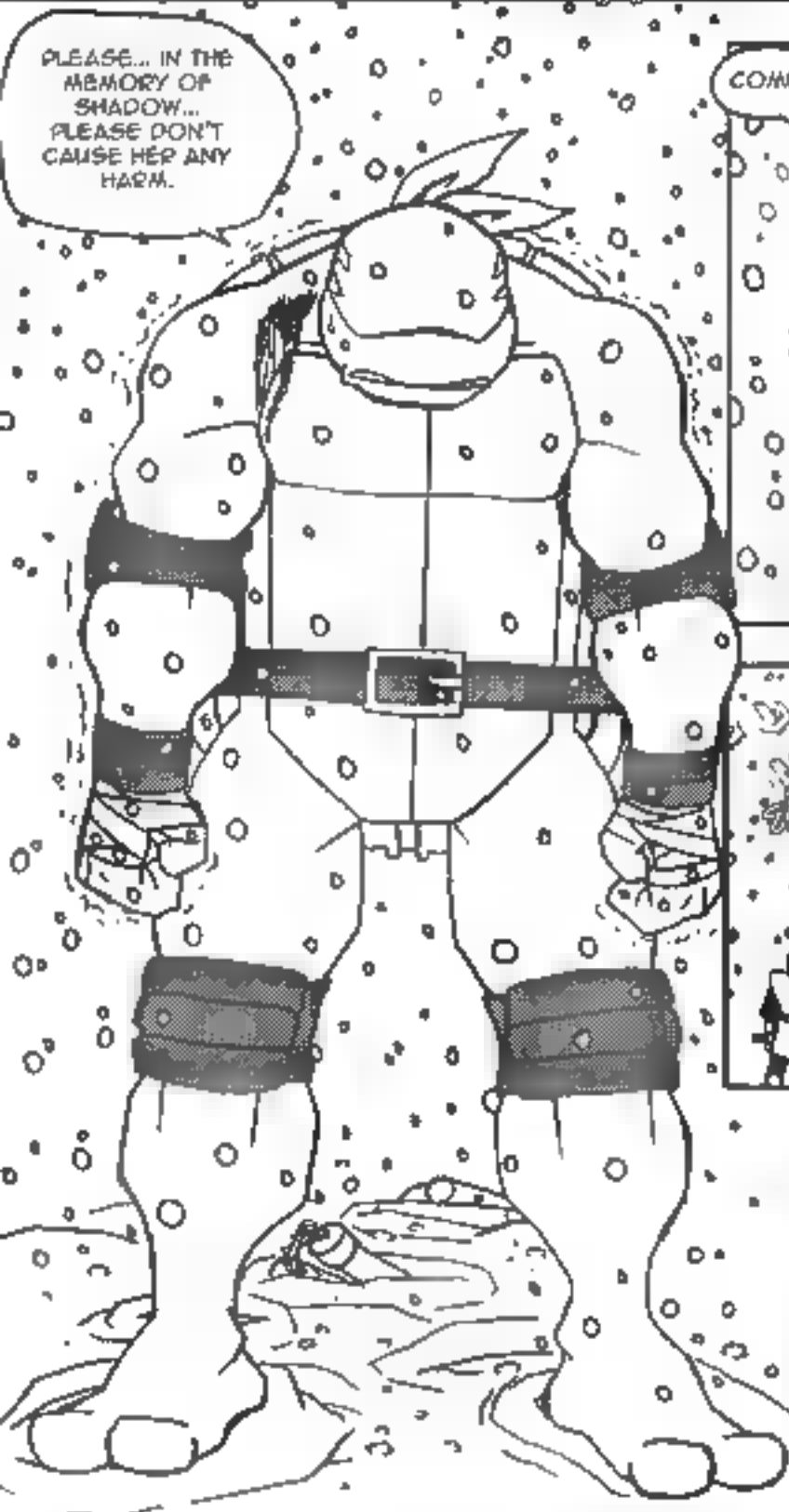
AN EFFORTLESS AND PAINLESS TRADE... SOUNDS GOOD DOESN'T IT?

COME ON, TURTLE! I KNOW YOU VALUE THIS YOUNG GIRL'S LIFE! IF YOU DON'T ACT IMMEDIATELY, HER DEATH WILL HAUNT YOU FOR THE REST OF YOUR RECLUSED EXISTENCE!

DON'T EVEN THINK FOR A SECOND THAT WE ARE BLUFFING! WE ASSASSINATE TO EARN OUR LIVING AND I WILL SLIT HER THROAT IF I HAVE TO! YOU HAVE THREE SECONDS TO COMPLY!!



ONE... TWO...

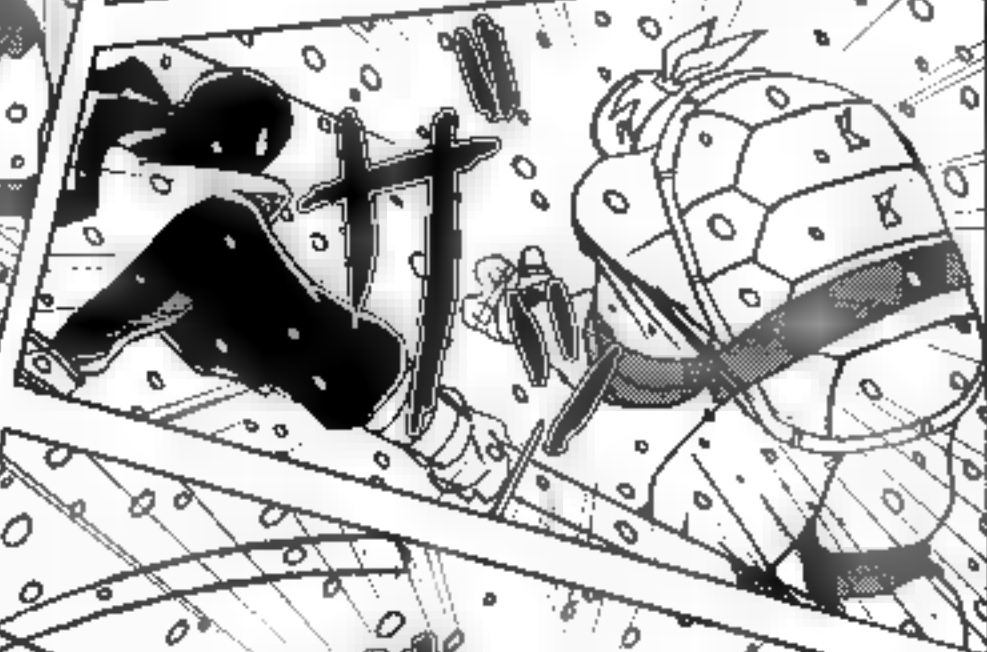
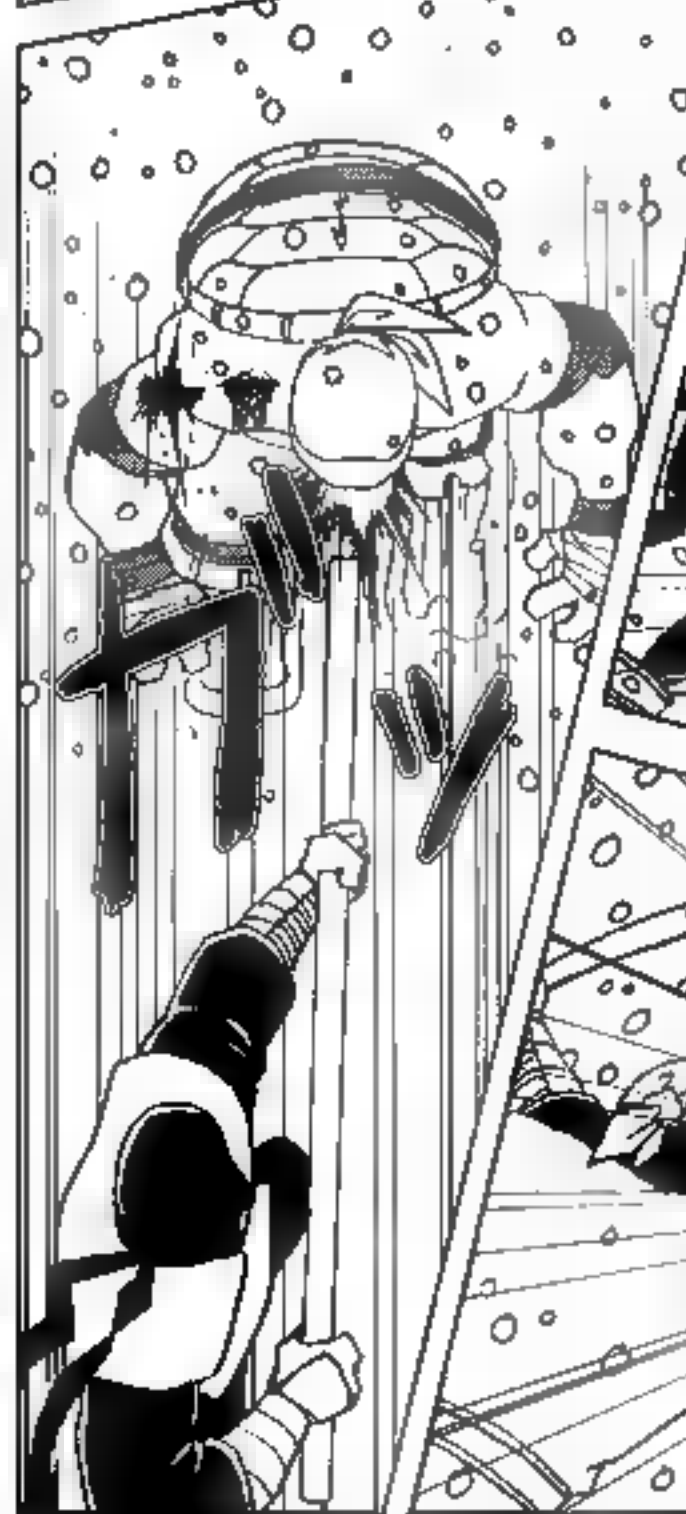
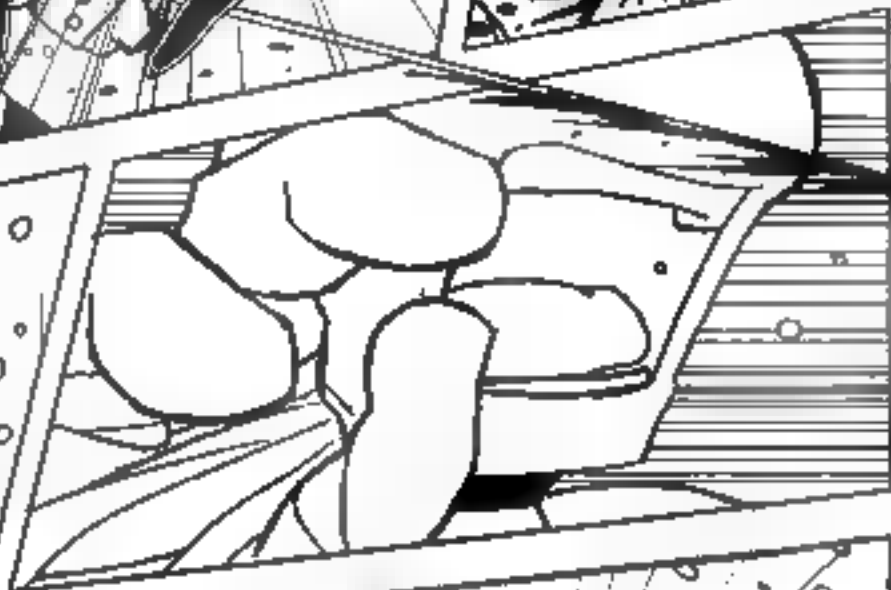


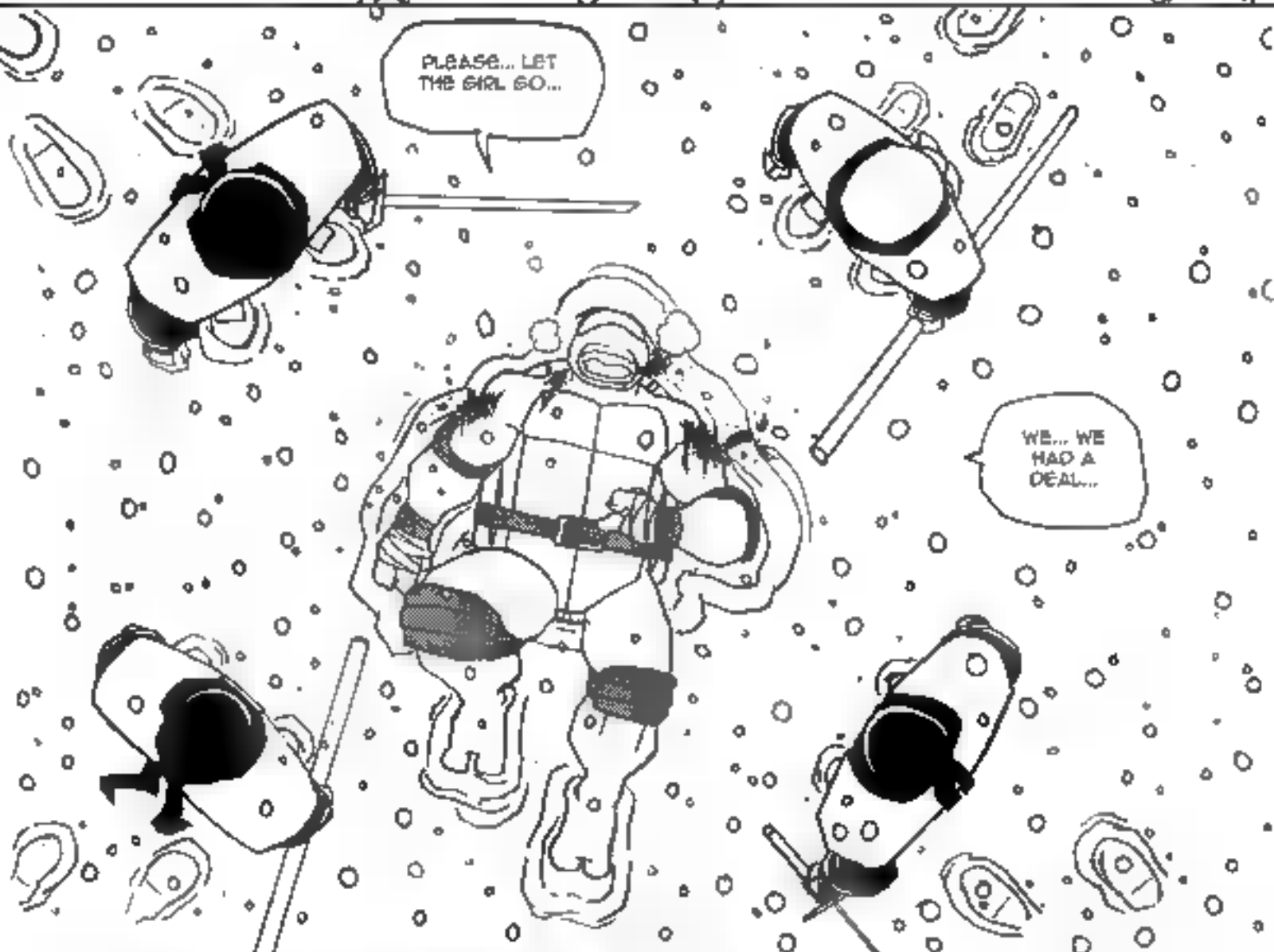
MICHELANGELO HAMATO. THANKS TO YOUR AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL BESTSELLER WHICH CONTAINED COMPROMISING INFORMATION ABOUT US, THE NYPO HAS BEEN HOT ON OUR TAIL LATELY. WE HAVE LOST SEVERAL GOOD MEN TO THEM ALREADY.

ALL OF THIS WHILE YOU WERE MAKING PROFIT OUT OF THIS... WE ARE NOT AMUSED BY THE CURRENT SITUATION, MR. HAMATO. THIS IS WHAT WE SHALL MAKE YOU TO ACKNOWLEDGE TONIGHT.

ROUGH HIM UP A BIT.

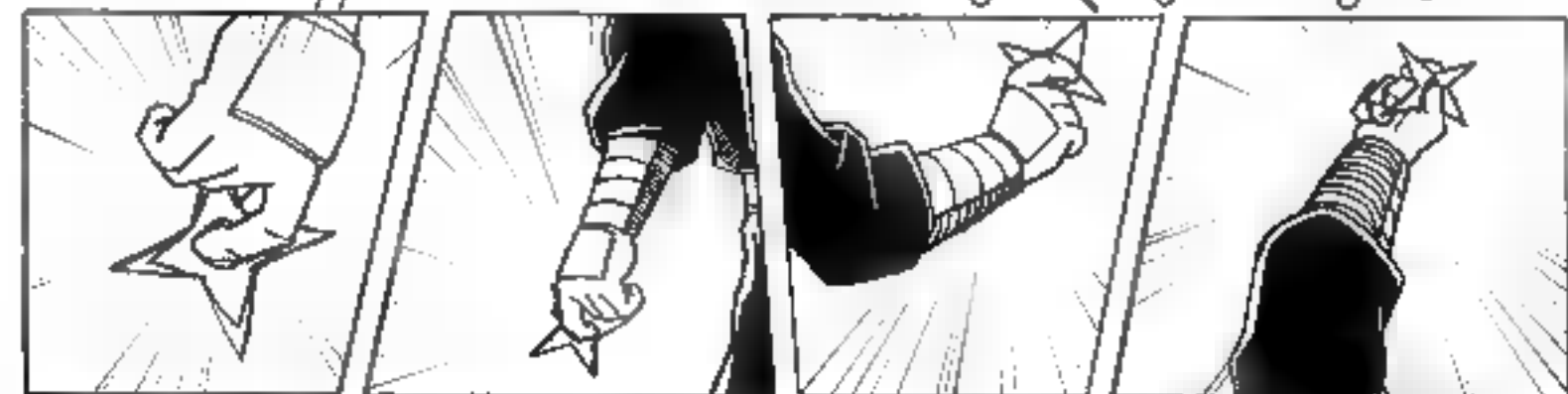
パチ





PLEASE... LET
THE GIRL GO...

WE... WE
HAD A
DEAL...



I ONLY
PROMISED I'D
LOWER MY
AXE.

THAT'S IT.



I... I... I beg of you. Please let the girl go...

DON'T LISTEN TO THEM, SIR!! YOU MUST FIGHT BACK!!

...SHUT UP.

I UNDERSTAND THAT YOU WANT HER FREED, MR. HAMATO?

VERY WELL. STAY STILL FOR A WHILE LONGER AND WE WILL CONSIDER YOUR REQUEST.

IF I'M THE REASON WHY YOU CAN'T MOVE, IF I'M THE ONE HOLDING YOU BACK... THEN FORGET ABOUT ME!!



AAAAAHH!!!

THAT LITTLE
BITCH... SHE
BROKE
FREE AND
STABBED
ME!!

THIS IS NOT A
PROBLEM. WE'RE
DONE WITH HER
EITHER WAY. TIME
TO DISPOSE OF
THE WITNESS.

YOU! GO AFTER
THE GIRL AND
SILENCE HER.

YES.

HEHEHE. YOU HAD ME
GOING THERE FOR A
MINUTE. YOU MADE
ME BELIEVE THERE
WAS A WAY OUT OF
THIS MESS...

I'VE GROWN SO NERVE
OVER THE YEARS...
WHY COULDN'T I SEE
THAT SHE WAS
DOOMED FROM THE
BEGINNING...

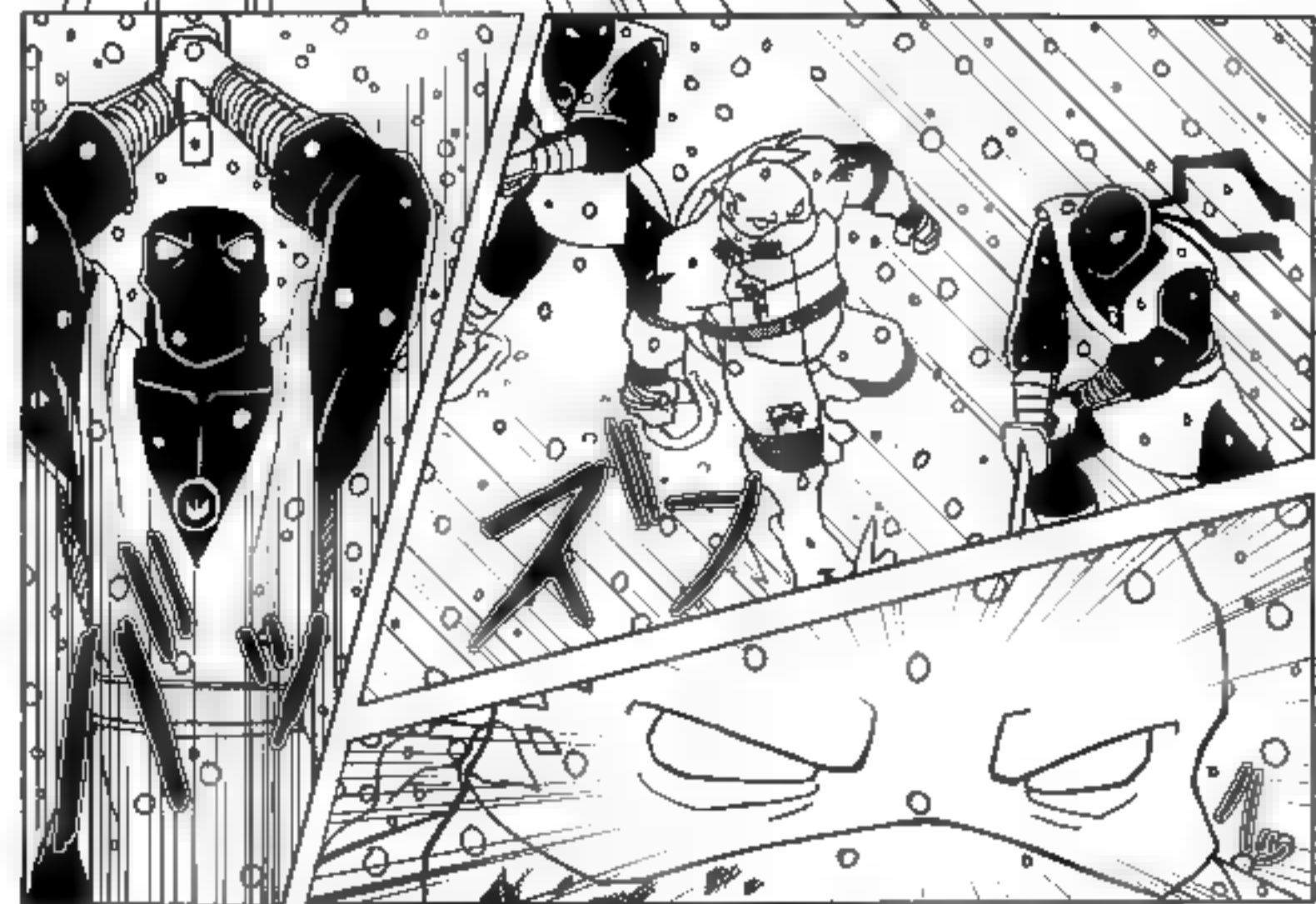
...AND I WILL KICK YOUR
ASSES FOR WHAT YOU DID
TO SHADOW...

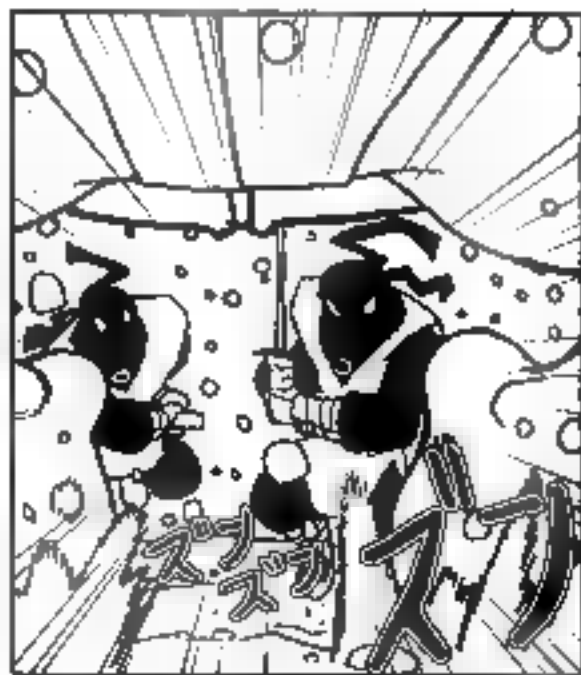
... 'CUZ IT WAS I WHO CAME.
'CUZ I'M A PATHETIC AND
SAD EXCUSE FOR A NINJA
WHO COULDN'T EVEN SAVE
AN INNOCENT GIRL... NOW
SHE'S OUT THERE AND
SHE'LL GET KILLED NO
MATTER WHAT I DO. I'M A
STUPID... STUPID... STUPID,
UNRELIABLE MUTANT
NINJA.

...IF IT'S THE LAST
THING I DO IN THIS
MISERABLE LIFE OF
MINE!!









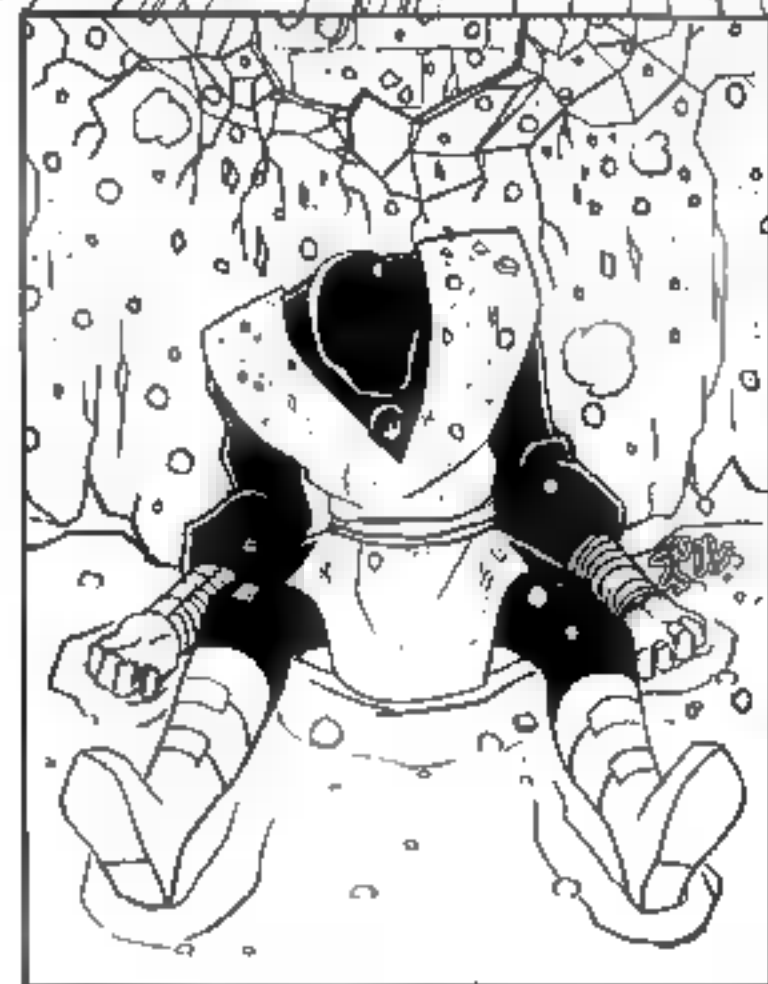
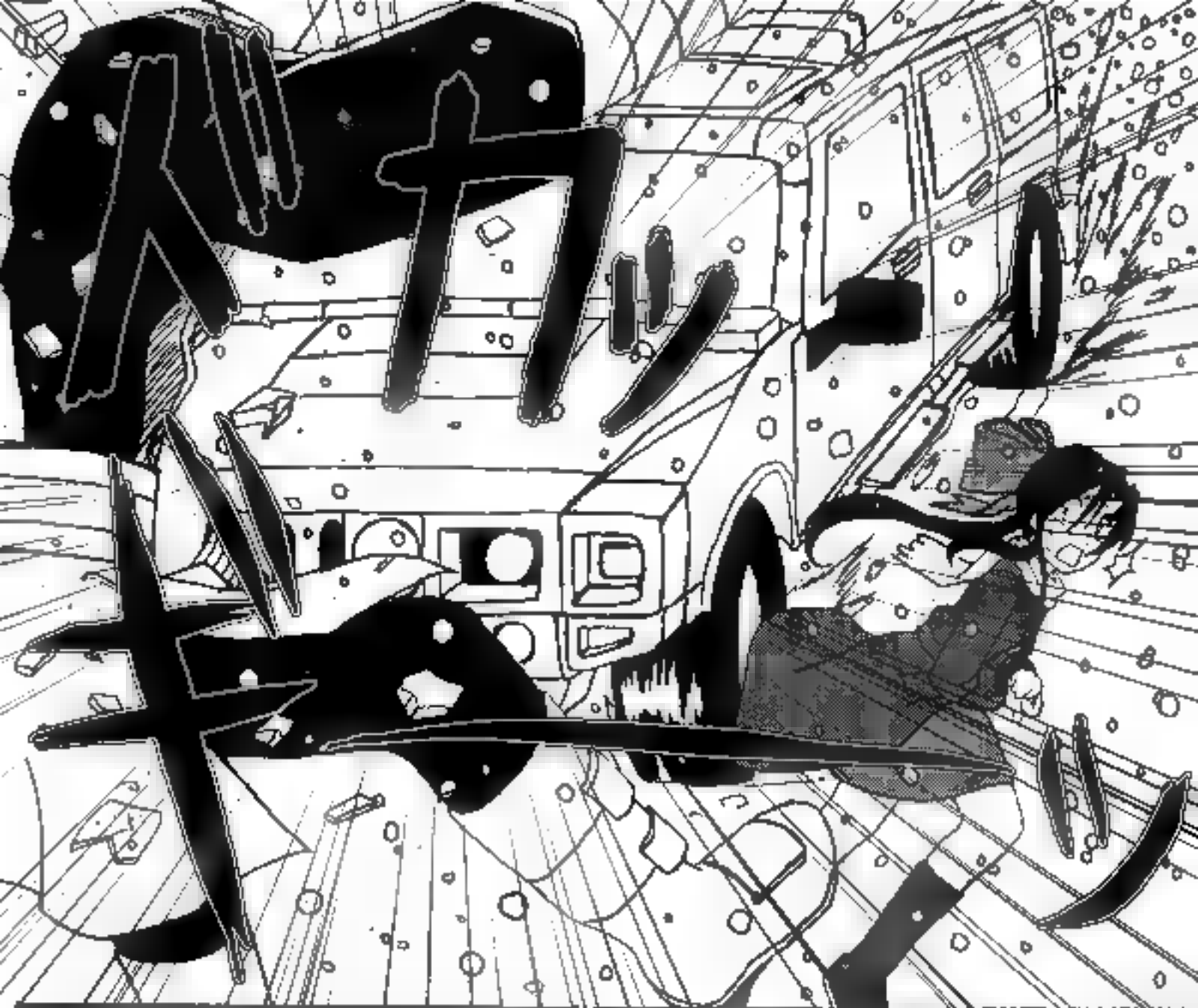


COWABUNGA,
DOUCHEBAGS.

MIKEY'S BACK IN
THE HOUSE.







DAVIANNA WALLACE!
YOU HAVE NOTHING
TO FEAR! THE
MASKED VIGILANTE,
FRIEND OF JUSTICE,
IS HERE! YOU'RE
SAFE NOW!

DAVIANNA!!

EEH! MR. JONES!
YOU'RE A MASKED
VIGILANTE TOO?

UH... HOW DID YOU GUESS
MY TRUE IDENTITY?

DAVIANNA...
YOU'RE SAFE...!

WELL, YOU'RE
MY CHILDHOOD
FRIEND'S
FATHER SO I
RECOGNIZED
YOUR VOICE...

...I'M SORRY,
MR. JONES... I...
I HAVE BAD
NEWS... THERE
WAS NOTHING I
COULD DO.
SHADOW...
SHE'S...

...PROBABLY IN A
HOSPITAL RIGHT
NOW CURSIN'
'BOUT NOT BEIN'
ABLE TO BE HERE.
I KNOW.

SHADOW'S
GONNA BE
OKAY,
DAVIANNA.

S...SHADOW
IS ALIVE?
BUT...
HOW...?

LET'S JUST SAY HER REPTILIAN
GUARDIAN ANGEL HERE WAS
LOOKING AFTER HER. HE
BROUGHT HER BACK TO US.

BY THE WAY,
DAVIANNA...

I DID, MR. JONES! HE TRIED TO
PROTECT ME FROM THOSE EVIL
NINJAS BUT GOT SERIOUSLY
WOUNDED IN THE PROCESS!

PLEASE, SIR!
YOU GOTTA
HELP HIM!! JUST
FOLLOW MY
FOOTPRINTS,
THEY'LL LEAD
YOU TO HIM!

RENOIR, DUTY
CALLS. STAY
HERE AND
TEND TO THIS
LADY WHILE
I'M AWAY.

I NEED TO
ATTEND A JOLLY
CHRISTMAS
REUNION WITH MY
GOOD OL' PALS,
THE FOOT
NINJAS.

...DID YA SEE
ANOTHER MUTANT
TURTLE AROUND HERE
BY ANY CHANCE?

MR. JONES!!

SIR...! DON'T YOU
REALIZE THAT YOU
JUST KILLED A
HUMAN? HOW CAN
YOU RAM SOMEONE
WITH YOUR HUMMER
AND BE SO
INDIFFERENT ABOUT
IT?

LISTEN. WHEN AN
INNOCENT'S
IN DANGER, YOU
CAN'T AFFORD TO
HESITATE AND WORRY
'BOUT THE PERP'S
LIFE.

WOULD YA RATHER
REGRET NOT
BEING ABLE TO
SPARE A PERP'S
LIFE AFTER SAVIN'
A VICTIM?

OR REGRET NOT
BEING ABLE TO
SAVE A VICTIM WHILE
THE PERP GETS
AWAY WIT' IT?
THINK 'BOUT IT.

YOU GOTTA PUT ALL
YOUR BET ON THE
VICTIM'S SAFETY. IT'S
AS SIMPLE AS THAT.



HUH. SORRY I CALLED YOU NAMES AND RAN OFF BACK AT THE HOSPITAL.



HMMRRM. DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT.



THANK YOU, FOR SHADOW.



REALLY, I THANK YOU FROM THE BOTTOM OF MY HEART, RENOR... SHADOW MEANT A LOT TO ME...



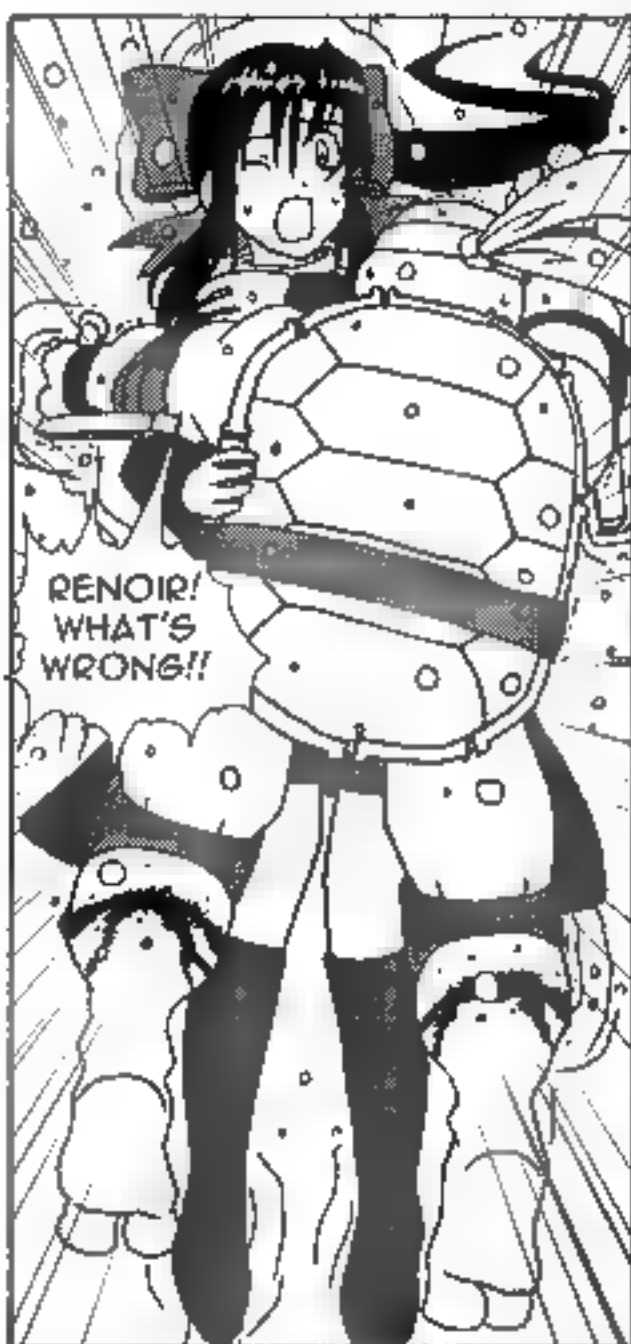
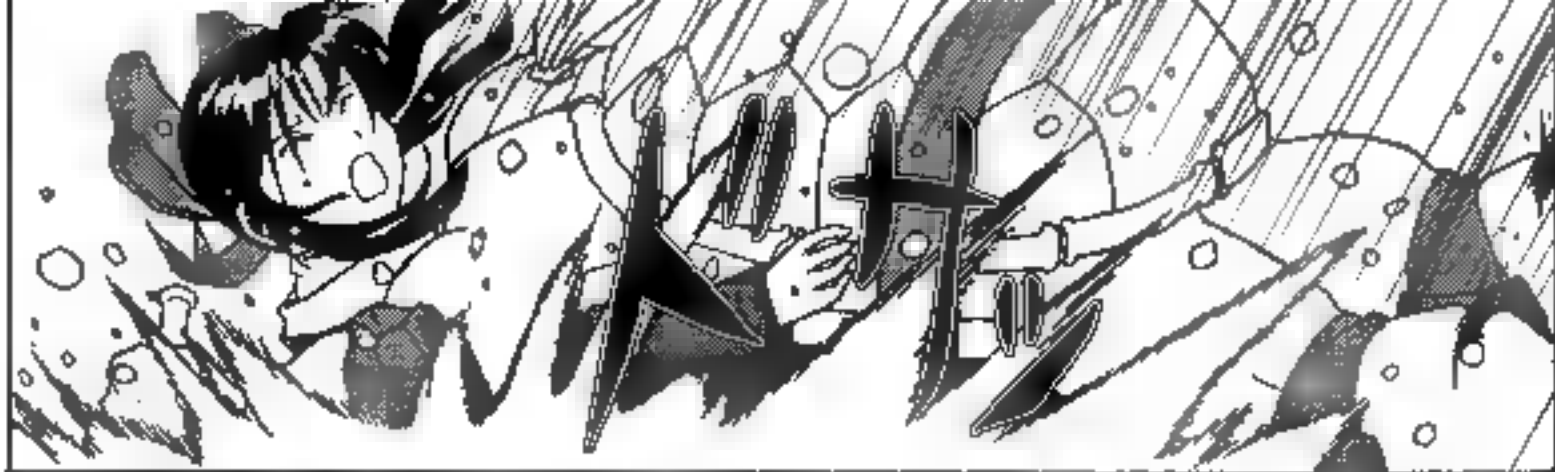
IT'S OKAY... BUT I HAVE SOMETHING I'D LIKE TO TELL YOU...



AAARGH!!

AAH!





RENOIR!
WHAT'S
WRONG!!



HE'S...
HE'S STILL
ALIVE...!!

HRRR...



HAAA...
HAAAA...



RENOIR!
GET UP!!
HURRY!
HE'S
COMING!!

I CAN'T!! I
CAAAN'T!!!

MY LEGS...
TH... THEY
HURT!!







OH NO, HE'S
PISSED...!

SHIT, SHIT,
SHIT, SHIT,
SHIT, SHIT,
SHIT, SHIT...!

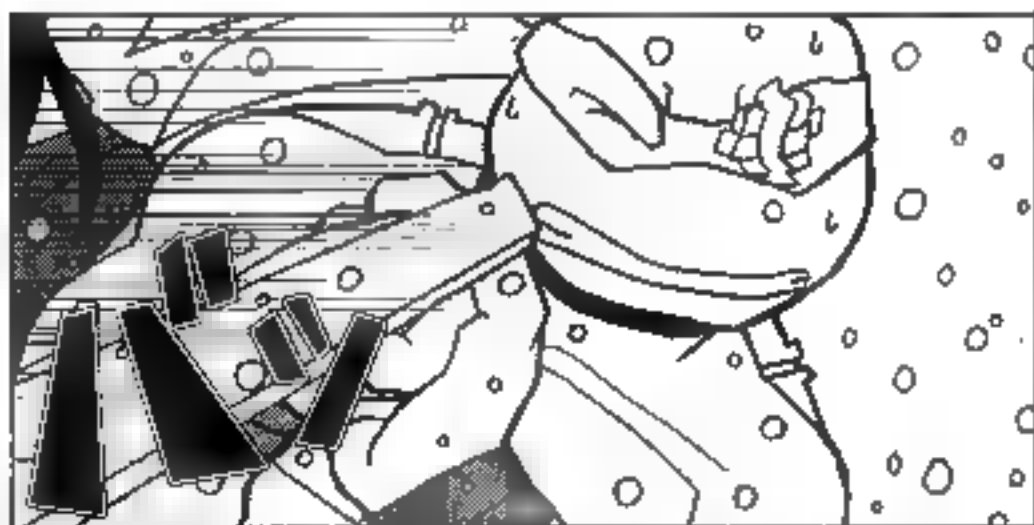
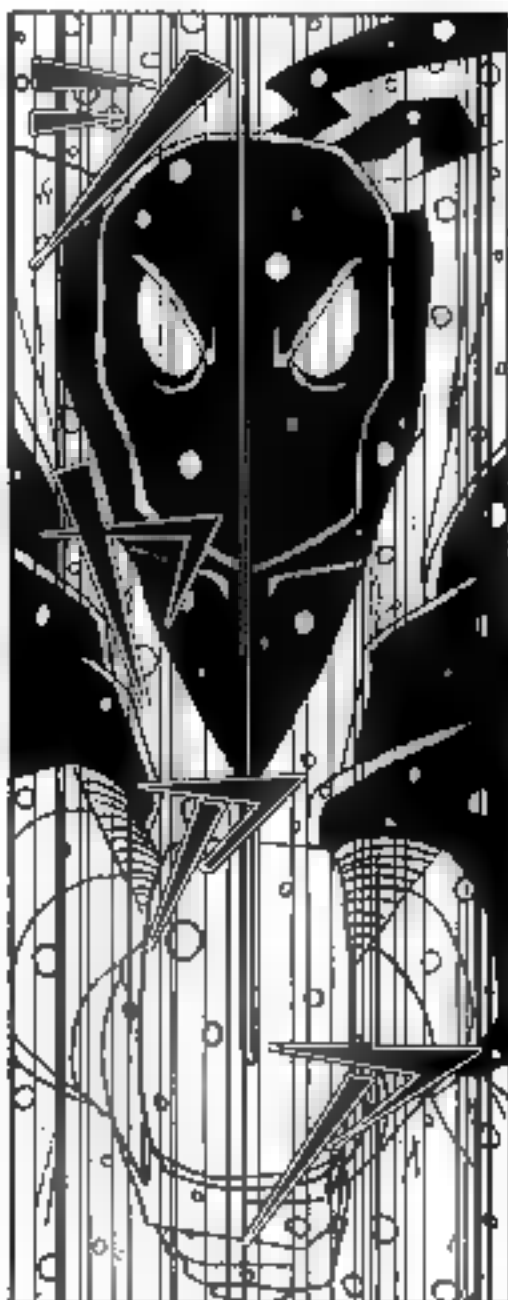
HAAA...

HURRRRSH...

RRRAAAHHH!!!

N... NO...!

NOOOO!!



DAVIANNA?



I CAN'T RUN
AWAY... NOT
LIKE THIS!!

O...DAVIANNA!

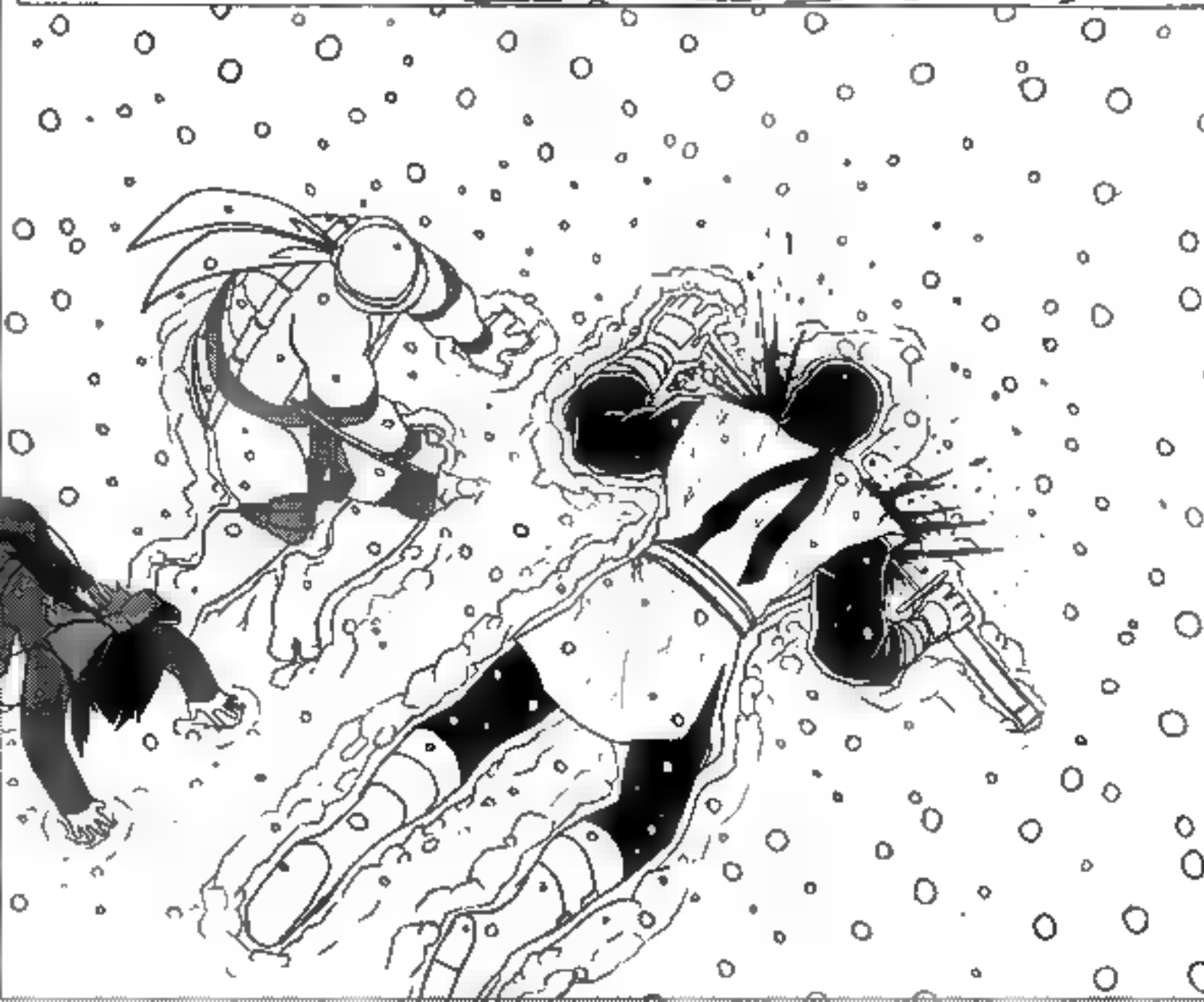
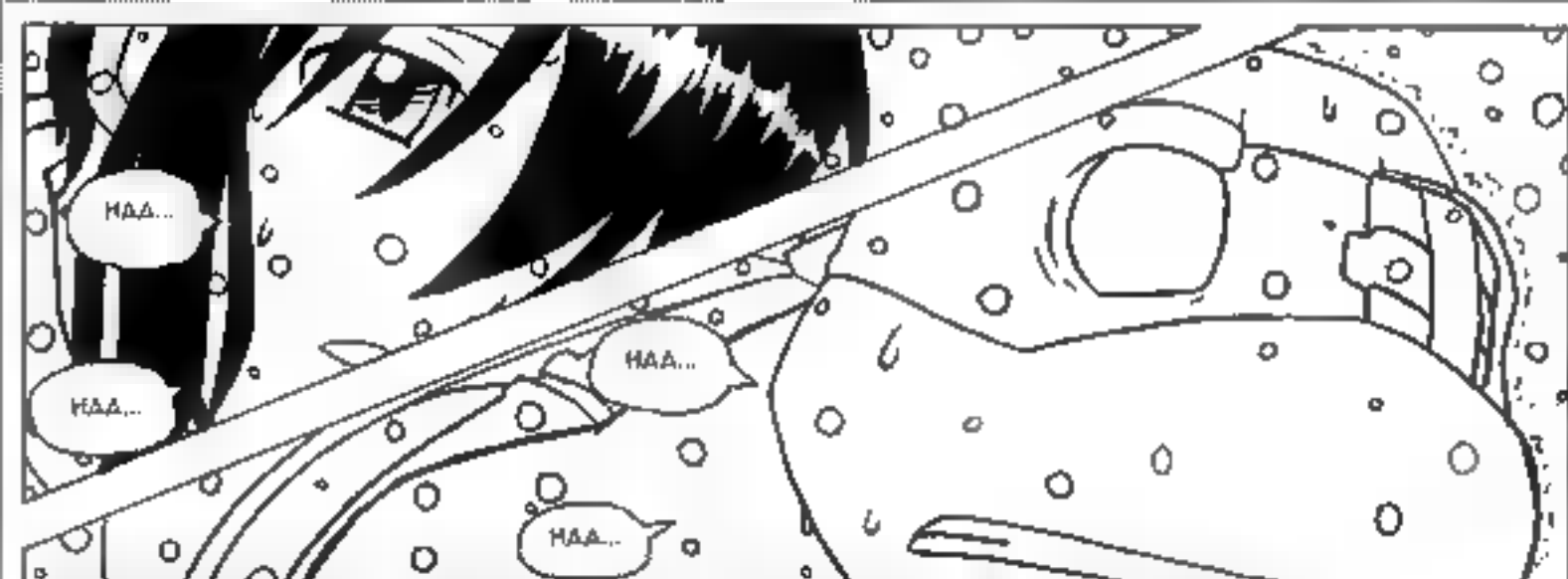
LIWOOOH!!!

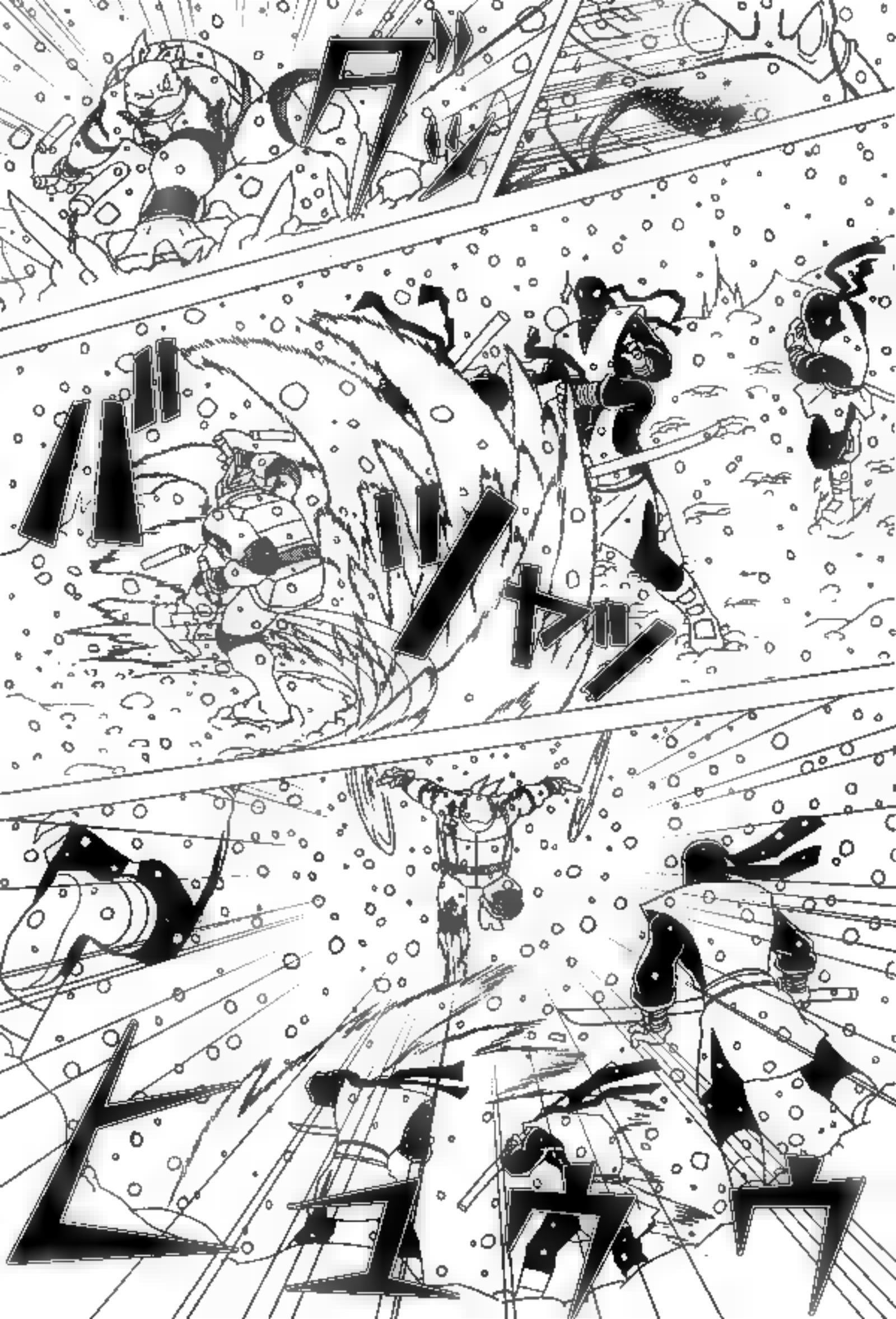
DAVIANNA
LET GO OF
MY TONFA,
NOW!!

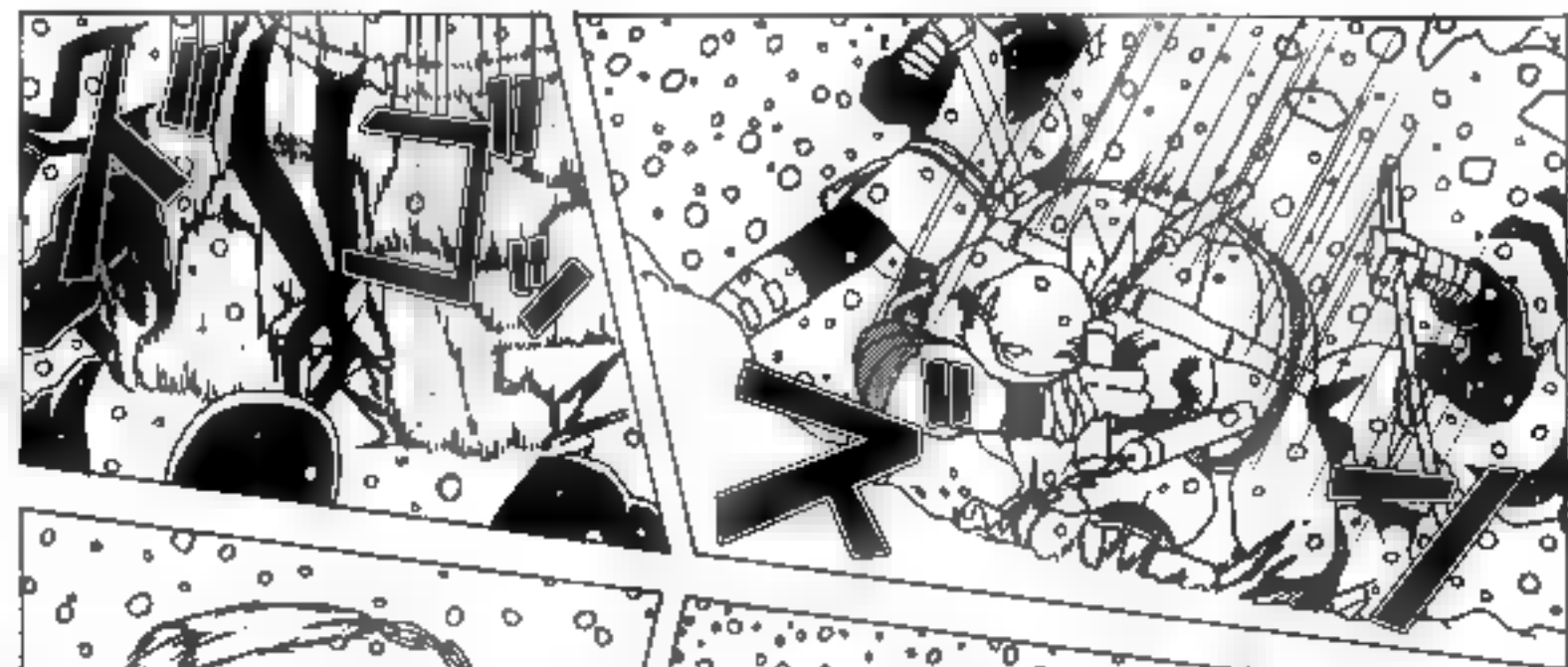
HE'S PUTTING ALL
HIS WEIGHT INTO
HIS ARMS! IT'S
NOW OR NEVER!!

I WILL KEEP
DAVIANNA
OUT OF
HARM'S
WAY!!

URYAAAAAAH!!!





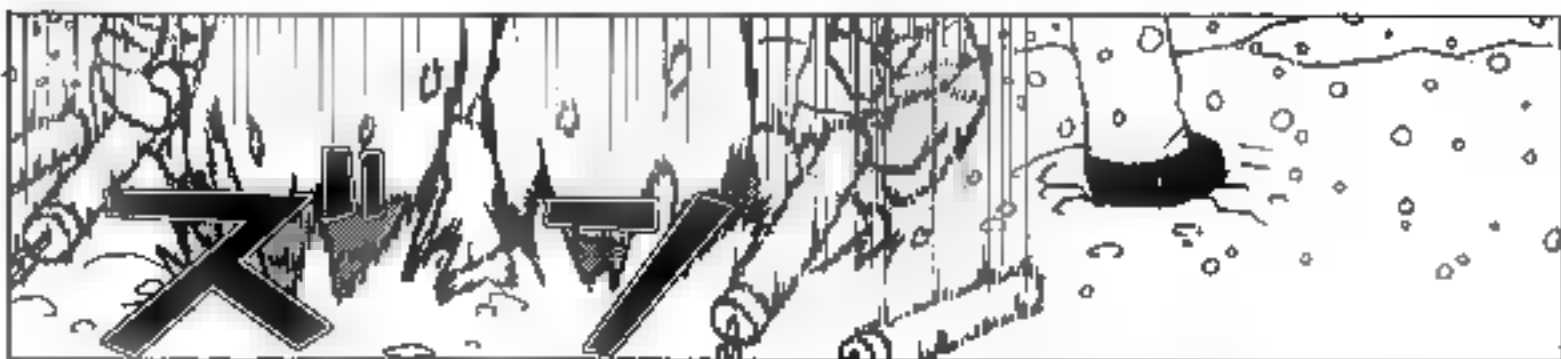


CASEY!!
WHAT'RE
YOU DOING
HERE!

SAME THING YOU'RE
DOIN': PUNISHIN'
NAUGHTY KIDS ON
CHRISTMAS EVE.

OKAY, ACTUALLY, I CAME
HERE TO TELL YA THAT
SHADOW AND OTHER GIRL
ARE BOTH SAFE!

SO LET'S WRAP
THIS UP AND
GET OUTTA
HERE!



HEHE... SO... SO
THIS WAS ALL A
BAD DREAM...

I'LL... I'LL JUST REST
A LITTLE BIT... I'M SO
EXHAUSTED

WHAT DID
YA SAY?


ANYWAYS,
JUST STAY
LOW, NKEY!
HELP IS ON
THE WAY!

WE'LL TAKE
CARE OF THE
TURTLE LATER!
TAKE DOWN THE
HIPPIE WITH THE
MASK!

ORYAAAAAHH!







WAIT A SEC... AM I
ACTUALLY IGNORING
DAVIANNA? WHAT THE
HELL AM I DOING?

I ALWAYS YEARNED
TO BE BY HER SIDE,
AND NOW I'M GIVING
HER THE COLD
SHOULDER?

WHY... IT THAT EVERY TIME I
THINK ABOUT MY OWN
PROBLEMS, I LOOK LIKE
SUCH A SELFISH JERK?

COULD IT BE THAT SHADOW
WAS RIGHT?

COULD IT BE THAT I WORRY
SO MUCH ABOUT MY OWN
INNER CONFLICTS THAT I
CAN'T EVEN THINK OF
OTHERS... JUST LIKE
RAPHAEL?

COME TO THINK OF IT, THE ONLY
TIMES I MADE THINGS RIGHT FOR
OTHERS WAS WHEN I COMPLETELY
SEALED MY FEELINGS AND MY OWN
PROBLEMS TO FOCUS ON THEIRS

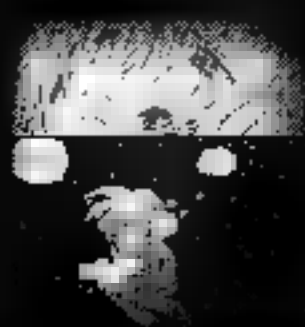
THOSE WERE THE ON
WAS REALLY BEING



BACK THEN, I STOPPED
THINKING ABOUT MY
IDENTITY CRISIS AND
RETURNED TO RAPHAEL,
EVEN THOUGH WE'VE
NEVER GOTTEN ALONG
VERY WELL.
HE'S OKAY NOW.



AND JUST NOW... I FORGOT
ABOUT MY PAIN AND WENT
AFTER SHADOW.
THINGS TURNED OUT OKAY.



I GET IT NOW.

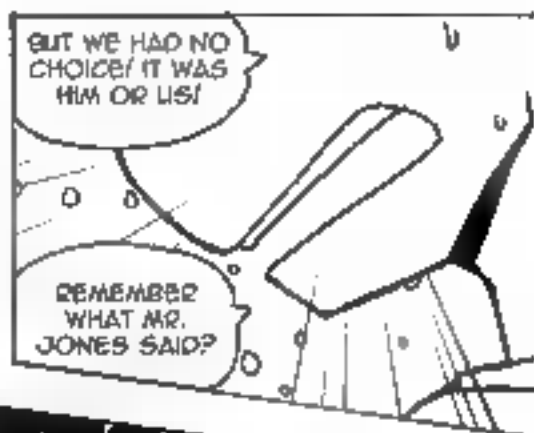
I REACT TO SHOCK BY
WORRYING ABOUT
MYSELF ONLY. NOTHING
GOOD CAN COME OUT
OF THIS.

THE WORLD DOES NOT
REVOLVE AROUND ME. I
NEED TO BE MORE
CONSIDERATE WITH
OTHER PEOPLE AROUND
ME IN ORDER TO
BECOME A BETTER
PERSON.

I NEED TO BE MORE
SELFLESS.



YES, WE KILLED HIM, DAVIANNA!



BUT WE HAD NO CHOICE! IT WAS HIM OR US!

REMEMBER WHAT MR. JONES SAID?



WE HAVE NO TIME TO PITY THOSE WHO SEEK TO HARM US.

ESPECIALLY STUBBORN PEOPLE LIKE THAT NINJA...



HE GOT HIT BY A CAR AND HIS JAW WAS SMASHED TWICE... YET HE STILL WENT AFTER US. IT WAS OBVIOUS THAT NINJA WASN'T GONNA STOP UNTIL WE'RE BOTH DEAD...



I DID IT. DAVIANNA CALMED DOWN.



GREAT... NOW I HATE MYSELF FOR WHAT I JUST SAID. I DON'T LIKE VIOLENCE AND FRANKLY THINK WE PROBABLY COULD'VE RAN AWAY OR SOMETHING INSTEAD OF KILLING THAT NINJA.

I'LL KEEP THOSE THOUGHTS FOR MYSELF. I DON'T THINK THIS IS THE RIGHT MOMENT TO SPEAK UP MY MIND.





HEY, I'M
ALL FINE!



DON'T WORRY
ABOUT ME. IT'S
NOTHING. JUST A
SUPERFICIAL
SCRATCH! IT
DOESN'T EVEN
HURT!

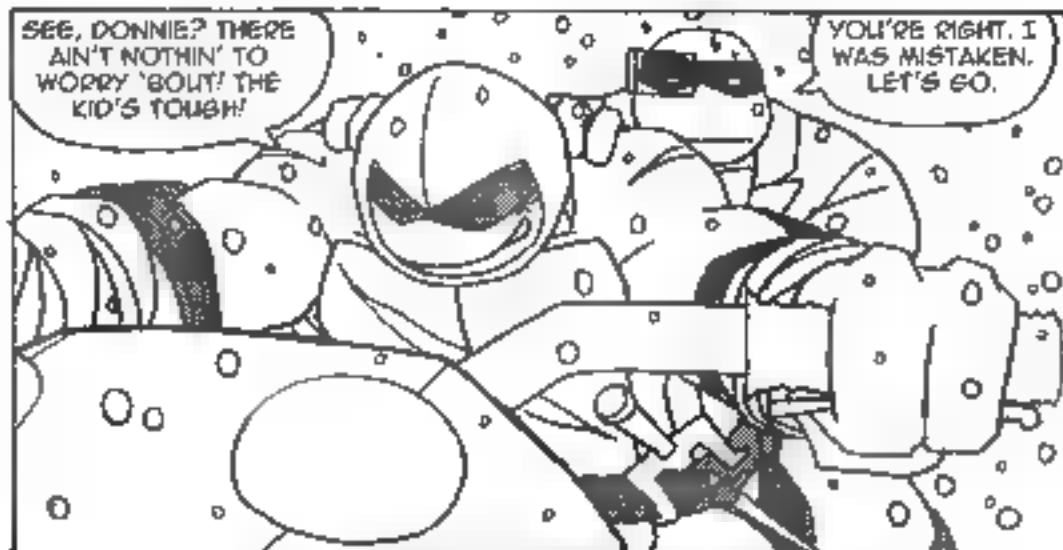
WELL SAID, RENOIR. I
EXPECTED NO LESS
FROM YA.



WELL, THERE
GOES MY BLOOD
SAMPLE...



SEE, DONNIE? THERE
AIN'T NOTHIN' TO
WORRY 'BOUT! THE
KID'S TOUGH!



YOU'RE RIGHT. I
WAS MISTAKEN.
LET'S GO.

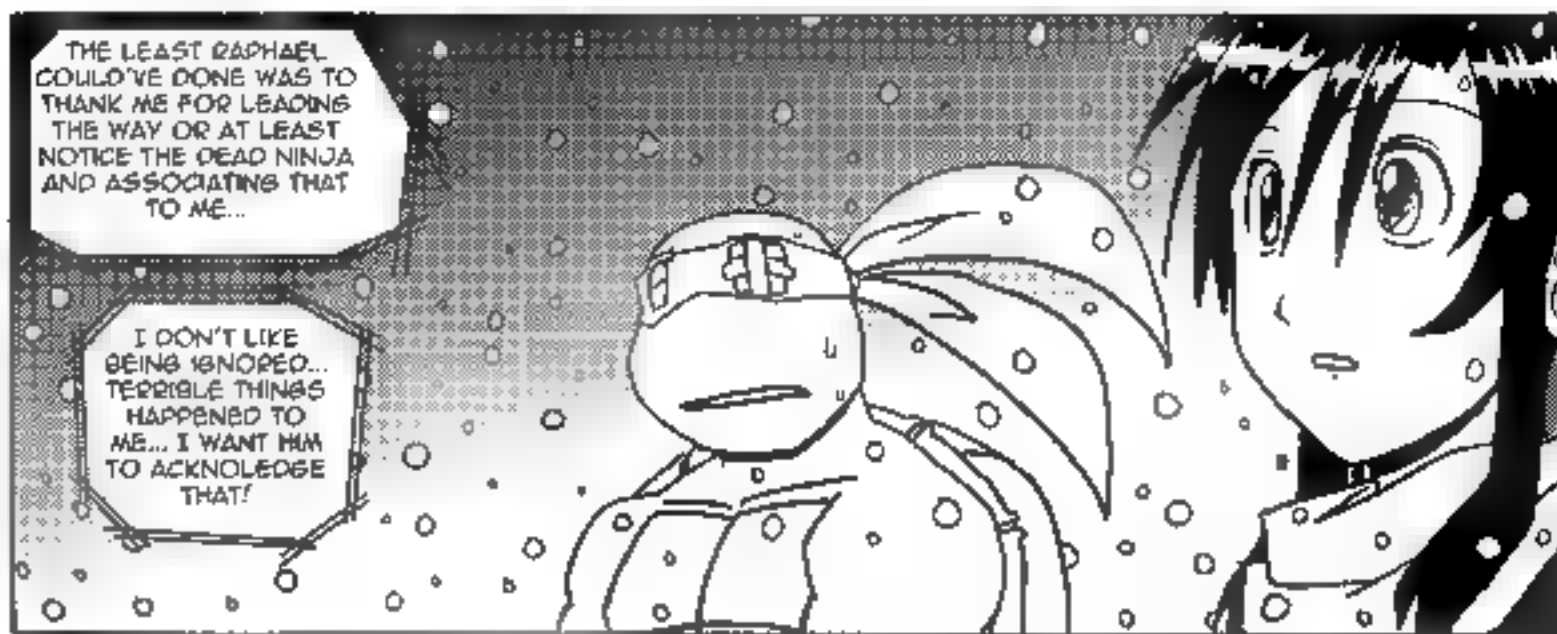
JUST A REMINDER, RENOIR.
IF YOU EVER FEEL LIKE
TALKING TO SOMEONE OR
IF YOU NEED TO HAVE
SOME WOUNDS TREATED...

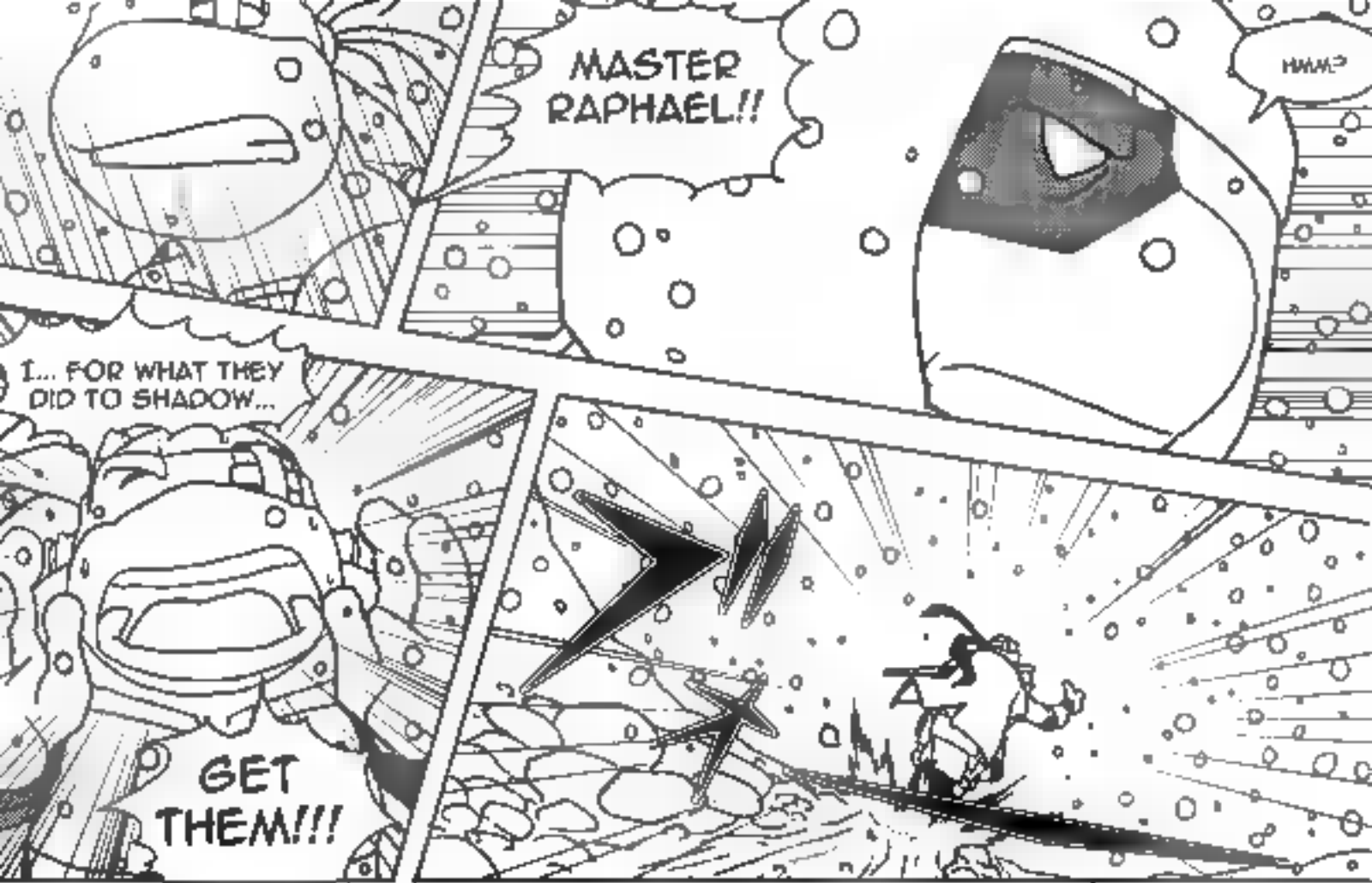


...YOU'RE ALWAYS MORE THAN
WELCOME TO STOP BY MY LAB.
I'LL BE MORE THAN HAPPY TO
ASSIST YOU IN ANY WAY I CAN.

THE LEAST RAPHAEL
COULD'VE DONE WAS TO
THANK ME FOR LEADING
THE WAY OR AT LEAST
NOTICE THE DEAD NINJA
AND ASSOCIATING THAT
TO ME...

I DON'T LIKE
BEING IGNORED...
TERRIBLE THINGS
HAPPENED TO
ME... I WANT HIM
TO ACKNOWLEDGE
THAT!



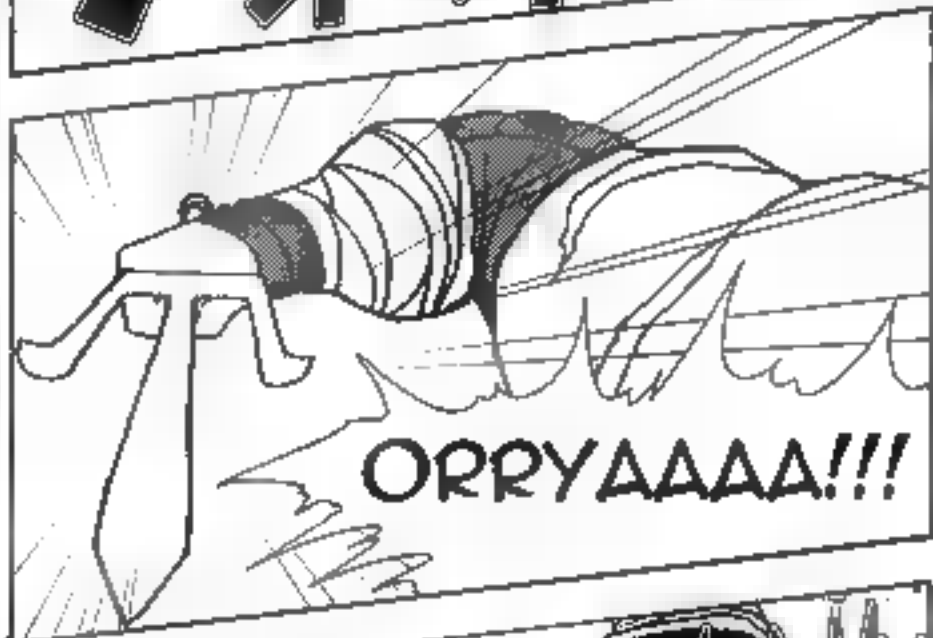
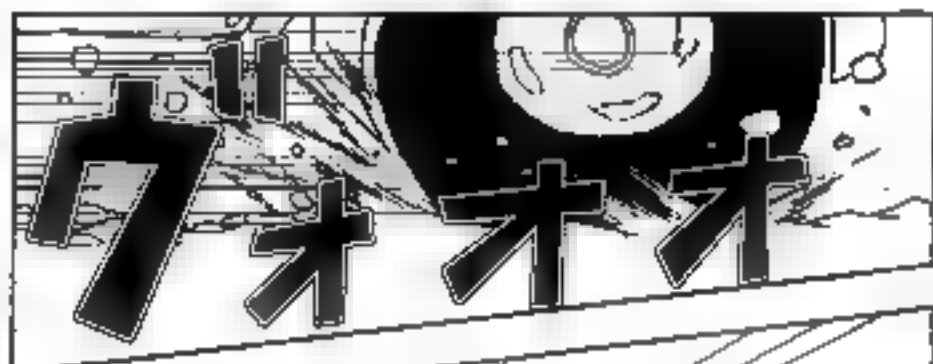




THIS IS THE
END OF
THE LINE
FOR YOU,
VIGILANTE.



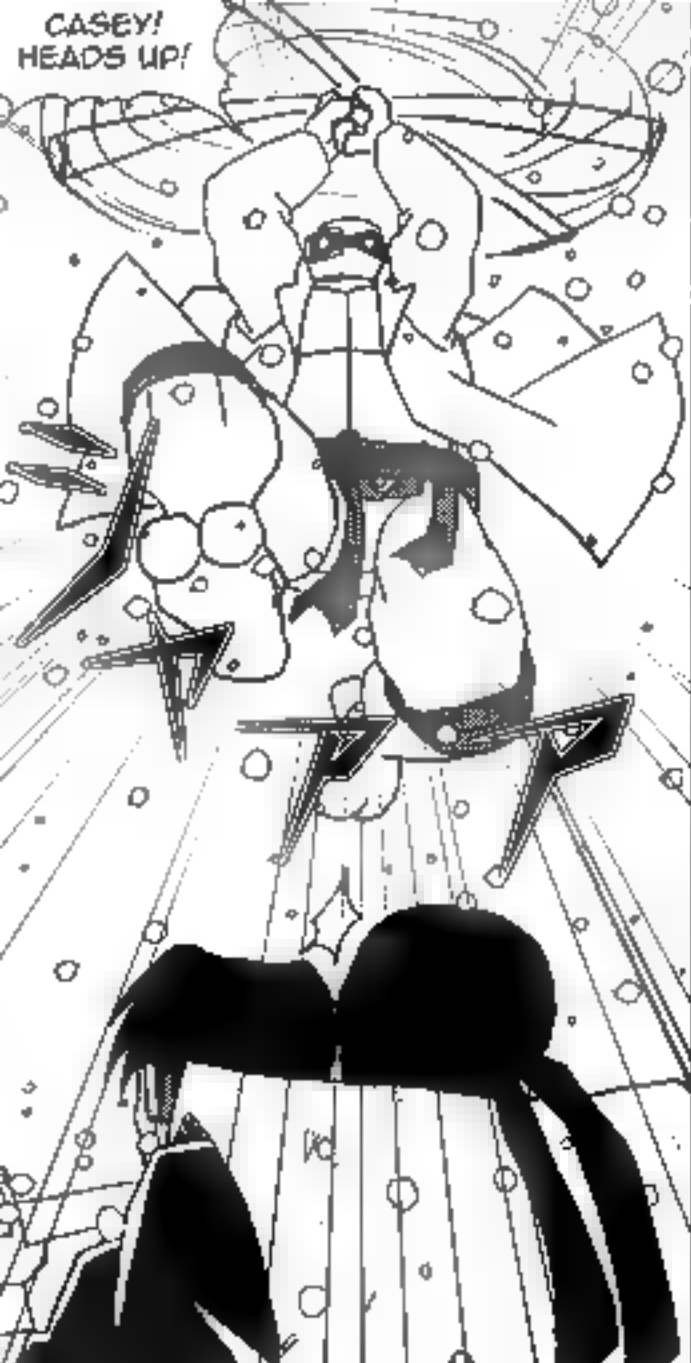
S...SHIT!

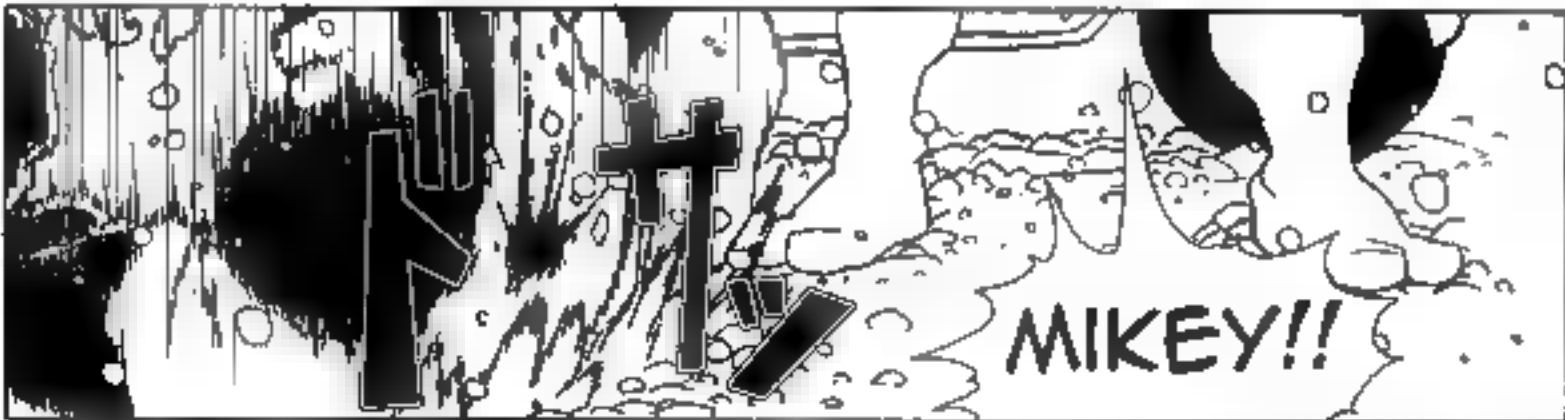


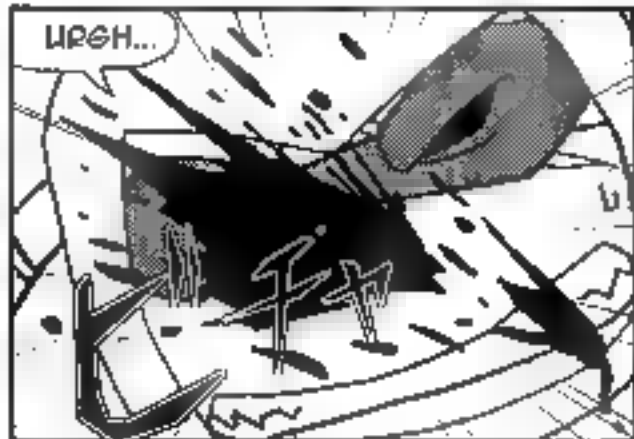
ORRYAAAA!!!











WHEN I'LL GET
BACK... APRIL AND
SHADOW WILL BE
GREETING ME AT
THE DOOR.



CASEY WILL
HAVE SET UP
THE TABLE BY
THEN.



DONNIE WILL BE THERE
TOO, ENJOYING A CUP
OF HOT COCOA.



AND RAPH
HE'LL TELL
ME...



YA DUMBASS!!

LOOK AT YA... ALL BLOODY
AND CRIPPLED... THINK IT
MAKES YA ANY LESS LAME
THAN BEFORE? EH?

...PICK UP YER WEAPONS.
WE'RE SETTING OUTTA
HERE.



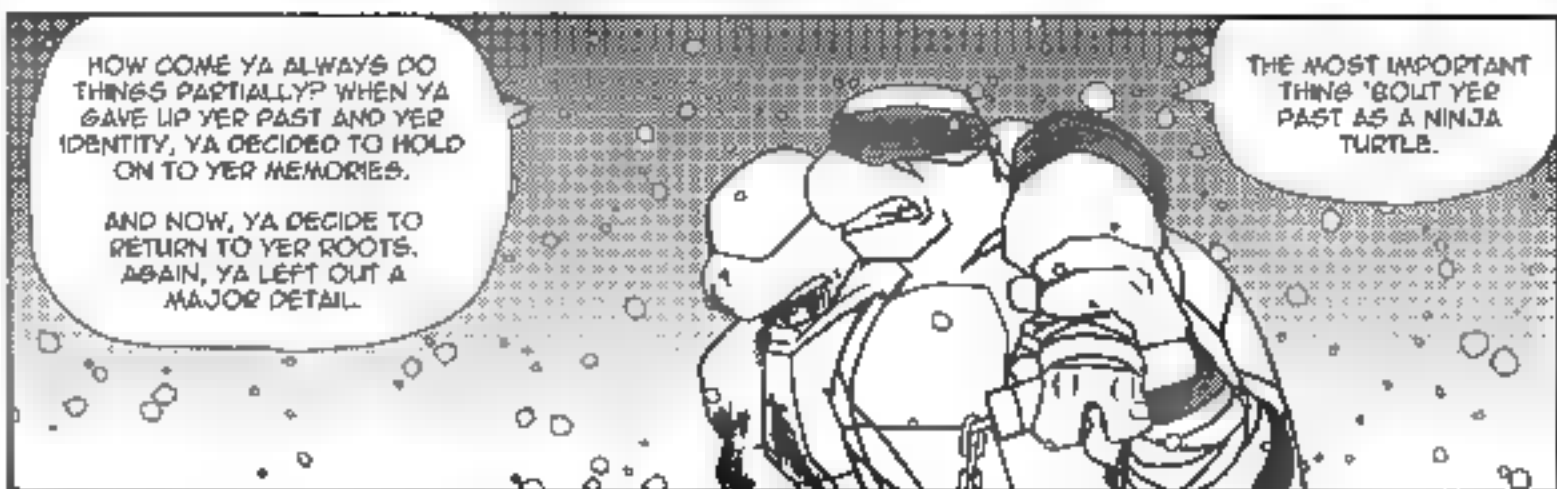
RAPH...?

YOU... YOU
CAME TOO?
WHY...?





MIKEY,
YOU
IDIOT.



HOW COME YA ALWAYS DO
THINGS PARTIALLY? WHEN YA
GAVE UP YER PAST AND YER
IDENTITY, YA DECIDED TO HOLD
ON TO YER MEMORIES.

AND NOW, YA DECIDE TO
RETURN TO YER ROOTS.
AGAIN, YA LEFT OUT A
MAJOR DETAIL.

THE MOST IMPORTANT
THING 'BOUT YER
PAST AS A NINJA
TURTLE.

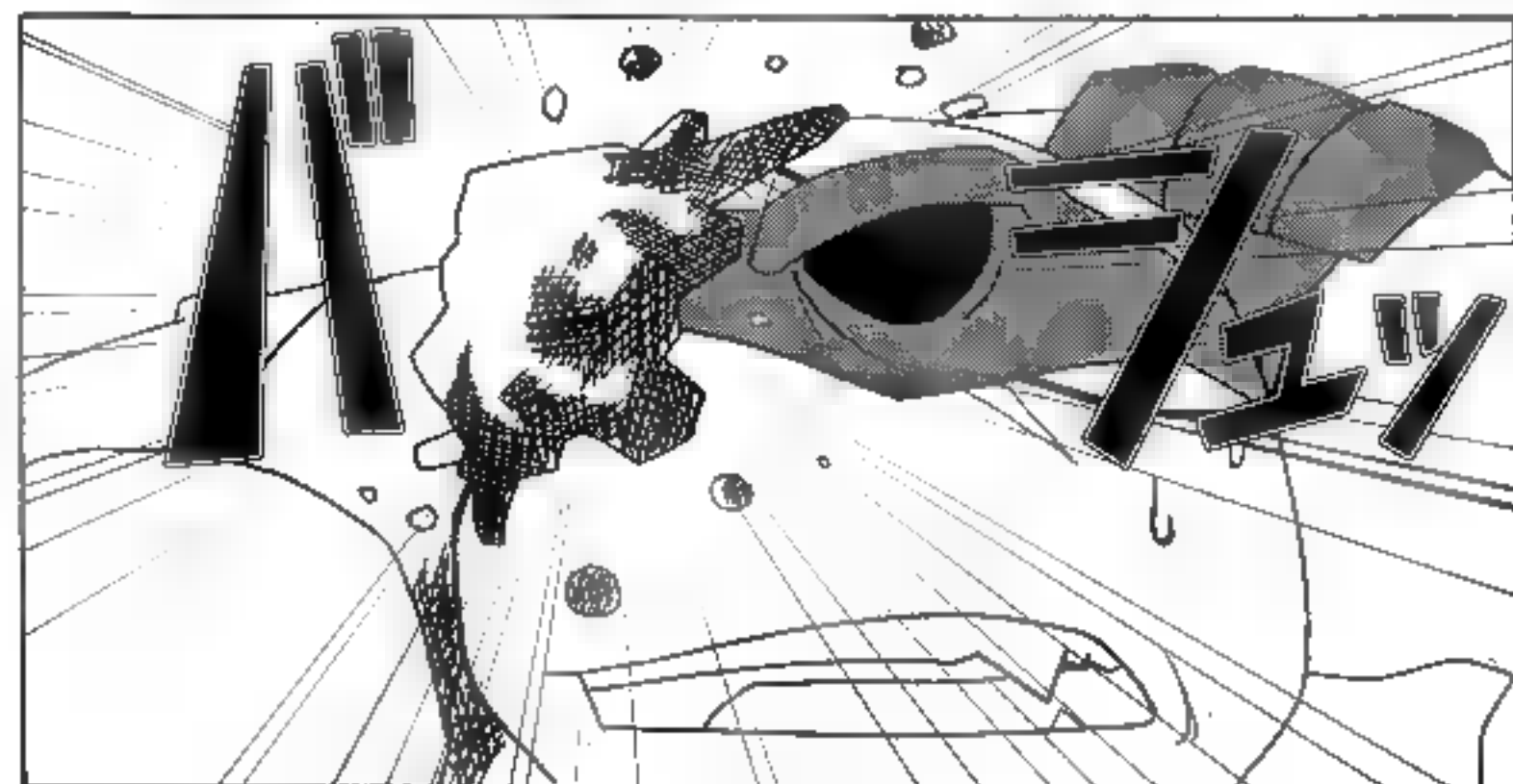
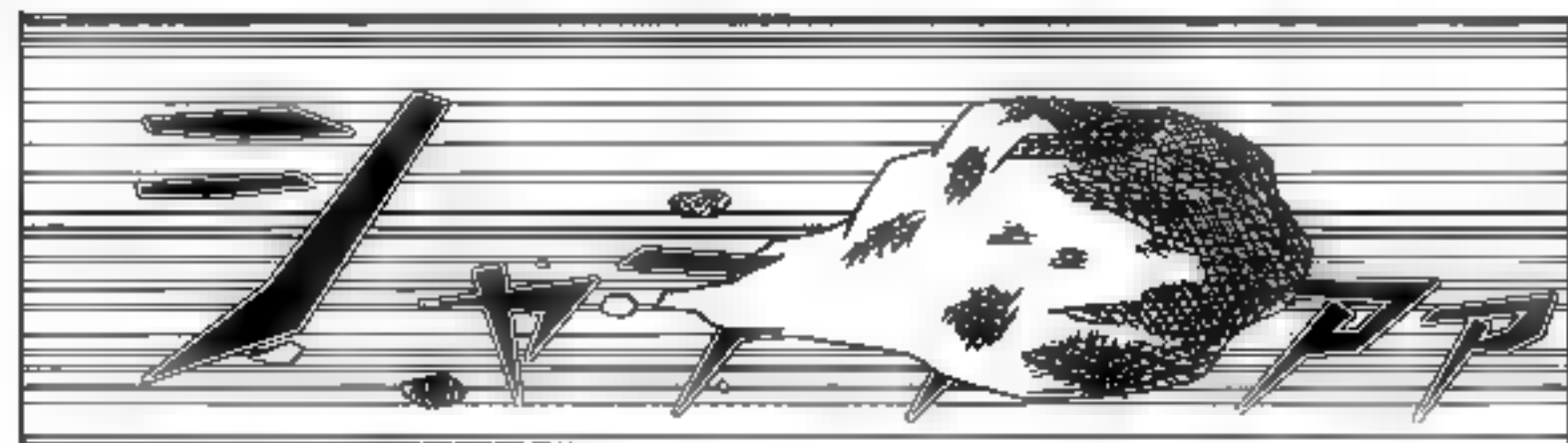
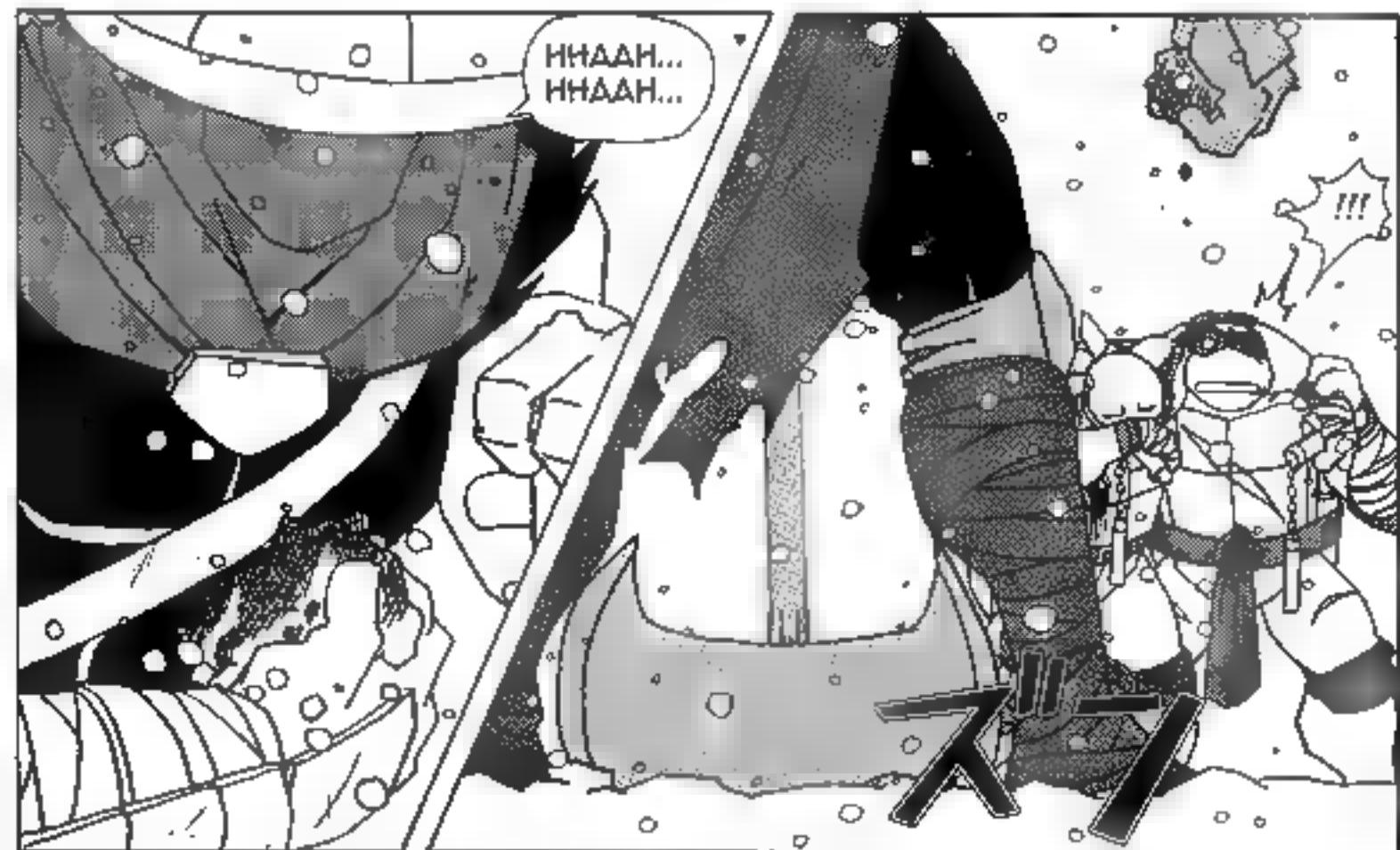


WE'RE BROTHERS,
MIKEY. WE'RE ALWAYS
THERE FOR EACH
OTHER, FOR THE
BETTER OR THE
WORSE... THAT'S WHY
I'M HERE NOW.



TCH... YA WUSS.
THIS AIN'T THE
TIME TO CRY.

STOP THAT. OR
ELSE I'LL...
I'LL...



GAAAAH! THERE'S
FRICKIN' BLOOD ■
MY EYE!



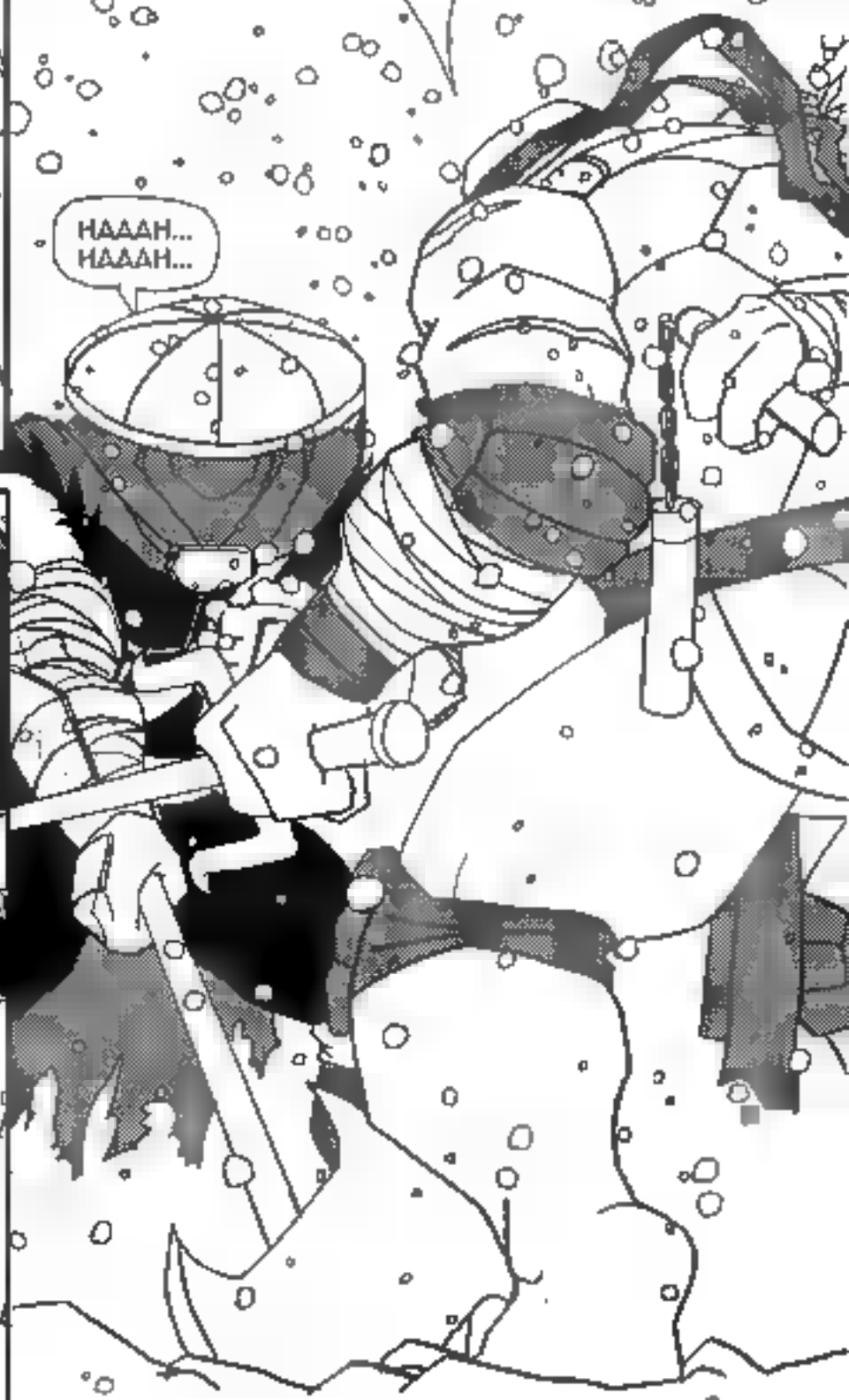
DON'T WORRY,
MIKEY... I
GOTCHA...



BLINDED OR
NOT... I AIN'T
GONNA LET YA
DOWN!

AND NO FOOT NINJA IS GONNA
HARM YA AGAIN TONIGHT! I CAN
TAKE ON ANYTHIN', YA HEAR ME?
ANYTHIN'!! SO TO WHATEVER
BASTARD THREW THAT DAMN
SNOWBALL... GIMME YER BEST
SHOT!!

HAAAAH...
HAAAAH...



RAPH!
MIKEY!

SHIT! WHERE DID
THAT ELITE FOOT
COME FROM?



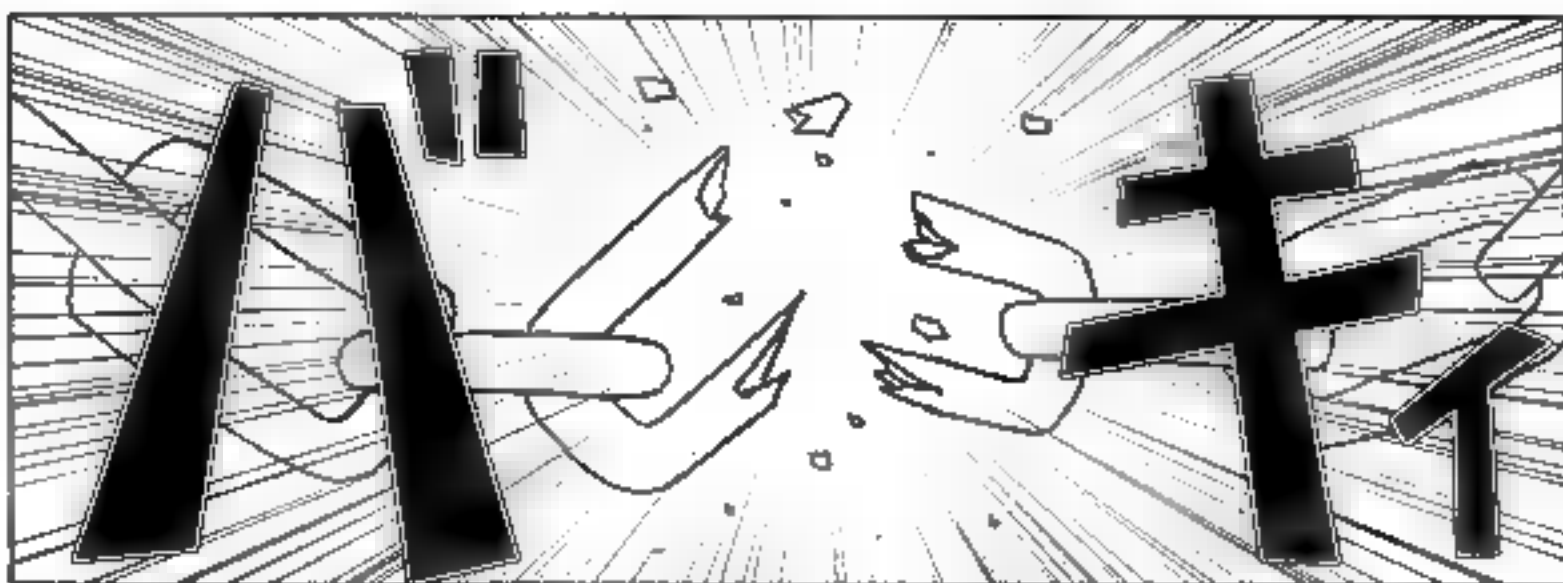


NO!

NO! NOT
AGAIN!
NOT
AGAIN!!

I
WON'T...

...LET THIS
HAPPEN TO
YOU AGAIN!!



OAHN IT'S MY
TURN TO
PROTECT YOU





...I SAID, THERE ARE
NINJAS ATTACKING
INNOCENT PEOPLE!
PLEASE BELIEVE ME!

O...OKAY! WE'LL BE RIGHT
OVER, MISS. PLEASE TRY TO
HIDE SOMEWHERE SAFE FOR
THE TIME BEING!

THE PLACE
IS
WILLIAMS-
BURG, IN
BROOKLYN,
HUH?

YEAH... FIRST MUTANTS,
NOW NINJAS... ON
CHRISTMAS EVE, NO
LESS, WHAT IS NEW
YORK COMING TO?

I KNOW. AT THIS
RATE, NEXT THING
WE KNOW
THERE'LL BE
"MUTANT NINJAS".

MAN, IF
SUCH
THINGS
EXIST, I
SWEAR
I'LL GO
TO THE
CHIEF'S
OFFICE
AND...

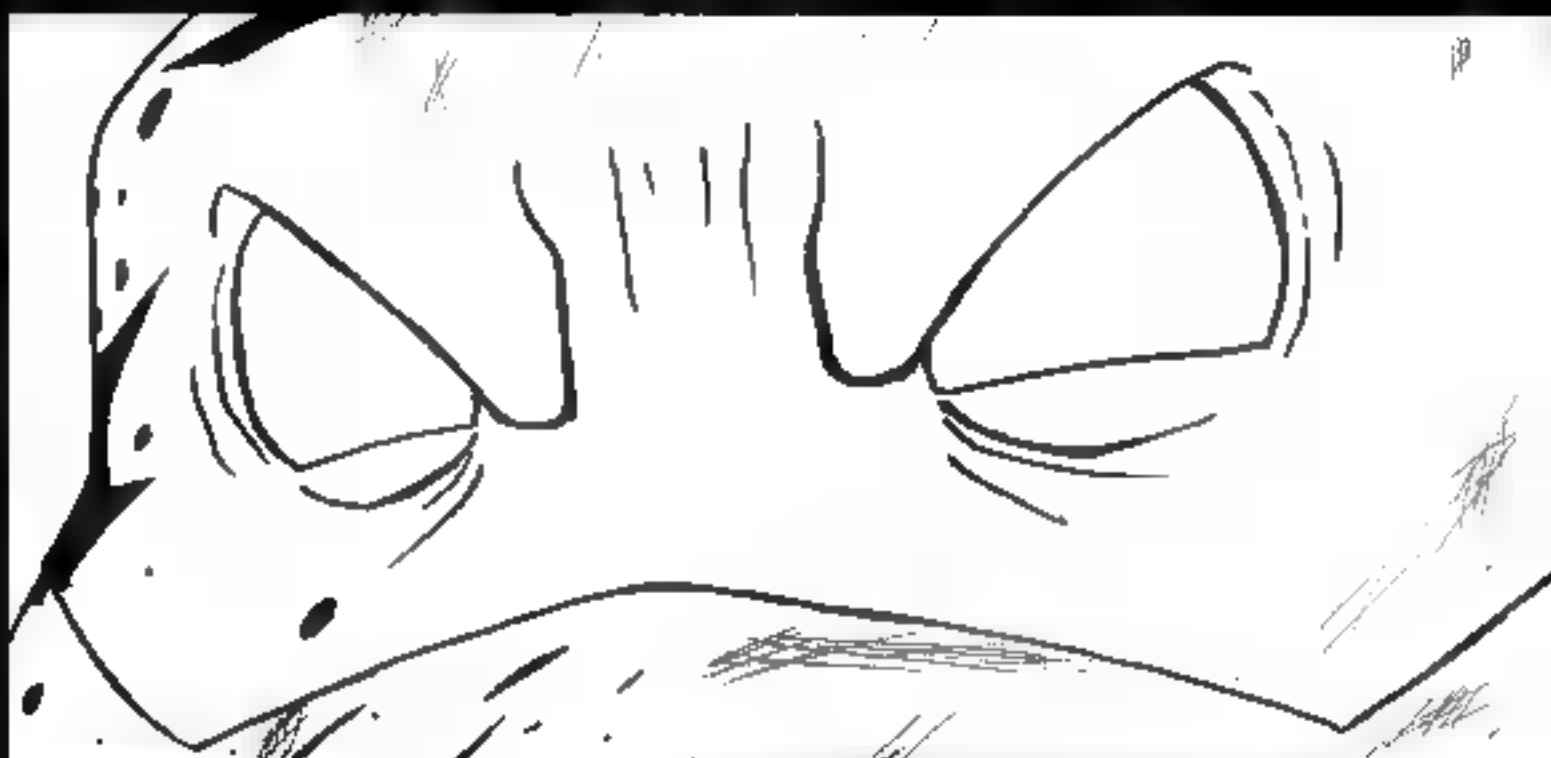
...SHIT.
DON'T TELL ME... YOU JUST
DIALED 911, OAVIANNA?

I... I... I
SHOULDN'T
HAVE???

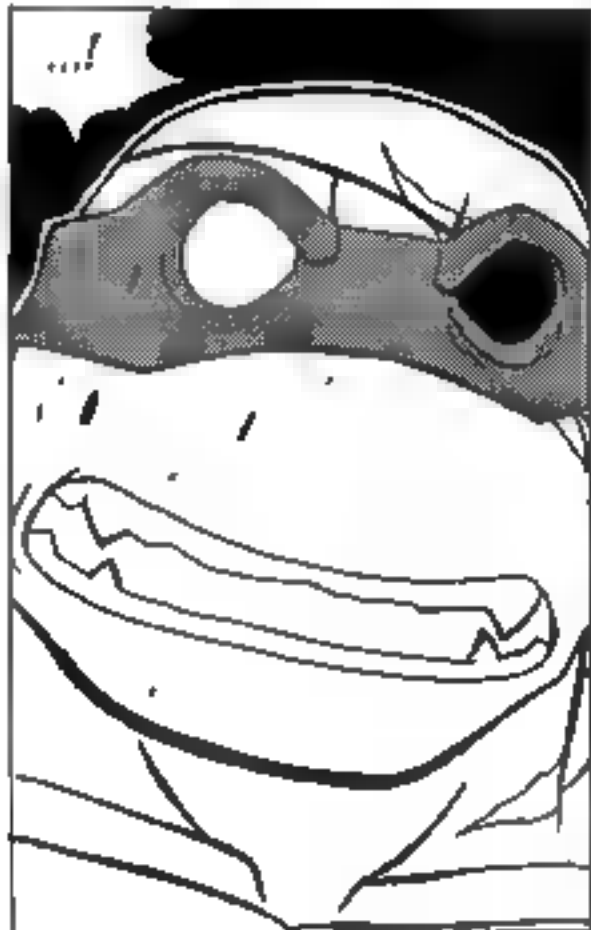
IT'S JUST THAT...
US MUTANTS
DON'T GET MUCH
"LOVE" FROM
AUTHORITIES...

RAPH. IT'S MY TURN TO
PROTECT YOU.

BECAUSE LETTING YOU
SUFFER ON YOUR OWN
ALL THE TIME...
THAT'S JUST NOT COOL!









...FLUCKIN' DEAD,
SCUMBAG!!



YOU...



S...SHIT!

OH NO,
YA
DON'T!!

YA THINK YA
COULD GET AWAY,
HUH? HUH?

UWOOOH!







R...
RAPH!

Y...YOU'RE JUST
GONNA STOOP
DOWN TO THEIR
LEVEL!

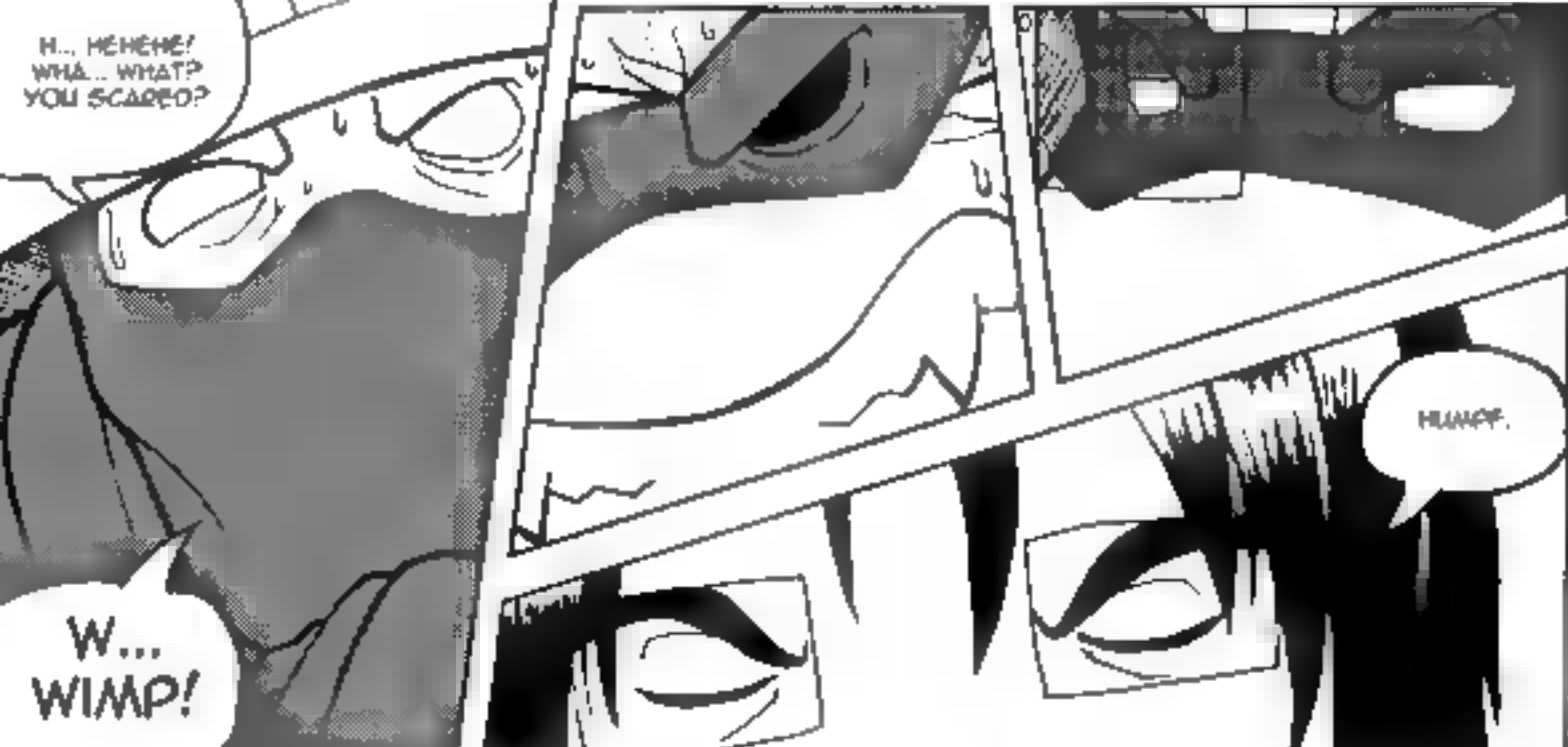
G...GAH...
HAH...HAH...

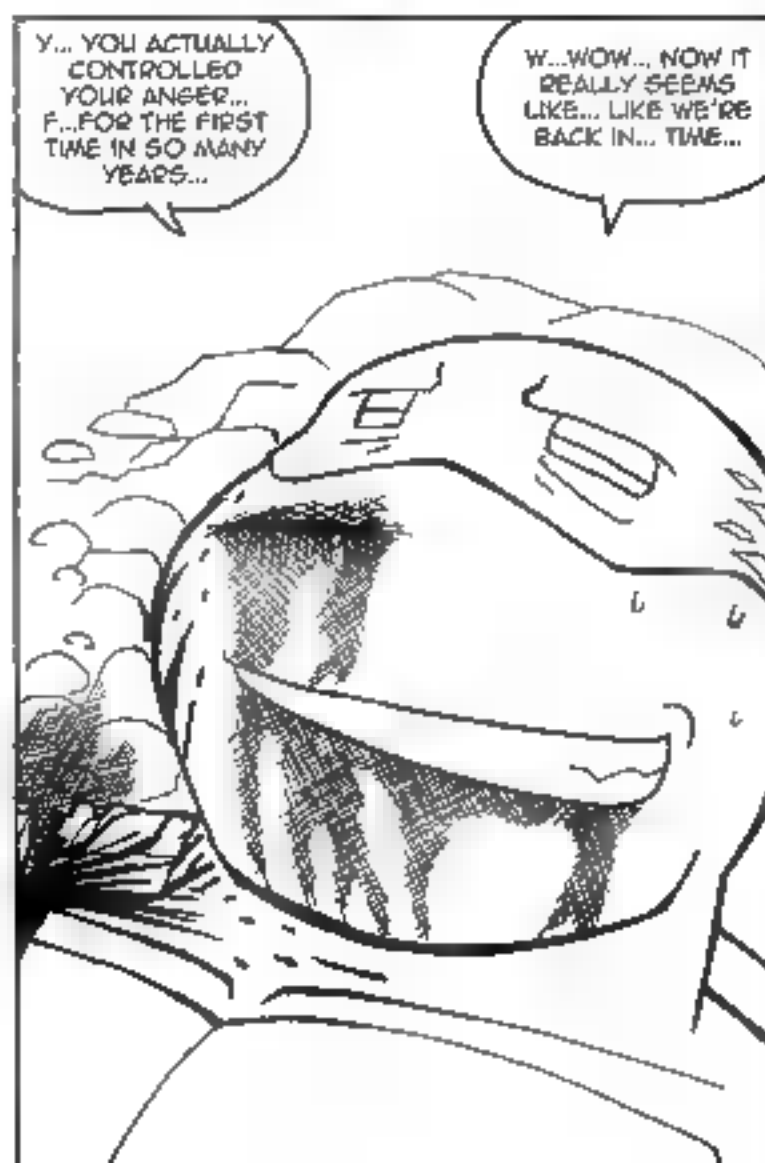
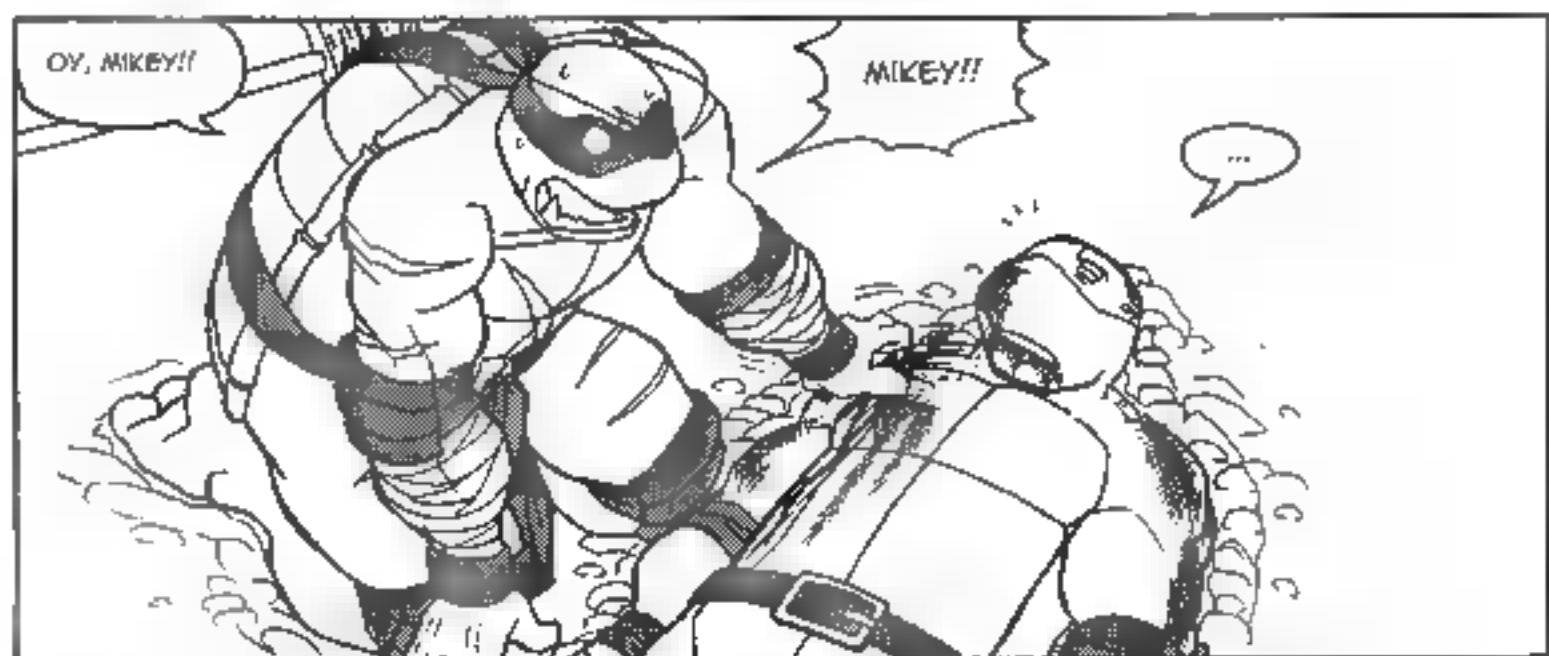
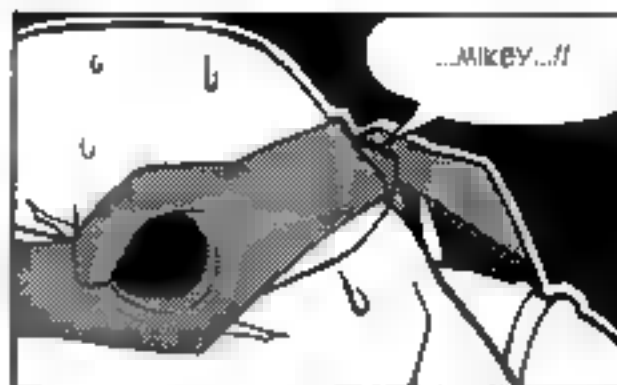
DON'T!!

REMEMBER...?
THE SENSEI...
HE... TAUGHT
US BETTER
THAN THAT...

T... THAT'S WHY...
THAT'S WHY WE'RE
NOT LIKE THEM FOOT
NINJAS, RAPH! WE
HAVE A CONSCIENCE!
WE DON'T KILL
UNLESS IT'S OUR
LAST RESORT!

L... LOOK AROUND
YOU, RAPH... WE
WON, IT'S...
ALRIGHT NOW...





EVERYONE! THE POLICE
ARE COMING! LET'S GET
OUT OF HERE, FAST!

TH...THE COPS?

WHO CALLED
THEM?

WE... WE
DON'T KNOW.

AFTER SO MANY YEARS...
THIS IS GOODBYE, MY
DEAR HUMVEE. DADDY
LOVED YOU TOO.

I'LL GET THE
LICENSE PLATE
NUMBER AND CALL
FOR BACKUP... WE
NEVER KNOW!

TONY... THIS
COSTUMED
MAN IS STILL
BREATHING...!

DRATS...

OH NO... WHAT IF THE
POLICE WERE TO FIND
OUT THAT THIS HUMVEE
IS MR. JONES'?

CASEY AND
APRIL CAN
HANDLE IT.

LET'S LEAVE THIS
PLACE BEFORE MORE
COPS ARRIVE.

I'M GONNA HAVE
TO LET GO OF
THE HUMVEE.
THEY GOT IT...

AS LONG AS WE
REMAIN DISCRETE,
WE SHOULD HAVE
NO PROBLEM
AT ALL.

O.. DISCRETE...
RAPH...?

MIKEY... I'LL
PROTECT
YOU..

THEY'RE GOING TO BE OKAY, RIGHT?

NO. IN FACT, THEY'RE IN DEEP TROUBLE.

BECAUSE OF MIKEY'S WOUNDS, THEY'RE GOING TO LEAVE A TRAIL OF BLOOD AS WELL, MAKING IT EASIER FOR THE AUTHORITIES TO TRACE THEM.

IF IT WAS STILL SNOWING, IT WOULDN'T HAVE BEEN A CONCERN, BUT...

OH NO...! SO THEY'RE GOING TO BE SITTING DUCK FOR THE POLICE?

...ISN'T THERE ANYTHING WE CAN DO TO HELP?

CHECK OUT THOSE TRACKS IN THE SNOW.

YEAH, THERE IS! DONNIE, YOU'LL GO AFTER RAPH AND MIKEY, YEAH?

LEAVE RENOIR AND OAVIANNA TO ME!

DON'T WORRY, I'LL CARRY YOU!

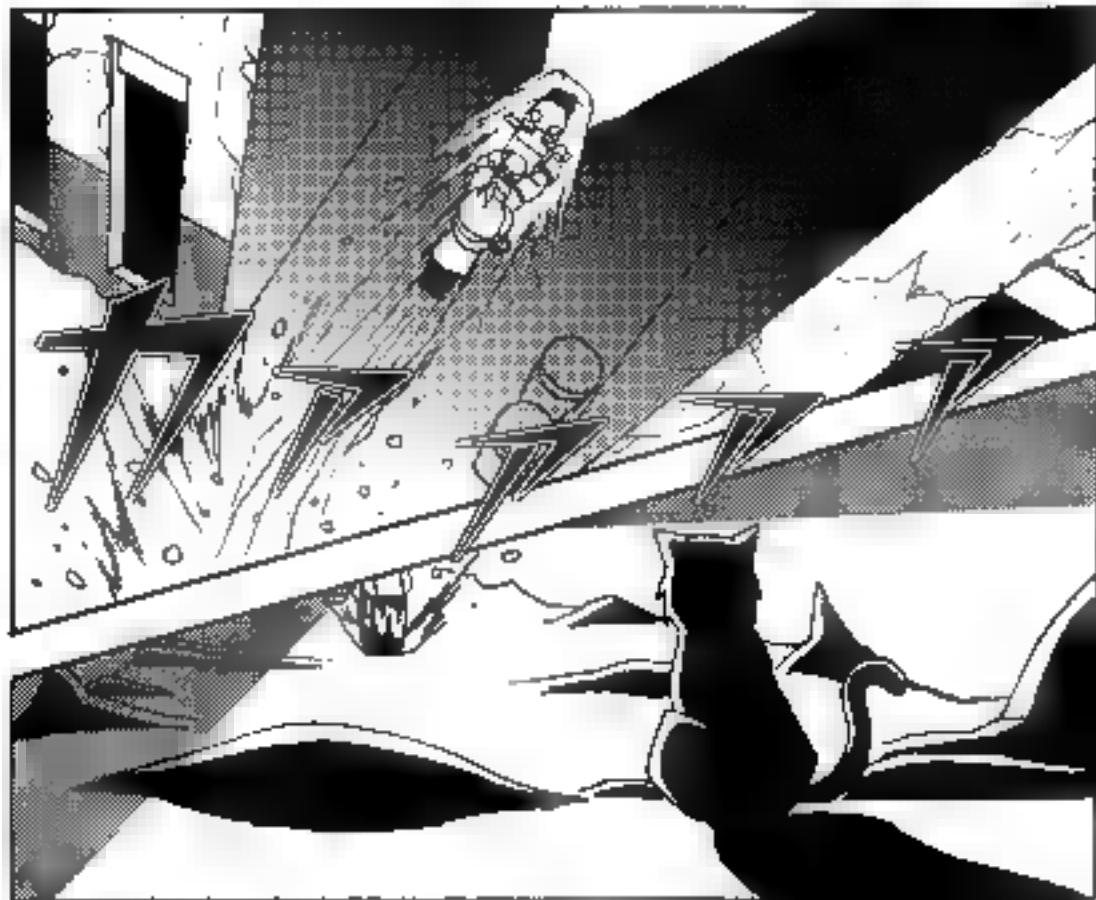
TH...THANKS, MR. JONES!

(WHY DOES EVERYONE TRY TO KEEP ME AWAY FROM THAT SPECIMEN?)

HOLD ON TIGHT!

AH! IT'S THE MUTANTS AGAIN!!

HEY, YOU! FREEZE!!





"YOU TRAITORS! WHY DIDN'T
YOU STAND UP FOR ME? I
KNOW I WAS BAD, BUT I
DIDN'T DESERVE THIS!"

I HATE YOU!
I HATE YOU!
I HATE YOU!
I HOPE YOU
ALL DIE DIE
DIE DIE DIE
DIE DIE DIE!



AND
NEVER EAT
ICE CREAM
AGAIN!

...BUT RAPH, I AGREED
WITH MASTER SPLINTER.
YOU SHOULD'VE STOPPED
HITTING MIKEY ON THE
HEAD THE FIRST TIME HE
WARNED YOU

YEAH, JUST LIKE
DONNIE SAID! BAD,
BAD RAPHE! MASTER
SPLINTER SAID NO
ICEY FOR RAPHE!

YOU BOZO! I
CAN GET MY OWN
ICE CREAM!



I HATE YOU
TOO, YOU
OLD FART!

GWAAAAH!



RAPHAEL!
COME BACK
HERE!

NO! YOU STINK
ANYWAYS!

HE'LL BE
BACK.

YEAH.



STOP FOLLOWING
ME! I DIDN'T ASK
FOR YOUR HELP!

STOP IT, I SAID! I
DON'T NEED YOU!
I DON'T NEED
ANYBODY!!



I DIDN'T KNOW MELTED
ICE CREAM TASTED
THIS GOOD... THE
BEST, REALLY.

'TIS WEIRD... I'M
REALLY HAPPY
YOU DIDN'T
LEAVE ME
ALONE, EVEN IF
THAT'S WHAT I
WANTED...

THEN... THEN...
IT'S OKAY IF I
SAY THIS? YOU
KNOW, LIKE
JUST BETWEEN
US...

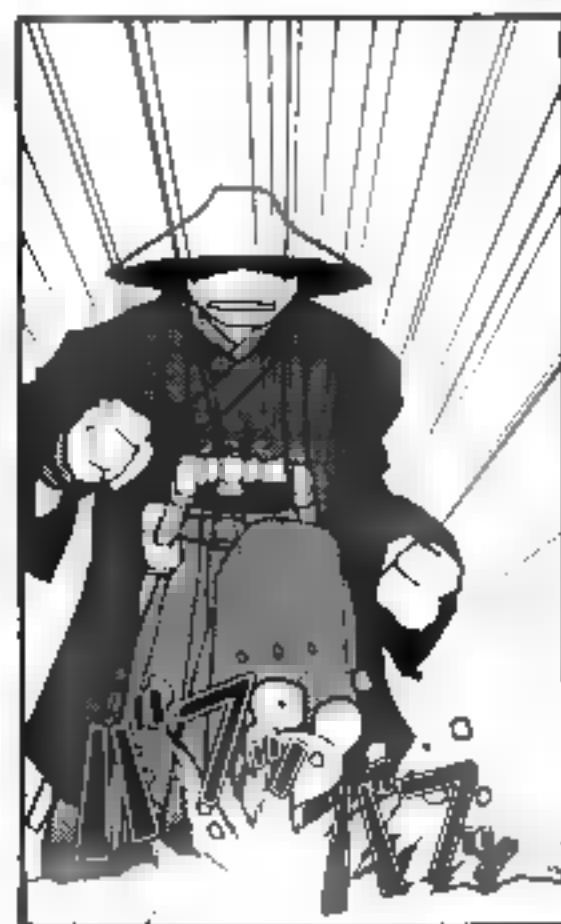
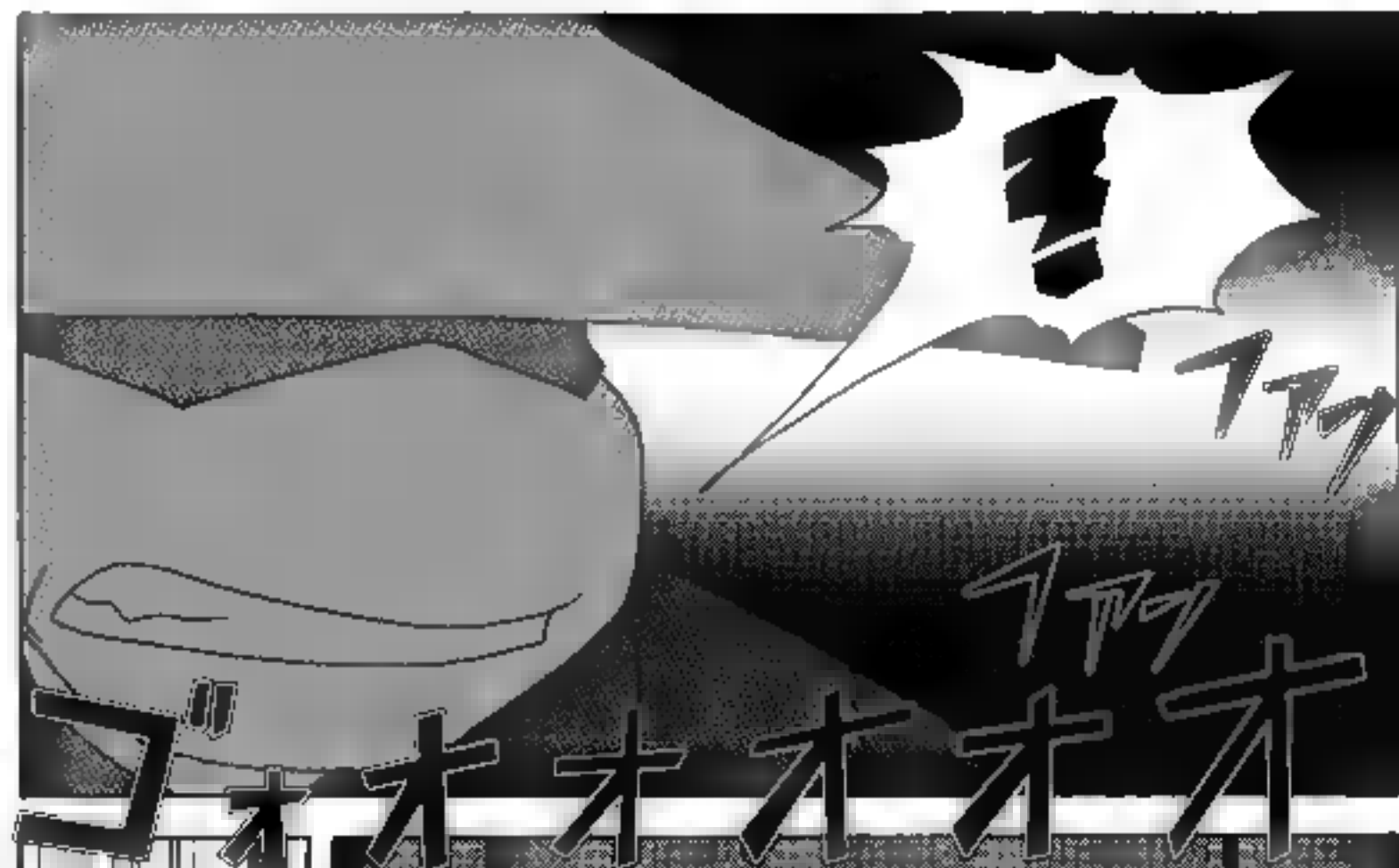
YOU KNOW ME BETTER
THAN THE OTHERS, SO...
WHEN I SAY I DON'T
NEED HELP... YOU'LL
KNOW WHAT I REALLY
MEAN BY THAT, RIGHT?

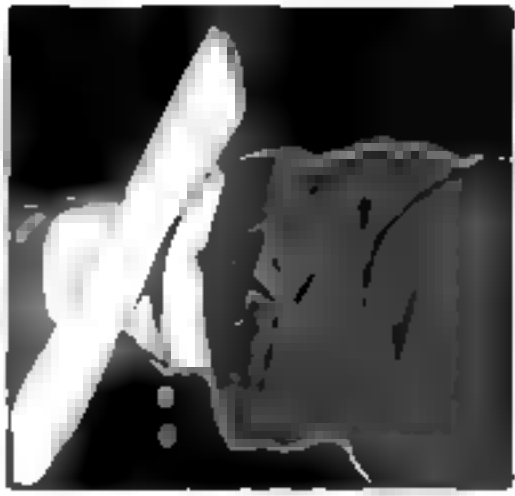
"I'LL NEVER WAIT FOR YOU.
I'LL NEVER ASK FOR YOUR
HELP EITHER.

BUT... JUST COME AND HELP
ME ANYWAYS, OKAY? DO THAT
AND REMIND ME THAT IT'S
ALWAYS BETTER THIS WAY.

I SWEAR I'LL THANK YOU
LATER."



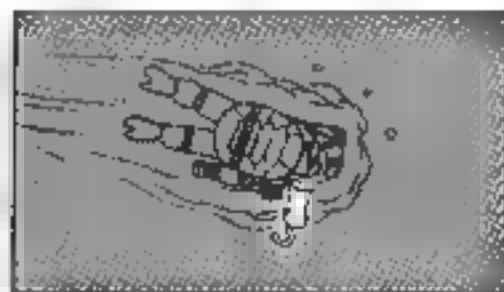
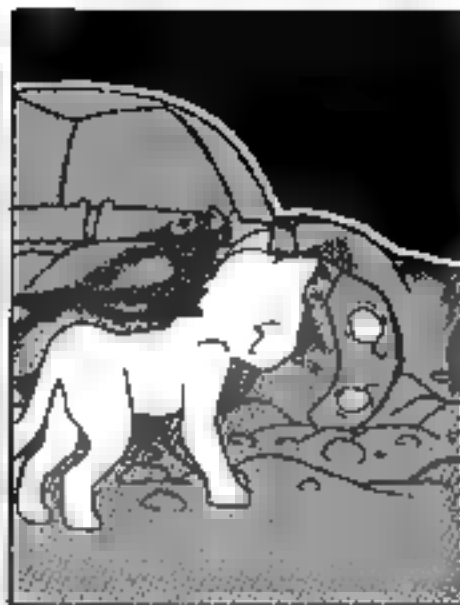
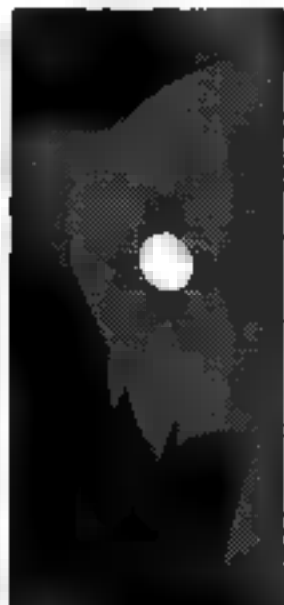




「...」

「...」





K...KLUNK... YOU
LIL' TRICKSTER...

JUST WHAT DO
YOU WANT
FROM ME...?



WHAT THE
HELL WAS
THAT...?

THAT COULDN'T
BE...



AHH!!
MIKEY!!

MIKEY! YOU
OKAY, BRO?

HA... HAHA...
I... I G... GET
IT NOW...



THE ANSWER...
IT... IT WAS RIGHT
THERE... ALL
ALONG...

THE...
ANSWER...



MIKEY!



...GOOD TO SEE
YOU'RE STILL IN
ONE PIECE...



STAY HERE.

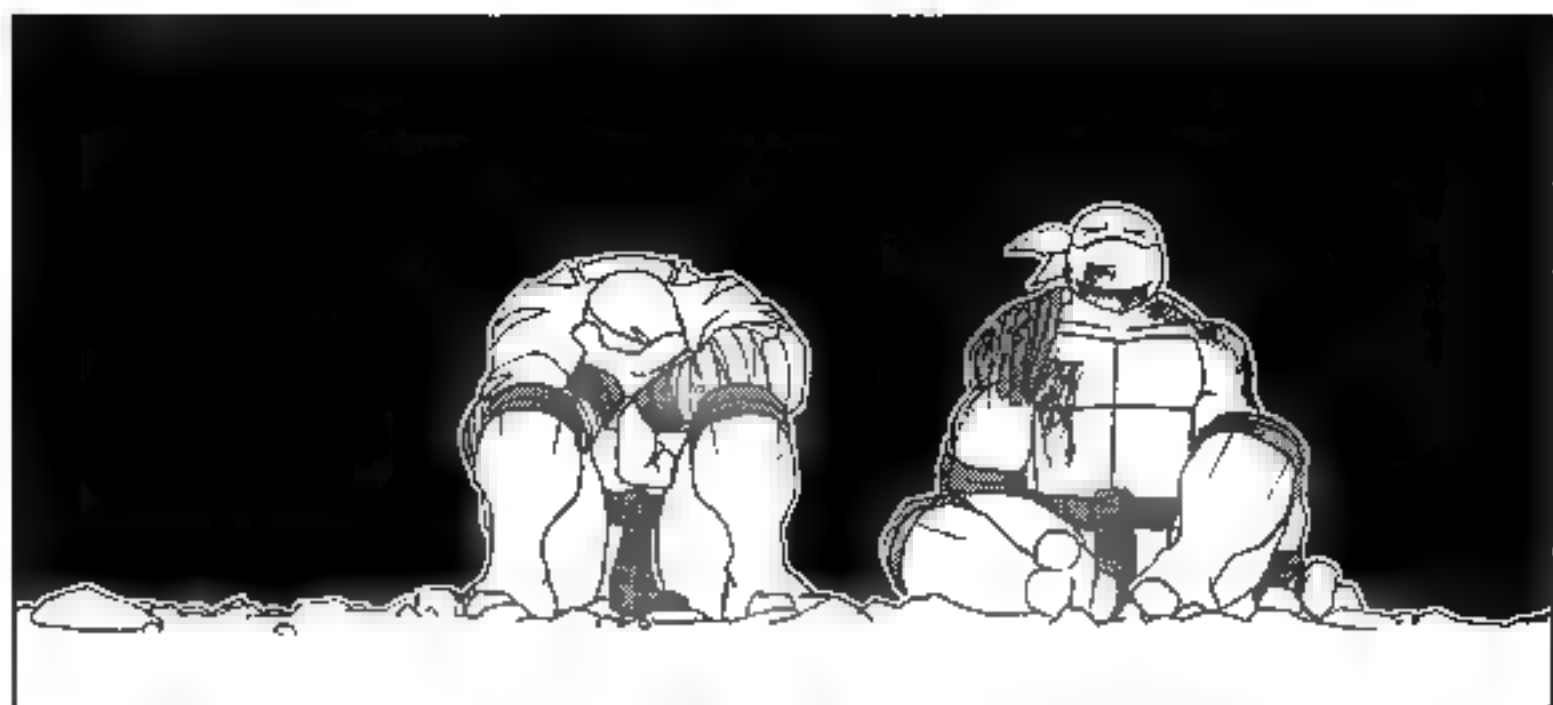
IT DOESN'T LOOK
LIKE THIS PIECE OF
JUNK'S GONNA
BRING US ANYWHERE
NOW...

B... BLOOD?

NO WAY...
HE WAS BLEEDIN'
ALL THIS TIME?

HE WAS
DYIN'... AND I
DIDN'T DO
ANYTHIN'
'BOUT IT!!

...SHT.



RAPH...



I'VE ALWAYS
THOUGHT
THAT MY PAST
SELF WAS A
SEPARATE
ENTITY THAT I
ISOLATED
SEVENTEEN
YEARS AGO.



HOWEVER, ■ THE
MOST OF BATTLE, I
REALIZED THAT I AM
THE EXTENSION OF
MY PAST.
EVERYTHING IT
WAS - I AM.
EVERYTHING IT
FELT - I'LL
EVENTUALLY FEEL.



IT CAME TO ME AS A
DISTANT FEELING SO
INTENSE AND NOSTALGIC...
IT WAS LIKE... LIKE A
SHARD OF HAPPINESS
FROM MY PAST. IT FILLED
ME WITH CONFIDENCE AND
COURAGE...


AND THEN I
REMEMBERED IT...
THIS ONE THING
THAT MADE ME
FEEL COMPLETE
ONCE AGAIN.



THE FOUNDATION OF
OUR BROTHERHOOD:
THE POWER OF OUR
BONDS.


TOGETHER, WE WERE
UNSTOPPABLE.




A black and white comic panel showing two characters in a rocky, mountainous landscape. The character on the left is wearing a helmet and looking towards the right. The character on the right is also wearing a helmet and looking towards the left. They appear to be in a conversation.

REMEMBER, DAPH?
HE USED TO ALWAYS
TRAIN, SOAR, TALK,
PATROL, FIGHT, COY,
SMILE AND LAUGH,
TOGETHER AS
BROTHERS

WHEN I LOOK AT
THINGS THAT WAY
THE HARDSHIPS
WE'VE GONE
THROUGH WERE
MERELY A SMALL
PRICE TO PAY FOR
THOSE INVALUABLE
MEMORIES

A large, close-up black and white comic panel of a character's face. The character has a determined expression, with a slight smile. Their hand is visible near their face, with fingers slightly curled. The background is dark and indistinct.

I, I'VE DECIDED,
DAPH I'LL RECLAIM
EVERYTHING FROM
MY PAST GOOD
AND BAD I'M NO
LONGER AFRAID OF
ANYTHING

A large, close-up black and white comic panel of a character's face. The character has a determined expression, with a slight smile. Their hand is visible near their face, with fingers slightly curled. The background is dark and indistinct.

I JUST WANT TO
BE ABLE TO BE
HAPPY AGAIN THE
WAY I WAS BACK
THEN





DON'T SAY THAT!

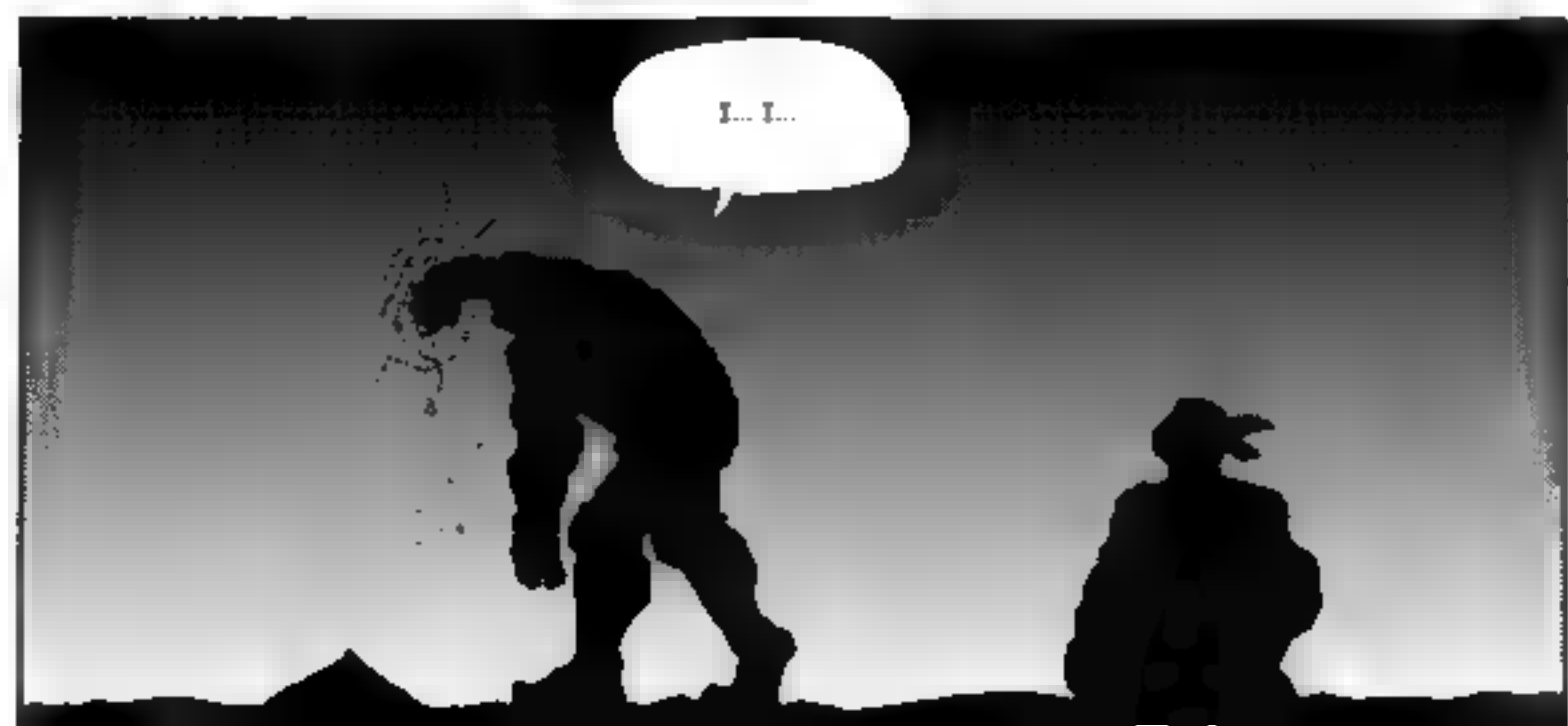


IT'S NOT
OKAY!!



I SCREWED
UP AGAIN!!

I FUCKED UP
BIG TIME!!




I... I...






I I NEVER DO THINGS
RIGHT AIN'T GOT IT IN
ME TO EVEN PROTECT
SOMEONE

COULDN'T EVEN HELP YA
N YA NEEDED ME THE
... I WANTED SO BAD TO
YA... YET I DIDN'T EVEN
BLEEDIN' ALL OVER THE
PLACE

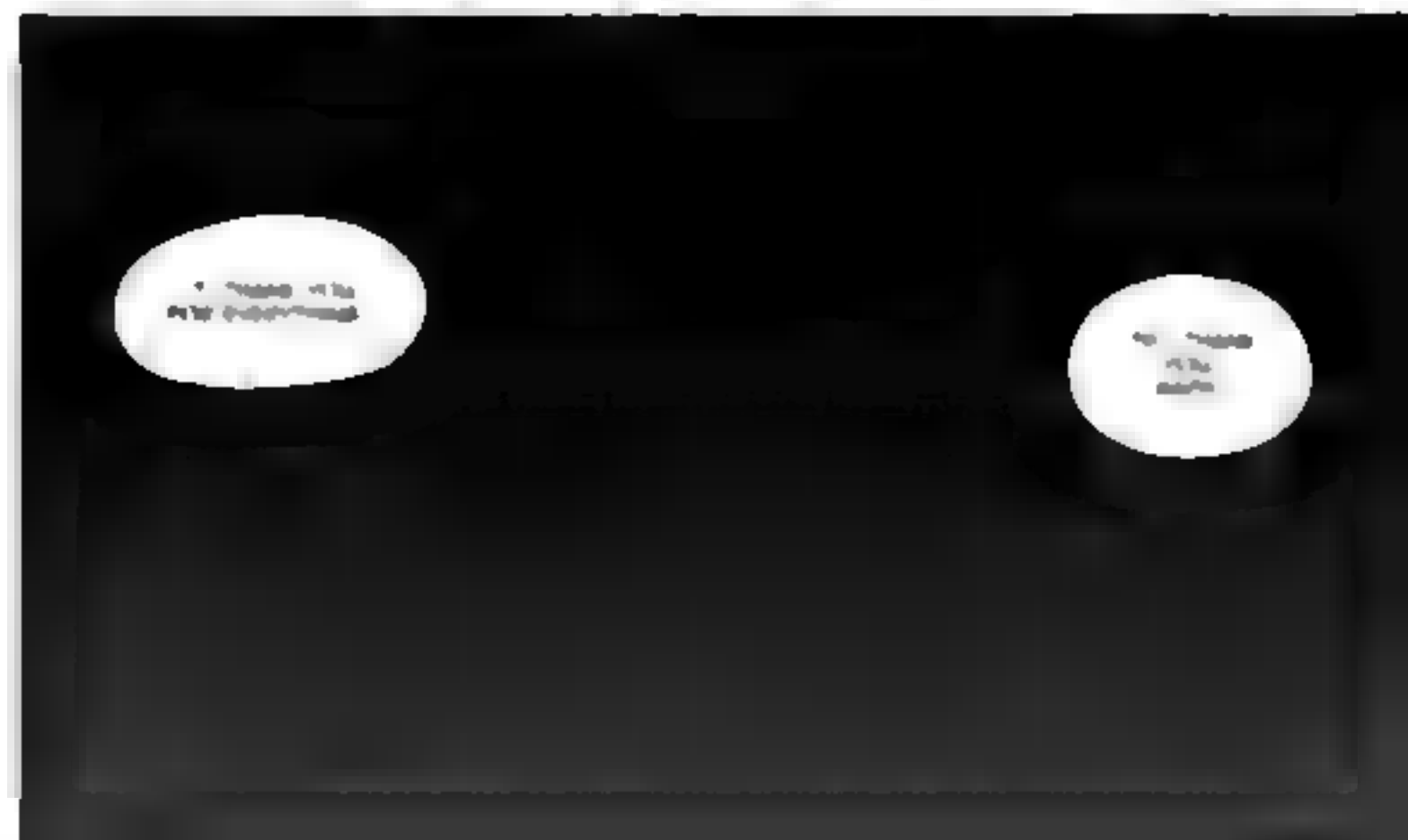


ALL THESE YEARS... I
NEVER DID A DAMN
THING TO HELP YA..

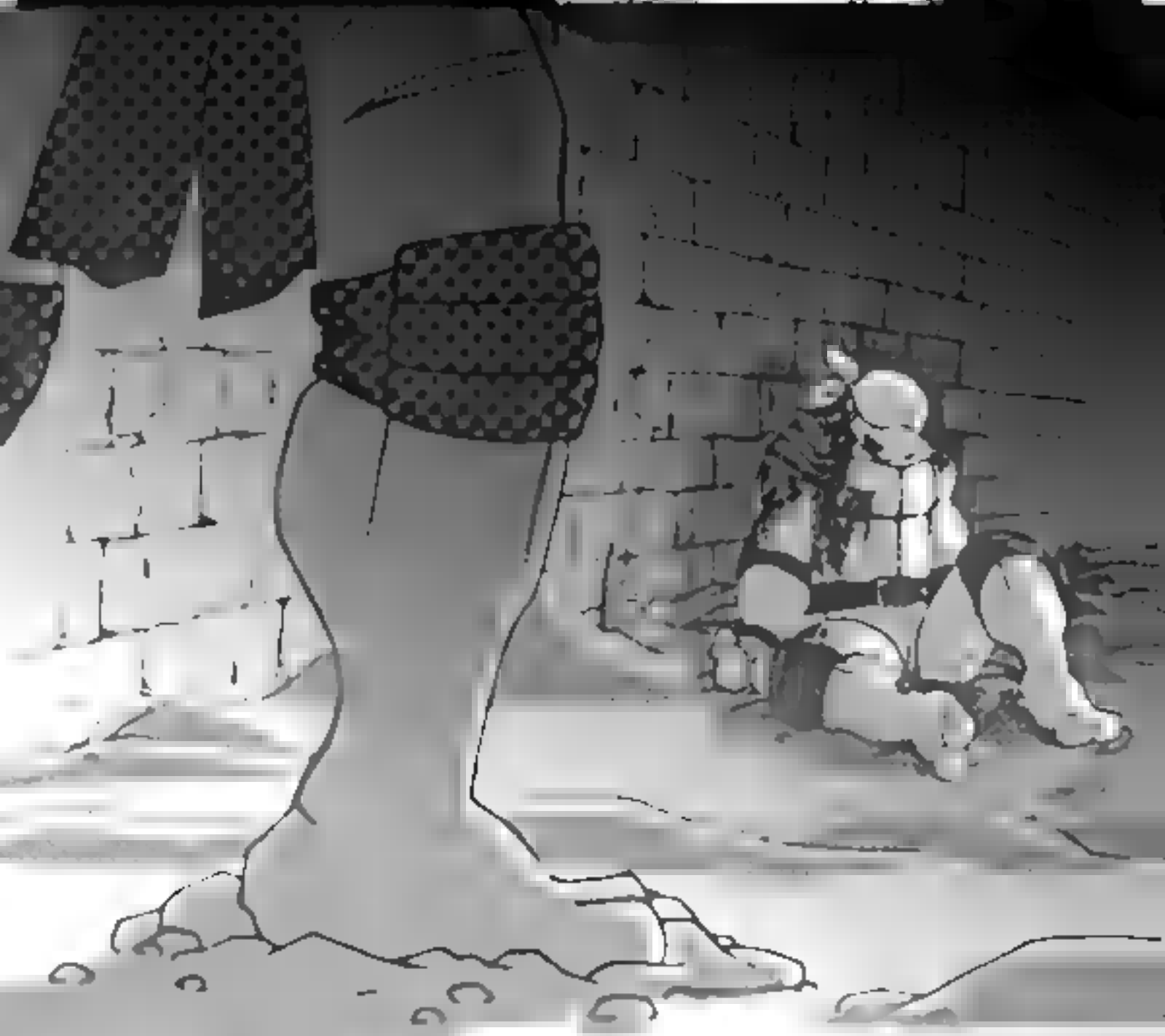
AND JUST WHEN I
FOUND OUT HOW
MUCH YA MEANT TO
ME.. I.. I FAILED
YA MY OWN
BROTHER

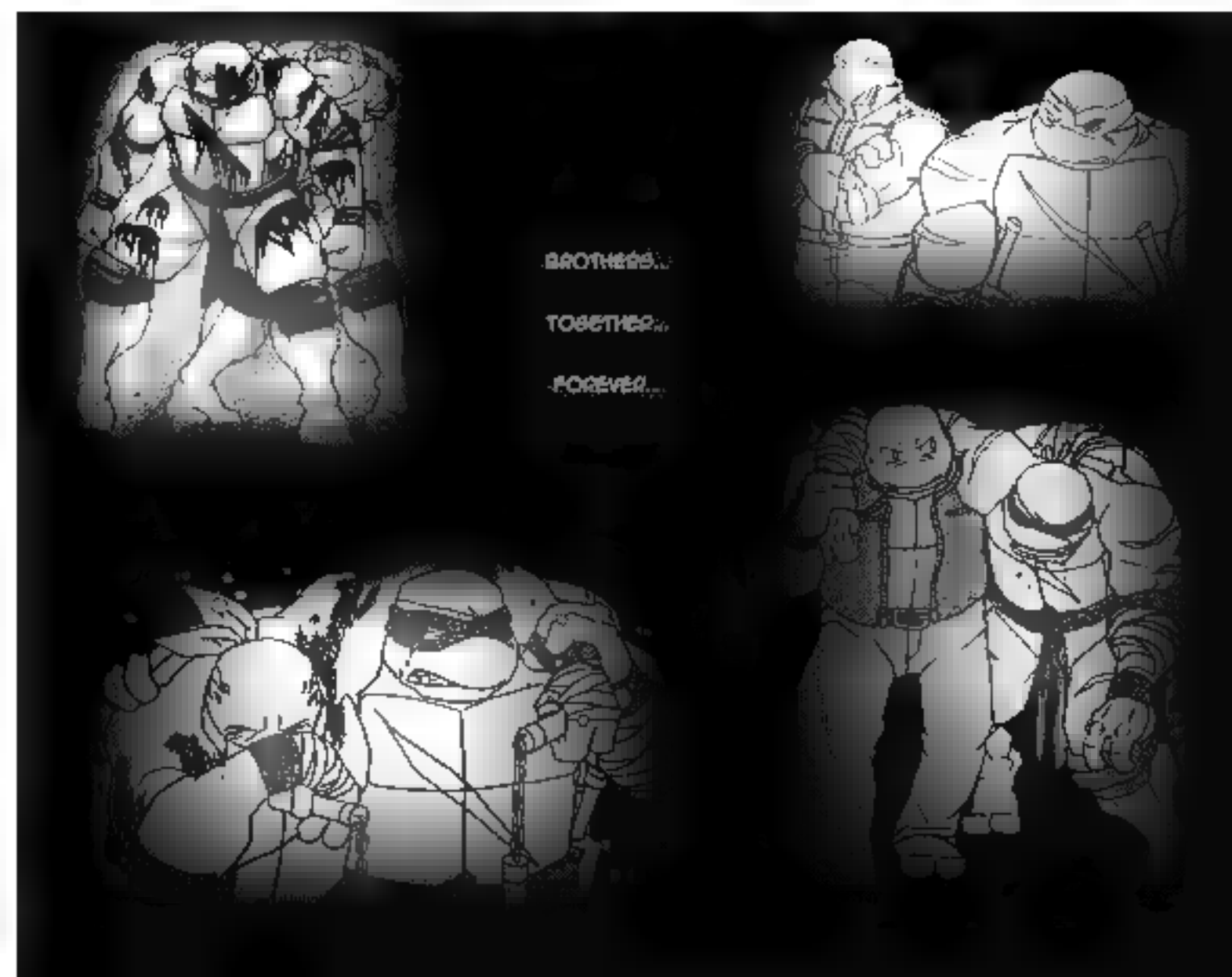
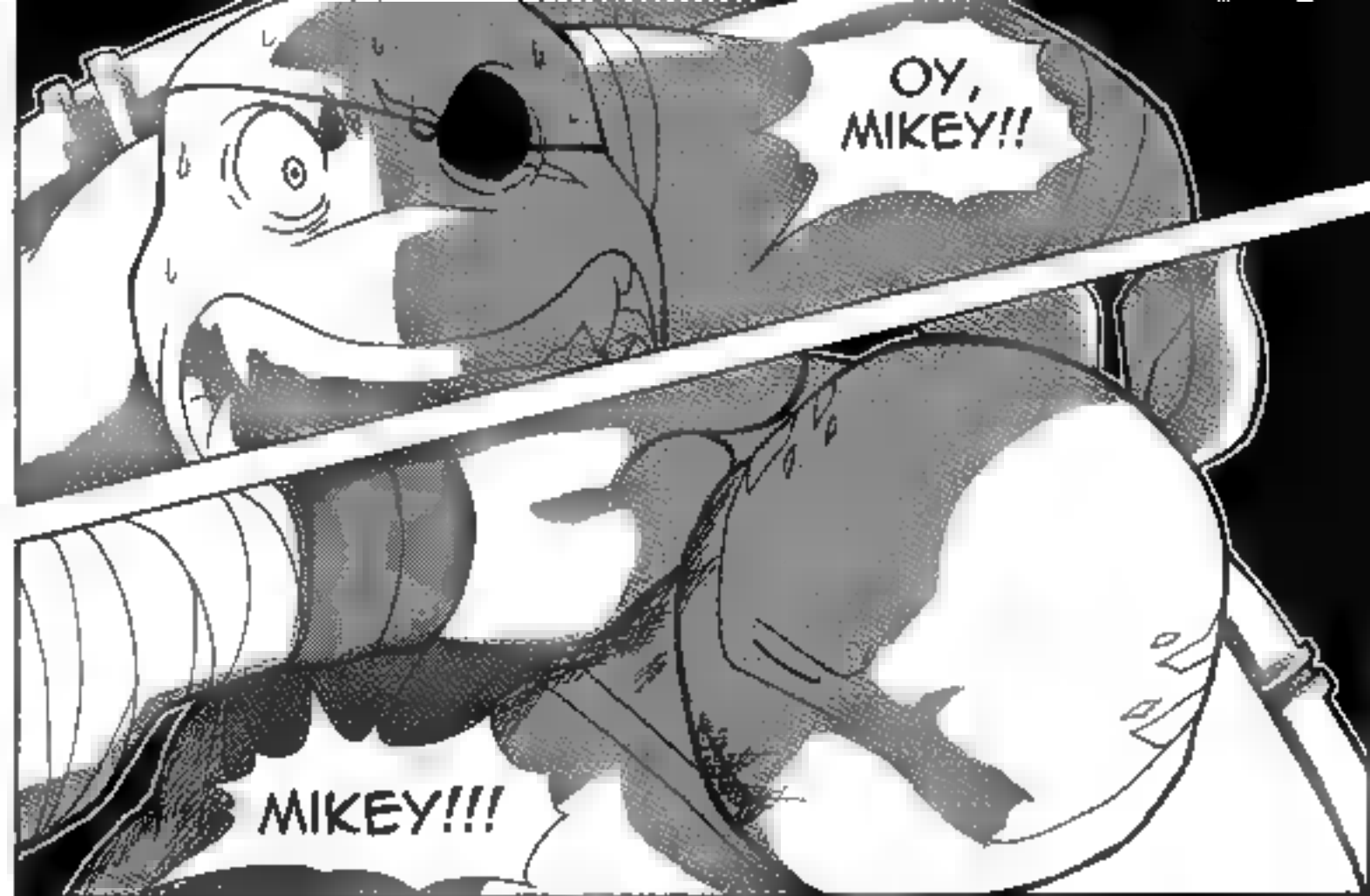


© RAPH YOU YOU
DID SO MUCH FOR ME
THAT WOUND ON YOUR
SH... SHEL... THAT'S THE
... F...

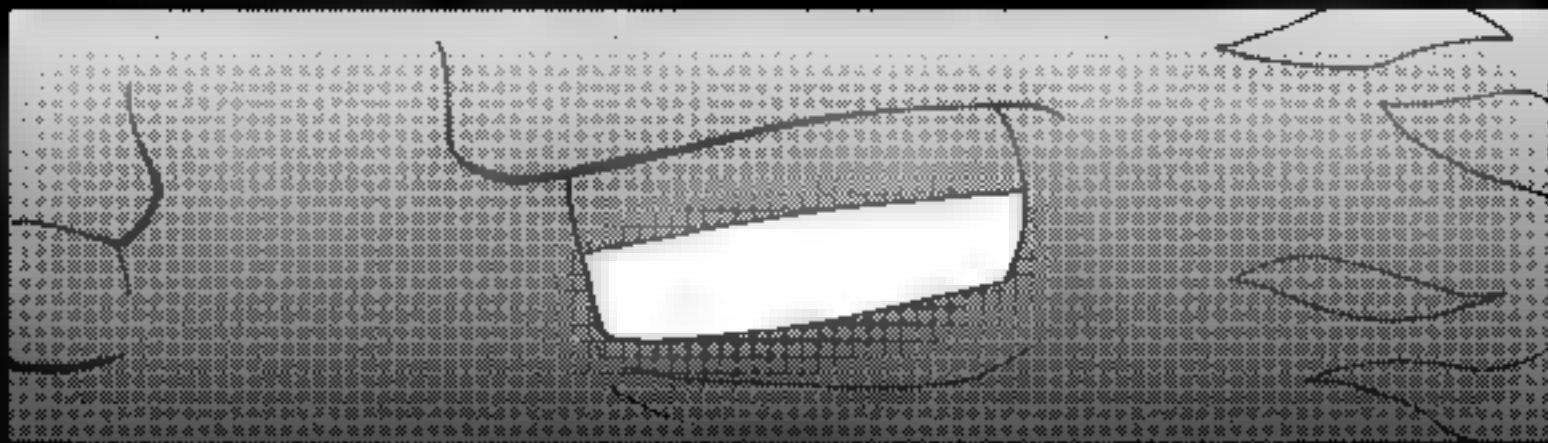


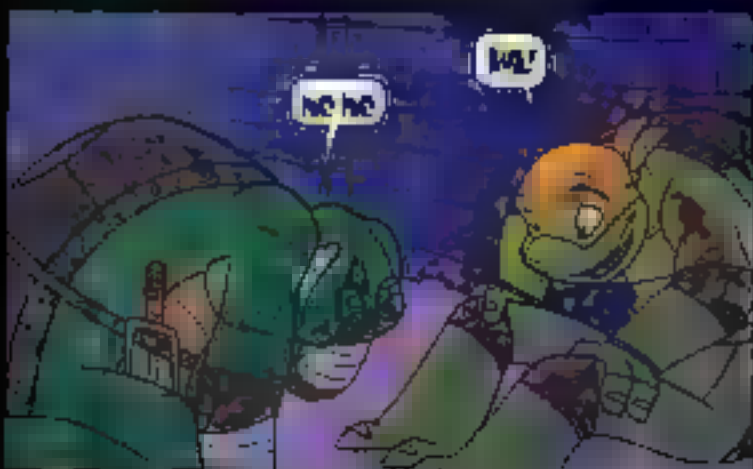
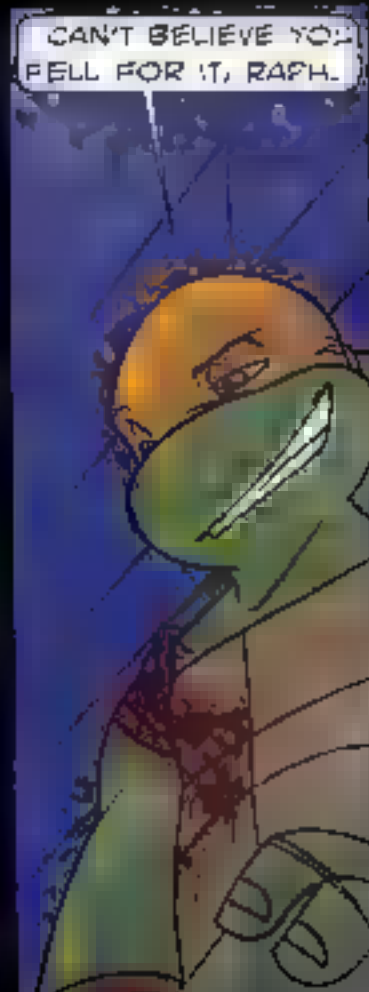
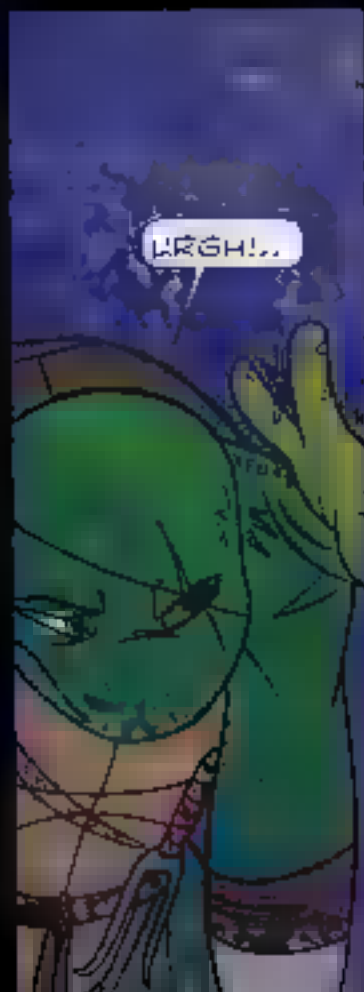
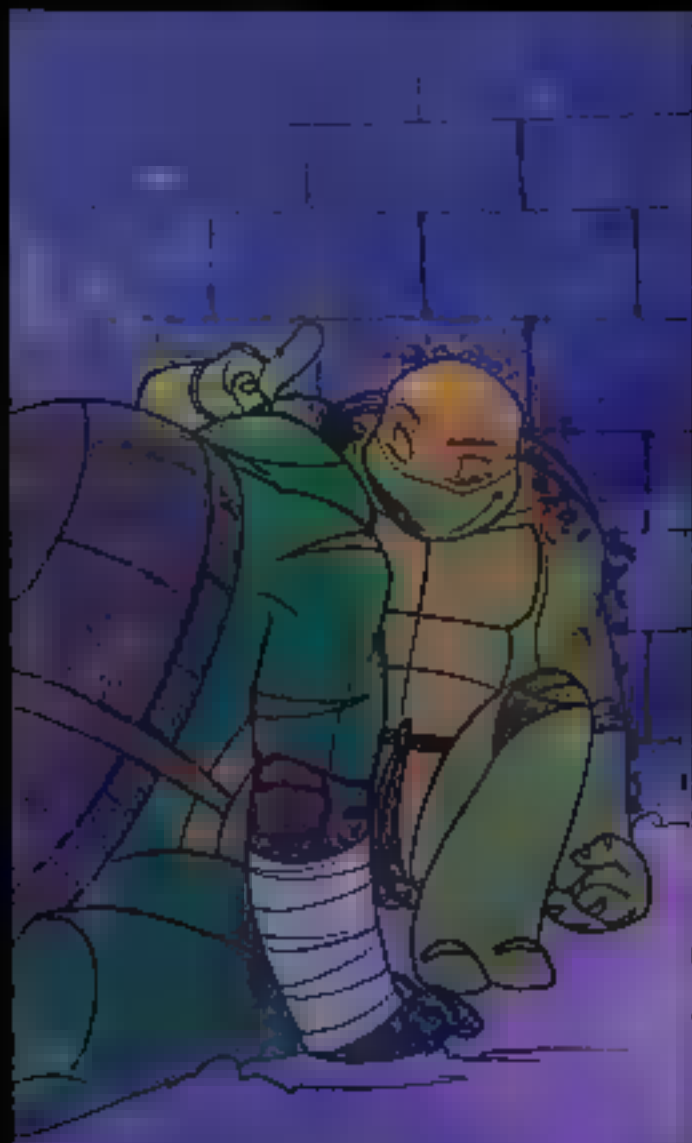
M...MARRY...?











DON' CHA FLICKIN'
"HAHAHA" ME!! THAT
WAS A LAME-ASS
JOKE!!



HYAAA!!
PLEASE BE
GENTLE DEAR
BRO! ♡



ARSH!! MY
ARM! THE
PAIN! THE
PAIN!!



WAKY
WAKY.

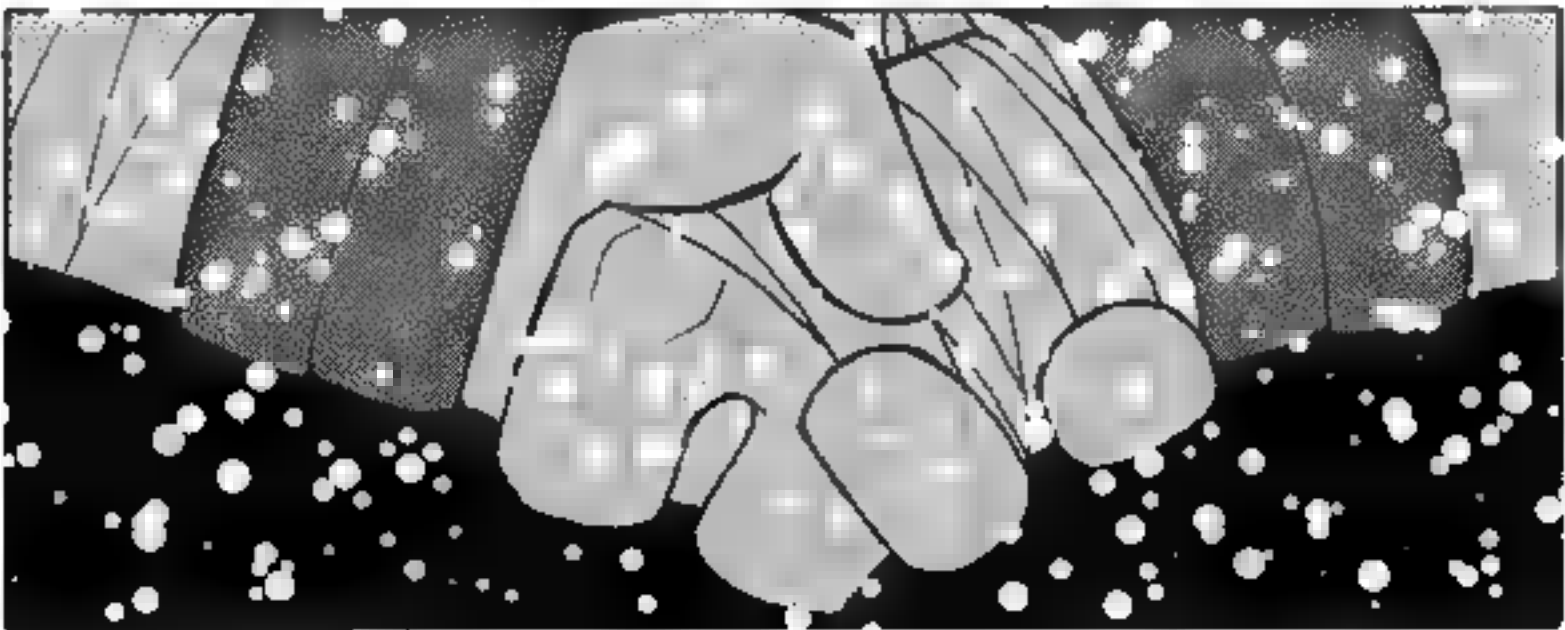
O... OKAY. I
CONFESS.
I'M NOT
DEAD.

DON' CHA EVER
PULL OFF THIS KIND
OF PRANK AGAIN...



...ESPECIALLY NOT TO
PEOPLE WHO ACTUALLY C...
CARE 'BOUT YA... ALRIGHT?





WELCOME BACK,
MIKEY.

"COWABUNGA"
FOREVER, RAPH.



...HEH, ALL OF THIS WAS
JUST DAMN CHEESY...

YAH, I WON'T TELL
A SOUL, RAPH.

ME NEITHER, AND
YOU'RE RIGHT ABOUT
YOUR CONFESSION
BEING CHEESY.

LET'S KEEP IT FOR
OURSELVES... 'AIGHT?

JUST WATCHING THE
BOTH OF YOU
MADE ME FEEL
EMBARRASSED.

"WELCOME BACK?"
"COWABUNGAS FOREVER?"
WHAT NEXT? HUGS AND
TEARS?

OH SHUDDAP, DONNIE.
AT LEAST IF WE CRIED,
WE'D BE SHEDDING
MANLY TEARS.

H...HUH??
WHUT?

ANYWAYS, THINK
BEFORE YOU ACT
NEXT TIME, RAPH.

YOU'RE LUCKY
SOMEONE WAS
LOOKING OUT FOR
YOU TONIGHT.

S... SOMEONE?

THE TRACKS YOU LEFT
AS YOU ESCAPED
COULD'VE LED THE
POLICE TO YOU,
HOWEVER...

...SOMEONE ERASED
YOUR TRACKS AND
ACTED AS A DECOY TO
LURE YOUR PURSUERS
AWAY FROM HERE.

DO YOU KNOW
WHO THAT WAS?

IF YER FISHIN' FOR
COMPLIMENTS,
JUST SAY IT
STRAIGHT OUT
THAT IT WAS YOU
WHO SAVED US,
DONNIE.

INDEED,
YOU OWE
ME YOUR
LIVES...

...NOT!! IT
WASN'T ME!
THAT'S WHY
I'M ASKING
THE FIRST
PLACE!

HEY, FRANKLY,
WHO CARES?
WE'RE SAFE AND
THAT'S ALL THAT
COUNTS.

WHAT? YA THOUGHT
IT COULDA BEEN
"HIM"?

A...
ANYWAYS...

WHERE ARE
WE HEADIN'
TO, NOW?

LET'S GO TO APRIL'S
APARTMENT. REMEMBER
WHAT SHE TOLD US? SHE
EXPECTS US TO BE BACK
FOR CHRISTMAS.

YEAH! THE NIGHT'S STILL
YOUNG! LET'S ER...
"PAP-TAY"!! HEHEHE!
COME, MY LOYAL
SUBJECT! CARRY ME TO
MY BANQUET!

I'M GLAD YOU'RE
BACK. BUT DON'T
PUSH IT, JARKEY.

(SIGH) SO IT WAS YOU..

YOU'RE THE ONE WHO CALLED THE COPS.

THEY TRACKED YOUR CELLPHONE ID TO YOUR HOME... THAT'S WHY THEY'RE RIGHT OVER THERE, HUH?

I KNOW IT AIN'T YER FOLKS WHO CALLED THE COPS. I ASKED APRIL TO CONTACT 'EM TO COVER UP YER ABSENCE UNTIL WE CAME BACK WITH YA.

I'M REALLY SORRY, MR. JONES. I'LL TRY TO MAKE UP FOR AN EXCUSE THAT WILL KEEP YOU AND ALL THE OTHERS SAFE...

NOW, THAT AIN'T THE ISSUE HERE, GIRL. APRIL AND I CAN WORK OUR WAY THROUGH THIS SITUATION. WE'VE BEEN MUCH WORSE THAN THIS.

ALSO, ANY SANE PERSON WOULD'VE CALLED THE COPS IN YER PLACE. I MEAN, NINJAS IN NEW YORK TRYIN' TO HARM PEOPLE... THAT'S JUST SCREAMIN' FOR SOME PUBLIC ORDER, EH?

BUT SEE THIS GUY HERE? HE MADE UP A LIE TO COVER UP YER MISTAKE WHILE YA STOOD THERE SAYIN' NOTHIN'. IF YA AIN'T GONNA 'PESS UP, YA COULD'VE AT LEAST TRIED TO COVER UP YER OWN MISTAKES INSTEAD OF LETTIN' HIM DO THE DIRTY WORK!

MR. JONES? CAN YOU PLEASE LEAVE US ALONE FOR TWO SECONDS?

IT WON'T BE LONG, I PROMISE.

DON' CHA KNOW IT'S THANKS TO HIM THAT YER STILL ALIVE RIGHT NOW?

'GUESS I JUST AIN'T GOOD WITH 'EM YOUNG 'UNS...



I HOPE
YOU'RE NO
LONGER MAD
AT SHADOW,
DAVIANNA...



H...HUN? OH,
NO, NO! OF
COURSE NOT!



I SAID MEAN
THINGS TO
HER TONIGHT.

I'M JUST GLAD
I'M GIVEN A
CHANCE TO
APOLOGIZE TO
HER...

I'M SUCH A
SELFISH,
USELESS
PERSON.



DON'T SAY
THAT.
REMEMBER
WHEN
SHADOW
USED TO
BULLY YOU
IN KINDER-
GARTEN?

ONE DAY, DURING A
FIELD TRIP, SHE FELL
IN A LAKE AND
ALMOST DROWNED.
DESPITE EVERYTHING
SHE DID TO YOU,
YOU WENT OUT OF
YOUR WAY TO HELP
HER.



YOU ONLY KNEW
JAPANESE... BUT YOU DID
YOUR BEST TO GET HELP
FROM PEOPLE, RUNNING
AROUND, SHOUTING WEIRD
WORDS LIKE "TASUKETE"
OR "ABUNAI"...

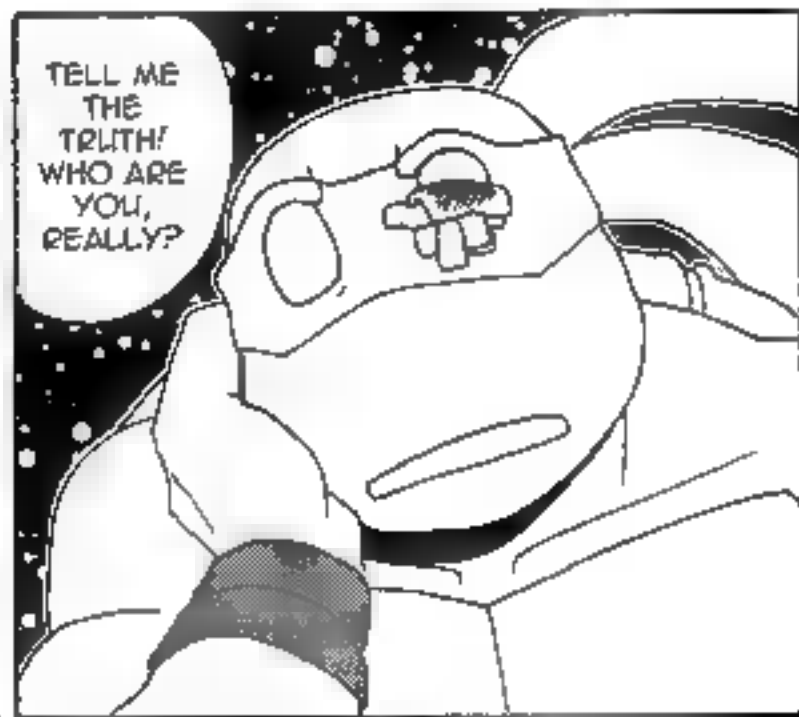
...SO DON'T WORRY
TOO MUCH ABOUT IT.
I THINK YOU'RE A
VERY ALTRUISTIC
PERSON!



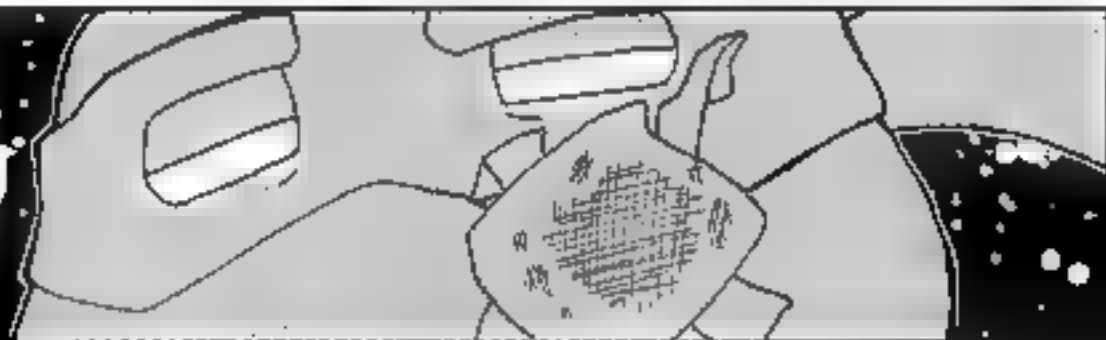
SO? FEEL
BETTER,
DAVIANNA?

RENOIR...

WHY DO YOU
KNOW SO MANY
DETAILS ABOUT
MY CHILDHOOD?
EVEN THINGS
SHADOW
DOESN'T KNOW?



I... I'VE BEEN WAITING
FOR THIS MOMENT FOR
SO LONG, DAVIANNA...
BUT, BUT NOW THAT
YOU'RE HERE, WITH ME... I
CAN GET THE ANSWER...



ANSWER...?
YOU MEAN
THAT...

...YOU
DON'T
KNOW
WHO YOU
ARE?



DAVIANNA...
I'M... I'M
AUGUSTUS,
RIGHT?

COME ON...
SAY IT...



WHAT? BUT... I
MEAN... I THINK
SO, BUT TO ME,
YOU ARE ALSO A
MUTANT THAT I
MET A FEW
MONTHS AGO...

GIVE ME A STRAIGHT
ANSWER, DAVIANNA!
EVERYONE'S BEEN
GIVING ME ALL KINDS OF
IDENTITIES UP TILL NOW!
RAPH'S STUDENT, WILD
MUTANT, MONSTER,
"RENOIR"...

...BUT I DON'T CARE
ABOUT THEM! WHAT
YOU THINK IS ALL THAT
MATTERS TO ME!
DECIDE WHO I AM FOR
ME... AND THAT'S ALL
THE TRUTH I NEED!

TELL ME WHAT I
WANTED TO HEAR
ALL THAT TIME!



WHY RELY
SO MUCH ON
HOW OTHERS
SEE YOU?

YOUR DEFINITIVE IDENTITY...
THAT'S SOMETHING THAT IS
YOURS ALONE TO DECIDE.
NOT OTHERS.



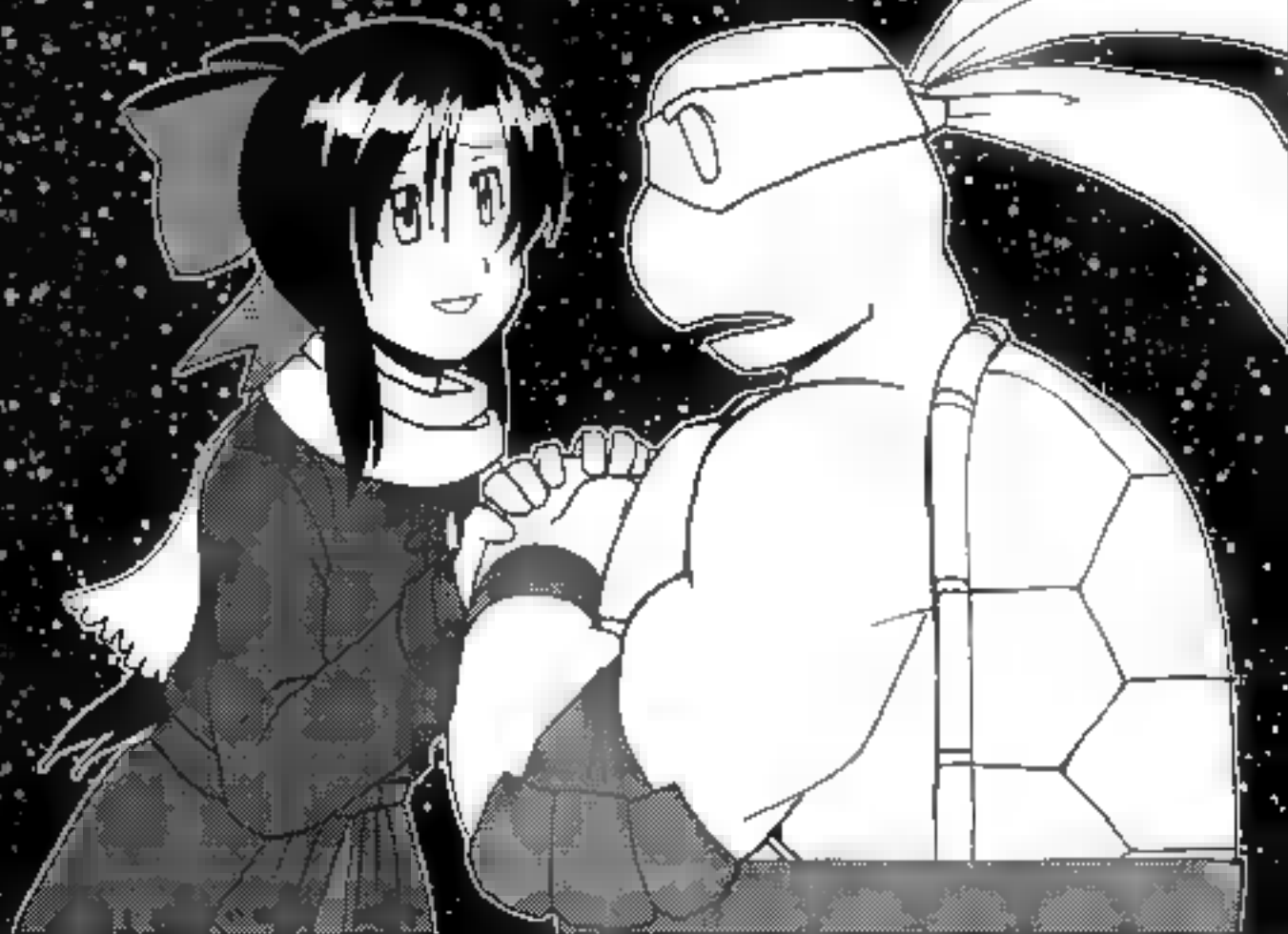
DON'T
LOOK TOO
FAR FOR
YOUR
ANSWER...



BUT... BUT
DAVIANNA...
I...

THIS IS WHERE YOUR
FINAL ANSWER LIES...
IT'S ALWAYS THERE
WAITING FOR YOU TO
REACH OUT FOR IT.

YOUR HEART IS YOUR GUIDE
TO FIND YOUR TRUE SELF.
FOLLOW IT NO MATTER WHAT
AND EVENTUALLY, IT WILL
OPEN UP AND GIVE YOU
YOUR ANSWER.



DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT.
EVERYONE GOES
THROUGH THAT. EVEN I
HAVEN'T FOUND MY
TRUE SELF YET!


...RENOIR.

BUT UNTIL THEN... I
STICK TO THE ONE
IDENTITY I'M SURE OF.
I'M DAVIANNA. WHAT
ABOUT YOU?

THEN
RENOIR, IT
IS!

TURN AROUND FOR
A SEC, RENOIR! I
HAVE SOMETHING
FOR YOU!





HERE'S A CHRISTMAS
PRESENT FOR YOU,
RENOIR.

I WAS GOING TO GIVE
IT TO "AUGUSTUS"
WHO TURNED OUT TO
BE RAPHAEL... BUT I
WANT YOU TO HAVE IT.




DAVIANNA, WHAT IS
THIS PENDANT?

"MAGATAMA"




WHAT?

AMULET. THIS
PROTECTS YOU
FROM EVIL.



HAAAA...
THANKS.



WELL, I'D BETTER
GO AND LET MY
PARENTS KNOW
THAT I'M SAFE...

DAVIANNA,
PLEASE...

PLEASE JUST GIVE
ME AN ANSWER.
WHO AM I?



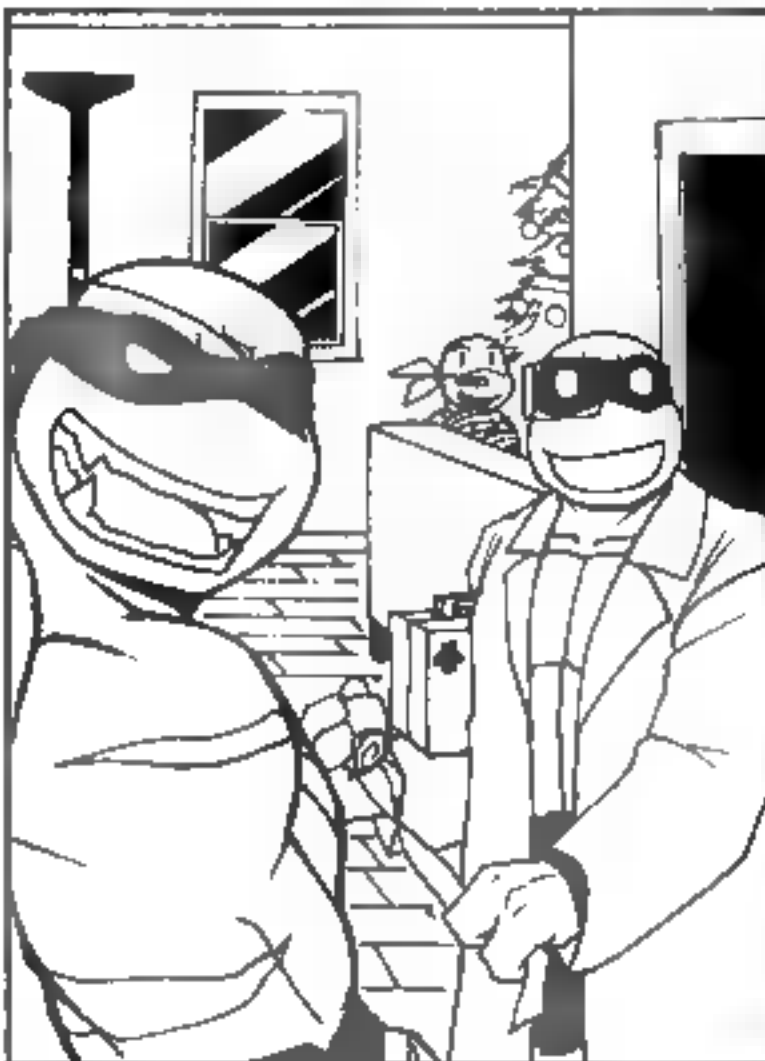
RENOIR...

ONLY YOU
HAVE THE
RIGHT TO
DECIDE WHO
YOU ARE.

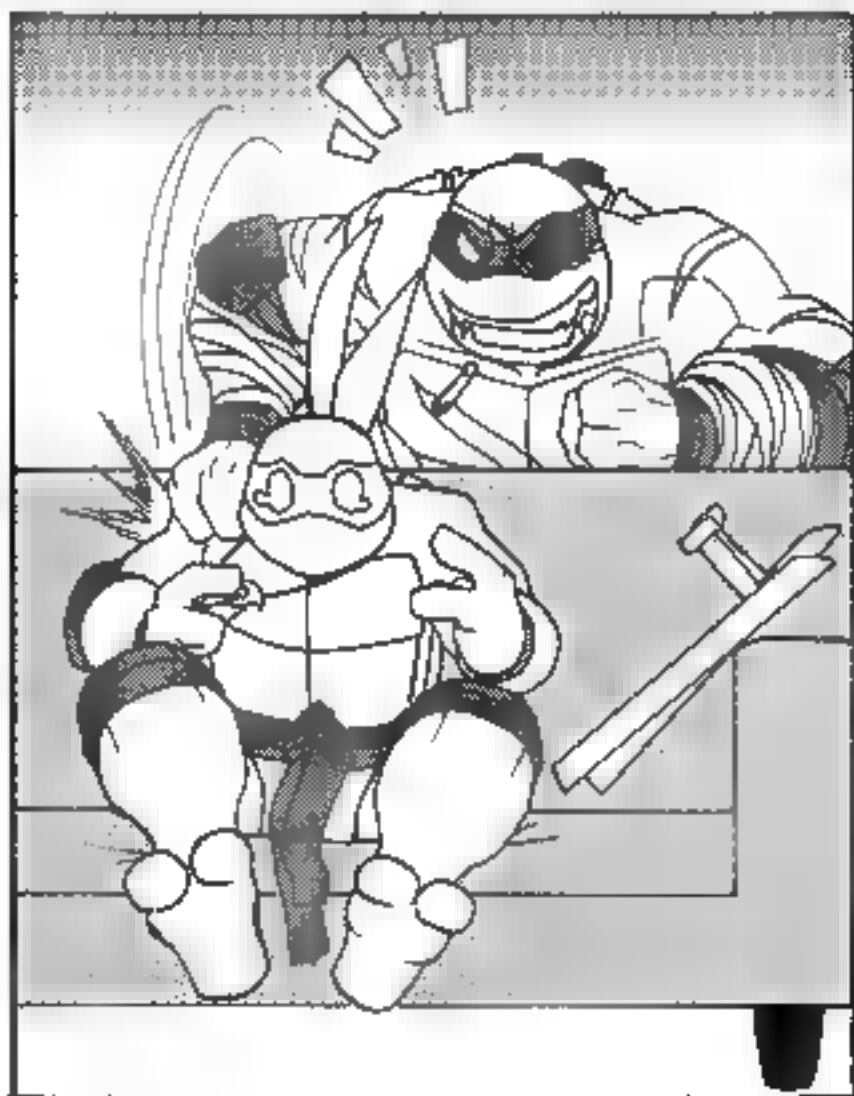
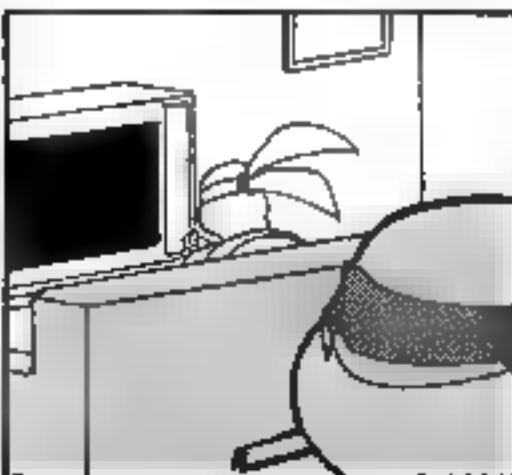
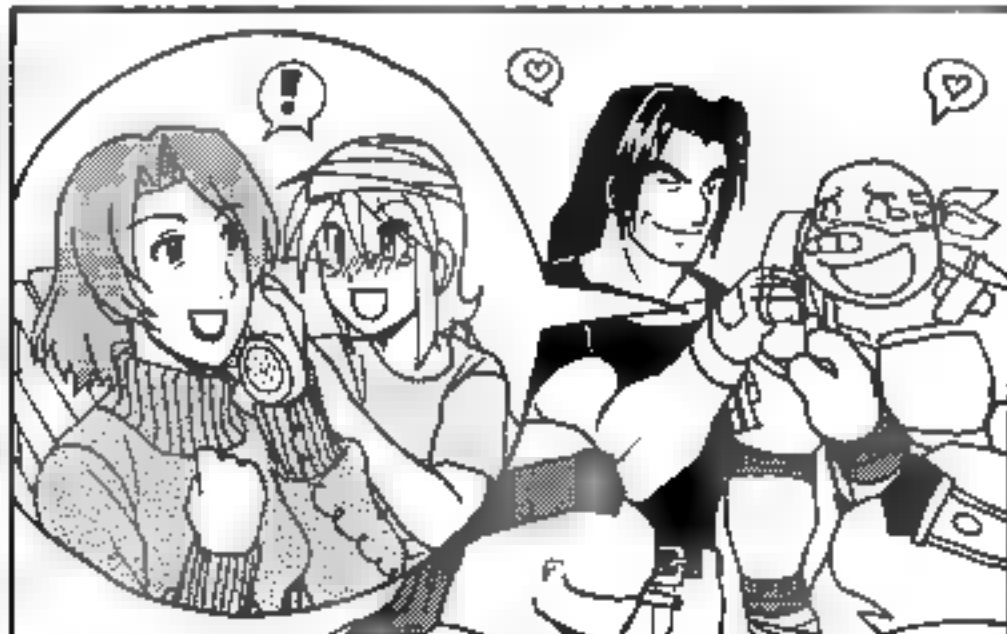




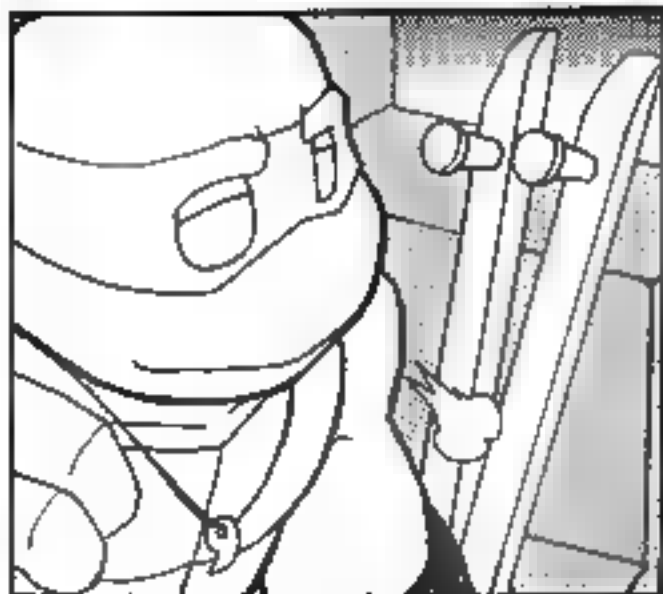
AND SO ENDS THE LONGEST NIGHT OF THE YEAR.



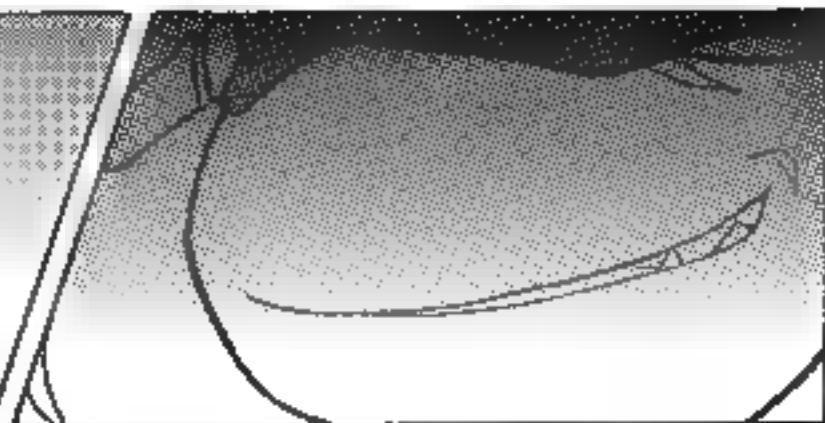
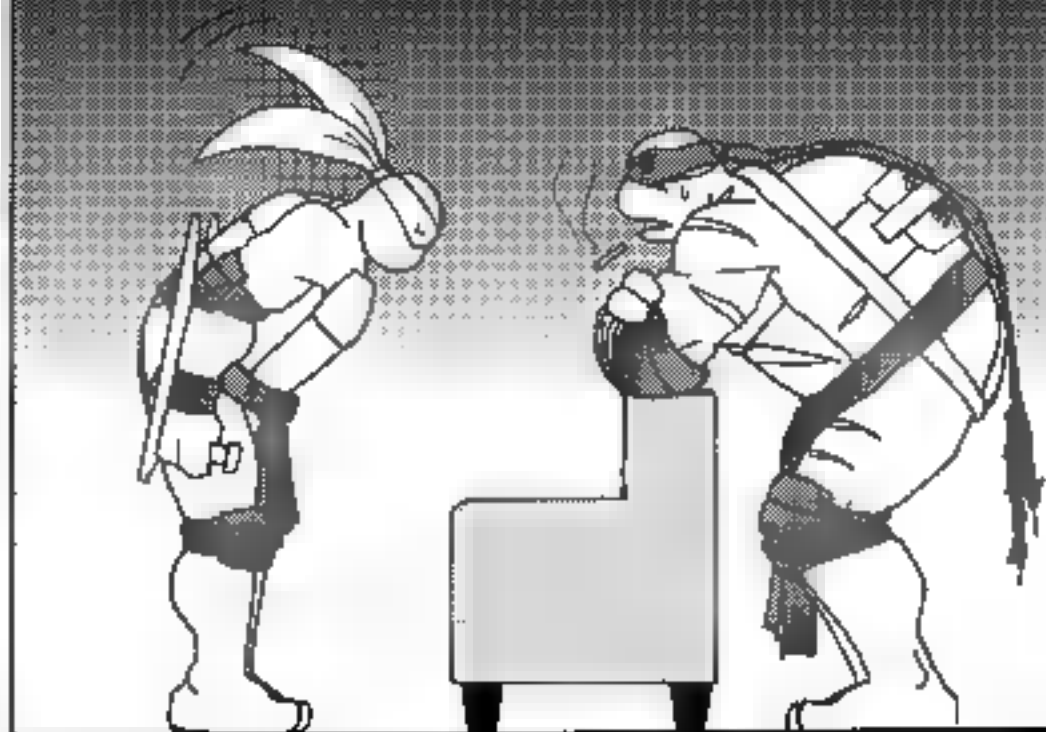
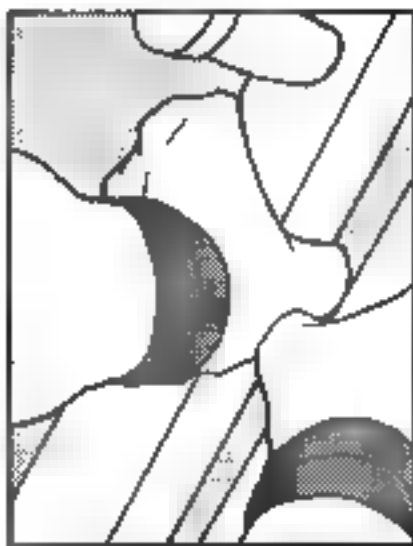
A NIGHT SO LONG
THAT SOME TALK
TO EACH OTHER
LIKE THEY HAVE
NOT MET IN
YEARS...



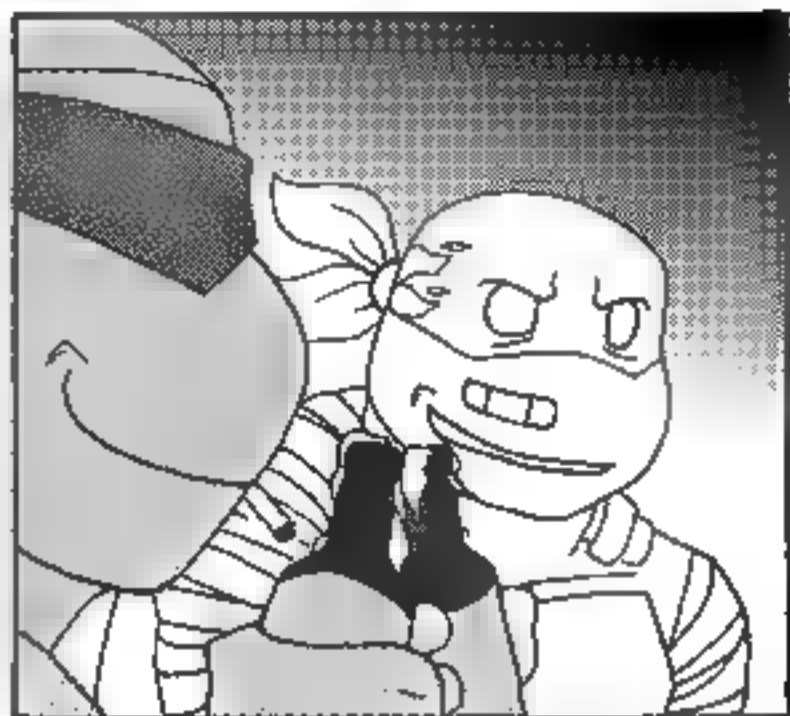
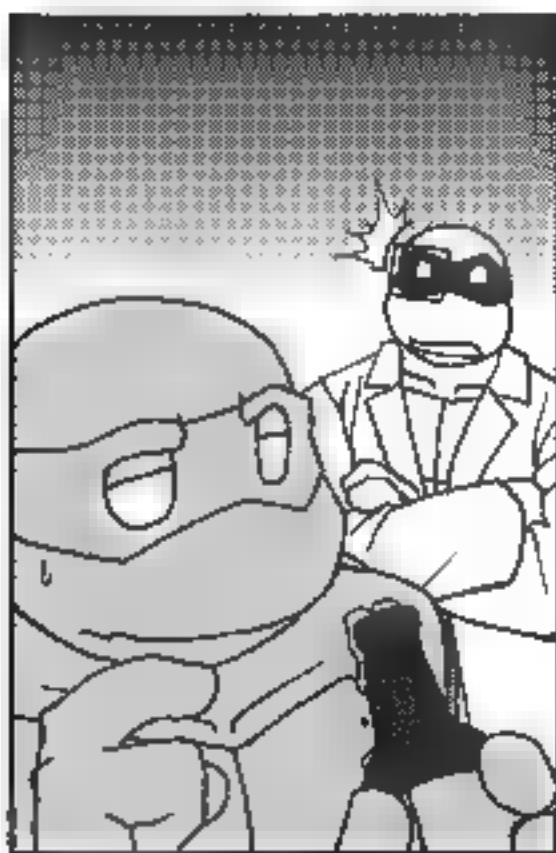
...AND THAT SOME
LEARN TO APPRECIATE
THE PRESENT FOR
WHAT IT IS...



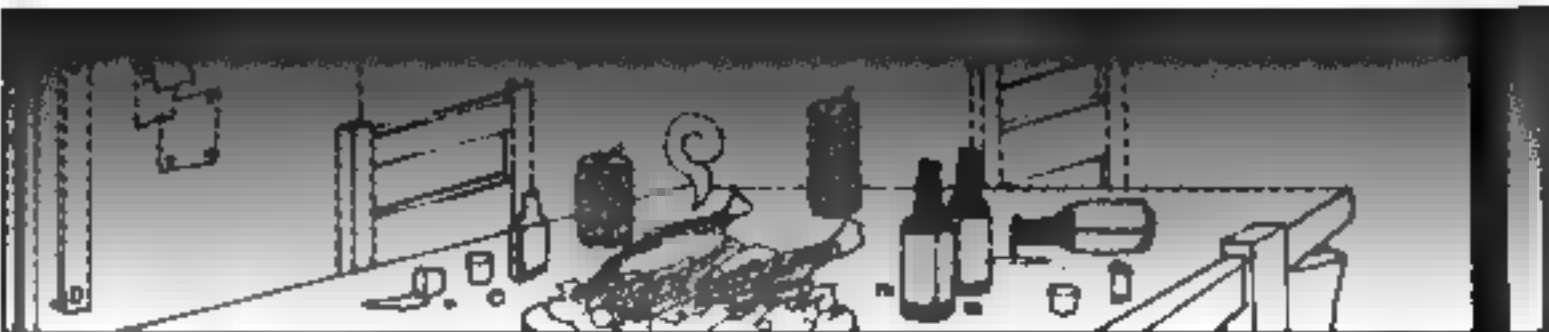
...AND THE PEOPLE
WHO GENUINELY
CARE FOR THEM.



EVERYONE
HAD A
REASON TO
CELEBRATE.



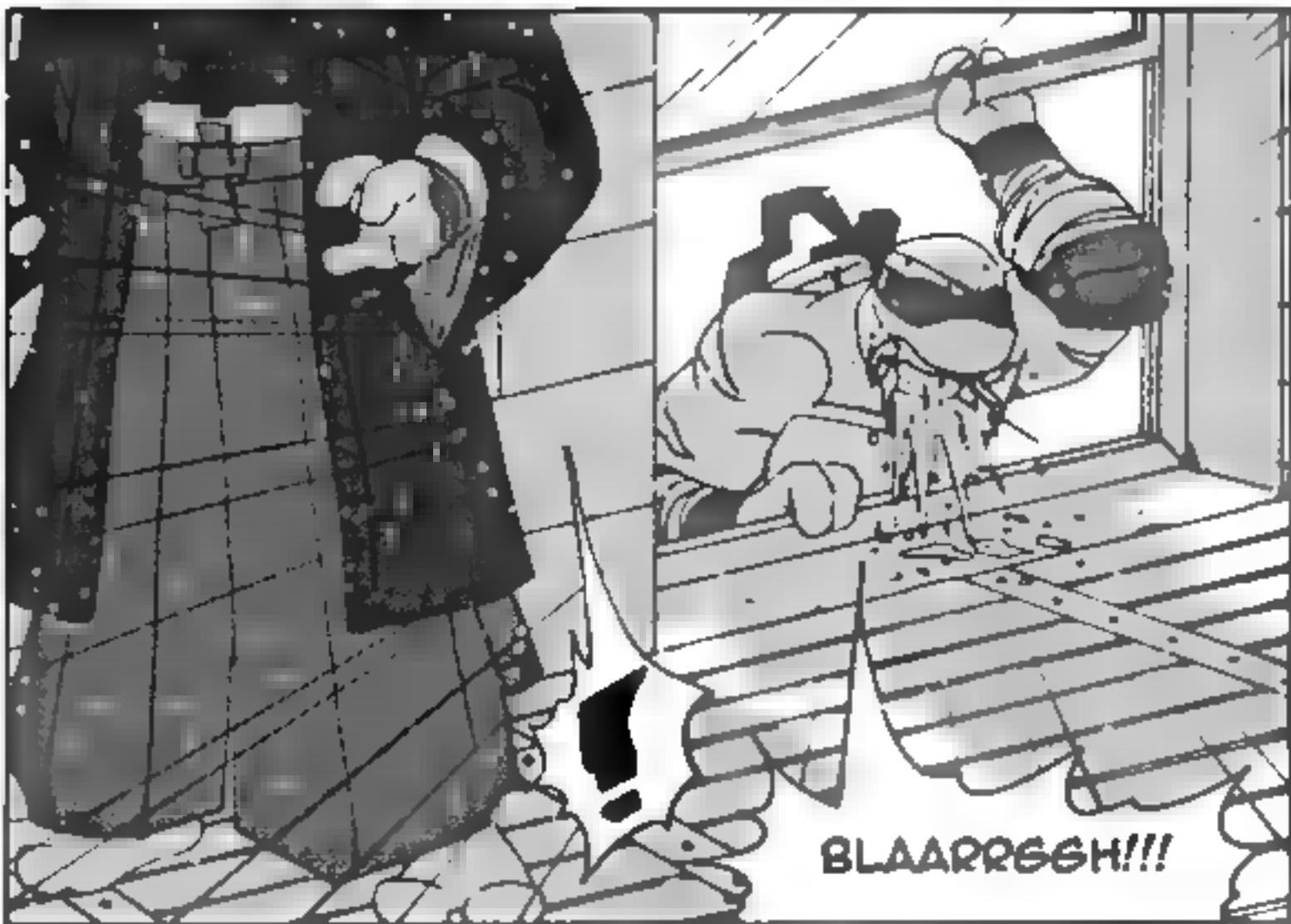
EVENTUALLY, SILENCE FELL IN THE APARTMENT.



"JUST LIKE THE GOOD OLD DAYS... I'M GLAD NOTHING HAS CHANGED."

"EVERYONE... PLEASE WAIT JUST A BIT MORE. I'LL BE BACK SOON."

BUT DESTINY HAD IT THAT THE PAGES TURNED FOR THE
ESTRANGED BROTHER AS WELL.

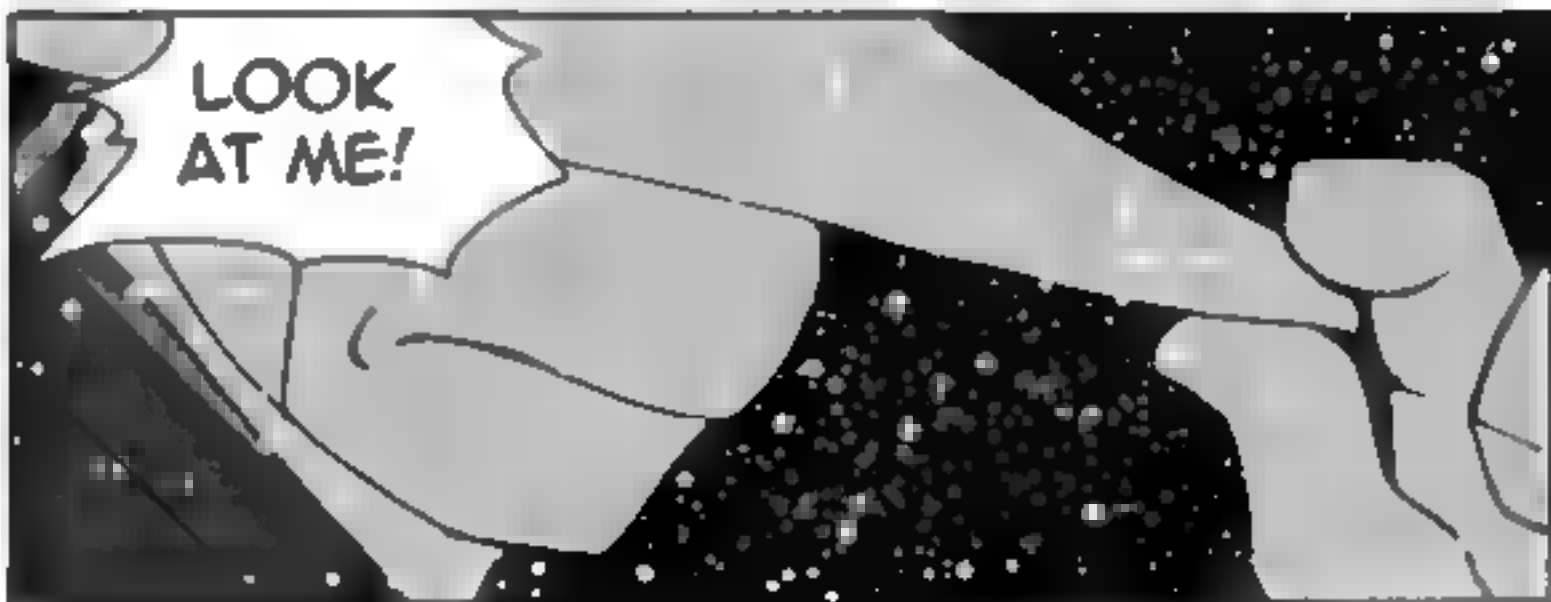


WAIT!

D...

DON'T RUN
AWAY
AGAIN...

...LEO!





RAPHAEL... IT'S
BEEN A WHILE.




THAT'S ALL YA HAVE
TO HAVE TO SAY,
ASSHOLE?



DO YA
EVEN
KNOW



...HOW MUCH
SHIT I HAD TO
DEAL WIT'?



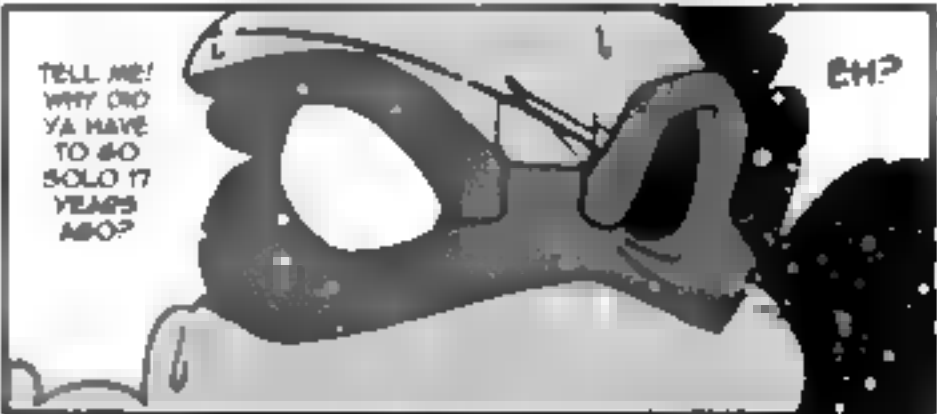
EVERYONE
MOVED ON
'CEPT ME! I
WAS ALWAYS
WAITIN' FOR
YA!



AND
NOW!


WE'RE GONNA
PICK UP FROM
WHERE WE
LEFT!

TIME STOPPED FOR
ME THE DAY YA
TURNED DOWN MY
HELP!




TELL ME!
WHY DID
YA HAVE
TO GO
SOLO 17
YEARS
AGO?


EH?



FOR OUR
BROTHERS'
SAKE, DASH



IT TAKES ONE OF
US OUT THERE TO
SAVE OUR
FAMILY'S HONOUR
AND ELIMINATE
THE CURSE



AND ANOTHER
TO ACT AS A
LEADER TO GUIDE
THE REMAINING
ONES

BULLSHIT!

YA KNOW I
WAS
ALWAYS
JEALOUS
OF YER
POSITION!

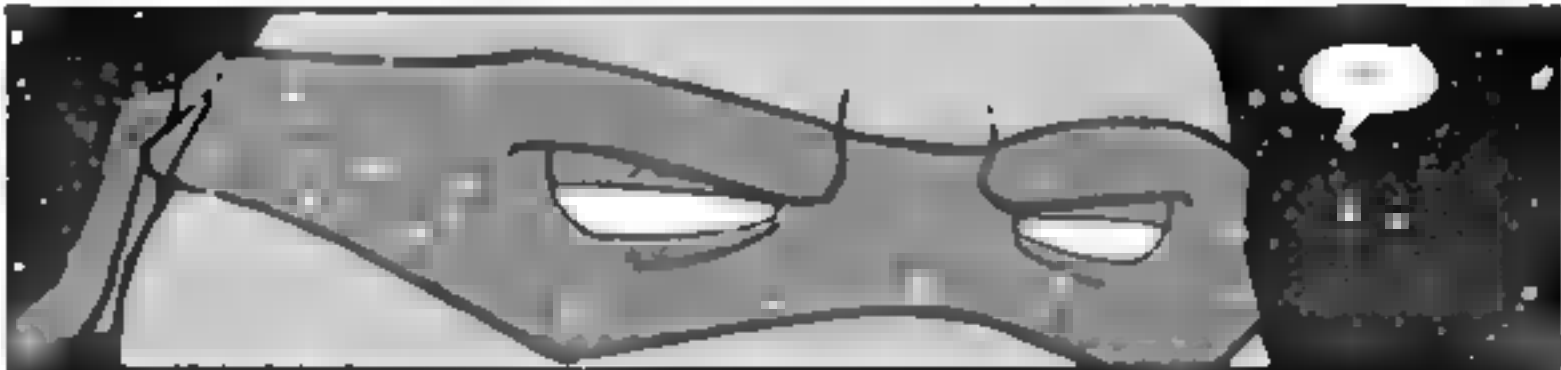
SO YA
SWITCHED
ROLES TO PISS
ME OFF, HUH?

YOU'LL
PAY FOR
THIS!!

SHIT...
IT'S
STUCK!

YA CAME
TO LAUGH
AT ME
DIDN'T YA?

YA LIKE
MAKIN' FUN
OF ME DON'T
CHAP?



SHUDDAP! YER FULL OF CRAP!

SHUDDAP!

YER FULL OF CRAP!

I'LL SHUT YA UP FOREVER!!





AAAAAGH!!




S...
SCREW
YOU,
LEO!

F
FLICK
OFF!!



NOW, YOU
LISTEN TO ME

THE CURSE STILL
EXISTS AND IT HAS TO
BE STOPPED THAT'S
WHY I WAS AWAY FOR
SUCH A LONG TIME



I KNOW MY DECISION
SEEMED IRRESPONSIBLE, BUT
YOU HAVE TO UNDERSTAND
WHAT IS AT RISK HERE

DO YOU REMEMBER? THIS
CURSE REINFORCES ALL OF
OUR SOULS' NEGATIVE
THOUGHTS AND SEALS THE
BEST

UNLESS SOMETHING IS
DONE ABOUT THAT
CURSE WE ARE THE
ONES WHO WILL
SUFFER THE MOST
FROM IT



HEHEHEHE...

YOU UNDERSTAND
ME I KNOW IT

HAHAHAHA!



YER KIDDIN'
ME, RIGHT?

YA TELLIN' ME THAT
I AIN'T IN CONTROL
OF MYSELF?



DUMBASS!!


I... I'M GONNA KILL
YA! I WAITED 17 YEARS
FOR THAT!



"NO... THIS IS NOT WHY I
WAITED FOR LEO."


"THIS IS ALL WRONG! I DON'T
WANT HIM DEAD!! AFTER ALL
WHAT HE DID FOR US..."

"I DON'T WANT TO KILL
MY OWN BROTHER!!!"




"I WAS HOPING
LEO WOULD MOVE
OUT OF THE WAY."

"YET, HERE I AM
IN FRONT OF
LEO."



"PERHAPS SOMEONE
BOBBED MY HAND AT
THE LAST MINUTE."

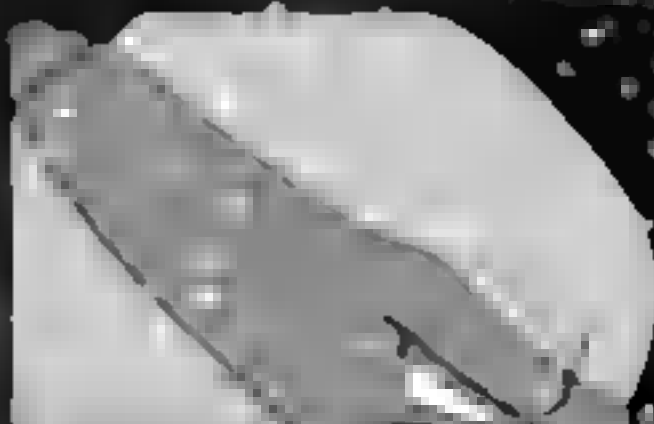
"MIKEY? DONNIE?
CASEY? APRIL?
SHADOW? RENZO?
...LEO?"



"BUT NO ONE DID.
NOT EVEN LEO."

"I DON'T WANT
TO BELIEVE
THIS."

"THIS IS NOT HAPPENING...
THIS CAN'T BE HAPPENING!"





I KNOW I WAS RIGHT IN
SUSPECTING A TRAP
AND HERE I AM



PLEASE WATCH OVER
ME A LITTLE WHILE
LONGER



I KNOW I WAS RIGHT IN
SUSPECTING A TRAP
AND HERE I AM
PLEASE WATCH OVER
ME A LITTLE WHILE
LONGER

PLEASE WATCH OVER
ME A LITTLE WHILE
LONGER



PLEASE WATCH
OVER ME



PLEASE WATCH
OVER ME




DON'T
GO!


DON'T
GO, LEO

I KNOW I
LOST CONTROL
OF MYSELF
BUT YOU
MUST BE
SADLY
YA

BUT... YA GOTTA STAY! WE
CAN MAKE IT TOGETHER,
LEO!

A black and white comic panel showing two turtles, Raphael and Leonardo, in a dark, starry environment. Raphael is on the right, looking towards Leonardo on the left.


RAPH, HAVE YOU EVER
THOUGHT ABOUT WHAT
TRIGGERS THE CURSE IN
YOU?

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He has a serious expression.

IT STIVES ON YOUR
SOUL'S WEAK
SPOTS, RAPH.

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking slightly to the side.


I'M SOMEHOW
RELATED TO
THEM.

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.


AND... AND YEP
SAYIN' THAT'S
WHY YA HAVE TO
LEAVE?

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.


NO... NO, THAT AIN'T A GOOD
ENOUGH REASON!

A black and white comic panel showing two turtles, Raphael and Leonardo, in a dark, starry environment. Raphael is on the left, looking towards Leonardo on the right.

LEO... INSTEAD OF
THE CAUSE, HAVE
YA THOUGHT ABOUT
WHAT PROTECTS ME
FROM THE CURSE?

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking slightly to the side.

THIS IS
SOMETHIN'
WE USED TO
TAKE FOR
GRANTED...

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.


BUT MIKEY MADE ME
REALIZE HOW MUCH WE
RELY ON IT.

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.


OUR
BONDS...

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.

WE MIGHT NOT ALWAYS
GET ALONG, LEO.

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.

AS AN OUTCAST OF THE
HUMAN SOCIETY, MY FAMILY
WAS ALL I HAD. AND THAT'S
ALL I NEEDED

A black and white comic panel showing a close-up of Raphael's face. He is looking down with a somber expression.

BUT YOU ARE THE FIRST ONE I THINK
OF WHEN I TRY TO SEIZE CONTROL
OF MY MIND.



YOU KNOW ME
BEST. SO IF
ANYONE CAN HELP
ME WHEN I LOSE
IT, IT'S YOU



AND WHEN TO
TRUST ME WITH
MY OWN
JUDGEMENT



DUMBASS

ENOUGH WITH THIS
GULLSHIT.

YER COMIN' BACK WITH US AND
WE'RE GONNA FIGHT THIS CURSE
TOGETHER!

IN MY LIFE I
HAD 1 CANNOT
DUBBAYEE

YER REALLY FIGHTIN' IT
AGAIN? CHA? BOLE
WELL, HERE GOES

I TRUST YOU
LEO. I
ALWAYS DO

OUR TRUST IS
STRONGER
THAN THIS
CURSE I
KNOW IT

I DIDN'T JUST
SAY THAT

I DIDN'T EXPECT YOU
TO GET ALL SOFT ON
ME LIKE THAT

BUT IT SURE IS
GOOD TO HEAR
THAT YOU STILL
TRUST ME AFTER
ALL THESE YEARS

DAMN

WAIT A SEC

THAT'S WHAT YA
WANTED ALL
ALONG- YOU
DARN ATTENTION
WHORE!


WHAT?

YA LIKE TO FEEL NEEDED, SO YA
TEASE ME BY THREATENIN' TO
LEAVE!

IF YA REALLY WERE THE LONE WOLF
YA SAY YA WERE, WHY DID YA SPY
ON US IN THE FIRST PLACE?

WANNA PLAY
HARD TO GET OR
SOMETHIN'?

OH, NOW I GET IT



I I WAS JUST
HOMESICK, I
GUESS

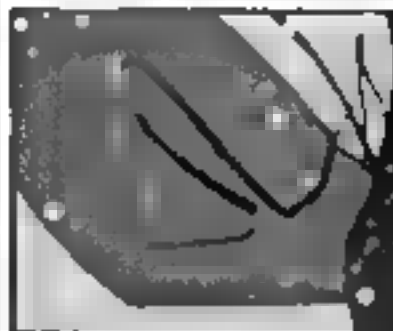
IT WAS MY FIRST TIME IN
NEW YORK IN 17 YEARS. I
WANTED TO CHECK UP ON
YOU GUYS




...AND THEN JUST
DISAPPEAR AGAIN?

YEAH I CAN'T
STAY, DADA

BESIDES, I SWORE TO
ONLY SHOW UP ONCE OUR
HONOUR IS RESTORED




LEO THAT NIGHT, WE
WERE ALL INVOLVED WE
ALL CAUSED OUR
FAMILY'S FALL



IF YA WERE TO CLEAN
OUR FAMILY'S NAME ON
YER OWN, YOU'D BE FINE.
THAT'S FOR SURE

BUT WHAT ABOUT THE REST
OF US? ASHAMED FOR
LIFE, I TELL YA. 'CUZ WE
SAT ON OUR BUTT WHILE YA
DID ALL THE HARD WORK
FOR US



THIS IS NOT
JUST ABOUT YA
IT'S ABOUT US
TOO ALL FOUR
OF US

SO I'M ASKIN'
AGAIN ARE WE IN
THIS TOGETHER
OR NOT?

IS IT REALLY
OKAY IF I COME
BACK LIKE THIS?

YES

WHAT ABOUT THE
OTHERS?

I'M SURE THEY'RE GONNA
BE HAPPY TO SEE YA

AIN'T IT
OBVIOUS

WHY YA CAME
BACK BEFORE YA
WERE SUPPOSED
TO?

WHY YA WATCHED OVER
US?

WHY YES STILL
STANDIN' HERE
NOW?

THIS IS WHAT YA
WANT, LEO AND
THIS IS ALSO WHAT
YA NEED

WHY TRY SO
HARD TO DENY
IT?



WAS TO HAVE THE
SACRED LEADER

WAS TO HAVE THE
SACRED LEADER





MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MINTEIWA
Gaiden

CHAPTER 17: BETWEEN
COPS AND NINJAS



BACKUP'S ON ITS WAY. IN THE MEANTIME, LET'S KEEP OUR EYES PEELED FOR ANY SUSPECT...

TONY! DID YOU HEAR THAT? SOUNDS LIKE A MOTORCYCLE...



IT CAME FROM OVER THERE!



AH!! IT'S THE MUTANTS AGAIN!

HEY, YOU! FREEZE!!



THEM AGAIN...! ARE THEY BEHIND THIS MASSACRE?

THERE'S NO DOUBT ABOUT IT! NOW LET'S GO AFTER THEM!



...ムム?

AH??

...AND THAT'S ALL I CAN RE-
MEMBER. THEY SNEAKED UP
ON US FROM BEHIND AND
KNOCKED US OUT.

YES, AND BY THE TIME OUR
BACKUP CAME, THEY WERE
GONE. THE MUTANTS, THE
NINJAS... ALL OF THEM, EVEN THE
WOUNDED ONES!

I SEE...
THEY
CLEANED
UP THEIR
MESS.

SORRY WE
COULDN'T DO A
THING, CAPTAIN.

TO THINK
WE
COULD'VE
NABBED
THOSE
MUTANTS
TOO...

GUYS, SORRY TO
CUT YOUR MEETING
SHORT, BUT
SOMEONE WANTS
TO MEET WITH THE
CAPTAIN.
IT SEEMS TO BE A
MATTER OF THE
UTMOST
IMPORTANCE.

I'LL TAKE CARE OF
THIS CASE BY
MYSELF...

TONY, EVA, THIS WILL BE
ENOUGH FOR THE BOTH
OF YOU TODAY.
TAKE THE REST OF THE
DAY OFF TO GET SOME
WELL DESERVED REST.

THE CAPTAIN'S A
BIT STRANGE,
DON'T YOU
THINK? WHY IS
HIS OFFICE
ALWAYS SO
DARK?

DUNNO...
TO HIDE
FROM US?

YOU SAID YOU'D
BE HOME BY
MIDNIGHT...

I DIDN'T HEAR
FROM YOU,
SO I CAME
HERE...

BUT YOU'RE
OKAY!!

YAAAY!!
YAAAAAY!!

EVAAAAAA!!

OOOW!

MARION, GIVE
YOUR SIS A
BREAK. SHE
HAD A
ROUGH NIGHT
SHIFT.

TEE
HEE!

IT'S TOO BAD YOU WEREN'T
HOME FOR CHRISTMAS EVE, BUT
WE CAN ALWAYS MAKE UP FOR
THAT TODAY, RIGHT?

WHEN DUTY CALLS, I
NEED TO BE OUT THERE
PROTECTING CITIZENS.
MARION...

CAN WE
SPEND THE
DAY TOGETHER
BEFORE I GO
TO MY
FRIEND'S
SLEEPOVER
PARTY?

ANYWAYS, I HAVE
THE WHOLE DAY
OFF, SO LET'S GO
WITH YOUR IDEA.

...NOW GO HOME AND
WAIT FOR ME BEFORE I
START THINKING ABOUT
GIVING YOU UP FOR
ADOPTION FOR YOUR
LITTLE STUNT JUST
NOW.

GOT IT!

EVA... DON'T YOU
FEEL A BIT
RESTLESS ABOUT
THIS WHOLE
SITUATION?
MUTANTS
LURKING IN NEW
YORK CITY,
TERRORIZING
CITIZENS,
NINJAS CAUSING
TROUBLE...

AND HERE WE
ARE, UNABLE TO
DO ANYTHING
ABOUT IT... YET
IT'S OUR DUTY
TO PROTECT
THE CITY FROM
THEM!

TONY, GIVE IT A
REST, WILL
YOU?

IF YOU DON'T WANT TO
THINK ABOUT IT, THEN JUST
DON'T. IT'S JUST THAT AS A
POLICE OFFICER, I CAN'T
HELP BUT FEEL LIKE I'M
DOING A LOUSY JOB...

...WITH YOU?
AND WHAT DO
YOU MEAN BY
THAT?

I WAS
THINKING
ABOUT
ACTUALLY
ENJOYING
MY DAY
OFF...

...MY DAY
OFF... WITH
YOU

DINNER TONIGHT
AT MY PLACE, TO
THANK YOU FOR
ALWAYS
LOOKING AFTER
ME.

MARION WILL
SLEEP AT HER
FRIEND'S
HOUSE, SO...


B...BUT DON'T WORRY!
IT'S NOTHING BIG!
JUST A FUN AND
CASUAL EVENING
WITH ITALIAN TAKE-
OUT AND BOARD
GAMES! WE'RE NOT
GOING TO S...SPEND
THE NIGHT TOGETHER
OR ANYTHING! HAH-
HAHA!

AHP AHHAHAHA! OF
COURSE NOT! I MEAN,
THE IDEA OF GOING IT
WITH YOU DIDN'T
CROSS MY MIND AT
ALL EITHER! HAHHA!

EXCUSE ME... I'M
HERE TO SEE THE
CAPTAIN...


BUSTED.

(SIGH) WASN'T
THAT A NICE
DISPLAY OF
WORK ETHICS...



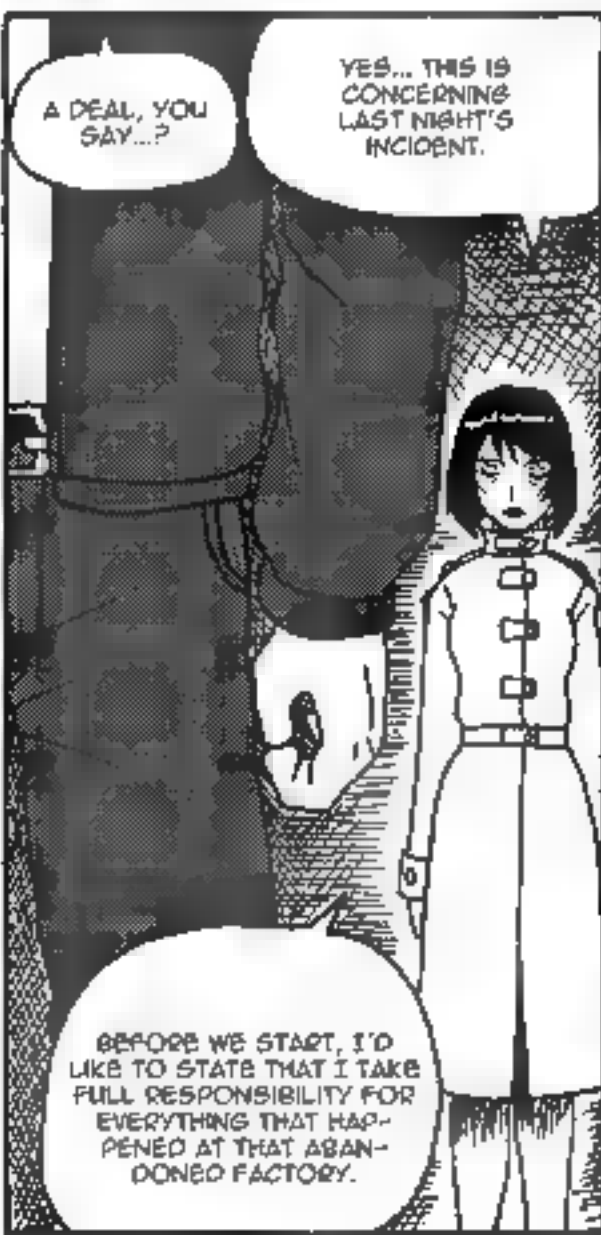
SORRY I REQUESTED AN AUDIENCE ON SUCH SHORT NOTICE.

IT DOESN'T MATTER. STATE YOUR NAME AND BUSINESS HERE.



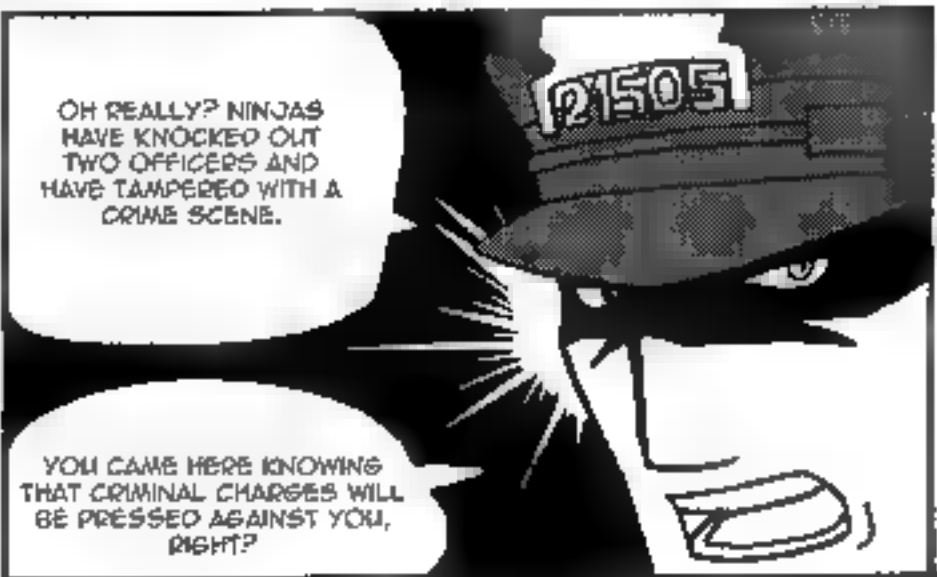
I'M THE LEADER OF THE FOOT CLAN'S JAPANESE FACTION. I GO BY THE NAME "KARAI".

I CAME TO MAKE A DEAL WITH YOU, CAPTAIN.



A DEAL, YOU SAY...?


YES... THIS IS CONCERNING LAST NIGHT'S INCIDENT.



OH REALLY? NINJAS HAVE KNOCKED OUT TWO OFFICERS AND HAVE TAMPERED WITH A CRIME SCENE.

YOU CAME HERE KNOWING THAT CRIMINAL CHARGES WILL BE PRESSED AGAINST YOU, RIGHT?

BEFORE WE START, I'D LIKE TO STATE THAT I TAKE FULL RESPONSIBILITY FOR EVERYTHING THAT HAPPENED AT THAT ABANDONED FACTORY.



PLEASE ALLOW ME TO EXPLAIN MYSELF FIRST.

CAPTAIN... ARE YOU FAMILIAR WITH A 17 YEAR OLD INCIDENT THE MEDIA CALLED "THE CITY AT WAR"?

EVERYONE IN
THE POLICE
FORCE
KNOWS
ABOUT IT.



THE BIGGEST FIASCO OF
THE HISTORY OF THE
NYPD... IT WAS SOME KIND
OF WAR BETWEEN NINJAS
IN NEW YORK CITY.

DAY AFTER DAY,
MUTILATED BODIES
OF NINJAS WERE
STREWN ALL THE
PLACE.

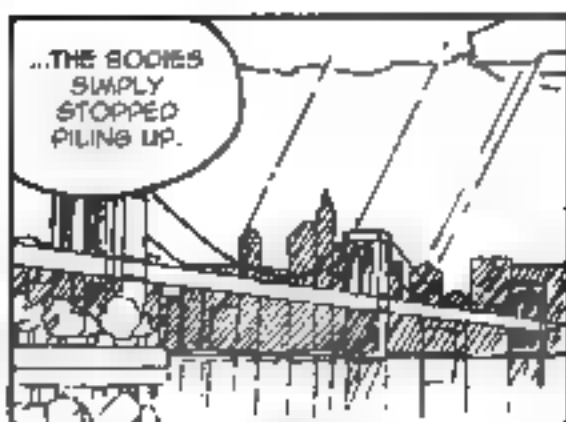


THE NYPD HAD
ABSOLUTELY NO
CONTROL OVER THIS
WHOLE SITUATION.

UNTIL ONE
DAY...



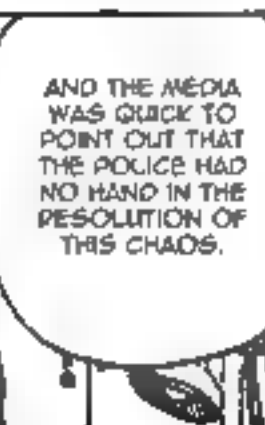
...THE BODIES
SIMPLY
STOPPED
PILING UP.



NO ONE HAD
DATA ABOUT
ANY OF THE
DECEASED
ONES. NOT
EVEN THE
JAPANESE
GOVERNMENT.



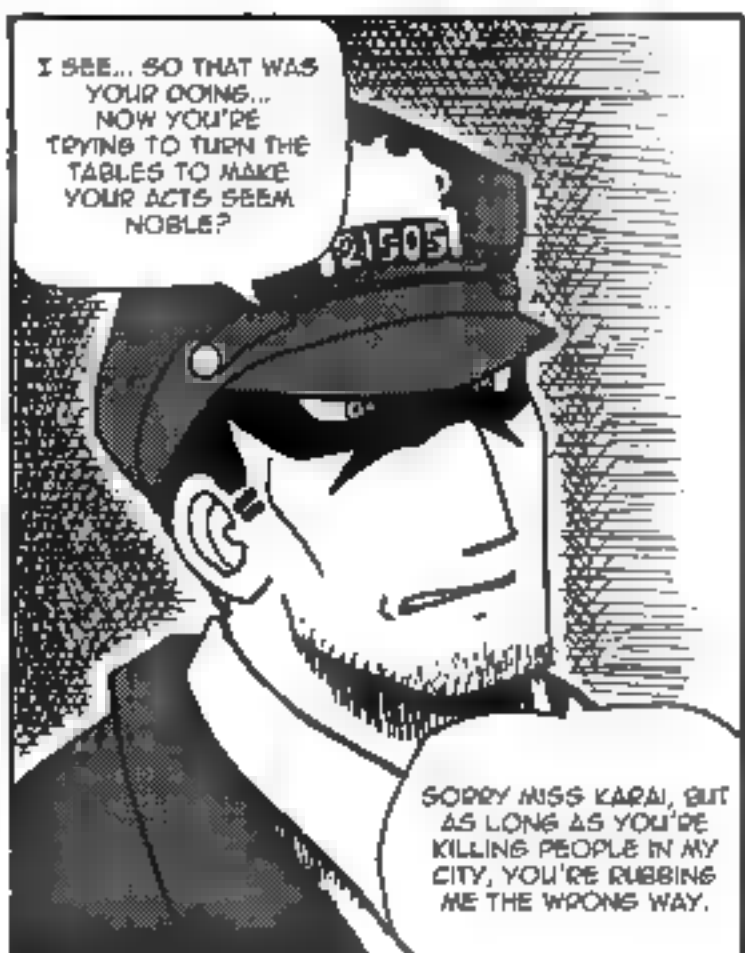
AND THE MEDIA
WAS QUICK TO
POINT OUT THAT
THE POLICE HAD
NO HAND IN THE
RESOLUTION OF
THIS CHAOS.



SORRY IF THINGS
TURNED OUT THAT
WAY.
BACK THEN, WE
BELIEVED THAT
KEEPING THE
POLICE OUT OF
THIS WAS THE
BEST COURSE OF
ACTION TO AVOID
UNNECESSARY
CASUALTIES.



I SEE... SO THAT WAS
YOUR DOING...
NOW YOU'RE
TRYING TO TURN THE
TABLES TO MAKE
YOUR ACTS SEEM
NOBLE?



SORRY MISS KARAI, BUT
AS LONG AS YOU'RE
KILLING PEOPLE IN MY
CITY, YOU'RE RUBBING
ME THE WRONG WAY.

YOU OUGHT TO GET
THE WHOLE PICTURE
BEFORE JUDGING
ME, CAPTAIN.



OUR PURPOSE WAS NOT
TO WRECK HAVOC IN
YOUR CITY. WE HAD OUR
OWN AGENDA.

AFTER THE DEMISE OF THEIR LEADER, THE FOOT CLAN'S NEW YORK DIVISION BROKE UP INTO SEVERAL FACTIONS AND STARTED CANNIBALIZING ITSELF.

AS THE LEADER OF FOOT CLAN'S JAPANESE DIVISION, IT WAS MY DUTY TO PUT AN END TO THIS CHAOS AND RESTORE ORDER WITHIN NEW YORK'S CLAN.

IT WASN'T LONG BEFORE THE LEADERLESS NINJAS ALL FOCUSED THEIR ATTENTION ON US.

SOME WANTED POWER. OTHERS JUST WANTED BLOODSHED.

CAUGHT OFF GUARD, WE SUFFERED TERRIBLE LOSSES, BUT THROUGH AN UNLIKELY ALLIANCE WITH OLD FOES, OUR MISSION WAS ACCOMPLISHED.

WHAT WE DIDN'T KNOW UNTIL NOW WAS THAT ONE OF THE MOST INFLUENTIAL FIGURES OF THIS REBELLION SURVIVED.

AFTER WE RETURNED TO JAPAN, THIS MAN ROSE FROM HIS ASHES AND SECRETLY FORMED HIS OWN FACTION BY RECRUITING DISSIDENT NINJAS TO FOLLOW HIS OWN CRIMINAL AGENDAS.

SO ABOUT LAST NIGHT...

I WON'T DENY THE FACT THAT CRIMINAL ACTIVITIES TOOK PLACE LAST NIGHT, BUT THAT WAS THEIR DOING, NOT OURS. WE MERELY CLEANED UP THEIR MESS.

REST ASSURED, WE HAVE THE ONES RESPONSIBLE IN OUR CUSTODY. THEY WILL NO LONGER BE CAUSING YOU ANY MORE TROUBLE.

I SEE. IF YOU CAME
HERE EXPECTING ME
TO HELP YOU COVER
UP THEIR ACTS,
FORGET IT.

PLEASE
RECONSIDER,
CAPTAIN.

OR SHOULD I
SAY... NOBODY.

WHAT ARE YOU
TALKING ABOUT?
WHAT IS
"NOBODY"?

YOU HEARD ME WELL,
NOBODY. LAW ENFORCER BY
DAY, VIGILANTE BY NIGHT, AM
I CORRECT?

ACCORDING TO OUR
INFORMATION NETWORK,
YOU WERE TRANSFERRED
HERE FROM SPRINGFIELD
17 YEARS AGO.

IT SEEMS YOUR
TRANSFER WAS DUE TO
A SUDDEN SURGE OF
CRIMINALITY IN NEW
YORK AT THAT TIME... A
PROBLEM THAT STILL
PERSISTS TILL THIS
DAY.

I WOULD ASSUME
THAT THE CRIMINAL
ACTIVITIES IN NEW
YORK WERE MORE
THAN YOU CAN
HANDLE... AND STILL
ARE.

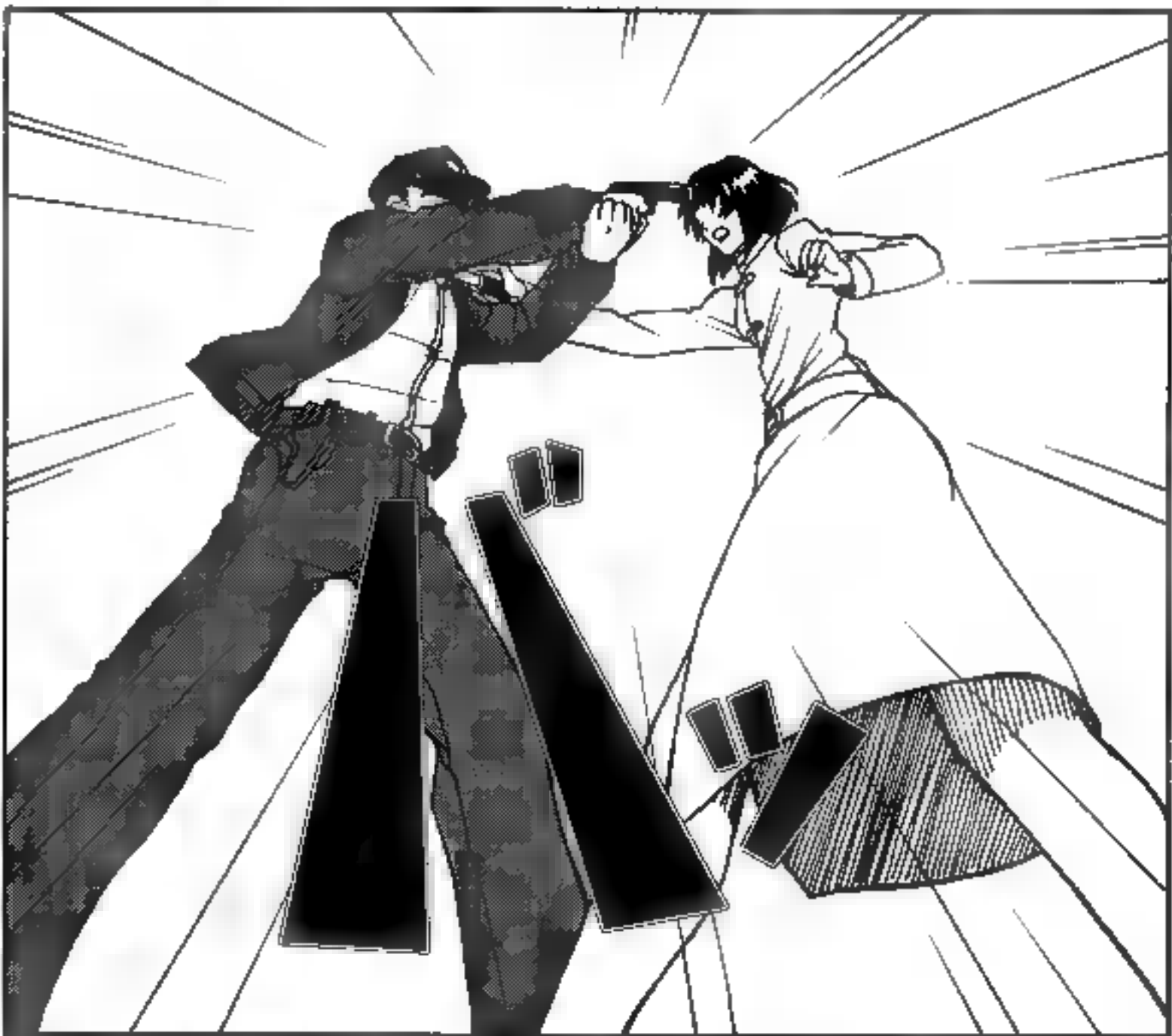
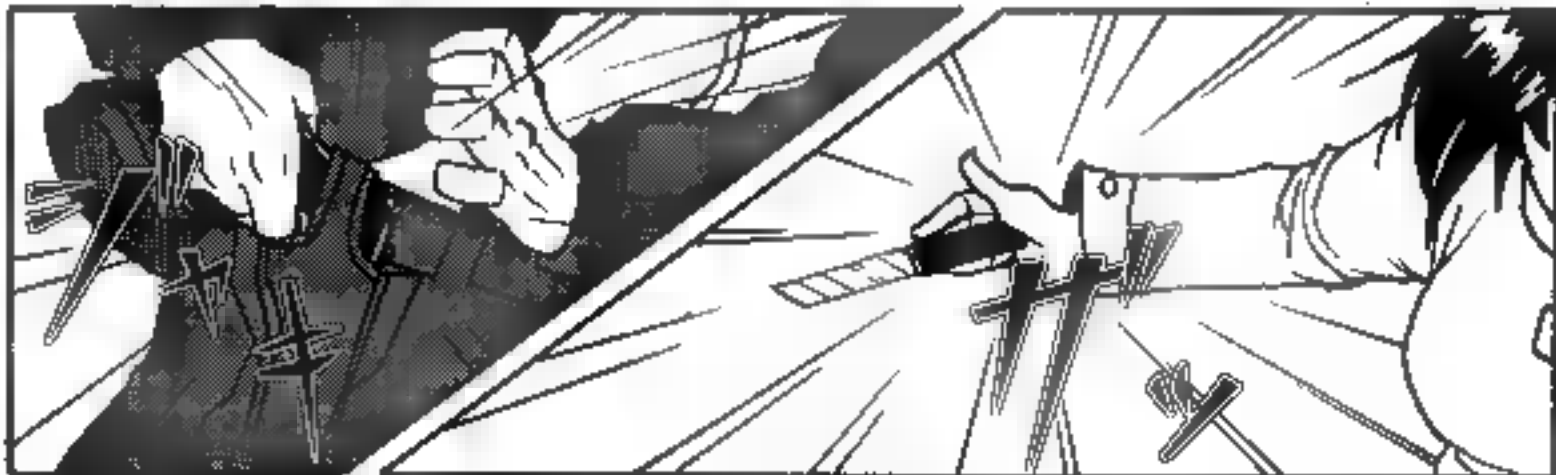
THEREFORE...

BY CONFINING ALL
THE CULPRITS
RESPONSIBLE FOR
LAST NIGHT'S
INCIDENT AND
KEEPING THEM
OFF THE STREETS,
WE ARE DOING
YOU A FAVOUR.

IN RETURN, WE ASK
YOU TO OMIT ANY
MENTION OF THE
FOOT CLAN IN YOUR
REPORTS AND
INTERVIEWS.

NOW, IF YOU
DON'T TAKE
HEED OF MY
REQUEST AND
START A WITCH
HUNT ON US...

THEN LET'S SAY
THAT YOU WILL
BE BITING OFF
A LOT MORE
THAN YOU CAN
CHEW,
MR. VIGILANTE.





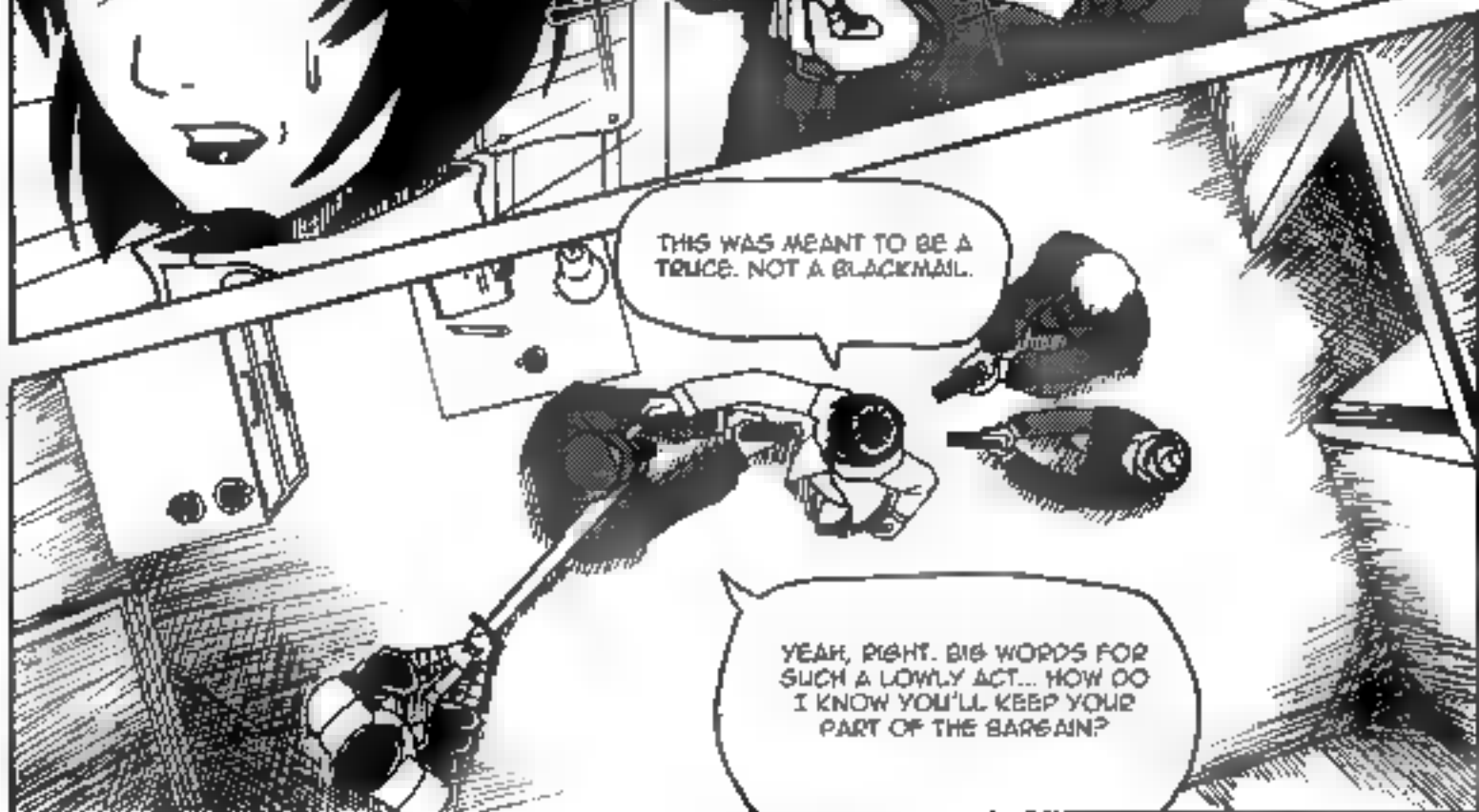
CAPTAIN!

BEHIND
YOU!



DON'T
MOVE!

KEEP
YOUR
HANDS
OFF HIM!



THIS WAS MEANT TO BE A
TRUCE. NOT A BLACKMAIL.

YEAH, RIGHT. BIG WORDS FOR
SUCH A LOWLY ACT... HOW DO
I KNOW YOU'LL KEEP YOUR
PART OF THE BARGAIN?

I ALWAYS KEEP
MY WORD,
NOBODY.

THAT'S WHY RAPHAEL
AND HIS BROTHERS
ARE STILL ALIVE.

THEY KILLED THE LEADER
OF NEW YORK'S FOOT
CLAN LONG AGO...

THEY WERE MARKED FOR
DEATH BY OUR CLAN... BUT
I LET THEM OFF THE HOOK
17 YEARS AGO AS PART OF
A DEAL... AND I'M STILL
TRUE TO MY WORDS.

RAPH?

EVA. TONY.
HOSLTER
YOUR GUNS.

...ROGER.

FUJIO.
PUT AWAY
YOUR
WEAPON.

THOSE GUYS
ARE AS GOOD
AS DEAD TO ME.

...NEVER GAVE ME A
SIGN OF LIFE. ALL
I KNOW ■ THAT
THEY'RE ON TV,
BRANDED AS
MAN-EATING
MUTANTS.

DON'T BE SO HARSH
ON THEM. THEY
SURELY HAVE THEIR
OWN PROBLEMS TO
DEAL WITH.

BESIDES...

LEONARDO
TOLD ME HE
STILL HAS
FAITH IN YOU

HE ■ THE ONE WHO
REFERRED US TO YOU,
SAYING THAT YOU
WERE THE ONLY
PERSON IN THE POLICE
FORCE WE COULD
AFFORD TO TRUST
BECAUSE YOU HAD A
BROAD VISION OF
JUSTICE.

THIS IS A WIN-WIN
SITUATION,
NOBODY.
THINK ABOUT YOUR
OFFICERS' WELFARE.

WHAT
WILL IT
BE?

...YOU
GOT THE
DEAL,
KARAI.

25

THEN THIS
CONVERSATION IS
OVER!

HEY!

!!!

WHAT?



WHERE'D
THEY GO?

UGH!

YOU TWO...

Y...YESSIR!

NOT A
WORD OF
THIS TO
ANYONE!

NOBODY
KNOWS!

IS THAT
CLEAR?

TO THINK WE JUST
CHECKED IN CASE
THE LADY REPORTED
OUR BEHAVIOUR...
WOW. THE CAPTAIN'S
A VIGILANTE...?

THAT DOES IT.
I'M GETTING
TO THE
BOTTOM OF
THIS.

BUT THE CAPTAIN
SAID...

YEAH, WELL HE DIDN'T
SAY ANYTHING ABOUT
MUTANTS!

WE'RE BEING FORCED
TO CONCEAL THE
TRUTH BEHIND LAST
NIGHT'S INCIDENT BY
THOSE NINJAS...

BUT THOSE
MUTANTS... THAT'S MY
CUE! I'LL GATHER
EVIDENCE AND EXPOSE
THEM!

WELL,
I
WON'T
STOP
YOU...

BUT HEY...
DON'T DO
ANYTHING
CRAZY, OKAY?
YOU'RE COMING
TONIGHT,
RIGHT?

YEAH,
SURE.

I'LL BE
THERE.

I CAN'T BELIEVE I'VE
FALLEN THIS LOW...
HAVING TO BARTER
WITH CRIMINALS LIKE
THIS...

LEO... YOU'D BETTER
HAVE DAMN GOOD
REASON TO SIDE WITH
THOSE SHADY PEOPLE.

IT'S OKAY,
RAPH... JUST
LET HIM SLEEP,
I CAN WAIT...

MULUH...
AMWHIT?

OY,
MIKEY!

BOOO...
HI, MIKEY.

RAPH, PINCH
ME.

AS YOU
WISH.

...!

ボコ

I'M NOT
DREAMING!!

LEO LEO LEO
LEO LEO LEO
LEO LEO LEO
LEO LEO LEO!

ガハハハ

BOY AM I GLAD
TO SEE YOU!!
HOW'VE YOU
BEEN?

EERM...

LEO, YA PRICK!! WHERE
YA BEEN HIDIN' ALL
THESE YEARS?

YEAH!

WELCOME
BACK, BRO!

OY, OY,
GUYS. GIVE
THE GUY
SOME AIR.

WASSUP WITH
THIS OUTFIT?
YOU'VE BEEN
TRICK AND
TREATIN' FOR
CHRISTMAS OR
SOMETHIN'?

CASEY...
MIKEY...

THIS IS
KIND OF
SUDDEN...
I...

I DON'T KNOW
WHERE TO
START.

HEY,
ANYTHING
BUT AN
APOLOGY
WILL DO.

THAT'S MY
LINE.

YOU KNOW, IF
ONLY I HAD MORE
SUITS BACK THEN,
MAYBE THINGS
COULD'VE TURNED
OUT IN A DIFFERENT
WAY FOR ALL OF
US.

SORRY, I LET YOU
DOWN ONCE, LEO...
I SWEAR I'LL MAKE
IT UP TO YOU THIS
TIME AROUND.

DON'T BLAME
YOURSELF,
MIKEY. IT WAS
ALL MY
FAULT.

MY MIND
WASN'T
STRONG
ENOUGH.
THAT'S WHY WE
LOST THE
SENSEI AND...

STOP IT RIGHT
THERE. DON' CHA
RUIN THE MOMENT
WITH GUILT TRIPS.

WHATEVER
HAPPENED...
IT'S ALL COOL
NOW, 'AIGHT?

...AS LONG AS YA CAME
BACK TO DO YER OWN
SHARE OF CRIME-FIGHTIN',
THAT IS.

YEAH, KIND
OF.



SO, WHEN ARE
WE GONNA
HEAR IT?

HLMP?

YOUR TALE, LEO!
WHAT YOU'VE
BEEN UP TO FOR
THE LAST 17
YEARS, IN FULL
DETAILS!

NOT JUST "I'VE
BEEN INVESTIGATIN'
THE CURSE" OR
SOME HALF-ASSED
SYNOPSIS, GIVE US
THE WHOLE THING!



LET'S WAKE
DONNIE
UP, FIRST.

HE'S FAMILY. HE
SHOULD HEAR WHAT I
HAVE TO SAY ABOUT
THE CURSE.

YOUR REALITY...
IT'S SLOWLY SLIPPING
AWAY FROM YOUR
GRASP...

WHAT?
EVEN THOUGH I WORKED
SO HARD TO ACHIEVE IT...
WHY?

HE'S ALREADY HERE...
HE WHO HAS THE MEANS TO
CONFINED YOU FOREVER IN
THIS WORLD OF DECEIT AND
ILLUSION...

HOW DARE HE...
HE KNOWS HE DOESN'T
BELONG IN MY REALITY,
THAT'S WHY HE WANTS TO
GET IN MY WAY, RIGHT?

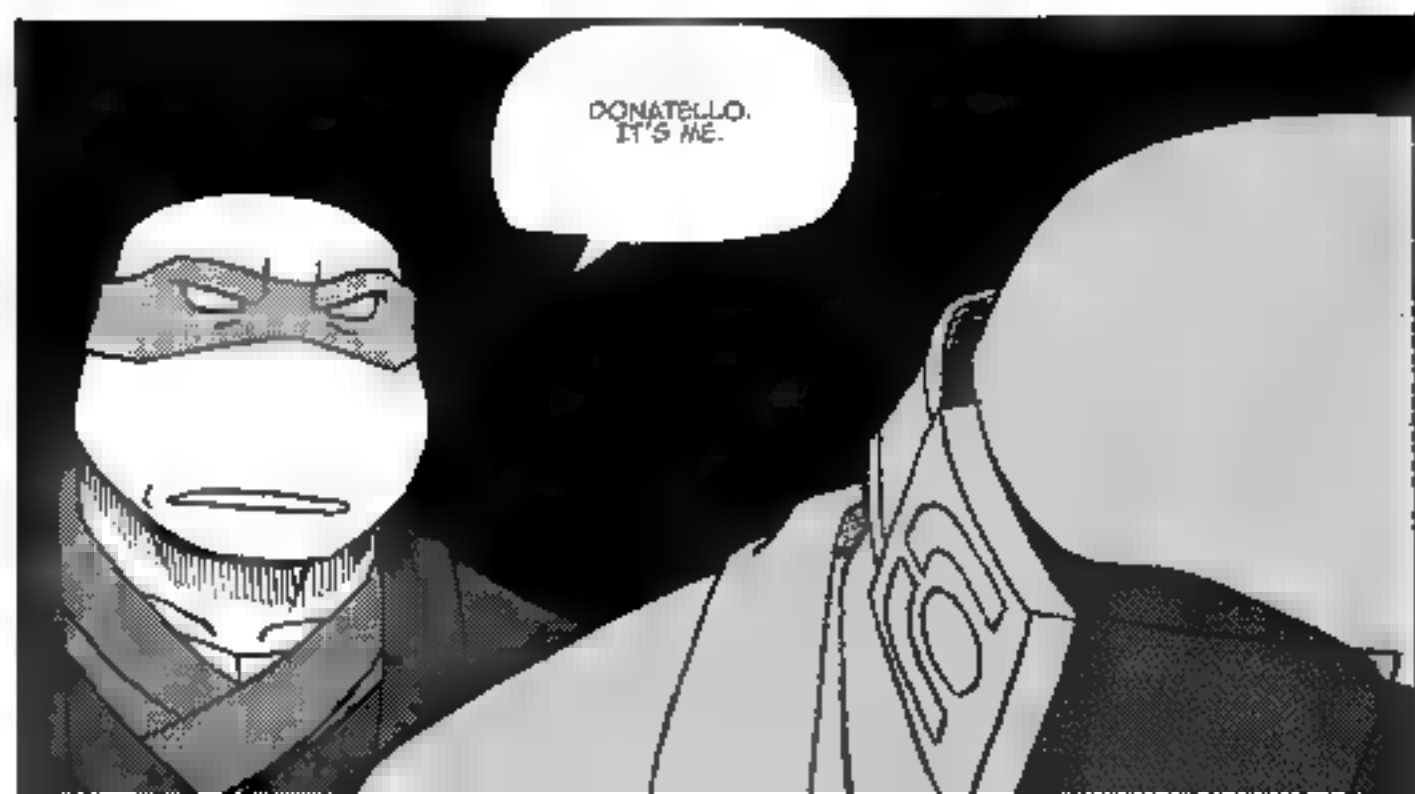
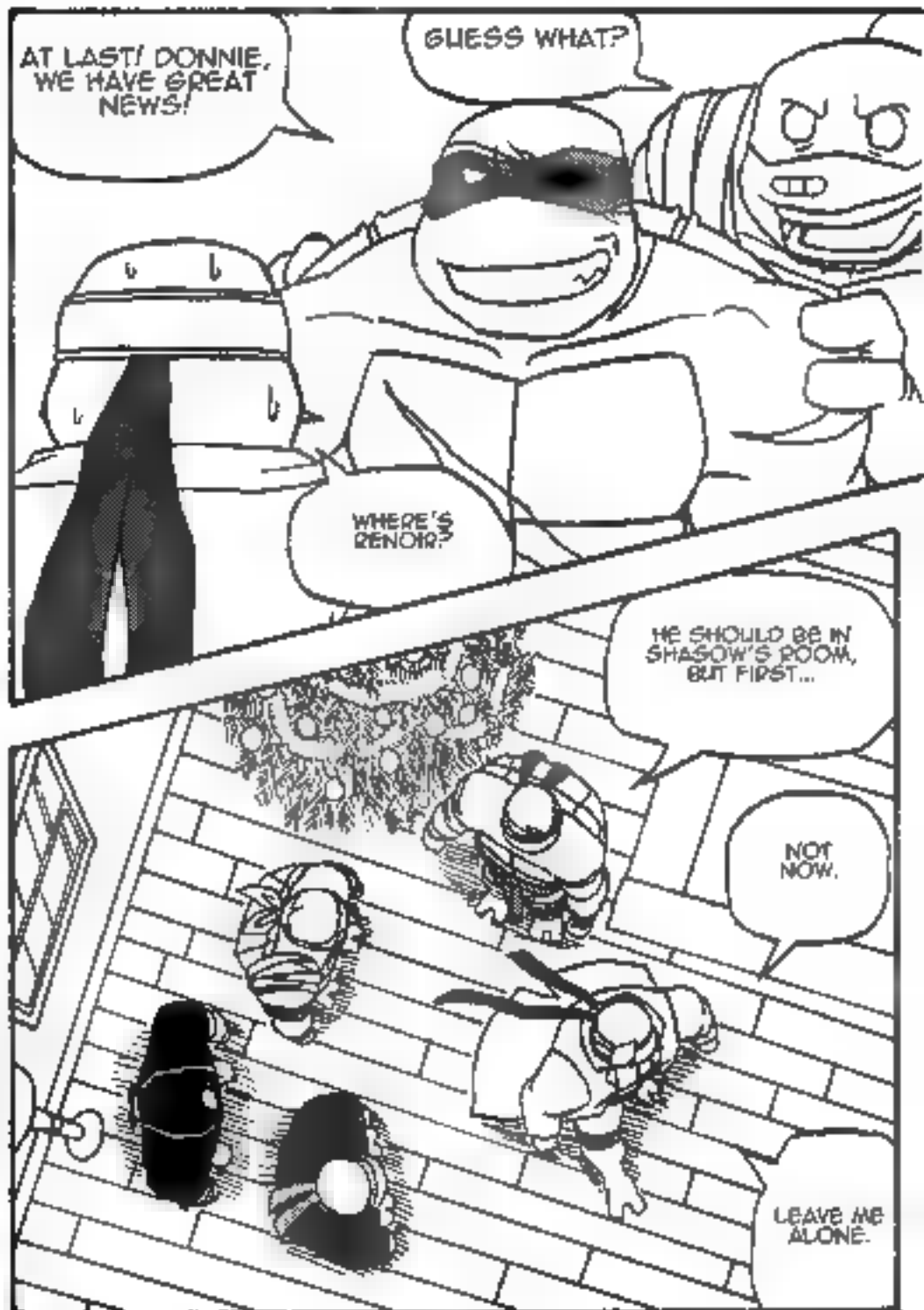


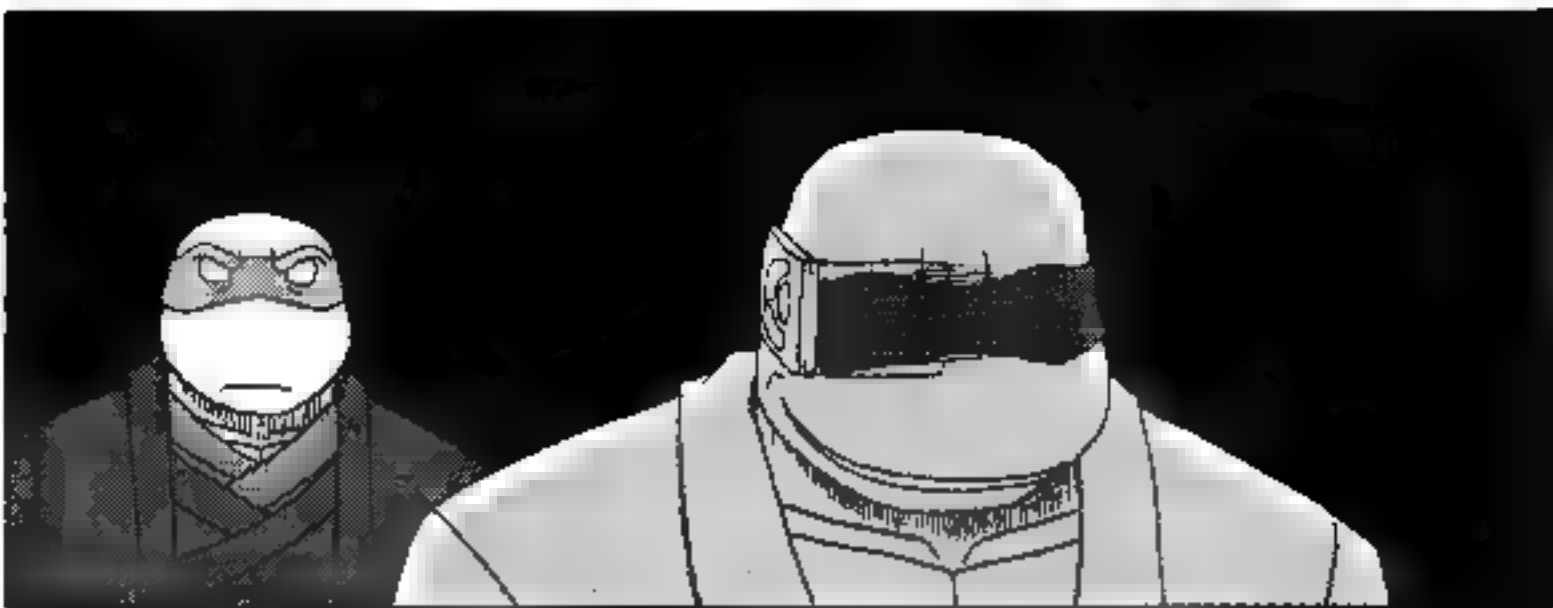
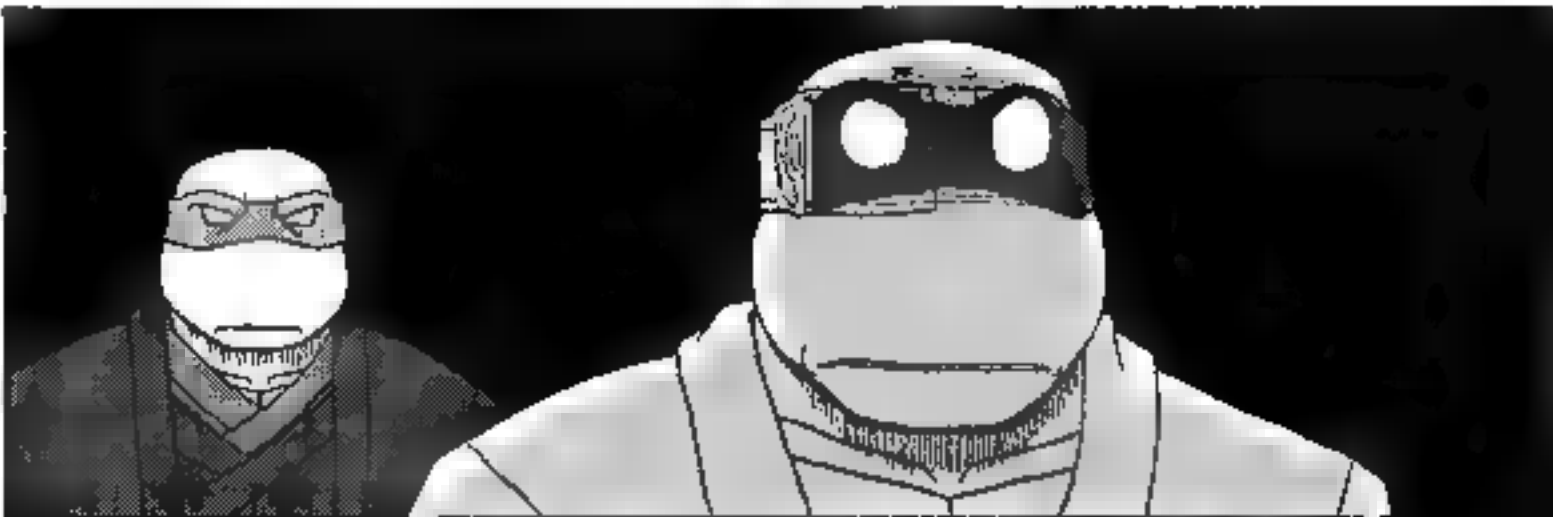
EXACTLY...
REJECT HIM. DON'T
LET HIM INFLUENCE
YOU...
REMEMBER WHAT HE
DID TO ME...

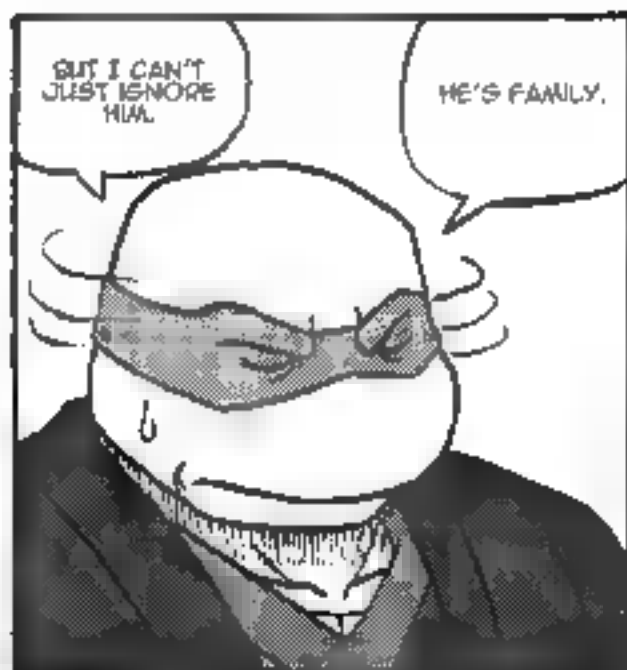
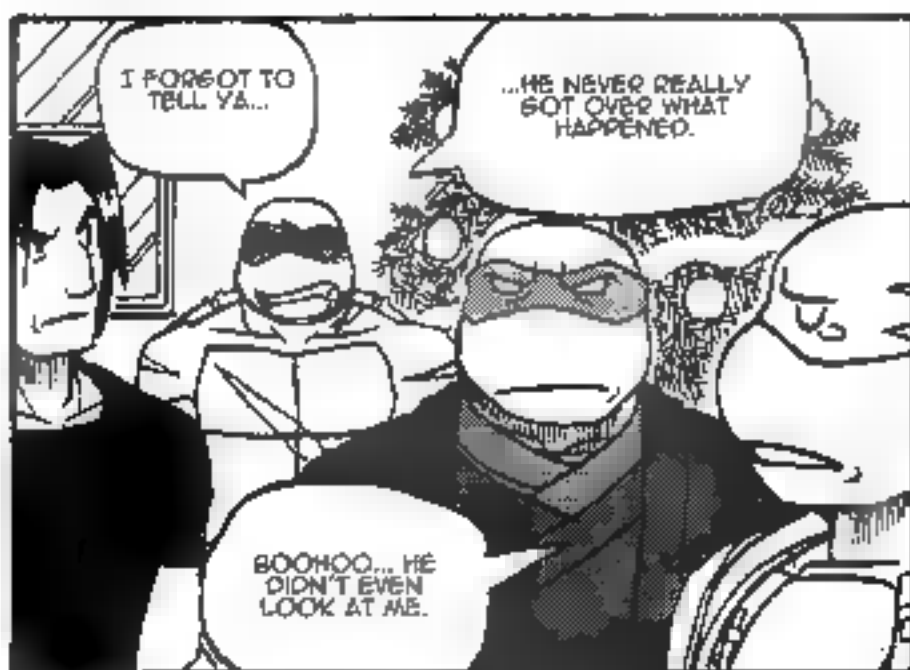
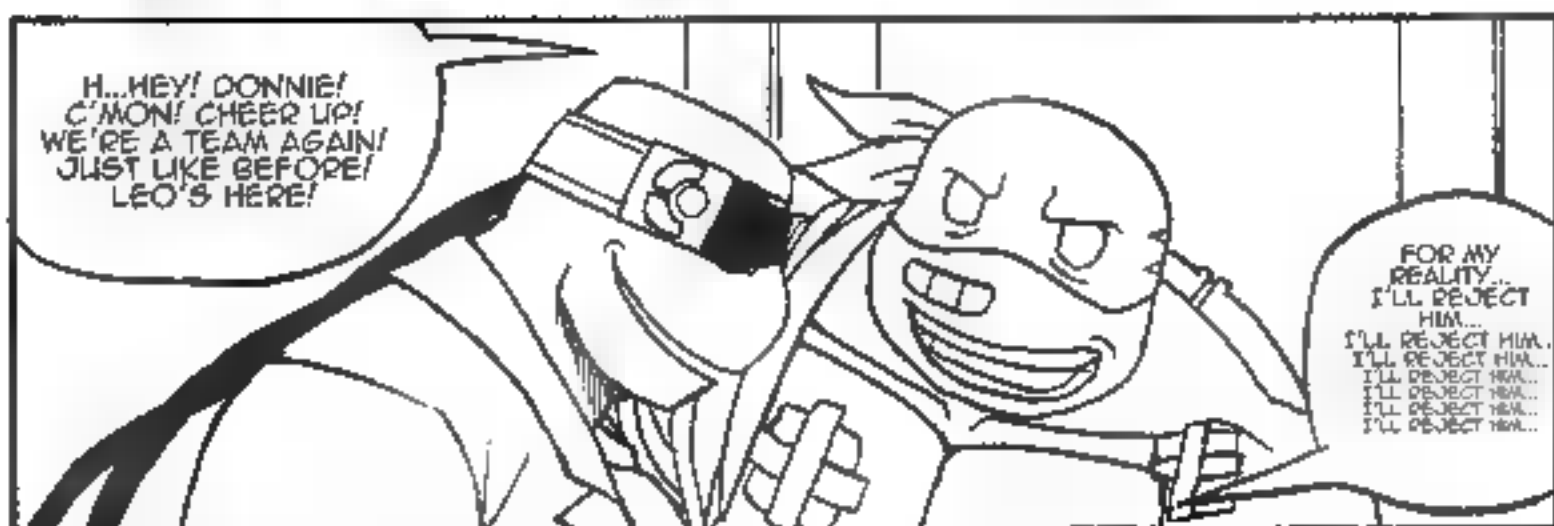
I'LL NEVER
FORGIVE HIM...
I WILL REJECT
HIM...

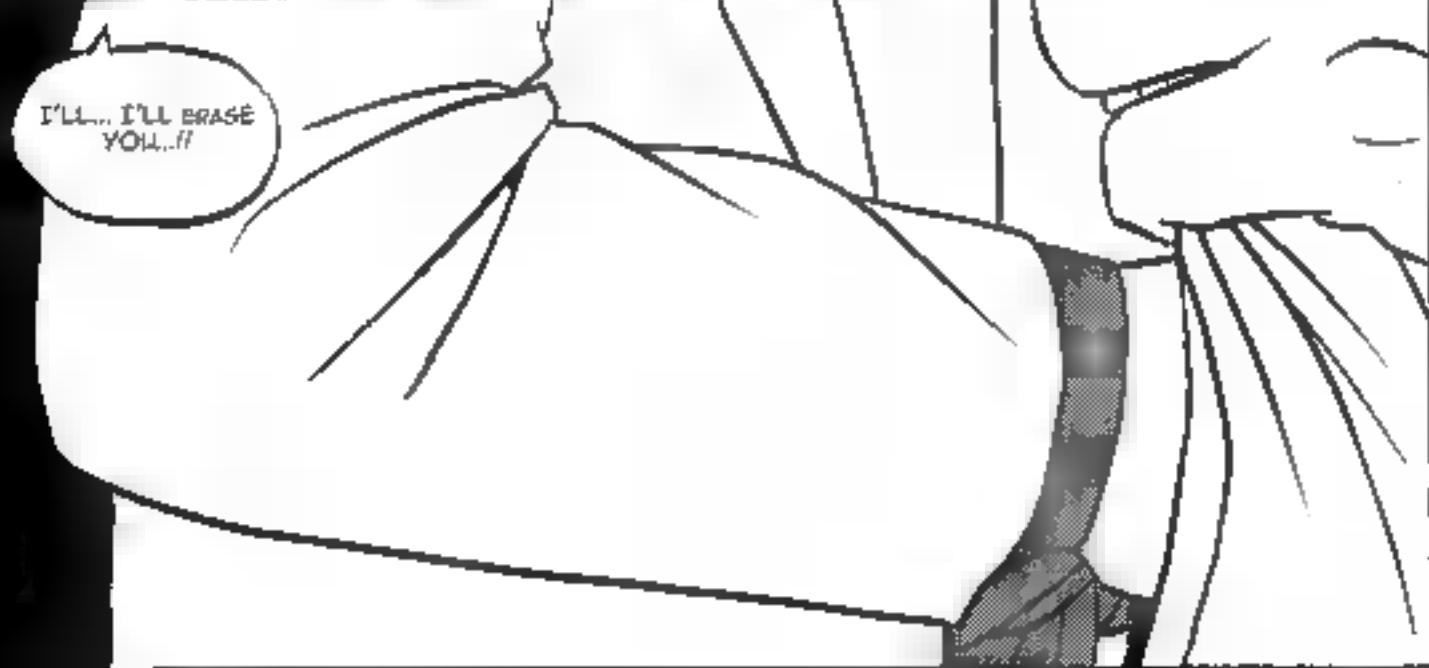
TIME IS RUNNING OUT. YOU
MUST BRING ME BACK.
YOUR REALITY IS WAITING
FOR YOU.

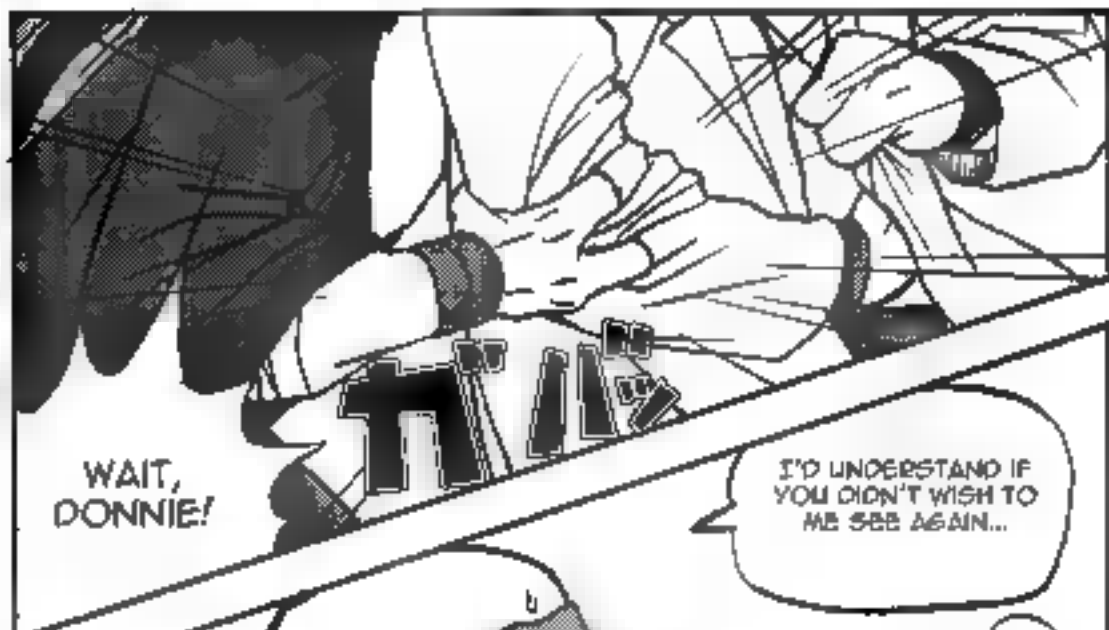
I WILL BRING YOU BACK.
I WILL SERVE YOU.
I WILL PROTECT YOU.





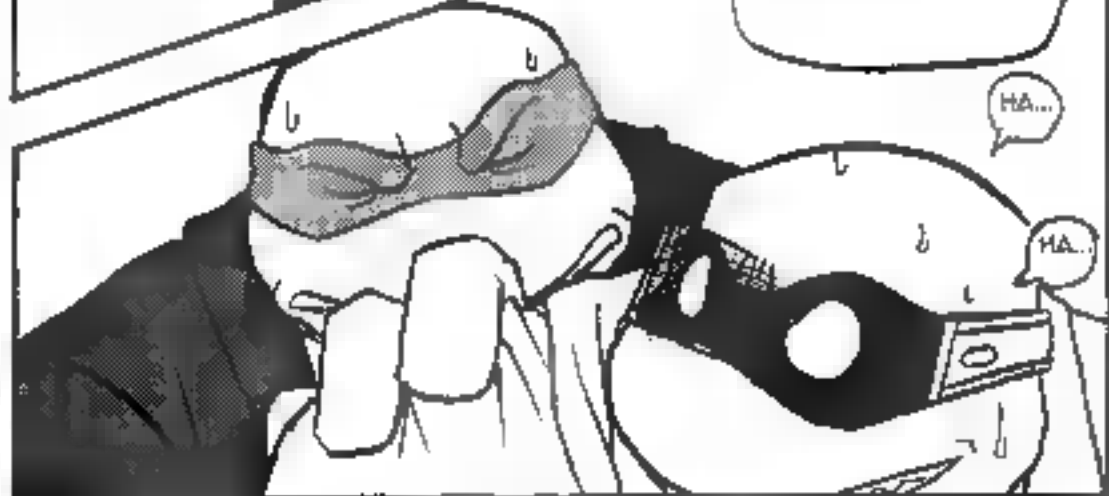






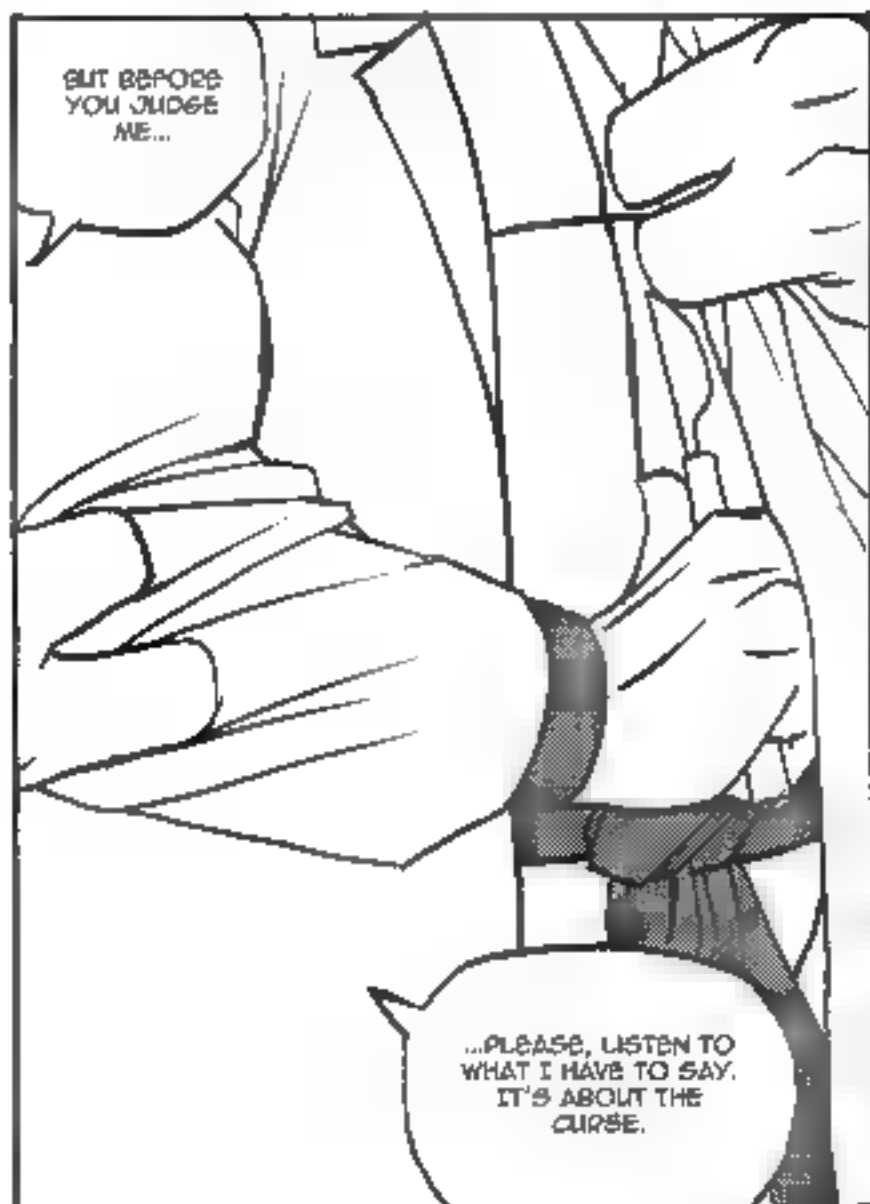
WAIT,
DONNIE!

I'D UNDERSTAND IF
YOU DIDN'T WISH TO
ME SEE AGAIN...



HA...

HA...



BUT BEFORE
YOU JUDGE
ME...

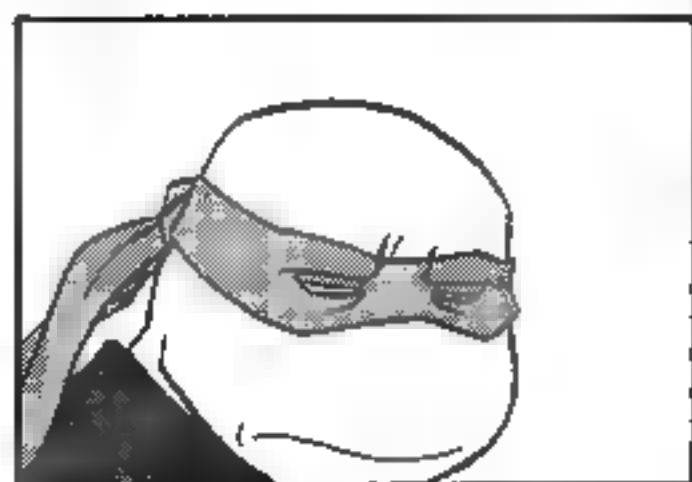
...PLEASE, LISTEN TO
WHAT I HAVE TO SAY.
IT'S ABOUT THE
CURSE.



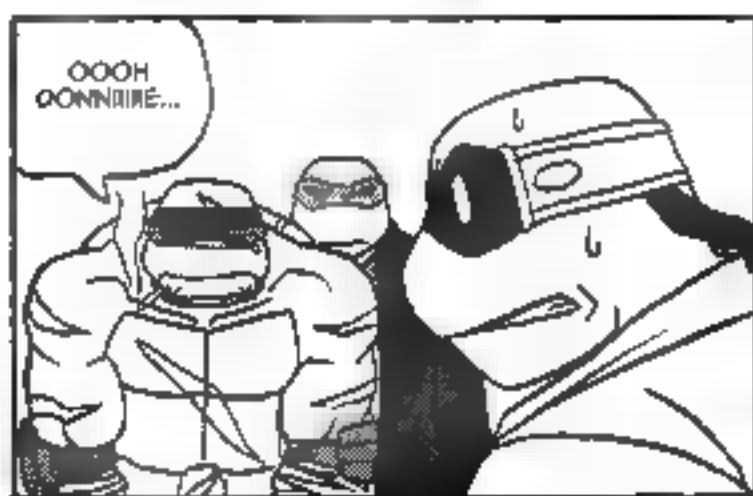
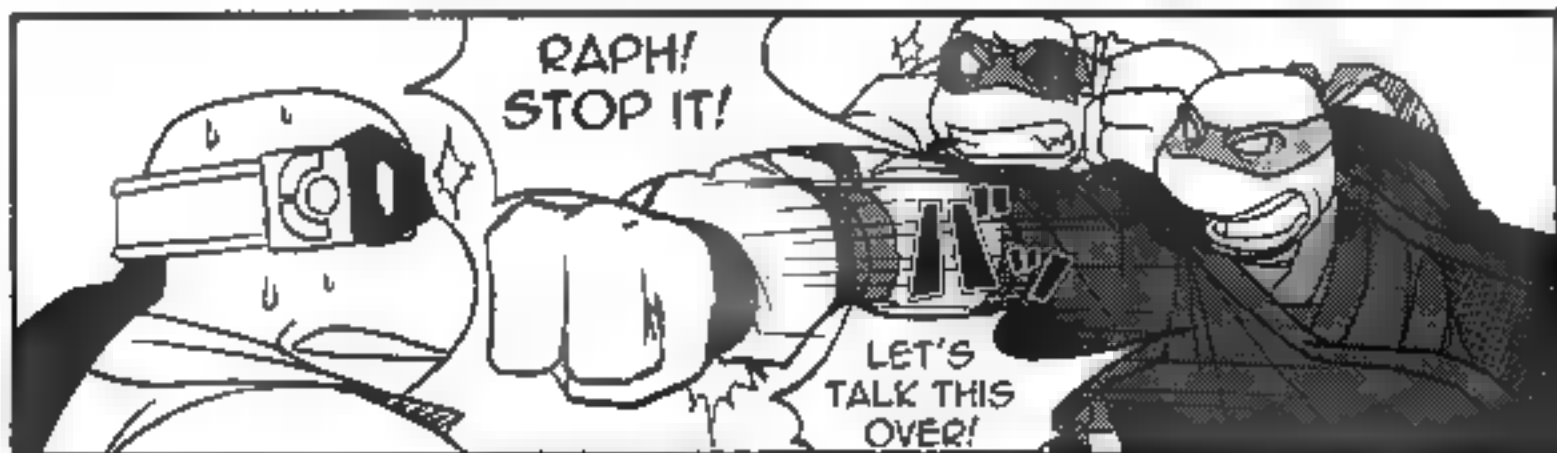
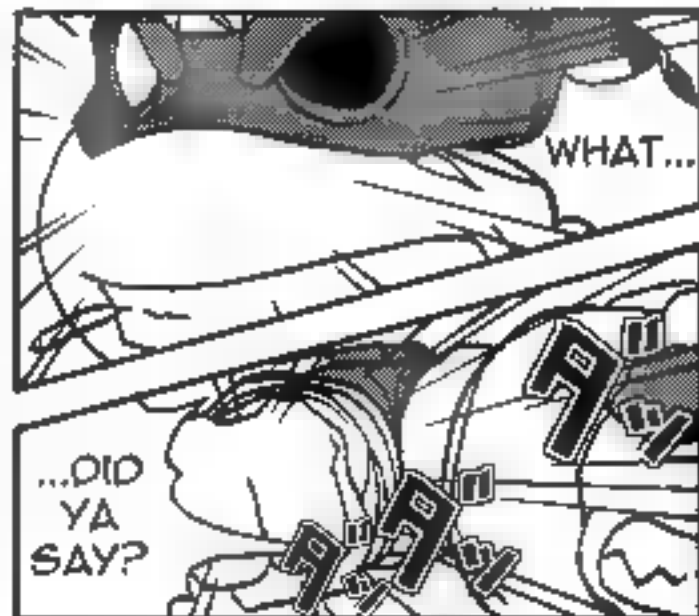
FOOLS.



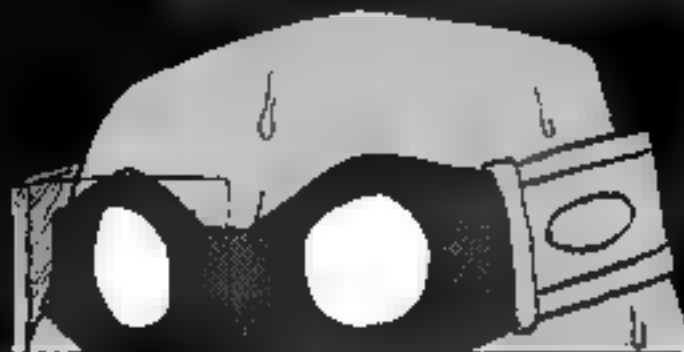
ALL
FOOLS.







MY LAST ATTEMPT TO
GET A SAMPLE WAS
TOO RISKY... THE MORE
SUSPICIOUS I AM, THE
MORE PEOPLE WILL
HOLD ME DOWN IN THIS
REALITY...!



THIS REALITY'S RAPH
IS NOT ACTING LIKE
HIMSELF... THIS MIGHT
BE MY CHANCE TO
UNDO MY MISTAKE...
AND RENEW MY
CHANCES TO ACQUIRE
A SAMPLE!

HA HA
HA HA!



MY BURNING DESIRE TO
HELP YOUNG PEOPLE
LIKE RENOIR GOT THE
BETTER OF ME!



SO EVEN IF HE'S BROUGHT TO
ME IN A BODYSAG, I'D GLADLY
USE THE POWER OF SCIENCE
TO REVIVE HIM!!

OKAY, OKAY!
I APPRECIATE
IT! THANK YOU
SIR, BUT I'M
FINE!



NO... NO!! SAY
YOU HATE THAT
LUMBERING IDIOT!
SAY YOU'D RATHER
COME WITH ME!

HMM, YES, YES.
THANK YOU,
DONATELLO.

...SO
CLOSE...!!!

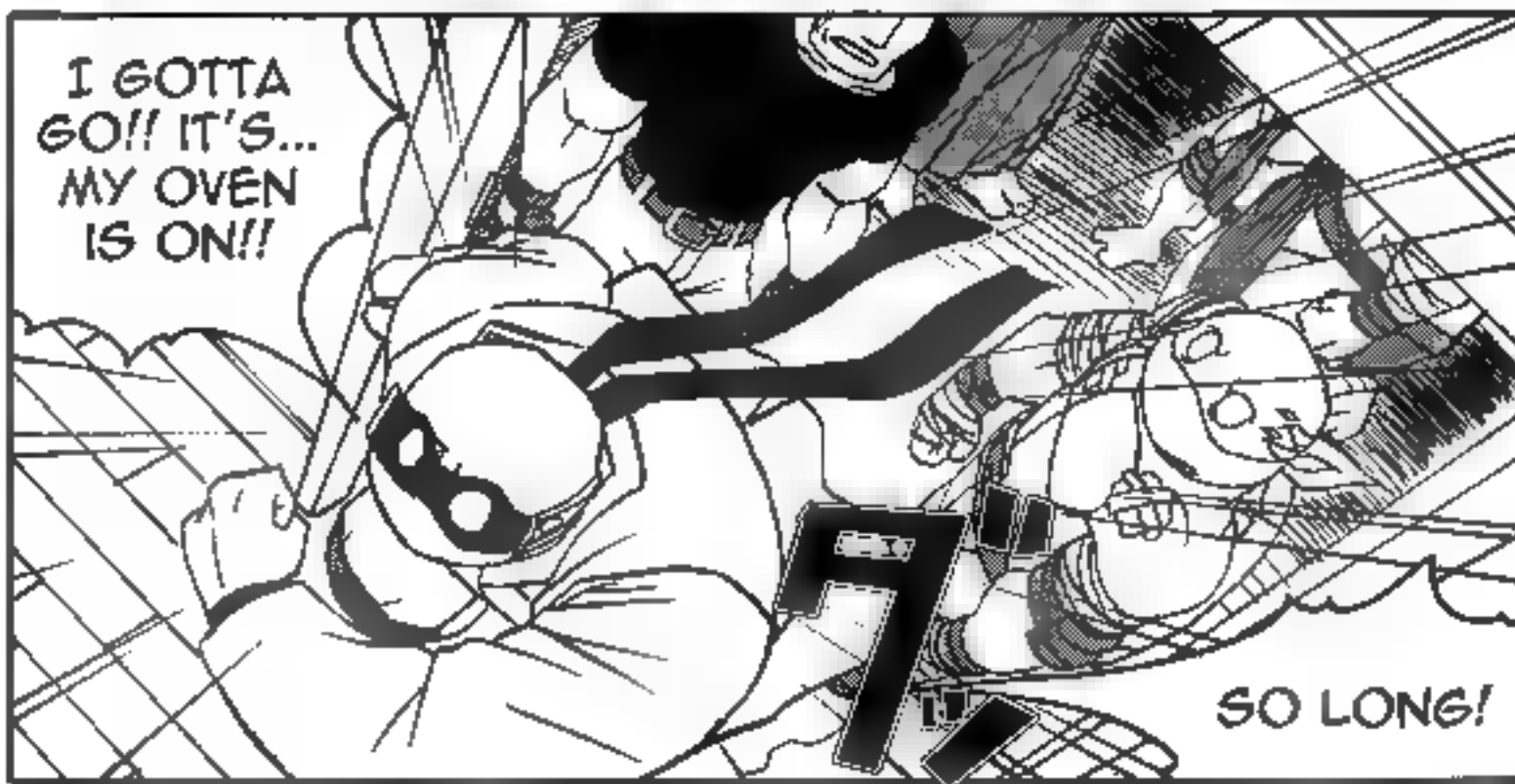
COME BACK TO
ME.

I CAN FEEL AN
INTRUDER
APPROACHING.

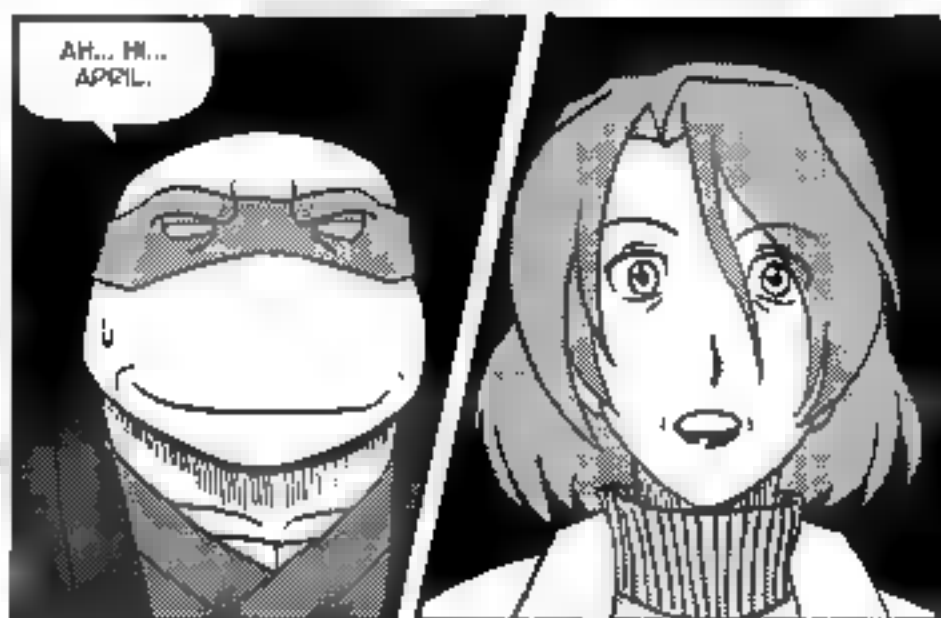


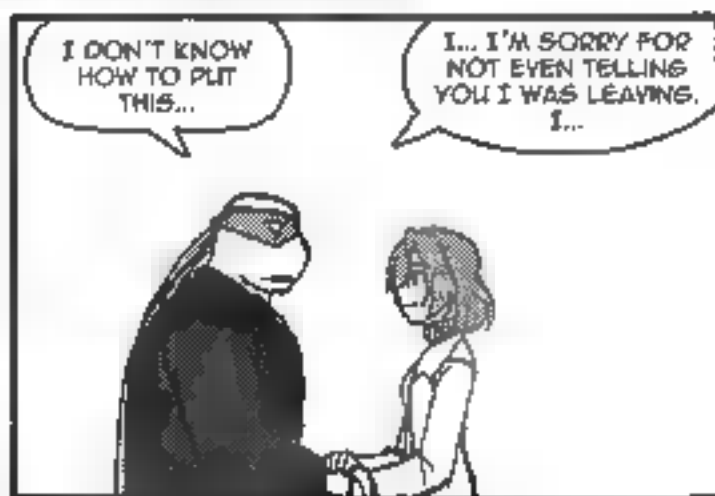
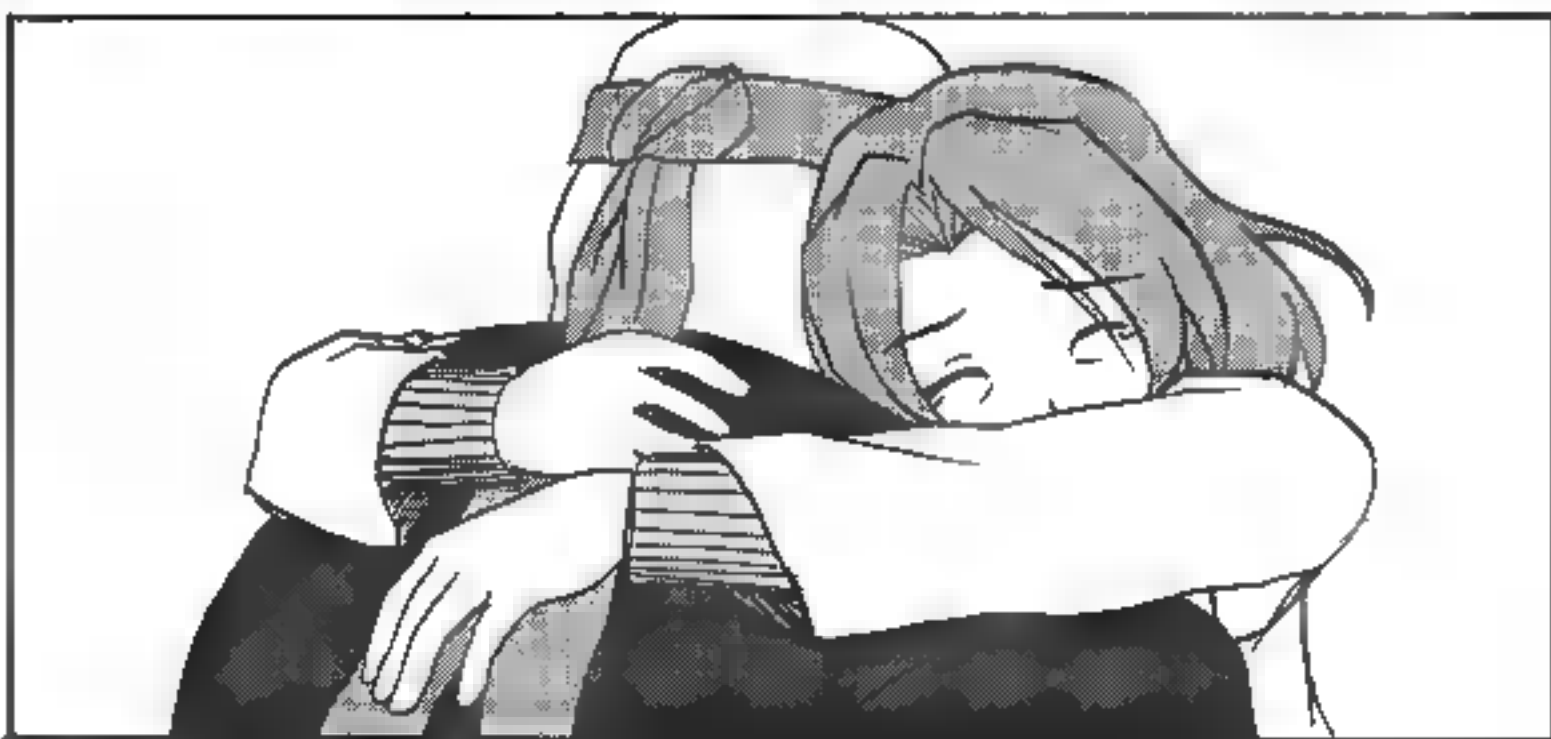
COME BACK.
PROTECT ME.
PROTECT YOUR
REALITY.

I GOTTA
GO!! IT'S...
MY OVEN
IS ON!!



SO LONG!







... IN BELIEVING
IN YOUR RETURN
ALL THESE
YEARS.

AND HERE YOU
ARE, IN FRONT
OF ME, AFTER 17
YEARS.

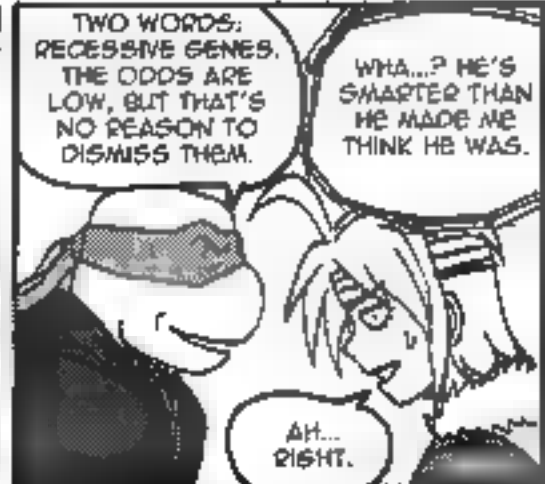
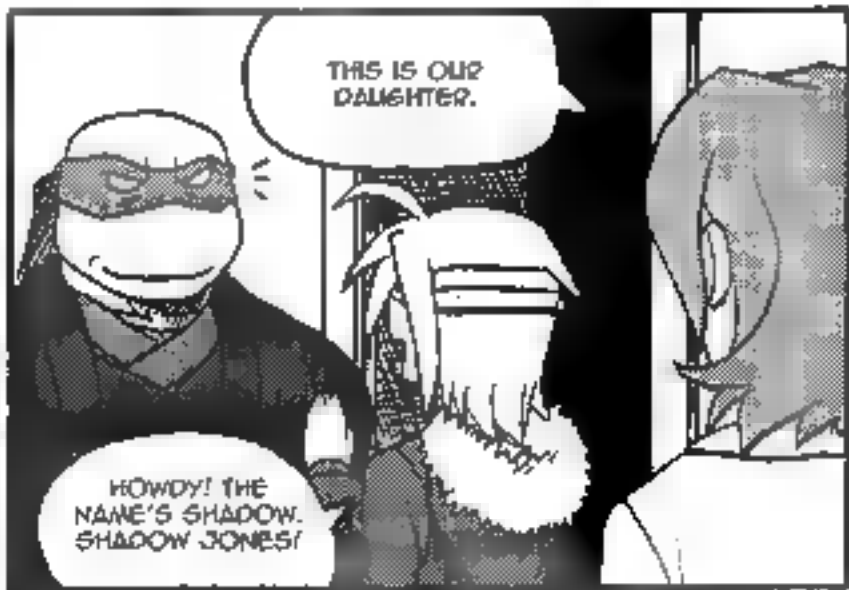
SO, THANK
YOU, LEO...
AND WELCOME
HOME.



HOME...
HUMP

I'M HOME...
APRIL...

YEAH, YEAH.
WELCOME BACK
TO "KANSAS",
"DOROTHY".





OOH, SO YOU'RE THE DESERTER!



BE NICE, SHADOW.

YES MOM, YES DAD!

HAHAHA, FOR SOME REASON, I ALWAYS KNEW IF BOTH OF YOU WERE TO HAVE A CHILD...



...SHE'D BE JUST AS SPUNKY AS SHADOW HERE! THIS IS EXACTLY THE "JONES" FAMILY MODEL I HAD IN MIND!



YES, INDEED. IT IS SUCH A BLESSING TO HAVE AN UNDERSTANDING AND SUPPORTIVE HUSBAND LIKE CASEY AND A SWEET ANGEL OF A DAUGHTER LIKE SHADOW. I REALLY LOVE WITH

LOOK, DAD! THAT GUY IS TOTALLY LITTERING IN OUR NEIGHBORHOOD!!



GOOD JOB, SHADOW! YOU JUST REDEEMED YOURSELF! NOW GRAB SOME STUFF AND SCARE HIM AWAY!



OH MY, OH MY... AND I WAS THINKING ABOUT REUSING THOSE BEAUTIFUL ORNAMENTS NEXT YEAR...

OH MY OH MY OH MY OH MY

SORRY.



CAN YOU BELIEVE IT? SHE'S NOT BLOOD RELATED TO CASEY, YET SHE'S JUST AS WILD AS HE IS. YOUR ASSESSMENT OF HER PERSONALITY WAS RIGHT ON THE MONEY.

SICK VILANTES SHOULD REST.

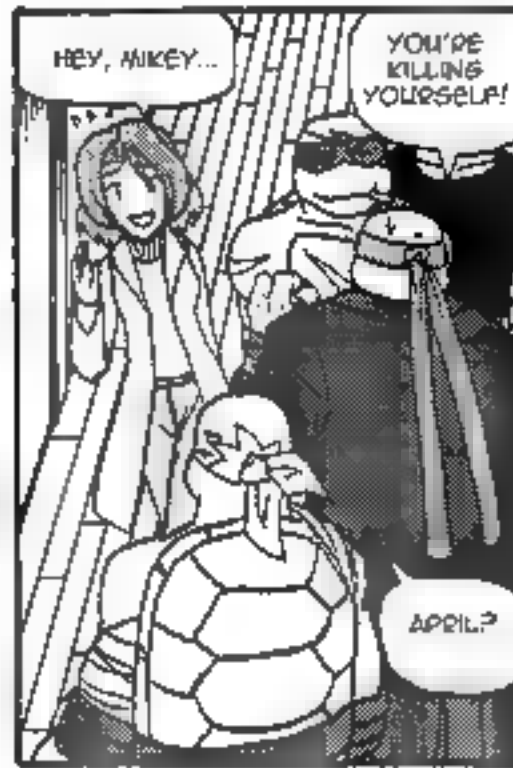
AH.



OH... OH HI! SHADOW, MY FRIENDDDDD...

SO EASY ON HIM, SHADOW. HE HAD A ROUGH NIGHT.

MY... MY LINGERIE... ALL OVER MY ROOM...



FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS, I HELD
BACK ON LAUGHING OR CRYING
TEARS OF JOY BECAUSE I
BELIEVED I NO LONGER HAD THE
RIGHT TO FEEL THE EMOTION OF
"JOY" ANYMORE.

I THOUGHT IT WAS
SOMETHING I
FORFEITED WHEN
I REJECTED MY
PAST.

HOWEVER...

...THAT
EASY-GOING
MICHELANGELO,
SMILING AND
LAUGHING ALL
THE TIME...
THAT'S WHO I'M
SUPPOSED TO
BE.

AND THAT SERIOUS
AND GROUNDED
MICHELANGELO
WITH ALL HIS
FLAWS... THAT'S
ALSO ANOTHER
IMPORTANT FACE OF
MY IDENTITY.

I'M
COMPLETE
AGAIN.

I WON'T
HOLD BACK
MY EMOTIONS
ANYMORE.

I'M GLAD
FOR YOU,
MIKEY.

NOW I WONDER IF
YOUR BROTHERS HAVE
FOUND THEIR SERIOUS
SELVES AS WELL...

GUYS... YOU
JUST
ACTIVATED
APRIL'S
SMOKE
DETECTOR.

WELL, WE'RE GONNA HAVE
TO POSTPONE THIS
TOUCHIN' REUNION TO
ANOTHER NIGHT, EHP?

YOU SEE... THIS
FIRE ALARM
CONTACTS THE
FIRE DEPARTMENT
UPON ACTIVATION.
THEY'LL BE HERE
SOON...

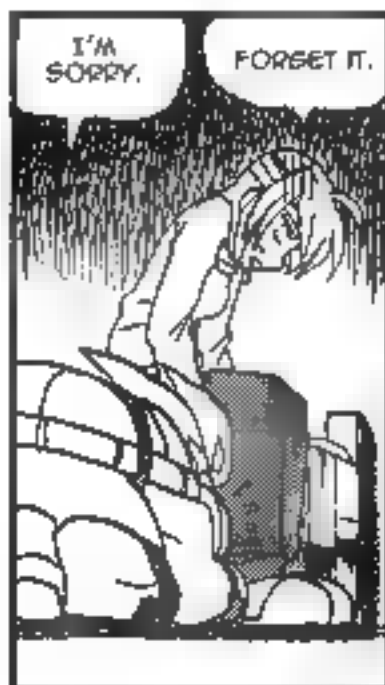
...MEANING YOU
SHOULD LEAVE NOW
INSTEAD OF
DESTROYING MY
EXPENSIVE FIRE
ALARM!! RAPH!!

STUPID
THING.

WHAT ARE
YOU DOING
THAT FOR??

SORRY ABOUT THAT, WE'LL HAVE
PLENTY OF TIME TO TALK NEXT
TIME WE MEET...

IT'S OKAY, LEO.
JUST DON'T
DISAPPEAR ON US!



I'M SORRY.

FORGET IT.



SO, FOR DAMIANNA...

...DID YOU TELL HER ABOUT IT?



NO... I SCREWED UP. INSTEAD OF TELLING HER THE "TRUTH"...

...I ASKED HER TO TELL ME THE "TRUTH".



WHY?

I DON'T KNOW. SO MUCH HAPPENED LAST NIGHT. I GOT CONFUSED.



IN THE END, SHE MADE ME REALIZE THAT MY IDENTITY IS SOMETHING THAT ONLY I COULD DETERMINE.

NOW I KNOW... I DIDN'T TELL PEOPLE I WAS AUGUSTUS BECAUSE I BELIEVED IT... I DID IT BECAUSE I WANTED THEM TO TELL ME IN RETURN THAT IT IS THE TRUTH... I'M SUCH A FOOL...

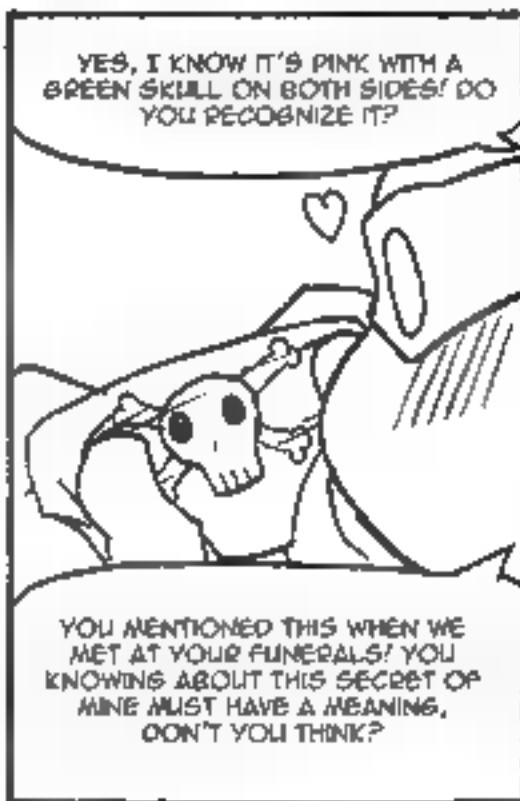


HUH? BUT I THOUGHT YOU WERE THE ONE CONFIDENT ABOUT YOUR IDENTITY ALL ALONG!

DON'T TELL ME YOU'RE GONNA WHINE TWICE AS MUCH FROM NOW ON BECAUSE YOU'RE LOST ■ YOUR "QUEST FOR IDENTITY"! NO WAY... I'M GONNA LET THIS HAPPEN!



USH, I HATE DOING THIS, BUT... TAKE A LOOK AT THIS!



YES, I KNOW IT'S PINK WITH A GREEN SKULL ON BOTH SIDES! DO YOU RECOGNIZE IT?

YOU MENTIONED THIS WHEN WE MET AT YOUR FUNERALS! YOU KNOWING ABOUT THIS SECRET OF MINE MUST HAVE A MEANING, DON'T YOU THINK?



AH... YEAH... BUT MORE IMPORTANTLY... WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME YOU WORE THIS?

YOU..



D... DON'T HIT ME!

IT WAS PARTIALLY MEANT TO BE A JOKE QUESTION!

EASY THERE.
I'M NOT GONNA
HIT YOU JUST
FOR THAT.

I WANTED
TO RECLAIM
THIS, JUST
IN CASE.

AHP

JUST WHEN I THOUGHT
YOU'D START FOCUSING
ON EXPRESSING SELF-
PITY AND FORGET ABOUT
EVERYTHING ELSE, YOU
SAY THE MOST RANDOM
AND OFFENSIVE THING
EVER. HOWEVER, I'M
GLAD TO SEE YOU'RE IN
BETTER CONTROL OF
YOUR EMOTIONS NOW.



SO IF YOU'RE
GONNA MAKE
SOME EFFORT
TO BE LESS
WHINY...

...I'LL TRY TO
REACT LESS
VIOLENTLY TO
YOUR
"JOKES".

YOU'RE
SO
CUTE!!

DON'T PUSH
IT...!



'COUGH'
'COUGH'
'COUGH'

A... ARE YOU
ALRIGHT?



'COURSE I'M ALRIGHT!
WHY DO YOU THINK THE
HOSPITAL LET ME GO?

AT LEAST
LIE DOWN
AND REST.

THE TRUTH IS... I CAN
BARELY STOP THINKING
ABOUT MY IDENTITY. IT
FREAKS ME OUT HOW IT
CAN BE JUST ABOUT
ANYTHING.

I'M LOOKING FOR
THE TRUTH... BUT AT
THE SAME TIME, I'M
AFRAID THAT IT MIGHT
BE SOMETHING I'LL
REGRET KNOWING.

YOU CAN'T
CHANGE
REALITY
ITSELF...

...BUT WHAT
YOU MAKE
OF IT, THAT
YOU CAN.

YOU KNOW, I'M NOT MY PARENTS'
BIOLOGICAL DAUGHTER. MY REAL
MOTHER DIED AT CHILD BIRTH. AS
FOR MY REAL FATHER... NO ONE
KNOWS.

THE TRUTH WAS SO SHOCKING
THAT I FELT LIKE
RUNNING AWAY FOREVER.

I ONCE
HAD
ISSUES
WITH MY
IDENTITY
AS WELL.

MOM AND DAD TOLD ME THE TRUTH
WHEN I WAS TEN BECAUSE I KEPT
ASKING THEM WHY MY HAIR COLOR
WAS UNLIKE EITHER OF THEIRS.

BUT INSTEAD, I DECIDED TO OPEN
MY EYES AND HAD A SECOND
LOOK AT REALITY: MY "REAL"
PARENTS WERE THERE ALL
ALONG.

REALITY IS SET IN THE STONE, BUT
WE CAN HAVE CONTROL OVER HOW
IT AFFECTS US. TAKE EACH TRUTH
REALITY HAS TO OFFER AND
WEIGHT ITS IMPORTANCE - ASK
YOURSELF WHAT TO MAKE OF
EACH OF THEM.

ACCEPT THE EXISTENCE
OF HURTFUL TRUTHS
WHILE EMBRACING THE
PLEASANT ONES TO
MAKE UP FOR THEM.
THAT'S HOW YOU CAN
GET THE MOST OUT OF
LIFE WITHOUT LYING TO
YOURSELF.

GET THE MOST
OUT OF LIFE
WITHOUT LIES,
HUH?

THAT
SOUNDS
GOOD TO
ME...

IN THAT CASE,
LET ME SAY
THIS... I'M GLAD
YOU'RE ALIVE
AND KICKING,
SHADOW.

WH...WHAT?

WH... WHY ARE
YOU SAYING
THAT ALL OF A
SUDDEN?

OH, THE HELL WITH IT.
YOU WERE REALLY
COOL BACK THERE,
AMBUSTUS.

I'M GLAD YOU WERE
THERE FOR ME...
AGAIN.
THANKS.

I MEAN, IT MAKES
YOU SOUND LIKE
A DORK, AND...
AND...

AH... AHAAHAHA!
JUST CALL ME
"RENOIR" FOR THE
TIME BEING. I'M
GETTING USED TO
THAT NICKNAME.

RENOIR!

MOVE YER
ASS! WE'RE
GOIN' HOME!

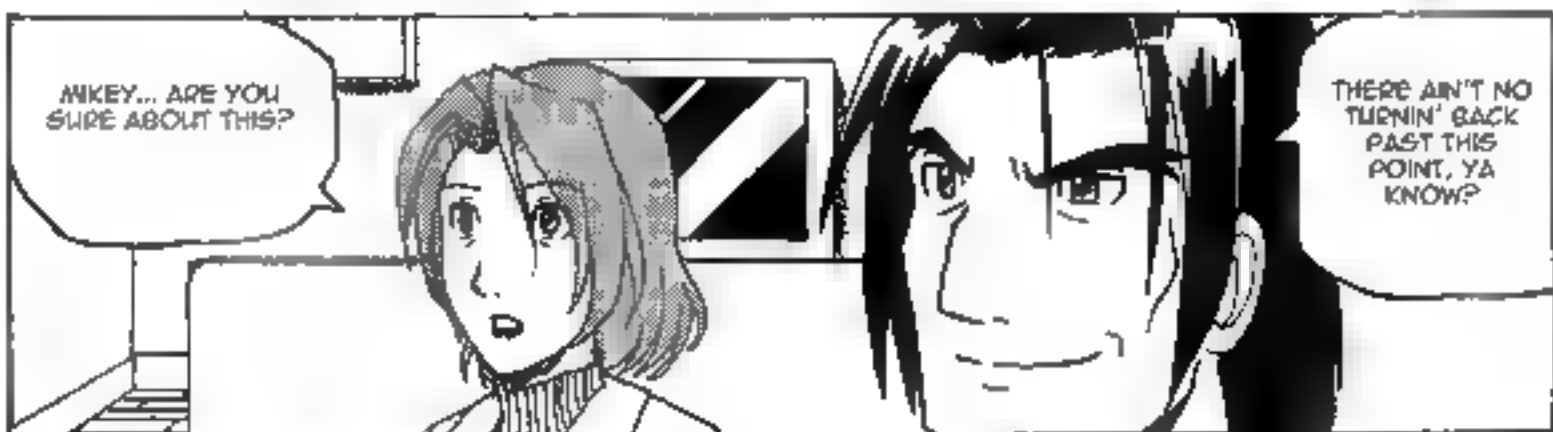
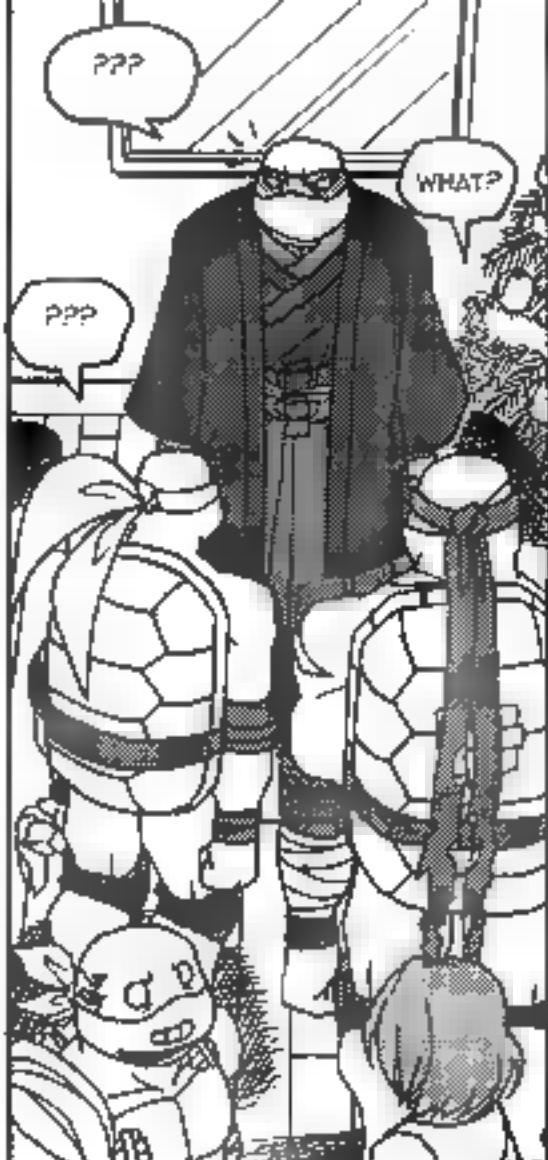
REST EASY,
ROOKIE.

LEAVE THE STREETS OF
NEW YORK TO YER
FATHER AND US.

TAKE CARE,
SHADOW.

SEE YOU
SOON.

RENOIR.





WAIT!!
RAPH!!

S...SLOW
DOWN!

SEEN' YA AS SLOW AS THIS
MAKES ME WONDER HOW YA
MANAGED TO GET TO THOSE
FOOT NINJAS' MEETING POINT IN
THE FIRST PLACE...
THEN AGAIN, YOU'RE OUTTA
SHAPE AND YOU'RE STILL
RECOVERIN'...

CAN'T WE...
"HUFF"
"HUFF"
...SLOW
DOWN??

EX...EXACTLY!
I... I USED TO
BE THE
FASTEST ONE,
REMEMBER?
J...JUST...
JUST GIMME
SOME TIME!
I'LL CATCH UP
WITH YOU
GUYS!



WHAT ARE
YOU DOING?

AH...! HE'S
ALREADY
AHEAD OF
US!

GET
MOVING.

HEH...

LEEEOOO!

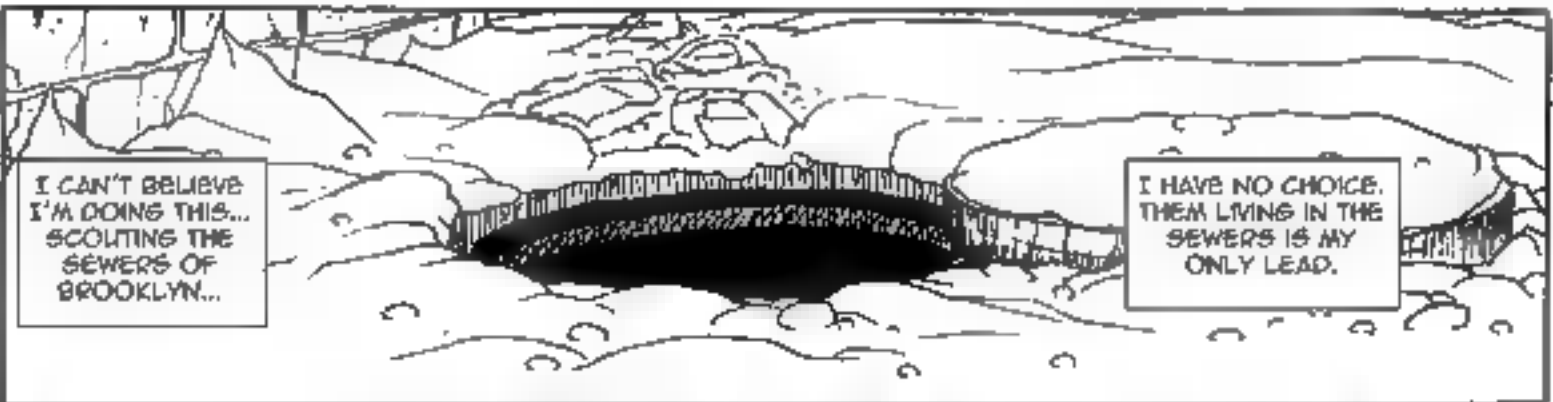
GAH!
WAIT!!

ARE YOU
CHALLENGIN'
ME? EEEH???




MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNT 外伝
G AIDEN

CHAPTER 18: A LITTLE
DEEPER IN
DONATELLO'S WORLD



I CAN'T BELIEVE
I'M DOING THIS...
SCOUTING THE
SEWERS OF
BROOKLYN...


I HAVE NO CHOICE.
THEM LIVING IN THE
SEWERS IS MY
ONLY LEAD.



I HAD TO VAGUELY
PINPOINT THE CENTER
OF THEIR ACTIVITIES
BASED ON THEIR
SIGHTINGS RECORDED
■ THE LAST FEW
MONTHS.



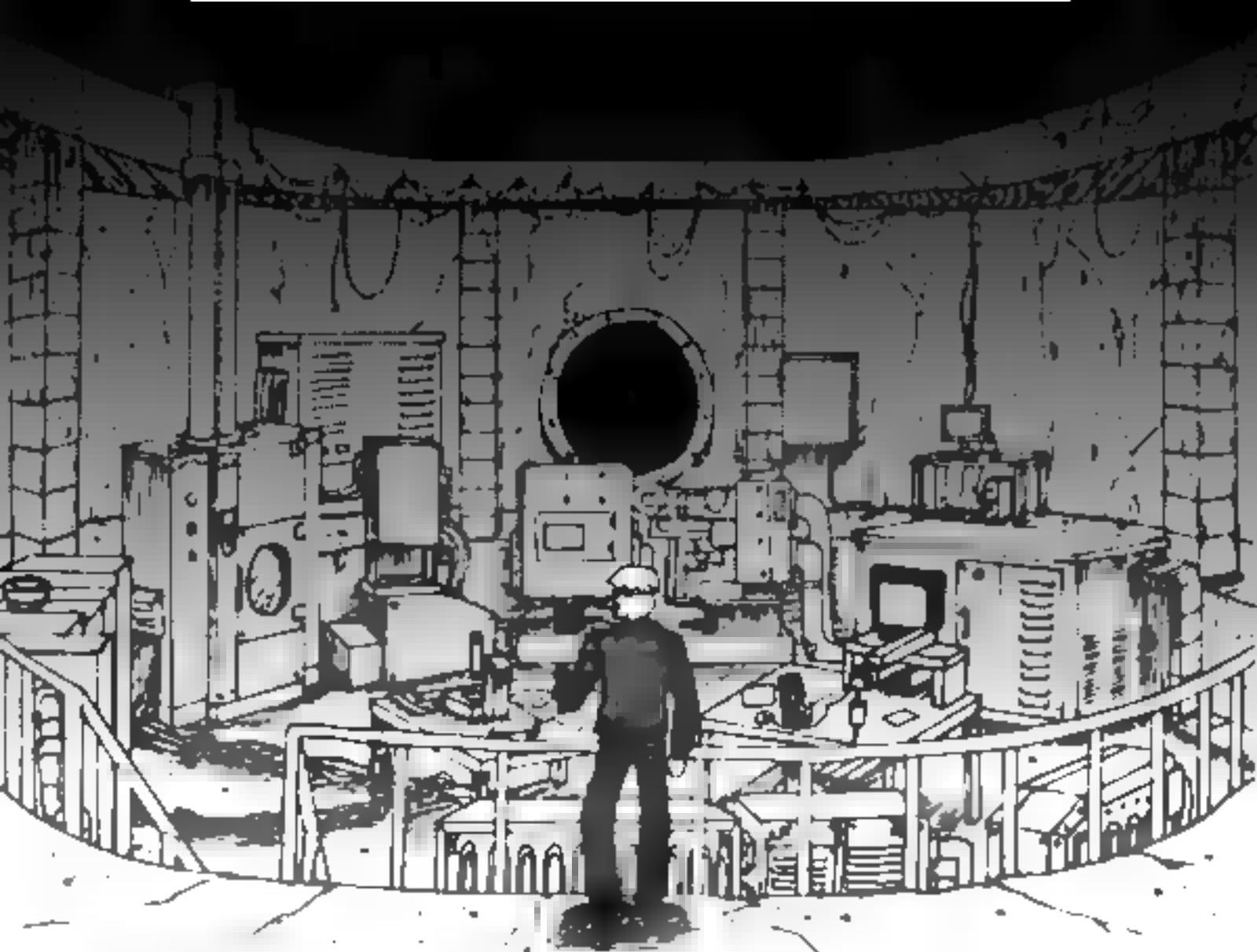
WHAT AN
UNSANITARY
PLACE...



QUITE FITTING FOR THE
MONSTERS THEY ARE. I
GET THEIR LIVING
QUARTERS ARE AS
PRIMITIVE AS A
CAVEMAN'S.

THIS WILL EITHER
YIELD SOMETHING
OR BE A COMPLETE
WASTE OF MY
DAY-OFF.





THIS IS A
JOKER!

THOSE MUTANTS ARE
AS TECHNOLOGICALLY
ADVANCED AS WE ARE?
ALL THESE MACHINES.
CAN THEY REALLY USE
THEM?

WHATEVER THEY
ARE TRYING TO
ACHIEVE WITH ALL
THIS JUNK.

IT CAN'T
BE FOR
THE GOOD OF
THE
CITIZENS!



"DO NOT
TOUCH" THAT
MEANS I
SHOULD





A POD...
WHAT COULD
THOSE MUTANTS
HAVE BEEN USING
THIS FOR?

"A37". WHAT
IS THE
MEANING OF
THIS CODE?

IS THIS THE 37TH
EXPERIMENT OF
SOME KIND?

THE SHUTTERS
ARE COMPLETELY
RUSTED... THIS
MUST BE OLD.

IT SMELLS LIKE
SOMETHING
ROTTEN'S
INSIDE...

THERE'S NO USE
WASTING ANY MORE
TIME HERE. CHANCES
ARE IF THOSE MUTANTS
ARE AS INTELLIGENT
AS WE ARE, THEY ARE
ALREADY PLAYING
GOO.

AND THAT WOULD MEAN
TROUBLE FOR ALL OF
US... I NEED TO
INCAPACITATE THEM AS
SOON AS POSSIBLE.
MAYBE IF I LOOK
DEEPER, I CAN FIND
SOME KIND OF POWER
GENERATOR AND FOIL
WHATEVER EVIL PLAN
THEY HAVE IN MIND.



LEO, LEO!!
OY! HOLD IT
RIGHT THERE!

WHY?



THAT'S THE WAY TO OUR
OLD LAIR, BUT DONNIE'S
MADE IT HIS TURF. YA SAID
YA WANTED TO GIVE HIM
SOME TIME TO COOL
DOWN, RIGHT?

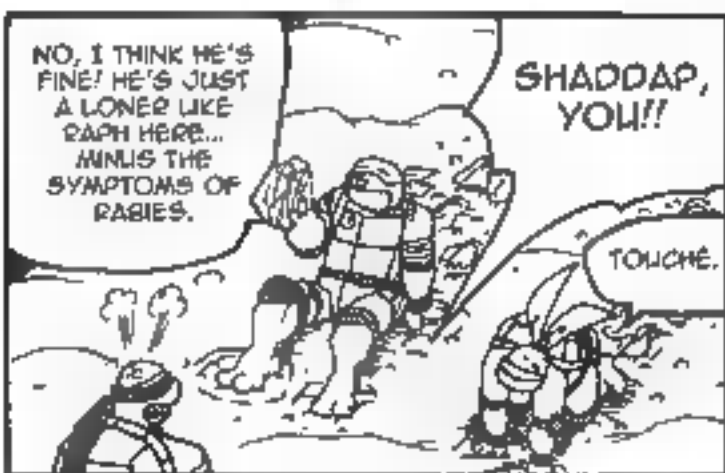
YOU'RE RIGHT,
RAPH... I DON'T
THINK HE'LL BE
HAPPY TO SEE ME.

C'MON, LET'S
GO TO MY
PLACE. IT'S
SMALL, BUT WE
CAN ALL FIT IN.



I'M TRULY CONCERNED
ABOUT DONNIE'S WELL
BEING. I KNOW PEOPLE
CHANGE WITH TIME, BUT...

...THERE'S
SOMETHING
MORE TO HIM
THAN MEETS
THE EYE.



NO, I THINK HE'S
FINE! HE'S JUST
A LONER LIKE
RAPH HERE...
MINUS THE
SYMPTOMS OF
RABIES.

SHADDAP,
YOU!!

TOUCHE.



MEHH... ANYWAYS, DON'T
WORRY TOO MUCH. HE'S
NOT WACKO... HE'S JUST
VERY ENGROSSED IN HIS
EXPERIMENTS TO POINT
WHERE HE'S CRANKY.

TELL YOU WHAT:
I'LL CHECK ON HIM
NOW. AFTER ALL, I
NEED SOMETHING
FROM HIM.

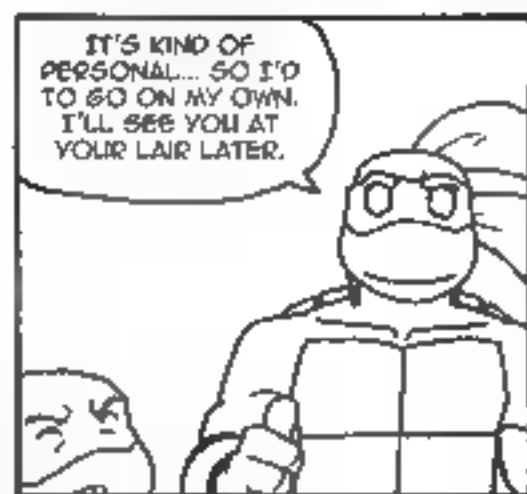


WILL YOU BE
FINE? YOU'RE
IN A BAD
SHAPE, AND...

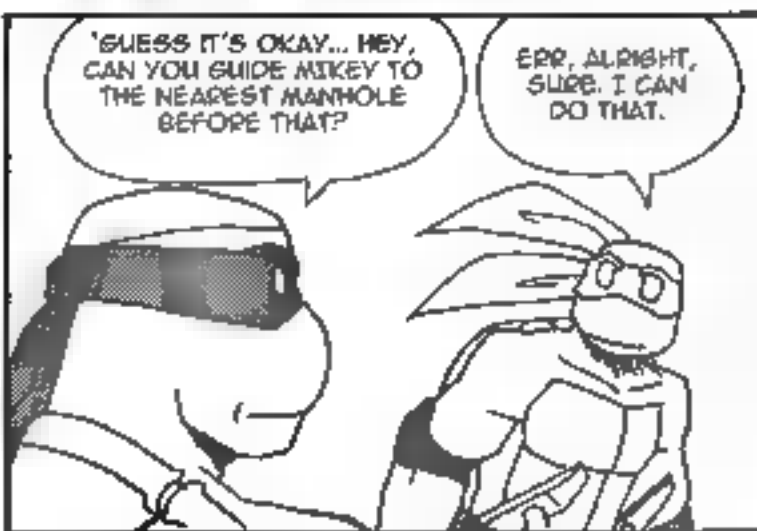
...I'M IN A GREAT
SHAPE AND I'M
FINE! THOSE ARE
JUST SCRATCHES!



MASTER...
MAY I GO
SOMEWHERE
AS WELL?



IT'S KIND OF
PERSONAL... SO I'D
TO GO ON MY OWN.
I'LL SEE YOU AT
YOUR LAIR LATER.



'GUESS IT'S OKAY... HEY,
CAN YOU GUIDE MIKEY
TO THE NEAREST MANHOLE
BEFORE THAT?

ERR, ALRIGHT,
SURE. I CAN
DO THAT.

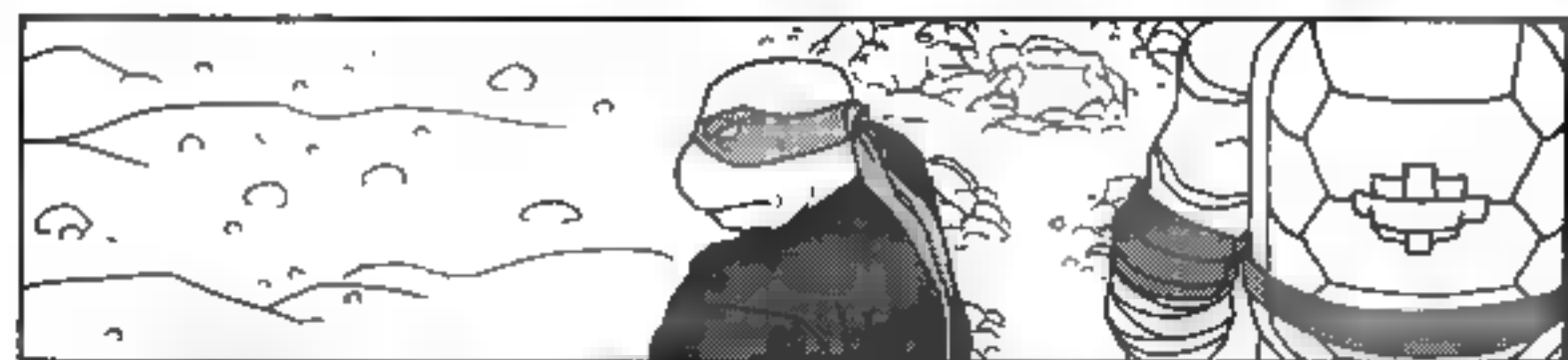


IT'S DAYTIME... SO
BE CAREFUL. I
DON'T FEEL LIKE
SAVIN' YA AGAIN.



UNDERSTOOD!
COME ON, SID!

OKAY!



HEY, WHATCHA
LOOKIN' AT, LEO?

AH.

HMMMM?

OOOH! RIGHT,
RIGHT! YA MUST BE
SICK OF SUSHI!
WE'RE GONNA GET
SOME PIZZA FOR YA
LATER!

Papa Hutt

THEY'VE GONE
BEFORE RAPH
COULD SEE
THEM.

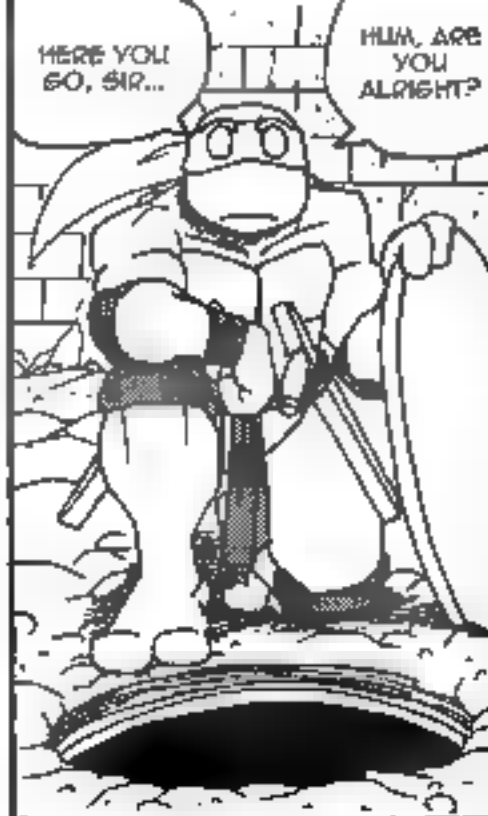
Y... YEAH.
PIZZA IS
GOOD!

AHA
HA
HA

I MISS
PIZZA!

YOU OKAY? HEY, YA
GOTTA RELAX, LEO.
TAKE YER TIME TO
REVISIT NEW YORK,
ONE THING AT A TIME,
'KAY?

YES... YOU'RE RIGHT,
RAPH.
ONE THING AT A TIME.
ONE THING AT A TIME...



HUM, ARE YOU ALRIGHT?



J...JUST CATCHING UP MY BREATH...



YOU LOOK LIKE A DIFFERENT PERSON.



EVER SINCE I KNEW YOU, YOU'D FROWN ALL THE TIME. NOW, YOU SMILE AND LAUGH FOR JUST ABOUT ANYTHING.



SURPRISED?

C'MON, IF I DON'T SMILE, WHO WILL, RIGHT?



MY BROTHERS ARE ALL SO BUSY BEING SPITEFUL OR SERIOUS THAT IT TAKES SOMEONE TO LIGHTEN THE MOOD AND REMIND THEM TO TAKE IT EASY ONCE IN A WHILE.

IT USED TO BE MY ROLE, BUT I TOOK 17 YEAR-LONG SABBATICAL. NOW, I'M BACK TO PICK UP FROM WHERE I LEFT OFF.



SO, HEY. WIPE OUT THAT FROWNY FACE AND SHOW ME A SMILE, WILL YA?

...?

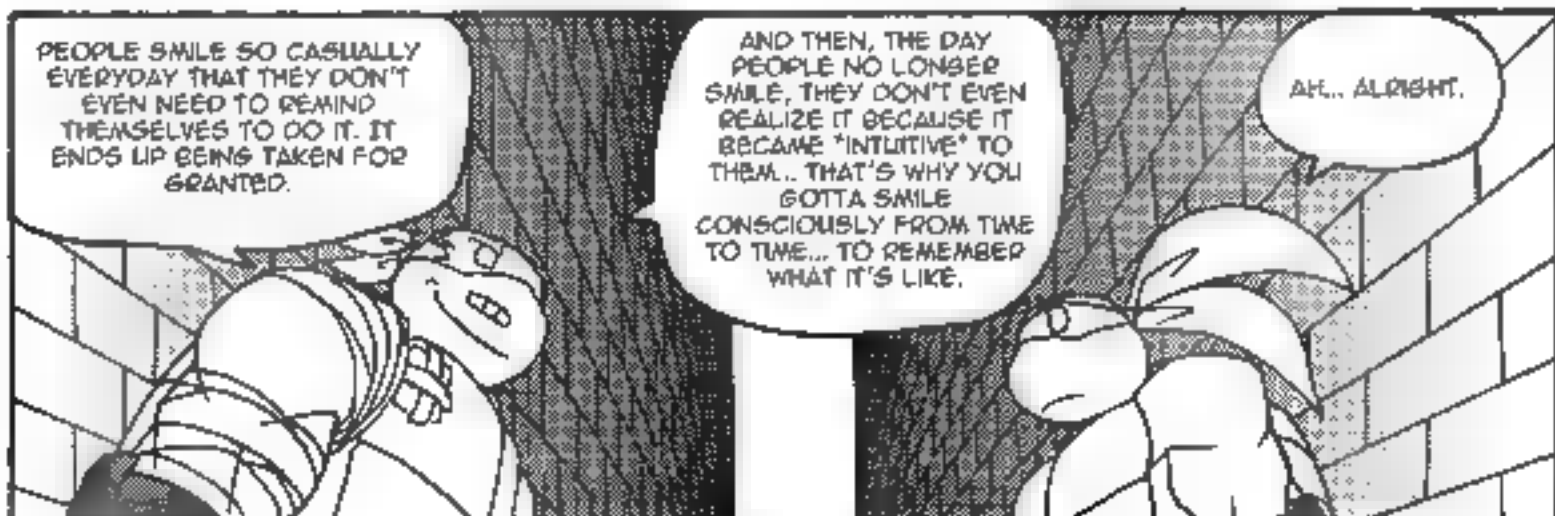


SEE WHAT YOU JUST DID? THAT'S WHAT I'M HERE FOR!

I SMILED BECAUSE YOU TOLD ME TO. IT FELT FORCED...



HEY, WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME YOU SMILED AND REALIZED IT?



PEOPLE SMILE SO CASUALLY EVERYDAY THAT THEY DON'T EVEN NEED TO REMIND THEMSELVES TO DO IT. IT ENDS UP BEING TAKEN FOR GRANTED.

AND THEN, THE DAY PEOPLE NO LONGER SMILE, THEY DON'T EVEN REALIZE IT BECAUSE IT BECAME "INTUITIVE" TO THEM... THAT'S WHY YOU GOTTA SMILE CONSCIOUSLY FROM TIME TO TIME... TO REMEMBER WHAT IT'S LIKE.

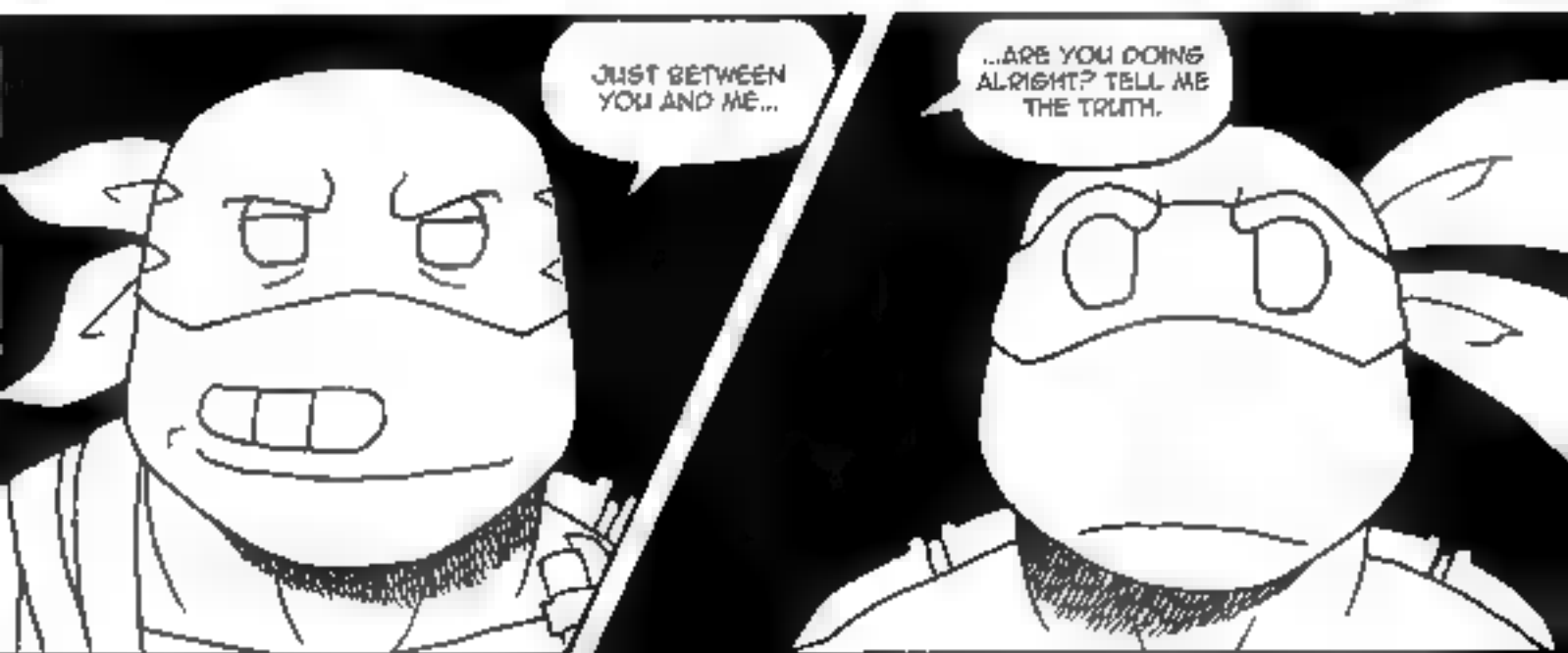
AH... ALRIGHT.



...SO SAYS THE VOICE IN MY HEAD!

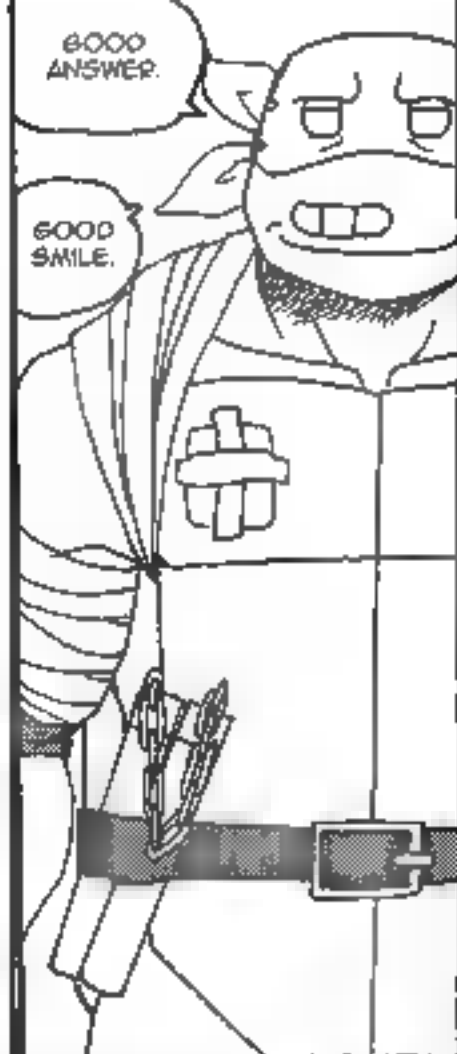
BUT THAT'S ME AS WELL!! GWAHANA!

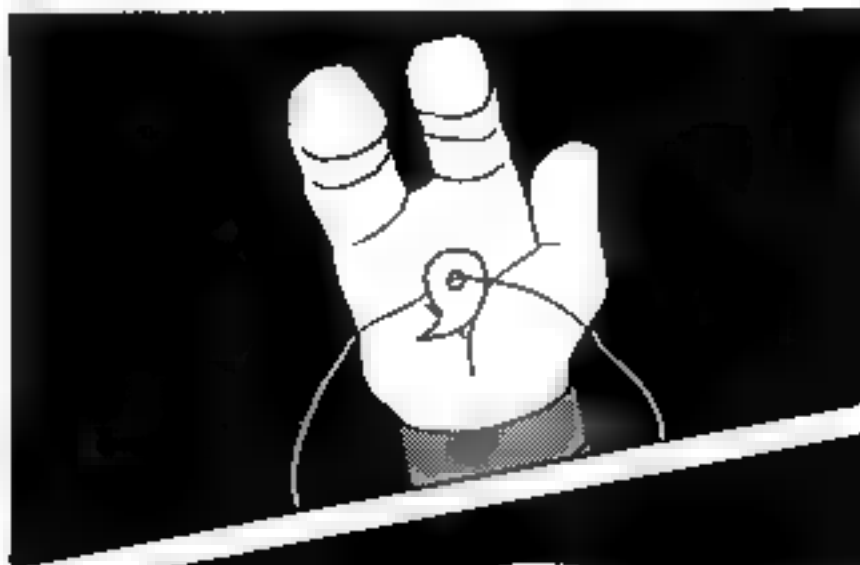
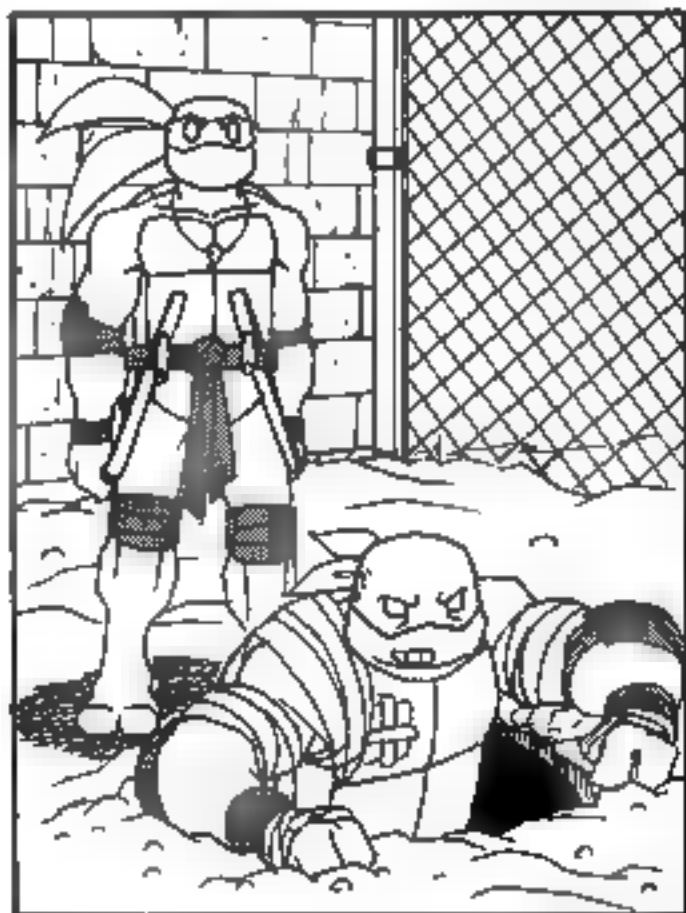
A...AHA, AHAMAHANA (IS HE MAD???)



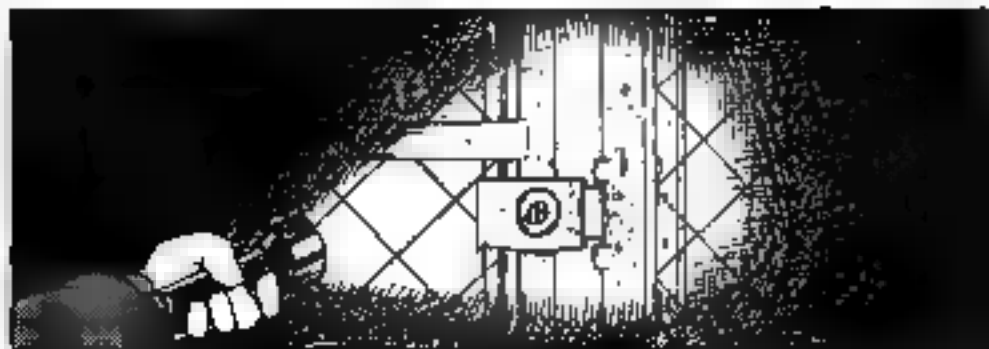
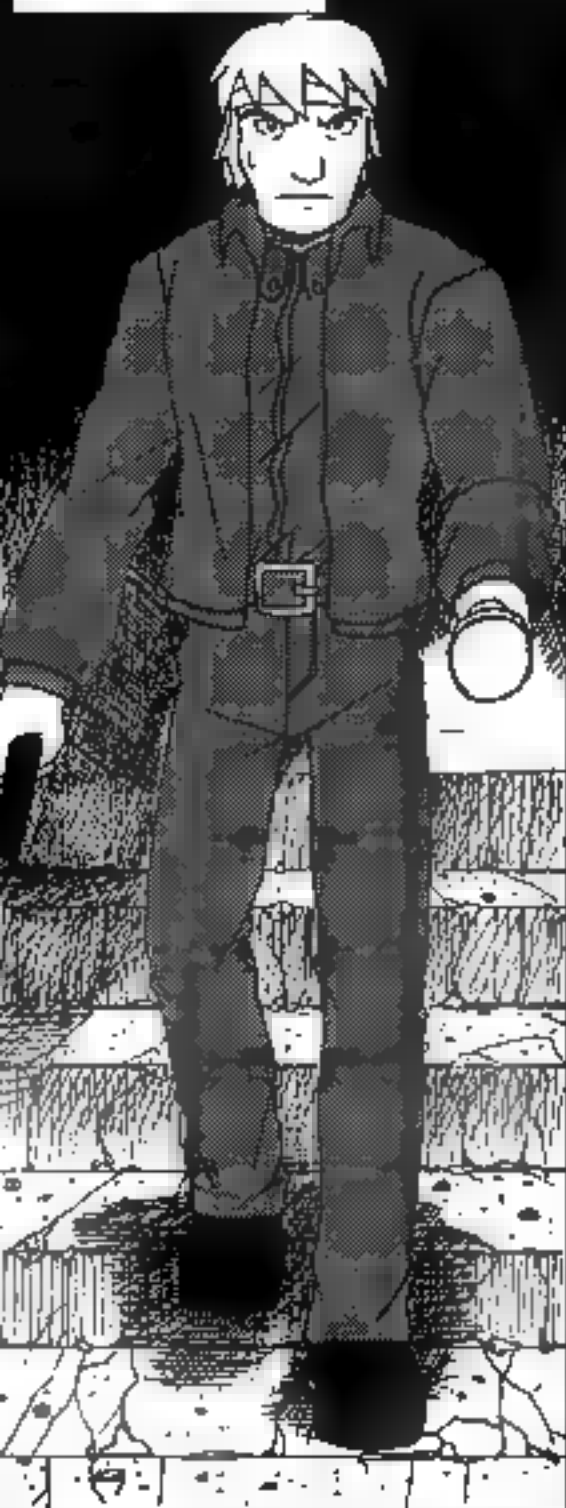
JUST BETWEEN YOU AND ME...

...ARE YOU DOING ALRIGHT? TELL ME THE TRUTH.





I DIDN'T KNOW THE
SEWERS WERE THIS
DEEP... I FEEL LIKE
IT'S GETTING HARDER
TO BREATHE...



NO WAY... I
CAN'T TURN
BACK NOW!



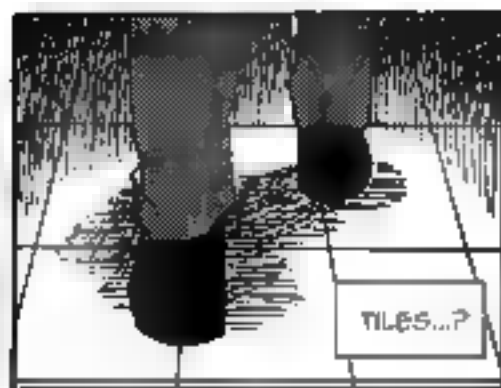
I KNOW I'M ON
TO SOMETHING...



THERE MUST BE
A REASON WHY
THOSE FREAKS
LOCKED DOWN
THIS SECTION!



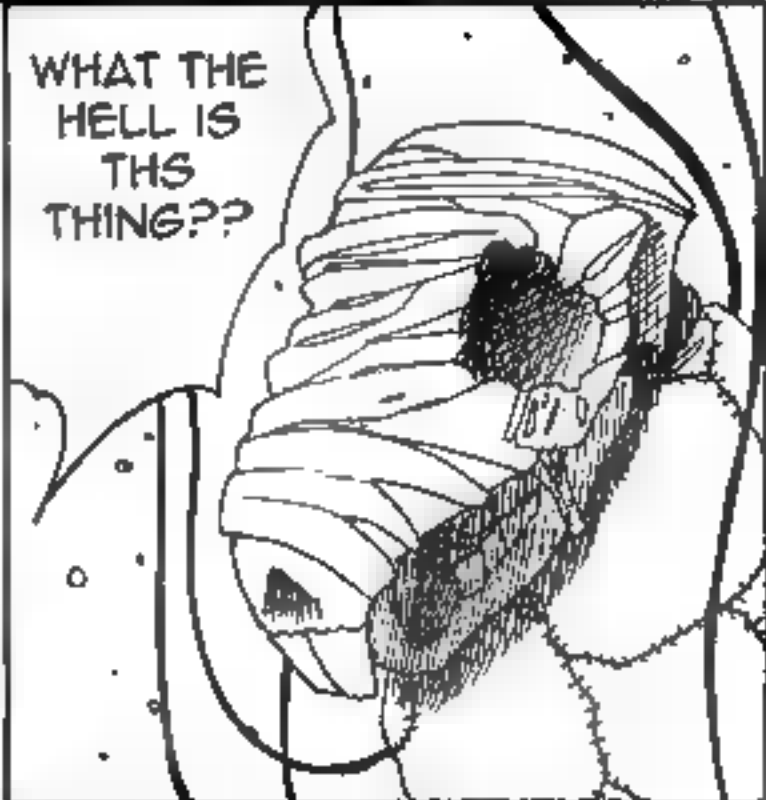
TILES...?

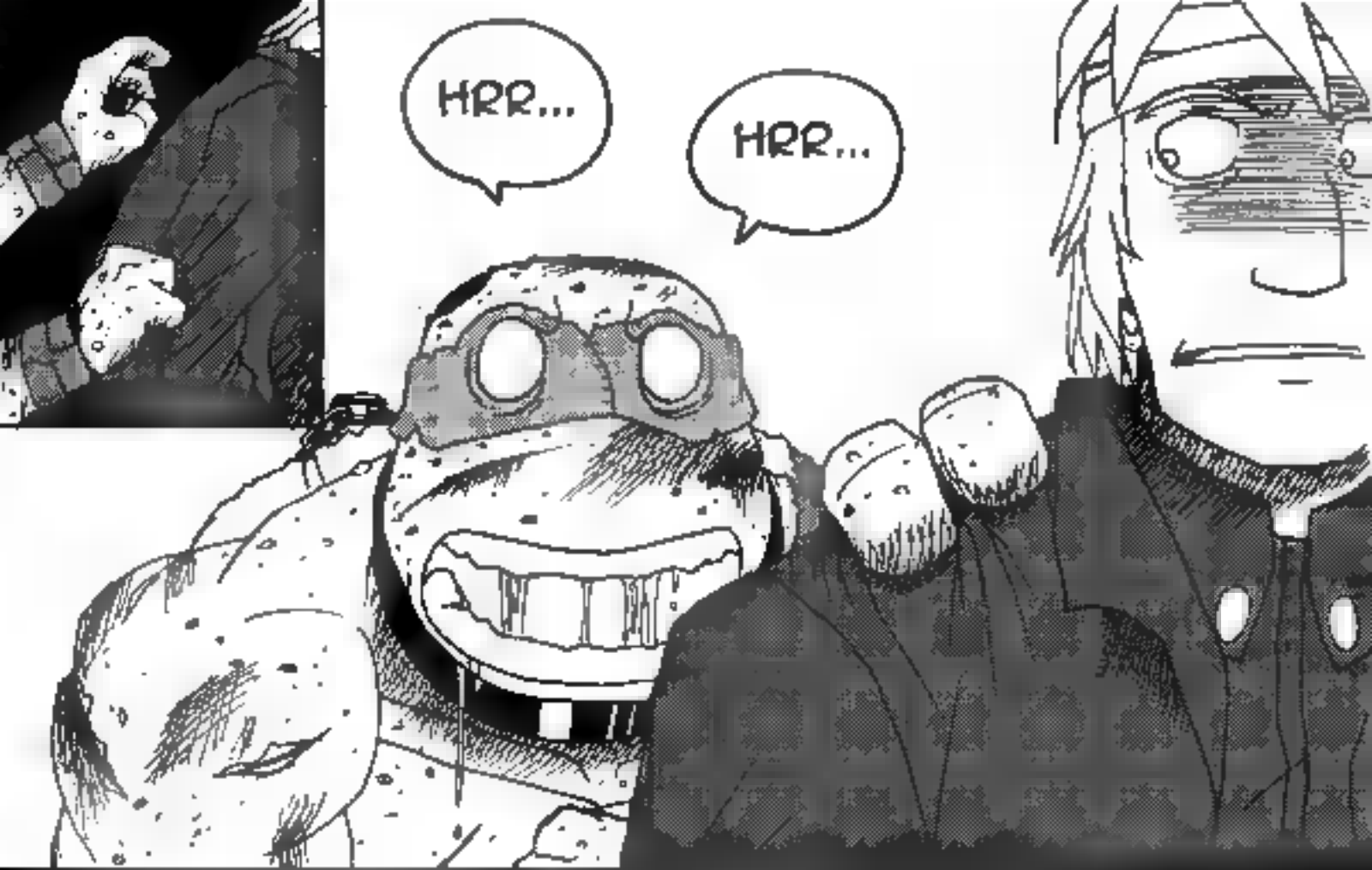


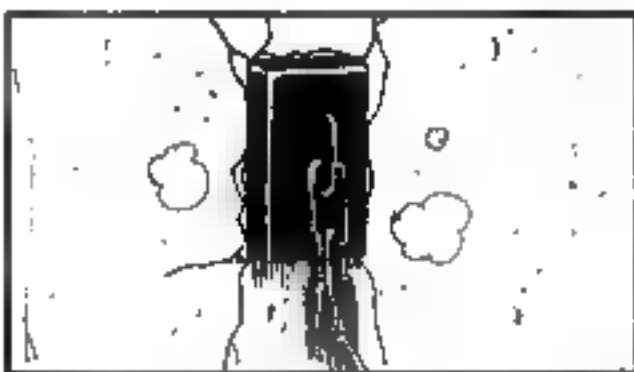
WELCOME
BACK.

STANDBY
MODE
DEACTIVATED.









YES
MASTER.

YES. I
KNOW. I'M
ALMOST
THERE.

DON'T
WORRY.

HR!!

HR!!

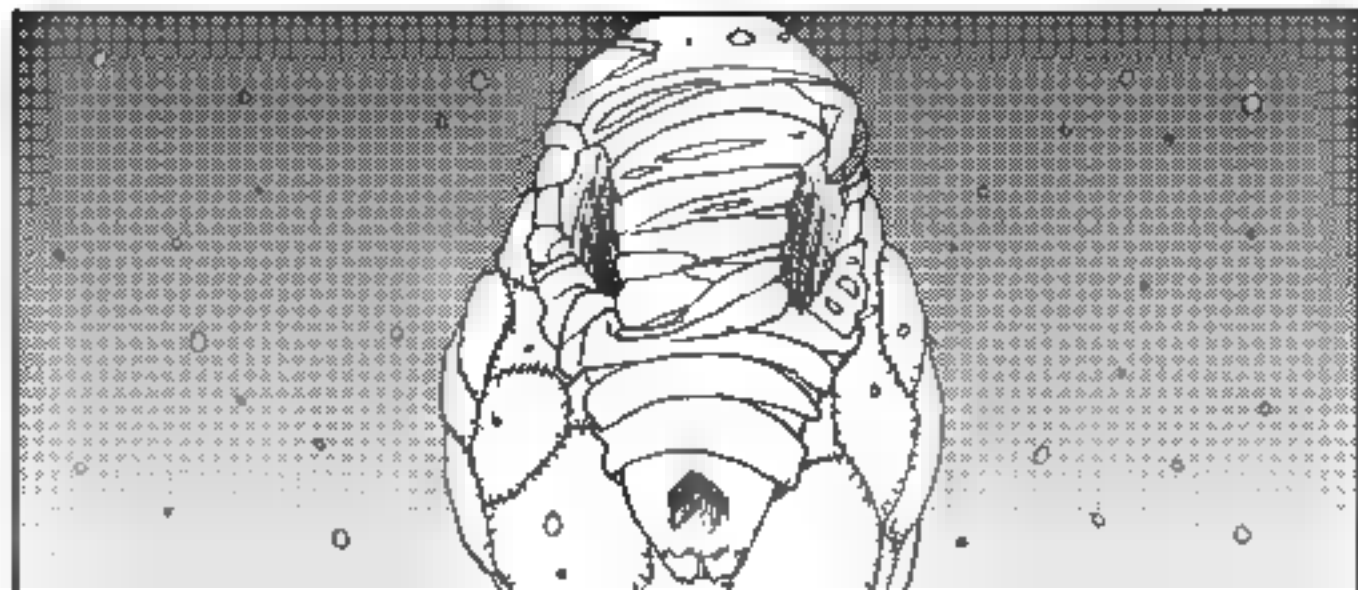
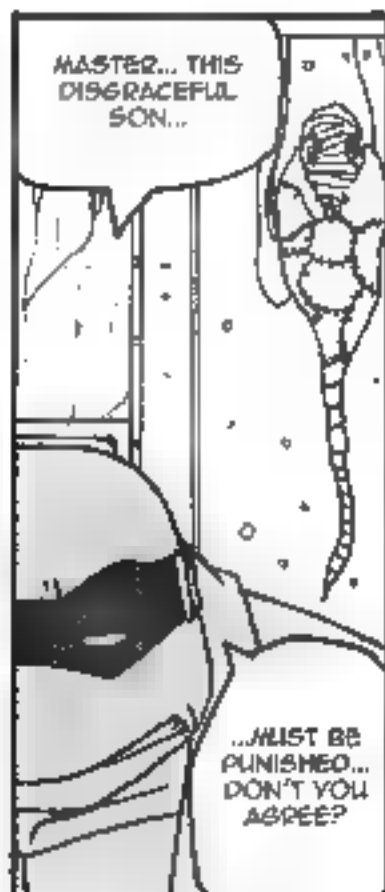
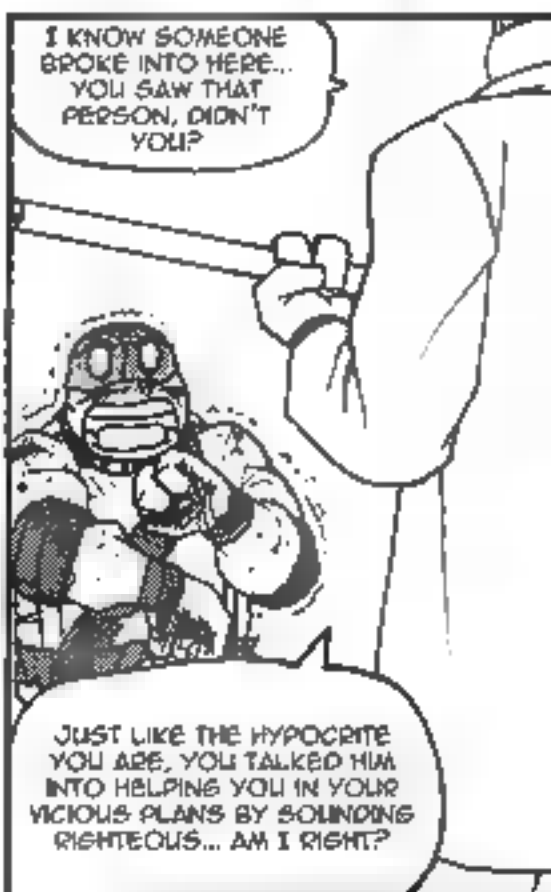
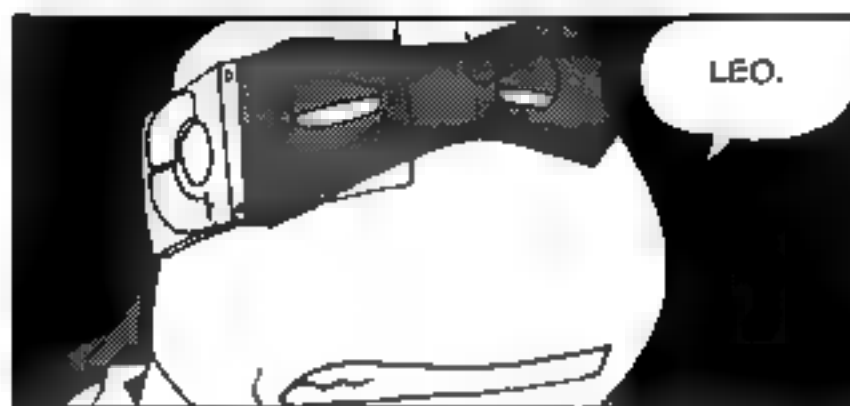
MASTER...

I'LL ALWAYS
PROTECT
YOU

IT WILL BE
ALRIGHT,
MASTER.

SOMEONE
BROKE THE
LOCK TO YOUR
SANCTUARY...

...BUT I WILL FIND THAT
INTRUDER...



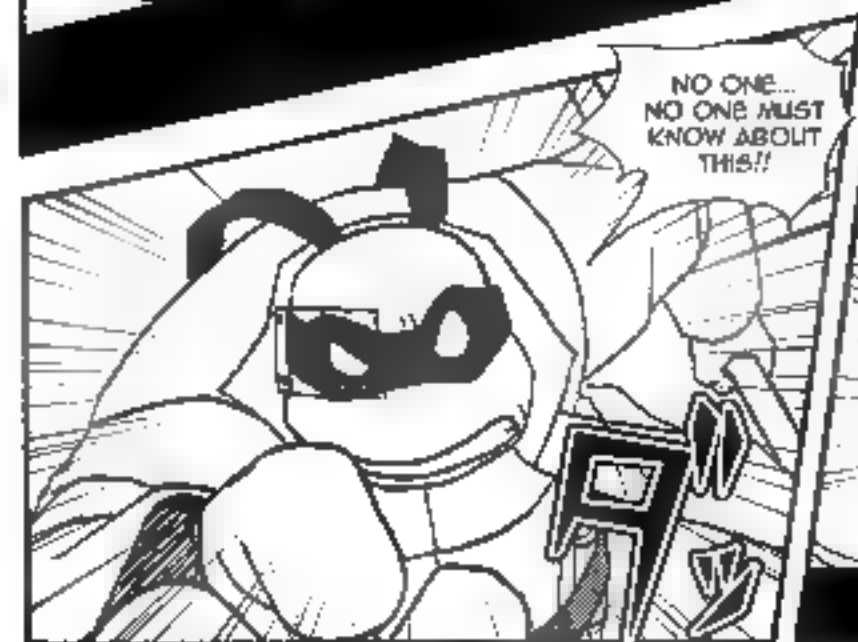
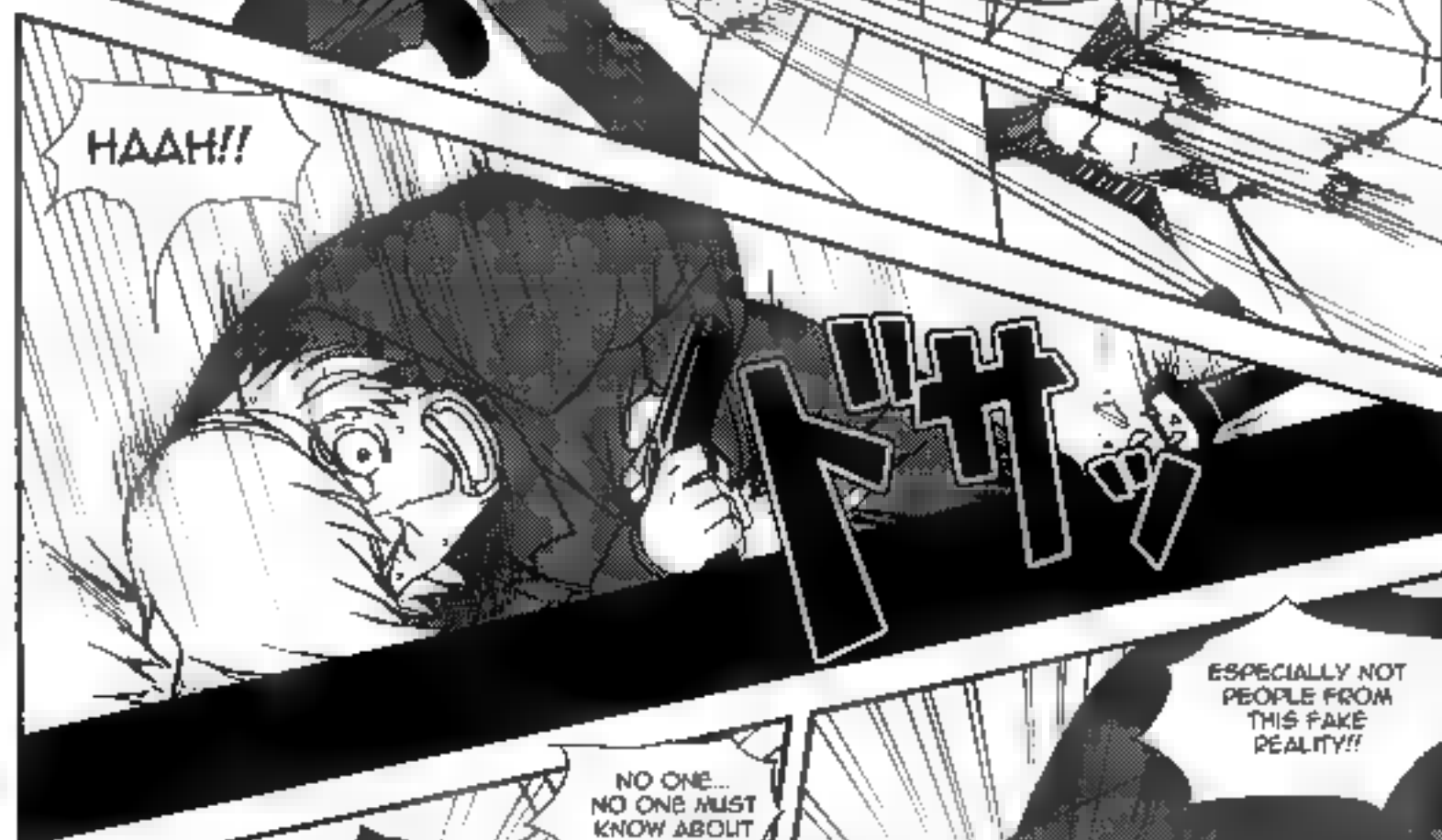
YES...

...MASTER.



GET UP, LEO...
MASTER SPLINTER
SAYS YOU DIDN'T
GET IT YET...
YOU NEED MORE
PUNISHMENT...

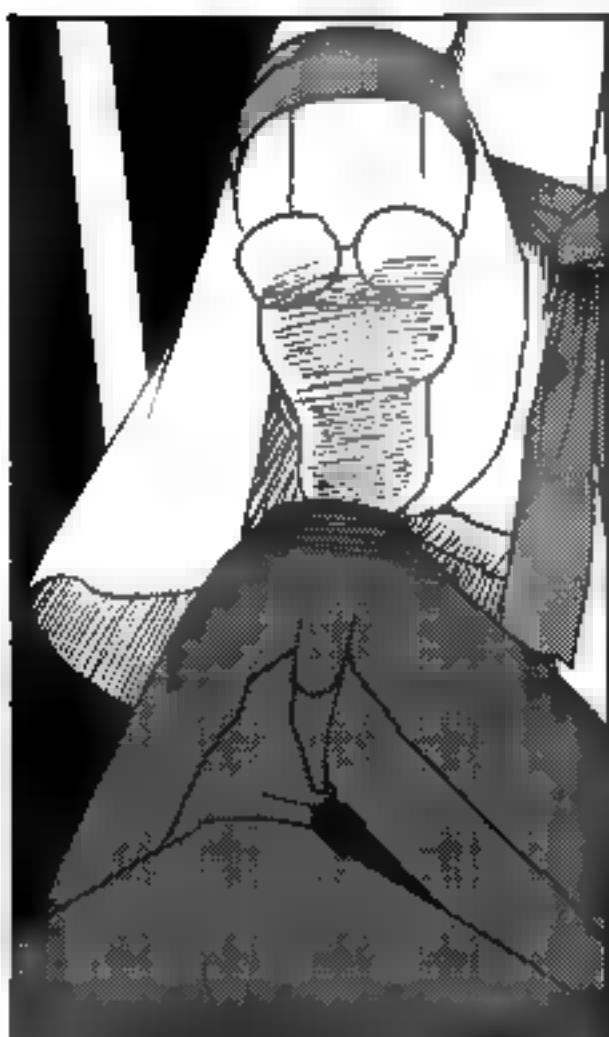
GRRRHHHH/
GGRRH...!!!





AAAARGH!!!

ドサッ



AAAARGH!!

ガッ



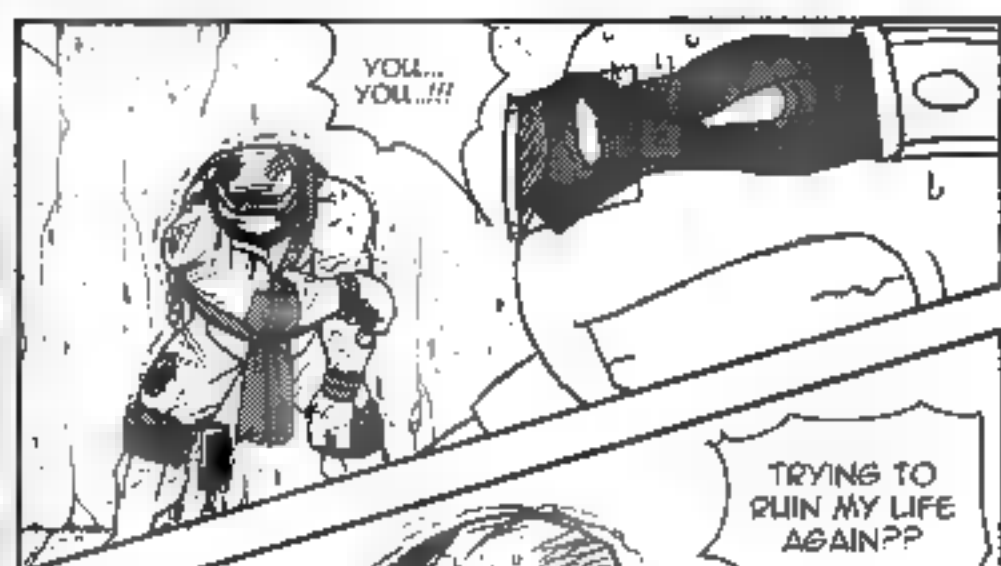
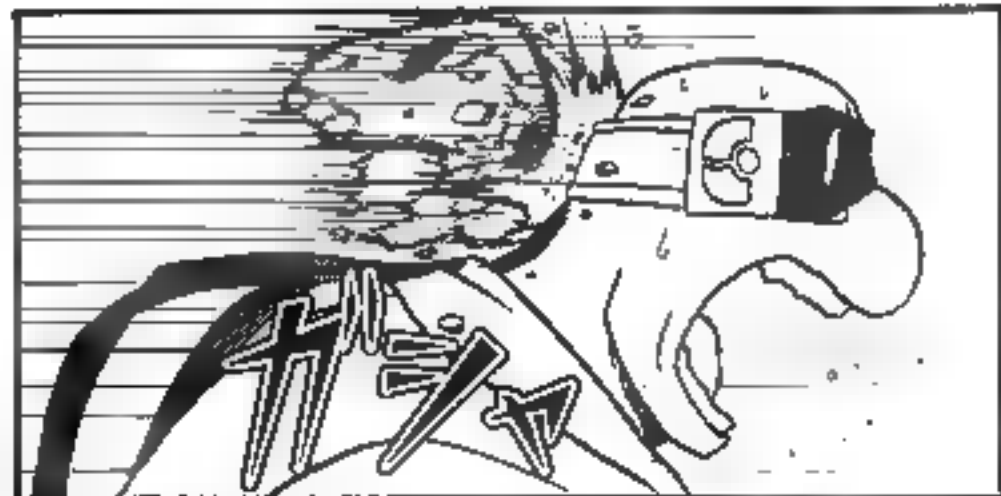
NOW...

HAHH...!!

HAHH...!!

YOU CAN'T GO ANYWHERE, CAN YOU, OFFICER?

ガッ



LEOOOOO!!!



ドサッ

OUCH!!

I GUESS WHEN IT COMES TO JUMPING ON ROOFS, THERE'S A LOT OF ROOM FOR IMPROVEMENT. THEN AGAIN, THAT NINJA DID SLASH MY LEGS SO...

WAIT A MINUTE.

MY WOUNDS ON MY LEGS ARE GONE. ALSO, DIDN'T I LOSE AN EYE LAST NIGHT?

OH WELL. I SHOULDN'T OVERTHINK MUTANT THINGS. THEY'RE NOT MEANT TO BE UNDERSTOOD...

I DON'T SEE ANY POLICE CAR. THIS MUST MEAN THAT THEY ARE DONE QUESTIONING HER. I'M SURPRISED THAT SHE DECIDED TO COVER UP FOR ALL OF US ■ THE END...

DAVIANNA...

IT'S BEEN A WHILE... TURTLE.

I WONDER IF I SHE WAS ABLE TO TALK HER WAY OUT OF TROUBLE... ANYWAYS, I'LL JUST DROP BY TO SAY "HI".

EEH??

TAKE ME TO
YOUR LEADER.

FFFFFFFFF
FOOT
NINJAAAA!



BACK TO
SILENCE
DAVIANNA,
HUH?

I WON'T
LET YOU!

HUMPF.



SET UP.



I'M AN
OLD
FRIEND OF
YOUR
LEADER.

REMEMBER
MY NAME?



HUM... FOOT
NINJA?
SPAWN?

BATMAN?
AZRAEL?

GRENDL?
BLACK
PANTHER?

...RAPEMAN?

*RAPEMAN IS A
JAPANESE
MANGA ABOUT
A VIGILANTE IN
TIGHTS WHO
RAPES WOMEN
IN THE NAME
OF JUSTICE.



I GET IT.
YOU'RE
CLUELESS.

NO NEED
TO INSULT
ME.

B...BUT I
REALLY DON'T
KNOW YOU...!!

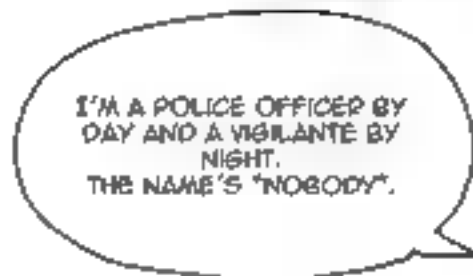


NEVERMIND THAT. I
NEED TO HAVE A
WORD WITH YOUR
LEADER.

WHY?



WHY DO YOU
EXPECT ME TO DO
ANYTHING ABOUT
IT FOR YOU? I
DON'T EVEN KNOW
■ YOU'RE FRIEND
OR FOE... JUST
WHO ARE YOU?



I'M A POLICE OFFICER BY
DAY AND A VIGILANTE BY
NIGHT.
THE NAME'S "NOBODY".



I USED TO TEAM UP WITH
YOU GUYS TO APPREHEND
CRIMINALS UNTIL YOU
DISAPPEARED FROM THE
SURFACE 17 YEARS AGO.



AH, YOU'RE
A VIGILANTE
LIKE
MR. JONES?

ENOUGH OF THIS. I
NEED TO SPEAK WITH
YOUR LEADER.

LEO... I HEARD
THAT NAME
RECENTLY...

MUTANT LIKE
YOU! BLUE
BANDANA!
KATANA
WIELDER!
YOUR OWN
BROTHER!!

I KNEW IT.
JONES WAS THE
CRAZY VIGILANTE
ROAMING THE
STREETS. I'LL
KEEP MY TABS
ON HIM.

AH.
OOPS.

WHERE'S
LEO?

OH, THAT GUY. SORRY,
BUT PERHAPS YOU
MISTOOK FOR EITHER
RAPHAEL, DONATELLO
OR MICHELANGELO.

I'M NOT
RELATED TO
ANY OF THEM
AND, AS FAR
AS I KNOW, I
DON'T HAVE A
LEADER.

BY THE WAY, THE LAST TIME
YOU SAW THEM WAS 17
YEARS AGO, CORRECT?
DON'T YOU THINK THEY'D
LOOK OLDER AND TALLER
THAN ME AS OF NOW?

I THOUGHT YOU
TURTLES HAD A
SLOWER GROWTH
RATE DUE TO
YOUR LIFESPAN.

HEY, WAIT A SECOND.
IF YOU'RE NOT ONE OF THE
FOUR MUTANT TURTLES I
USED TO KNOW...

THEN WHO ARE YOU?
WHERE DO YOU COME FROM?
MUTANTS DON'T JUST POP
OUT OF NOWHERE.

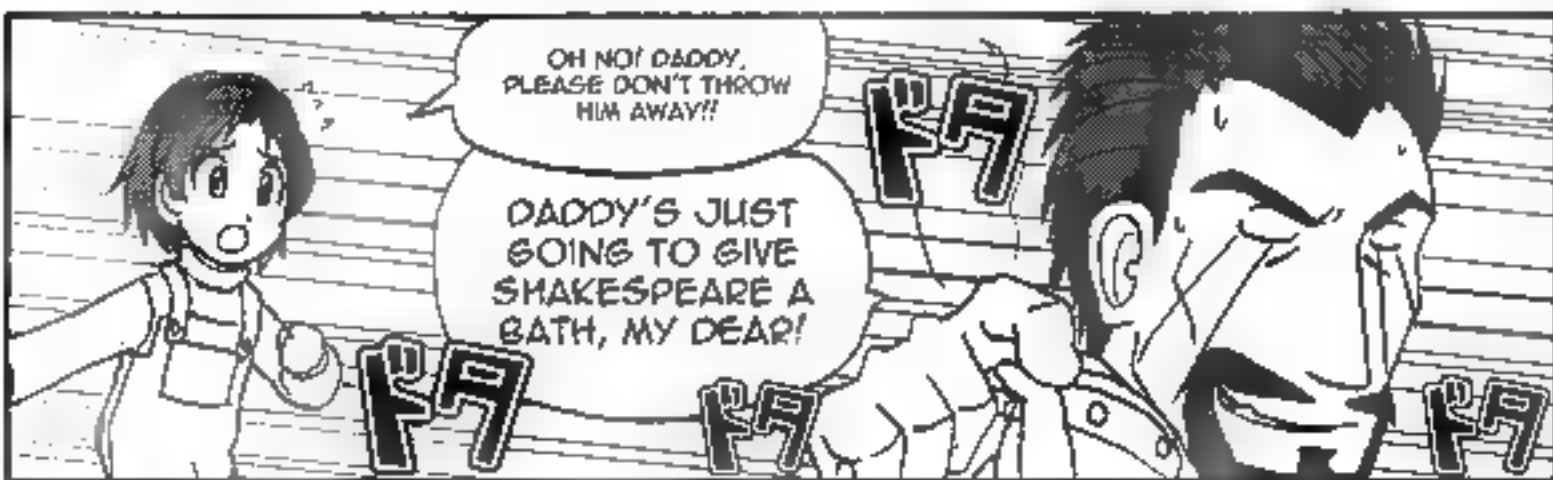
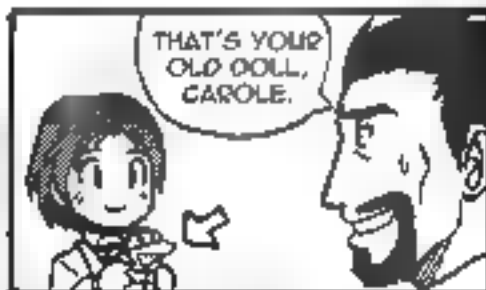
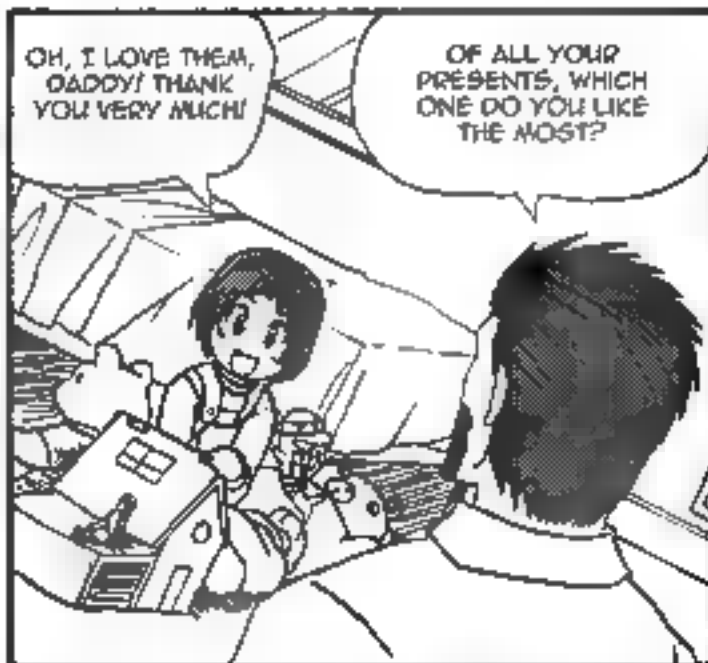
JUST CALL ME "RENOIR".
AS FOR MY IDENTITY... I'M
NOT QUITE SURE MYSELF.
ACCORDING TO RAPHAEL,
HE FOUND ME IN A VAT
AFTER I GOT CAPTURED
BY THE AUTHORITIES.

HE SAID I WAS PUT
THERE BECAUSE I
KILLED AND ATE
SOMEONE, BUT I
DON'T REALLY
BELIEVE THAT...

YET IT ALL
MAKES SENSE
TO ME.

YOU'RE THE
FEDAL MUTANT.





CAROLE...
HELP ME...

OH, AUGUSTUS!
AUGUSTUS!!
MERRY-MERRY
CHRISTMAS,
AUGUSTUS!

AHAHA... YOU
TOO CAROLE...
SAY, CAN WE
KEEP IT DOWN
WHILE I'M HERE?

WHY DO WE
HAVE "KEEP IT
DOWN"?

UM, WE'RE
WATCHING
HORROR
MOVIES. YOU
KNOW, WHEN
IT'S ALL SILENT
AND THEN...

IT'S YOU!!

YEAH...

...KABLOOIE!

HEE HEE
HEE! I
KNOW! I
KNOW!

DID SHADOW
GIVE YOU MY
MESSAGE
YESTERDAY?

OH, YOU MEAN
THIS BILLYING HUG?
SURE! YOU WANT
SECONDS?

TEHEHE!
YOU'RE
SILLY!

WE ALSO MADE
AMENDS. WE'RE
NOT FIGHTING
ANYMORE,
CAROLE.

OOOOOH!!
AND? AND?
DID YOU
KISS HER?

OH GEEZ, NO WAY, CAROLE.
FOR ALL I KNOW, THAT TOMBOY
WOULD RATHER WALK DOWN
THE AISLE WITH A BASEBALL
BAT IN HER ARMS.

AH, YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE
SAID THAT IN FRONT OF
YOU!

BUT I MUST ADMIT SHE
DOES HAVE SOME
RATHER NICE CURVES...

JUST FORGET
WHAT I JUST SAID,
OKAY, CA...?



H...HOW DID
YOU SNEAK
INTO MY
HOUSE,
YOU
MONSTER!

DADDY!
LET GO!

OH NO...
THIS IS
BAD...

AH...ER... I
JUST...

LISTEN, I
MEAN NO
HARM, AND...

CAROLE!
NO!!

HERE,
FOR YOUR
BOOBOO!

CAROLE!

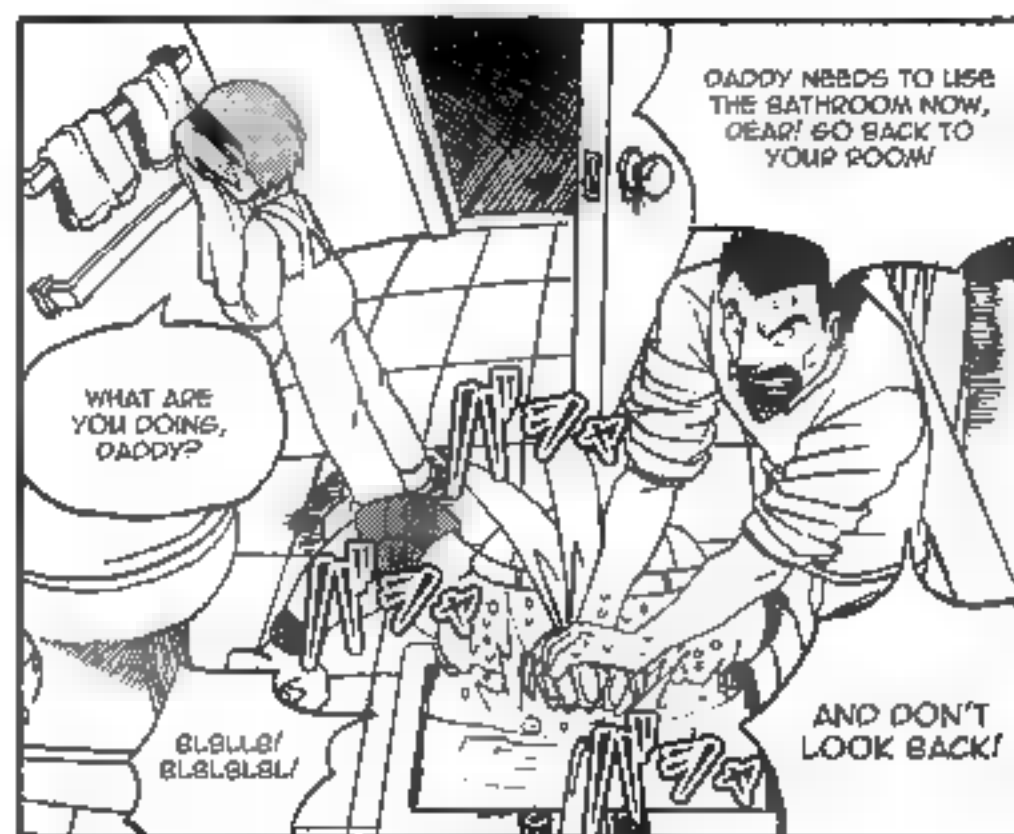
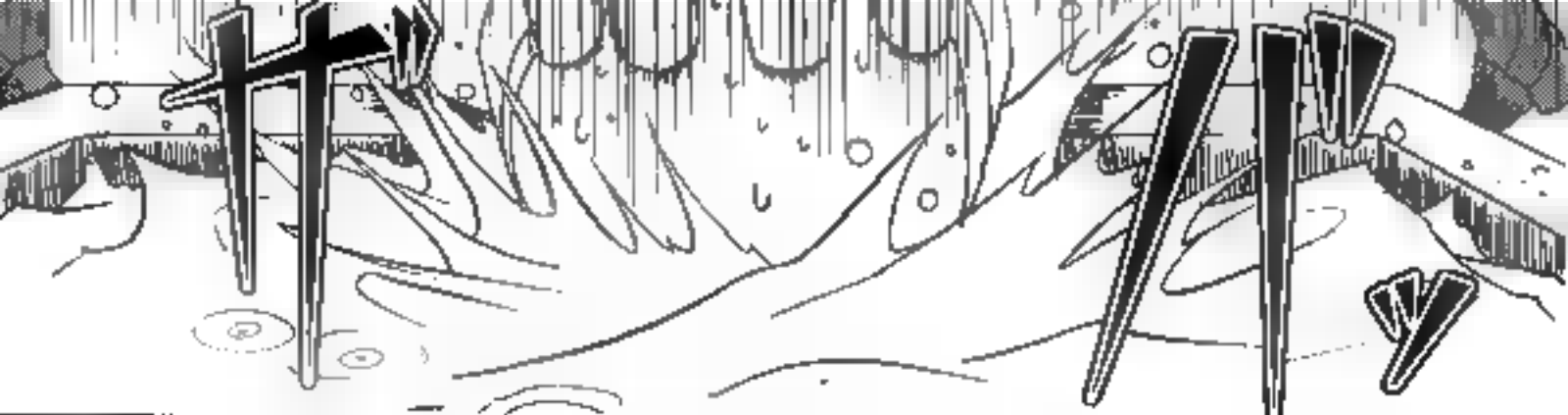
EEEW!!! YUCKY
TASTE IN MY
MOUTH!!!

QUICK!
WATER!
WATER!!!

RINSE
YOUR
MOUTH
OKAY?

BEEZ, BE
MORE
CAREFUL,
CAROLE.

YOU
HEARD
THE EVIL
MUTANT,
CAROLE...





DAD, YOU WERE UNFAITHFUL TO MOM WHEN SHE HAD CAROLE.

WHAT? WHERE DID THAT COME FROM!! ARE YOU READING MY MIND, MUTANT?

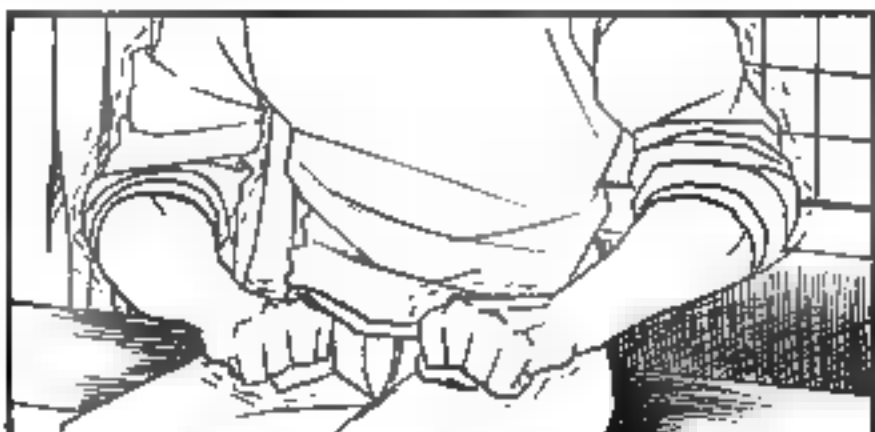
WHILE SHE WAS IN THE HOSPITAL'S MATERNITY WARD, YOU TOOK DAYS OFF FROM WORK TO VISIT HER, LOOK AFTER ME AND MIND THE HOUSE, REMEMBER?

ONE DAY, I CAME HOME EARLY FROM SCHOOL AND YOU WEREN'T HOME. I LOOKED FOR YOU IN YOUR ROOM AND I FOUND "IT" IN YOUR GARBAGE CAN.

S...SILENCE...!! SHUT UP, SON!!

YOU... YOU DEMON!! YOU ENJOY TOYING WITH MY MIND, DON'T YOU??

I... I'M BERATING A MUTANT POSING AS MY DEAD SON FOR STICKING HIS NOSE INTO MY PRIVATE LIFE...



THIS IS INSANE!! EVERYTHING YOU KNOW, EVERYTHING YOU DO... IT ALL REMINDS ME OF MY SON, BUT THIS IS IMPOSSIBLE!! HE'S DEAD! YOU KILLED HIM!! SO... SO WHAT REALLY HAPPENED, HUH? YOU ATE HIS SOUL AS WELL??

PLEASE, DON'T TRY TO OVERTHINK THIS! IT WILL DO US NO GOOD AT ALL!

WHAT?

"I ACT EXACTLY LIKE AUGUSTUS"! I JUST PROVED IT TO YOU... THIS MEANS I WON'T HARM YOU BECAUSE YOU'RE "FAMILY" TO ME! THAT'S WHAT YOU REALLY WANTED TO KNOW, RIGHT?

EVEN IF YOU DON'T TRUST ME... CAN YOU AT LEAST LET ME LOOK THROUGH MY THINGS? I JUST NEED TO GRAB A FILE... I PROMISE I'LL LEAVE YOU ALONE AS SOON AS I FIND IT. ALRIGHT?

UNDERSTOOD, MUTANT. I'VE HEARD TOO MUCH NONSENSE FOR TODAY. THE SOONER YOU LEAVE, THE BETTER...



MUTANT
MIND
GARDEN
TURTLES

CHAPTER 19: FRAGMENTS
OF TRUTH INSIDE HIS MIND

2010

HAH...
HAH...

YOU SCUM...
LOOK WHAT YOU
MADE ME DO...
JUST LOOK...

THE FLOOR... BECAUSE OF
YOU... IT'S... IT'S TAINTED
WITH YOUR REPULSIVE
BLOOD...

MASTER SPLINTER...
HE'LL HAVE TO STARE AT
IT WHILE HE'S STUCK ■
THAT POO, RECOVERING.

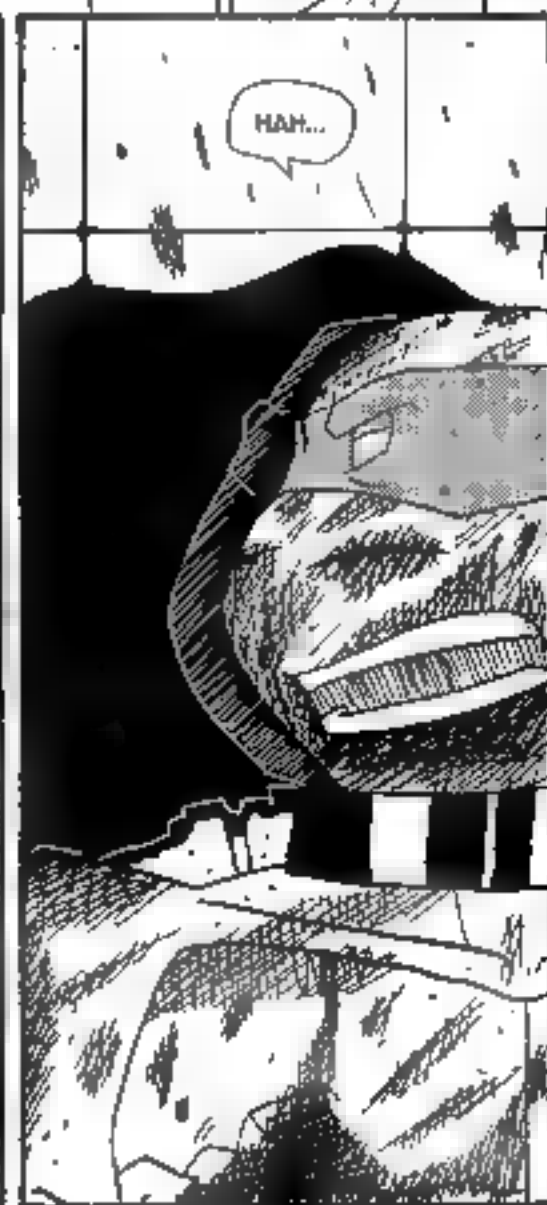
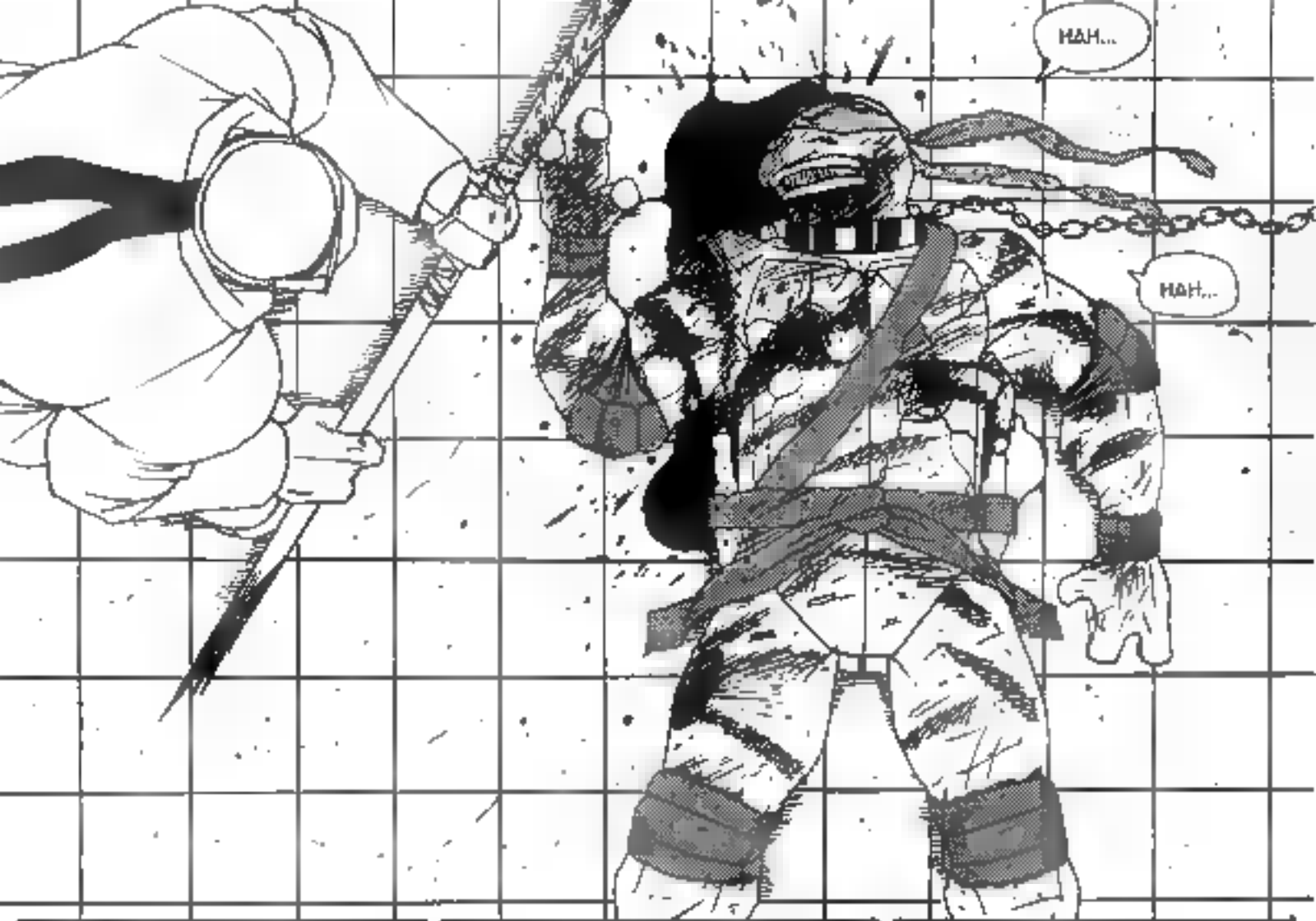
AND THAT'S YOUR
FAULT TOO... HE'S IN
THAT STATE BECAUSE
OF YOU...

THERE'S NO REDEMPTION FOR
YOUR SINS BUT DON'T
WORRY... IF YOU HAVE TOO
MUCH REMORSE...

...I CAN ALWAYS PUNISH
YOU SOME MORE. I KNOW
THAT WILL MAKE YOU FEEL
LESS BUILTY...

EVEN THIS WOULD BE UNFAIR... I'D
BE DOING THIS OUT OF RESPECT
FOR YOUR FEELINGS... YOU DIDN'T
EVEN THINK ABOUT OURS WHEN
YOU KILLED MASTER SPLINTER, DID
YOU... LEO?

LEO... LOOK AT ME
AND SAY SOMETHING...
IF YOU DARE.



AT LAST...
AT LAST!! AFTER
37 ATTEMPTS...
A SUCCESSFUL
CLONE!

I'M SO RELIEVED...
THIS MEANS I CAN
BRING HIM BACK!



I... I MUST DO
A FEW TESTS
IMMEDIATELY.
YES, YES... I
MUST "TEST
THE WATER".

YOU... YOU'RE LUCKY
TO HAVE MADE IT OUT
OF THE CLONING TANK.



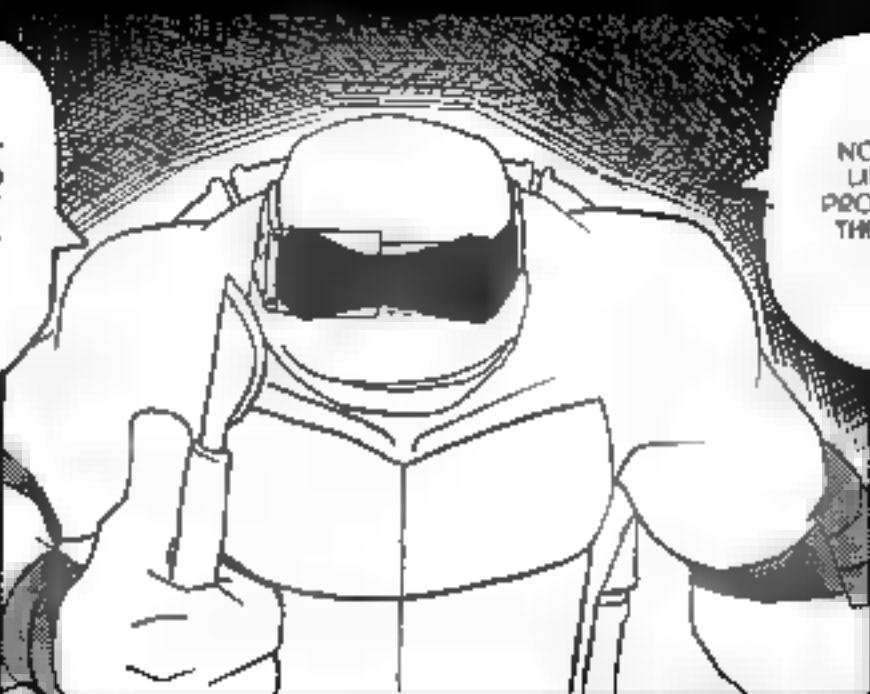
YOU'LL HAVE THE HONOR OF
CONTRIBUTING TO SCIENCE
WHILE YOUR... SIBLINGS WILL
ROT IN THERE.

...I DON'T LIKE
THE WAY YOU
LOOK. MAKES ME
RESTLESS.



WAIT HERE. I'LL GO
FETCH SOME NICE
ACCESSORIES FOR
YOU

YES, YES... THAT
BLUE MASK AND
THAT SASH SUIT
YOU VERY WELL.



NOW I FEEL
LIKE I CAN
PROCEED WITH
THE "TEST"...

NO... NO!!!

EVERYTHING
WAS PERFECT
UP TO THIS
POINT...!!

THAT CLONE
AGES FASTER...

...BUT THAT
DOESN'T AFFECT
HIS REGENERATION
RATE!! WHY...
WHY??

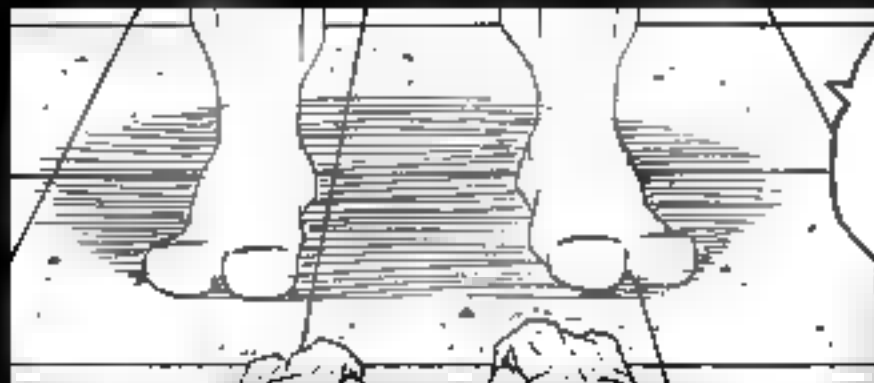
AT THIS RATE,
IT'LL TAKE
YEARS TO
BRING BACK THE
SENSEI!!

AND MY
WORLD... IT
SEEMS FURTHER
FROM MY GRASP
THAN EVER!! IT'S
NOT FAIR!!

IT'S ALL
YOUR
FAULT!

IT'S ALL
YOUR
FAULT!!
AGAIN!

OH, I SEE.
YOU'RE
HUNGRY. RIGHT,
I HAVEN'T FED
YOU ANYTHING
YET...



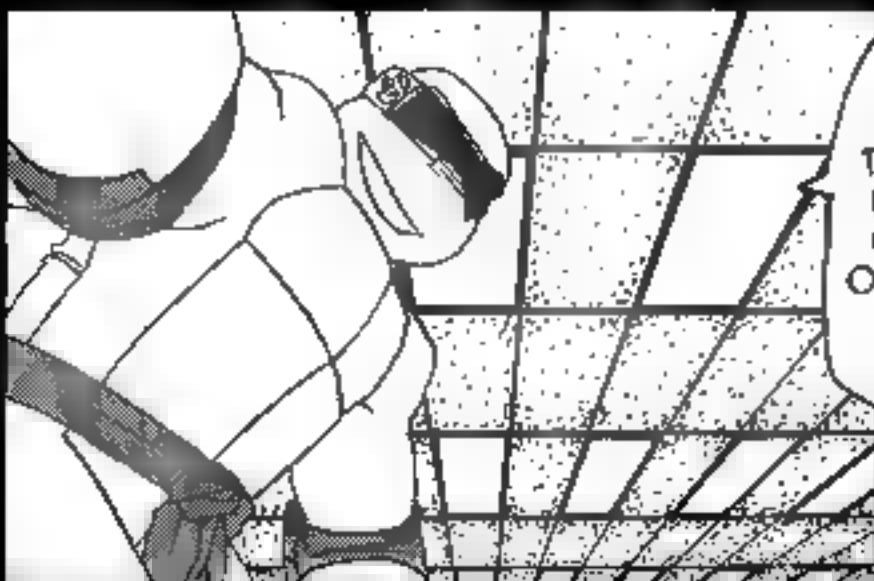
IT'S ALRIGHT. I
HAVE JUST WHAT
YOU NEED...

I HAVE A TANK
FULL OF
GOODIES LIKE
THIS.



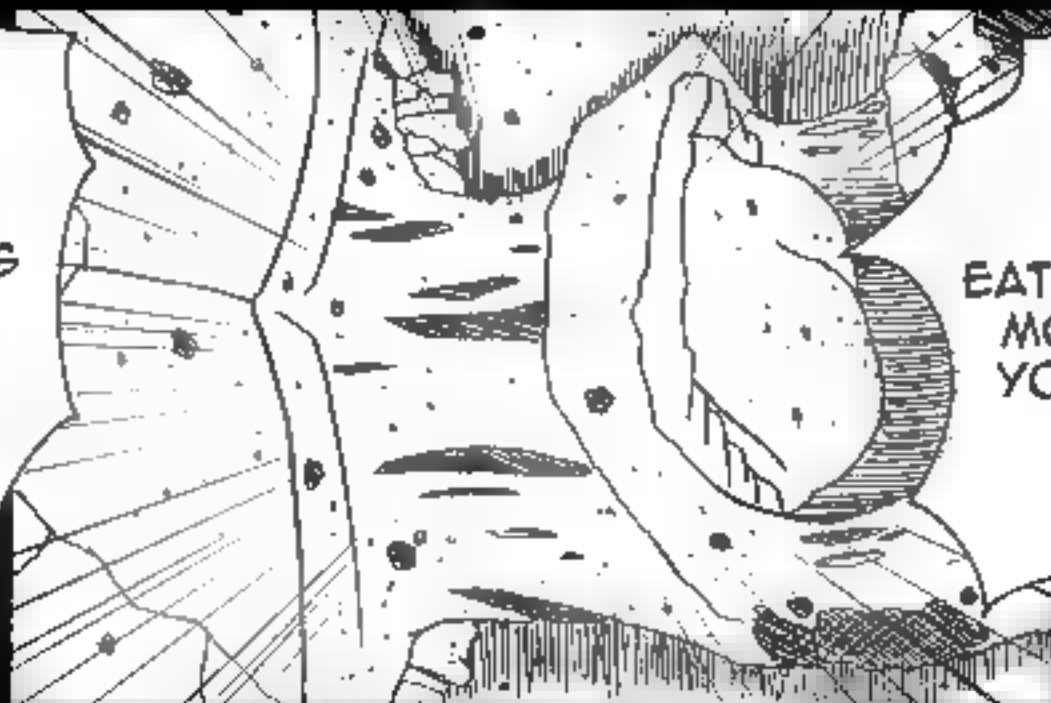
BON APPÉTIT.

OH?



TOO PROUD TO
EAT THIS EVEN
ON THE VERGE
OF STARVATION?

COME
ON!! DIG
IN!!



EAT LIKE THE
MONSTER
YOU ARE!!



I'M... REALLY
LEO?

I...

R...REALLY...

LEO???

OOOH.
WHAT A
SURPRISE.

YOU CAN
SPEAK EVEN
THOUGH I
REMOVED
YOUR
VOCAL
CORDS.

THEY PROBABLY
FINALLY REGENERATED.
VERY WELL... I'LL
REMOVE THEM AGAIN
LATER.

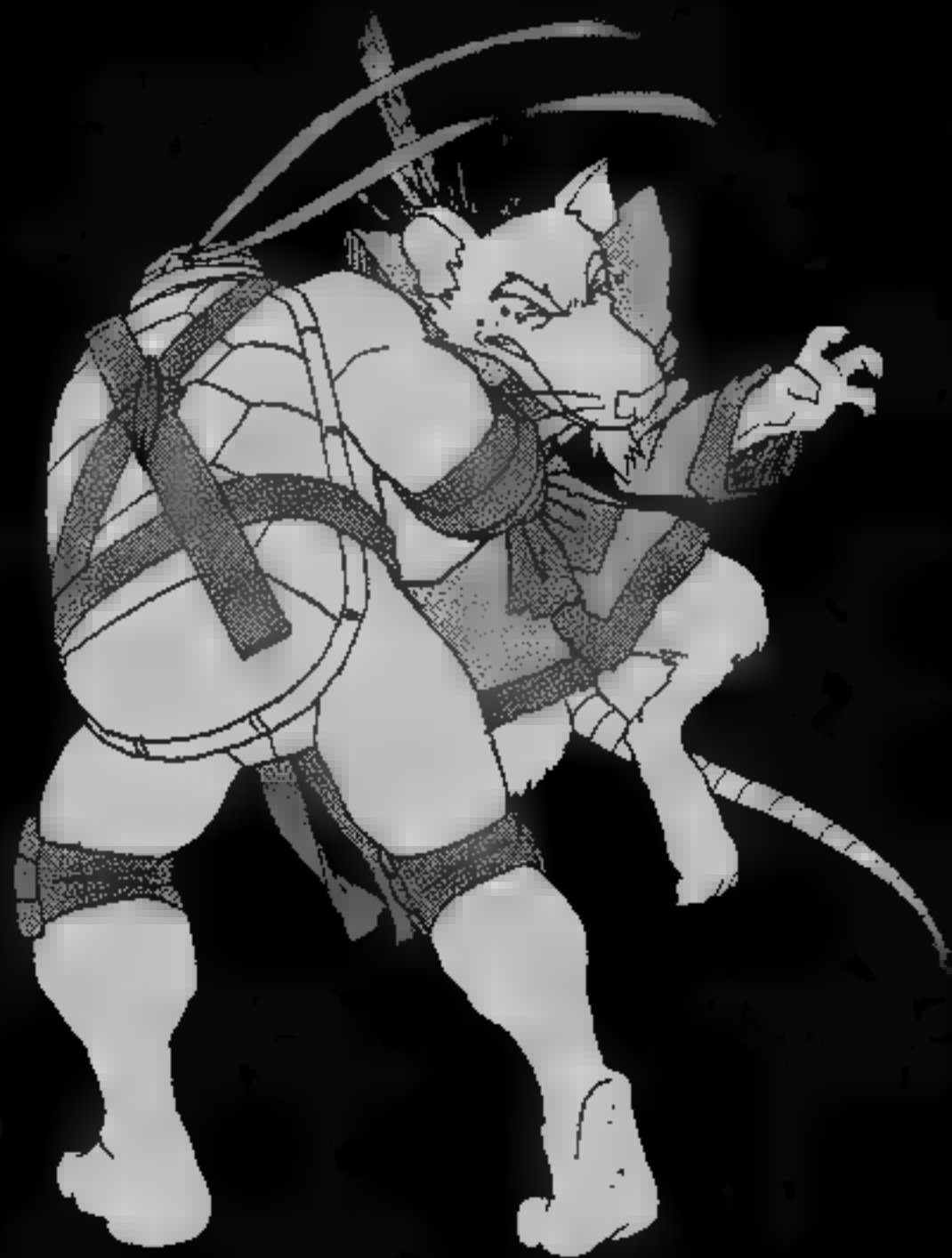
BUT
BEFORE
THAT...

TELL ME SOMETHING DEEP
AND PHILOSOPHICAL... LIKE
YOU ALWAYS DID.

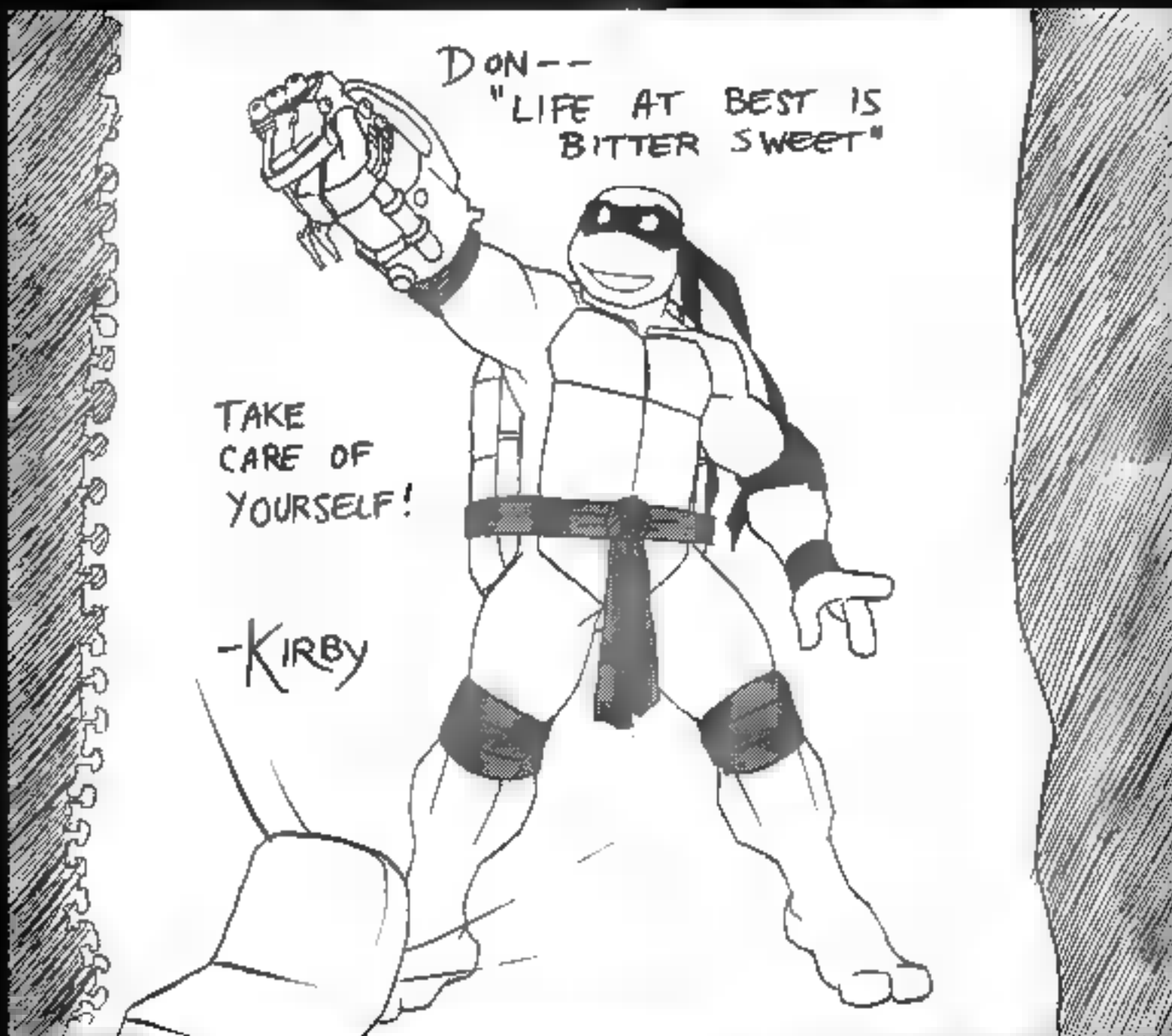
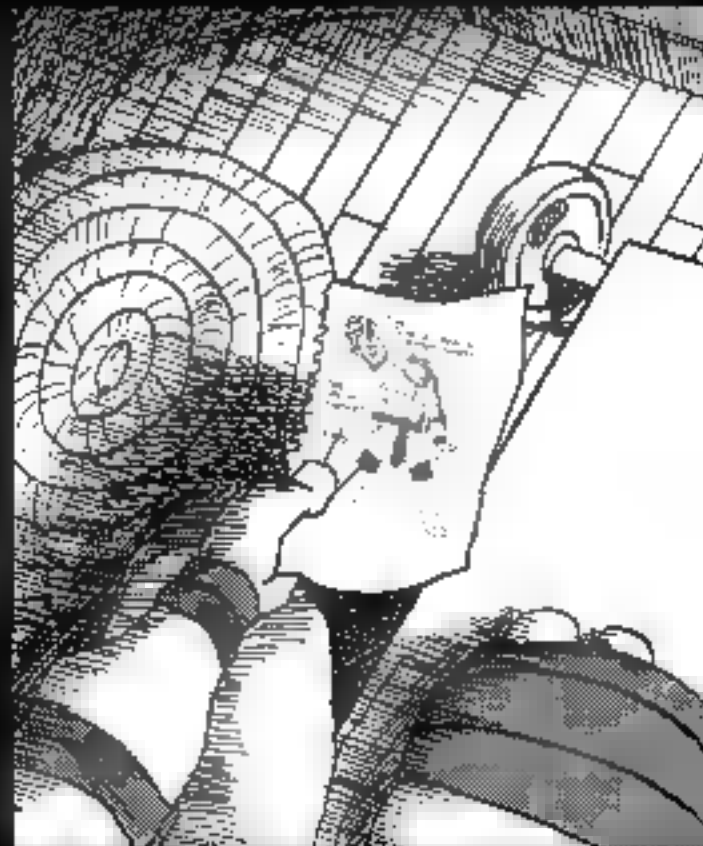
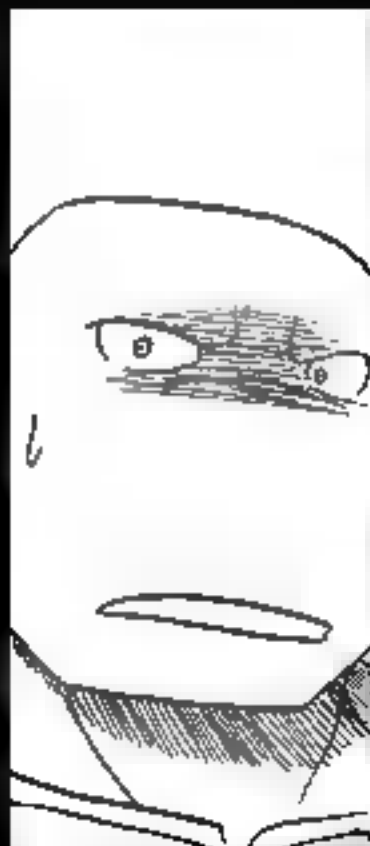
GO AHEAD.
HUMOR ME...
LEO.



"YOU MUST NOT ALLOW ITS ILLUSIONS TO DISTORT
YOUR VISION OF REALITY."



"YOU MUST NEVER DENY REALITY, NO
MATTER HOW HARSH IT MAY BE."





®LIFE AT BEST™ BITTER SWEET®

WHAT...?

HOW, HOW DO YOU
KNOW THOSE WORDS?
MY LAST LESSON FROM
THE SENSEI, KIDBY'S
FINAL NOTE...

MY MEMORIES. NONE ALONE.
FROM THE REAL WORLD.

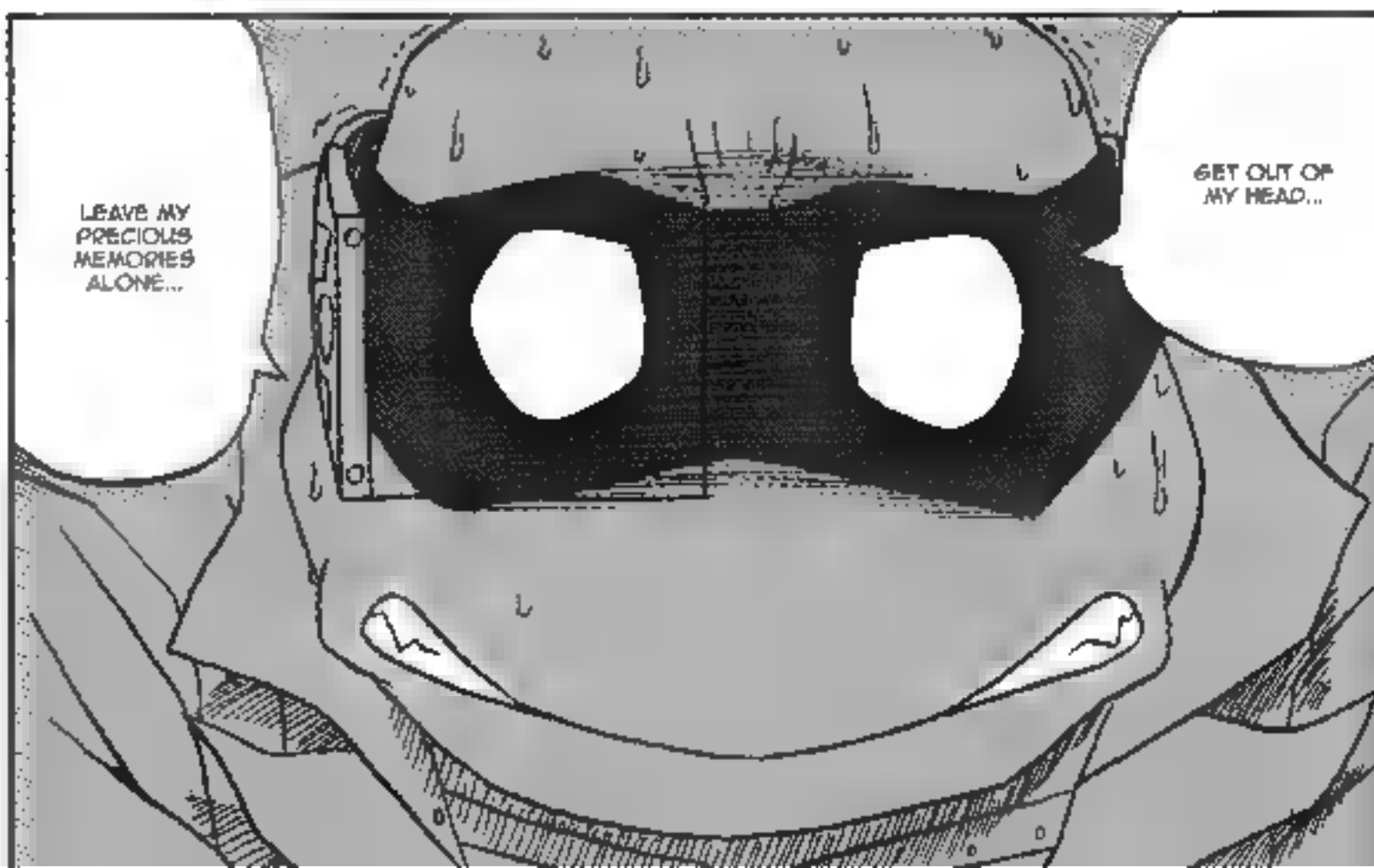
HOW?

...MEMORIES OF WHAT I HEARD
AND SAW... IN MY WORLD... MY
MEMORIES...

HOW?

I'M...

...YOU



GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT
OF MY
HEAD!

GET
OUT!

GET
OUT!

GET
OUT!

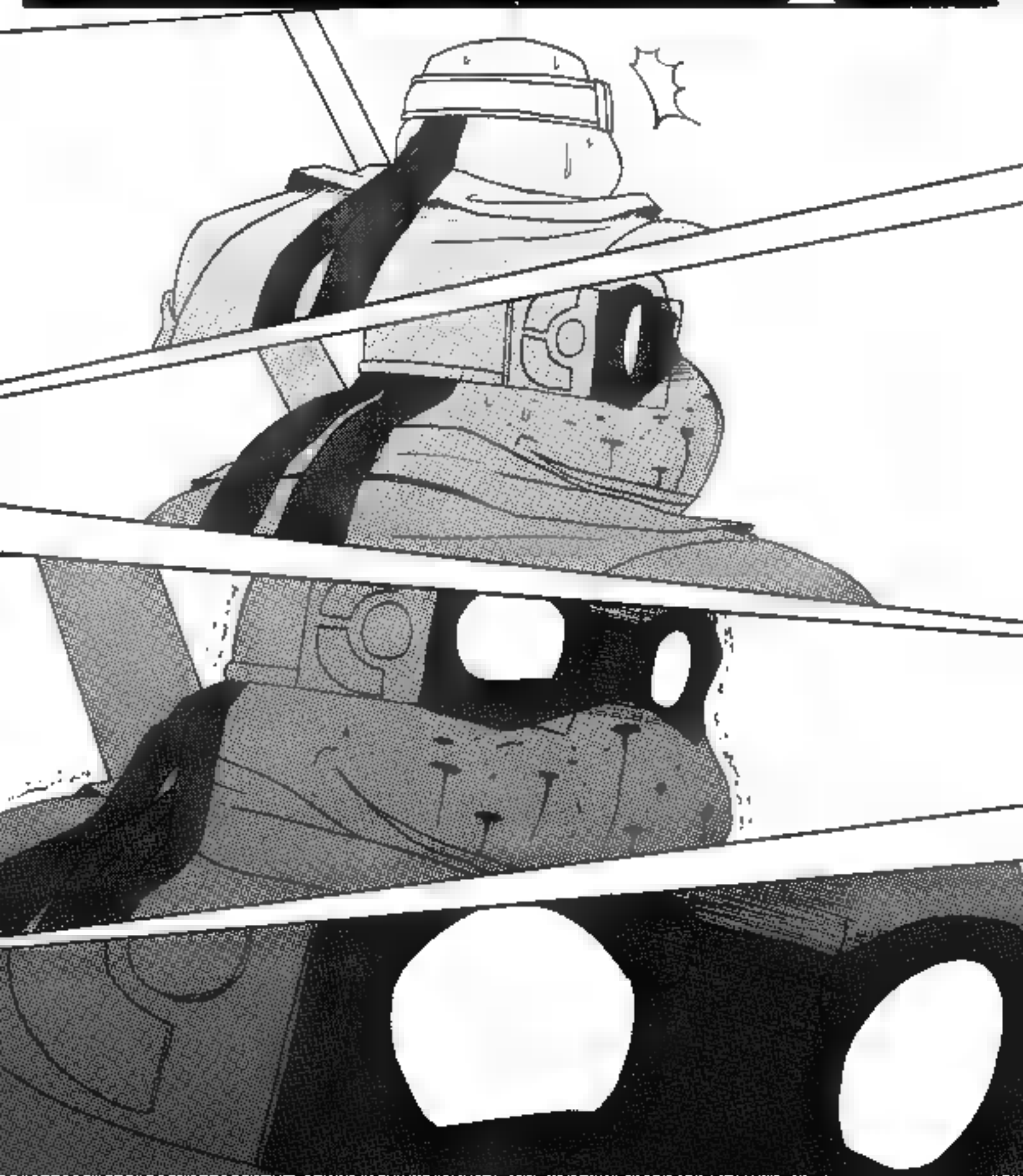
GET
OUT!

GET
OUT!



HAH...

HAH...



HAH... HAH...
IF I'M NOT GONNA
LEAVE THIS HELL
HOLE ALIVE...

...THEN... THEN
NEITHER WILL
THIS... PIECE
OF CRAP!!

YOU WON'T...
GET AWAY
WITH IT...

WAIT...
WAIT...!!!

YOU
MONSTER.





AUGUSTUS,
DO YOU
NEED HELP?



IT'S OKAY, CAROLE!
I FOUND THE BOY
I WAS LOOKING
FOR.

COUGH
COUGH



HAHAHA



THAT'S RIGHT...
YOU
DEVELOPED
SOME KIND OF
ASTHMA...
WHAT CAUSED
THAT?



DON'T PLAY
DUMB. IT
WAS ONE OF
YOUR FELLOW
FREAKS'
DOING,

HE USED MY
DAUGHTER AS A
HUMAN SHIELD
AND DRAGGED HER
TO A PLACE HIGHLY
CONCENTRATED
IN TOXIC GAS.

HUMAN
SHIELD...
SO IT'S THAT
DONATELLO
GUY!



BUT I TOLD YOU,
DADDY! THERE WAS
SOMETHING WRONG
WHEN THE ACTOR
DID HIS WORK!
IT WASN'T HIS
FAULT!

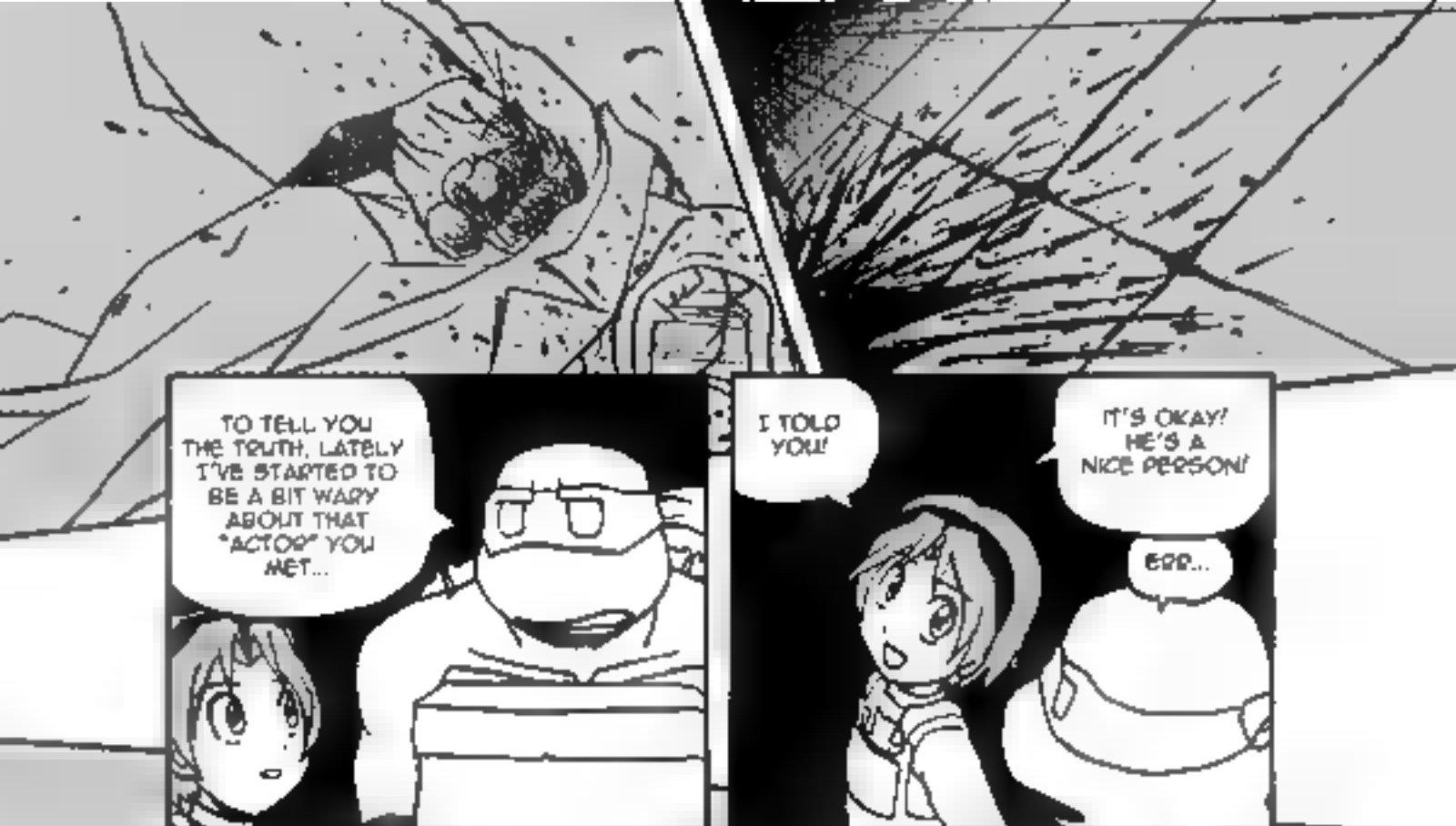
THE POLICE
USED REAL
GUNS!

CAROLE...
DADDY KNOWS
BUT...



HE DID ALL THAT
BECAUSE THE
POLICE WERE
BOTHERING HIM
WHILE HE WAS
WORKING!
HE'S REALLY
NOT A
BAD PERSON!

MOM ALWAYS
TOLD ME THAT
WHEN PEOPLE
DO SOMETHING
I DON'T
LIKE, IT'S
OKAY TO DO
SOMETHING
ABOUT IT.
SO HE'S
OKAY, TOO!



TO TELL YOU
THE TRUTH, LATELY
I'VE STARTED TO
BE A BIT WARY
ABOUT THAT
"ACTOR" YOU
MET...

I TOLD
YOU!

IT'S OKAY!
HE'S A
NICE PERSON!

ERR...



WHEN THE
POLICE
ACCIDENTALLY
SHOT AT ME,
HE PROTECTED
ME EVEN IF
HE DIDN'T
KNOW ME!

PEOPLE LIKE
THAT ARE CALLED
HEROES, RIGHT?
AND HEROES,
THEY DON'T DO
BAD THINGS,
RIGHT?

WELL, HERE IT IS. THE DOCUMENT I MUST GIVE TO THAT GUY.



RES... TRAINING... ORDER?

I STILL DON'T UNDERSTAND HOW YOU CAME TO KNOW ABOUT THE EXISTENCE OF THIS DOCUMENT AND ITS LOCATION.



HOW CAN I NOT? THIS IS FROM WHEN SHADOW CALLED THE POLICE ON ME BECAUSE I MISTOOK HER FOR ANOTHER GIRL AND KISSED HER. FUNNY SOUVENIRS GO IN MY FUNNY BOX!

THAT'S NOT WHAT I MEANT AND YOU KNOW IT.

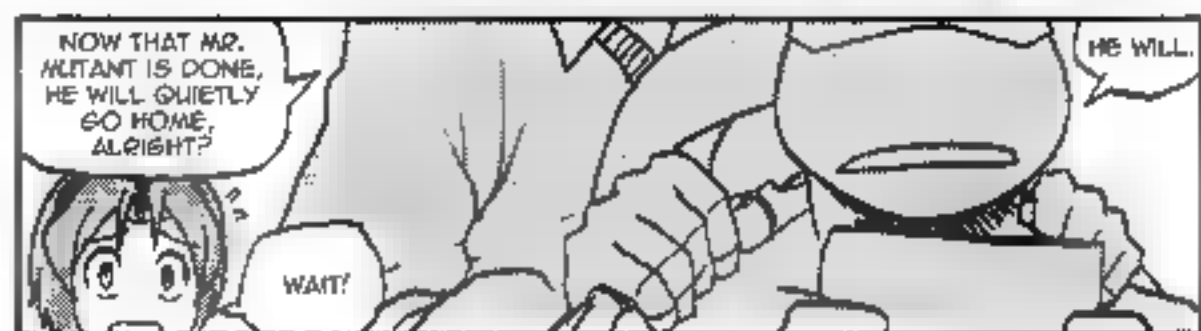
DON'T MAKE ME SAY THINGS I'LL REGRET.

ESPECIALLY IN FRONT OF MY DAUGHTER.



ALRIGHT... SIR.

NOW THAT MR. MUTANT IS DONE, HE WILL QUIETLY GO HOME, ALRIGHT?



HE WILL.

WAIT!

WHY DOES AUGUSTUS HAVE TO GO? I DON'T WANT HIM TO GO!!



I KNOW, I'LL HELP! YOU NEED TO GIVE THOSE PAPERS TO SOMEONE? IF I DO IT FOR YOU, YOU'LL STAY HERE WITH US, OKAY? OKAY?

YOU DON'T KNOW THE PERSON WHO WANTS THIS DOCUMENT. AND WHAT DID MOM TELL YOU ABOUT STRANGERS?

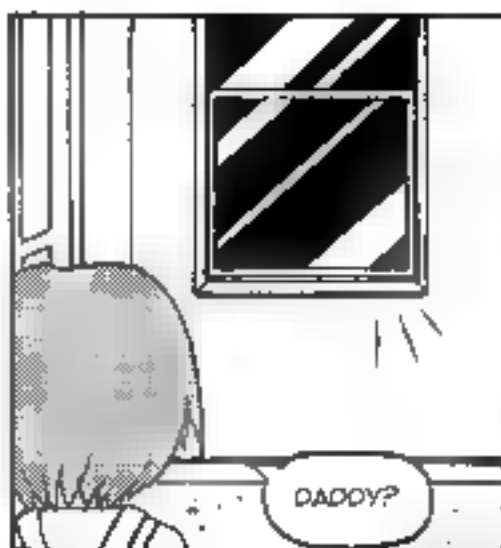


AH!

AAW, C'MERE.

WE'LL MEET AGAIN! PROMISE!





THAT THING
TORMENTING ME...
IT CAN'T BE JUST
A COINCIDENCE...

AM I BEING
PUNISHED FOR
MY FOOLISH ACT
FROM THAT
TIME?

EVER HEARD ABOUT THAT SCIENTIST
WHO CLAIMED THAT HUMANOID MUTANT
REPTILES LIVED IN NEW YORK? WHAT WAS
HIS NAME AGAIN... BAXTER STOCKMAN?
YEAH, THAT'S HIM!

IT'S ALL MY DAMN FAULT!!!!

THAT SCREAM
JUST NOW...
IT CAME FROM
THE SEWERS...

NO ONE'S
AROUND...
ALRIGHT...

HE PROBABLY CONCOCTED THAT FAIRY
TALE TO GET THE MEDIA'S ATTENTION, IN
AN EFFORT TO APPEAL HIS SENTENCE. HE SHOULD
REMAIN IN JAIL, WHERE HE BELONGS. THE SAME
THING GOES FOR HIS DELUSIONAL IDEAS.

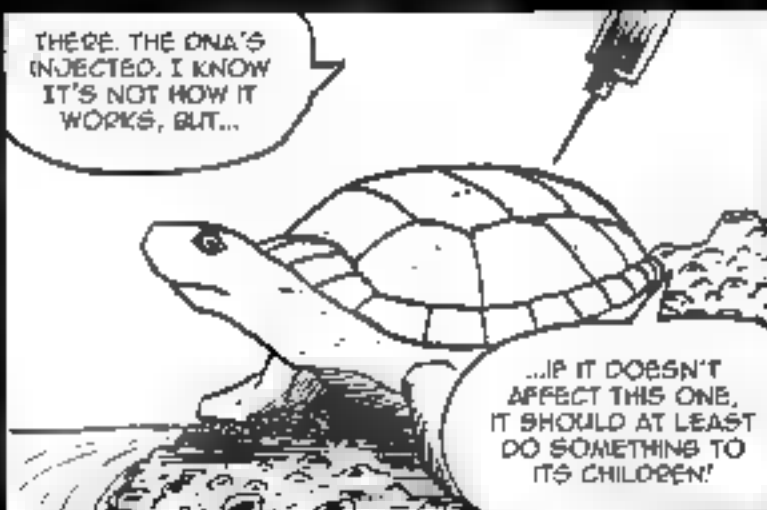
THIS BLOOD... COULD
IT BE THE BLOOD OF
ONE OF THOSE RUMORED
GIANT REPTILES...?

THIS IS FASCINATING...
I HAVE TO RETURN TO
MY LAB AND SCAN
IT RIGHT AWAY...

THIS MIGHT BE NOT
AS GOOD AS A LIVE
SPECIMEN,
HOWEVER...

IF I CAN
CREATE MY OWN
SPECIMEN
FROM THIS
SAMPLE...
THEN...

THERE. THE DNA'S
INJECTED. I KNOW
IT'S NOT HOW IT
WORKS, BUT...



...IF IT DOESN'T
AFFECT THIS ONE,
IT SHOULD AT LEAST
DO SOMETHING TO
ITS CHILDREN!

THIS IS ANIMAL
CRUELTY... WHAT IF
YOUR BOSS FINDS OUT
ABOUT THIS?

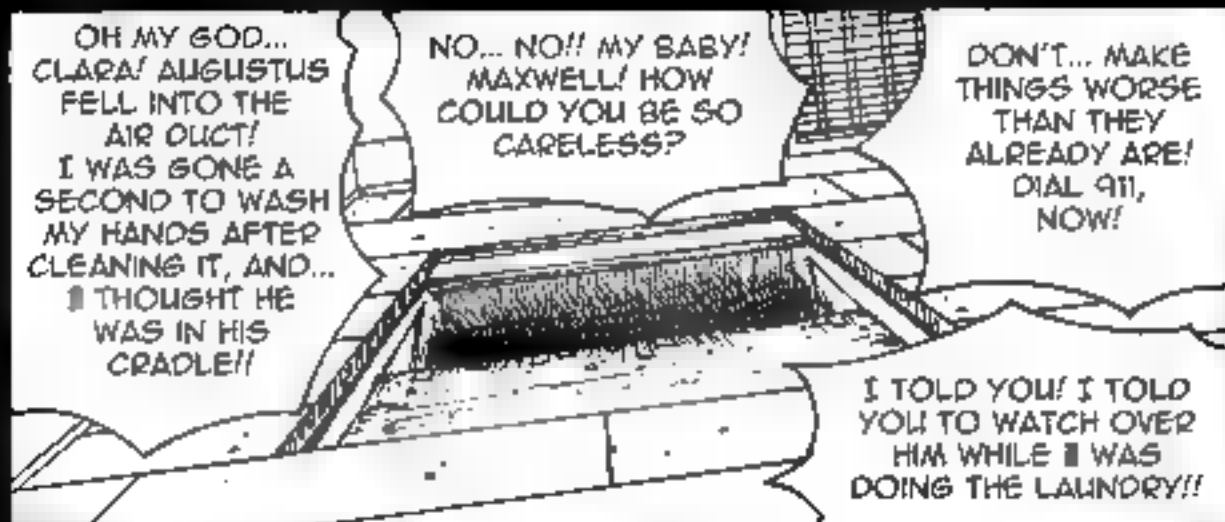


I'LL MAKE SURE HE DOESN'T.
IF THIS EXPERIMENT FAILS, I'LL
JUST DISPOSE OF THE EVIDENCE.
IF IT WORKS... IMAGINE THE FAME!

OH MY GOD...
CLARA! AUGUSTUS
FELL INTO THE
AIR DUCT!
I WAS GONE A
SECOND TO WASH
MY HANDS AFTER
CLEANING IT, AND...
I THOUGHT HE
WAS IN HIS
CRADLE!!

NO... NO!! MY BABY!
MAXWELL! HOW
COULD YOU BE SO
CARELESS?

DON'T... MAKE
THINGS WORSE
THAN THEY
ALREADY ARE!
DIAL 911,
NOW!



I TOLD YOU! I TOLD
YOU TO WATCH OVER
HIM WHILE I WAS
DOING THE LAUNDRY!!

MS. AMHERST, PLEASE TELL
US HOW YOU FEEL NOW THAT
YOUR SON IS SAFE AND SOUND.

I'M RELIEVED
OF COURSE!
BUT...



LEAVE ME
ALONE!!

THE POLICE CLAIMS TO HAVE SEEN
A RED-EARED SLIDER WITH
ITS STOMACH BURST OPEN
UPON ARRIVING ON THE SCENE.
WHAT DID YOU DO THAT TURTLE?

I HAVE NO
CLUE!



HOW ABOUT THE DEAD
BABY TURTLES IN THE AIR DUCT?
ARE THEY ITS OFFSPRING?
DID YOU THROW THEM IN THERE
YOURSELF TO GET RID OF THEM?

NO, I
DIDN'T!!

I SWEAR I TRIED
HIDING THE DEAD
TURTLE WHILE THEY
WEREN'T LOOKING!
I JUST DIDN'T KNOW
ABOUT THE OTHER
ONES IN THE AIR
DUCT!
PLEASE, SIR...



MAXWELL, YOU'VE
DONE IRREPARABLE
DAMAGE TO OUR
COMPANY'S
REPUTATION.
I'M SORRY, BUT I'LL
HAVE TO LET YOU GO.

WHAT REALLY
HAPPENED
TO THAT TURTLE
ON THAT DAY?

MAYBE IT'S
RELATED TO
AUGUSTUS'
FATE?

NO!!

GWAAARRRRR!

L...LOOKLOOK...
D...DAD... I'M
WATCHING A BAD
MOVIE, AND I'M
N...NOT EVEN
S...SCARED... JUST
LIKE GROWN-UPS.

N...NOW THAT I'M
A... A GROWN-UP, I
CAN T...TAKE CARE OF
AUGUSTUS B...BY MYSELF
IF Y...YOU LET HIM STAY.
SO...SO... AH...

YOU'RE NOT
MAKING ANY
SENSE, CAROLE!!

I'M SCARED
TOO, BTW.

FIRST OF ALL, YOU
SHOULDN'T WATCH
"ALIENS DO SPORTS
ILLUSTRATED'S BABES",
PERIOD.
YOU'RE GOING TO HAVE
ALL KINDS OF
NIGHTMARES.

SECOND...
ABOUT
AUGUSTUS...

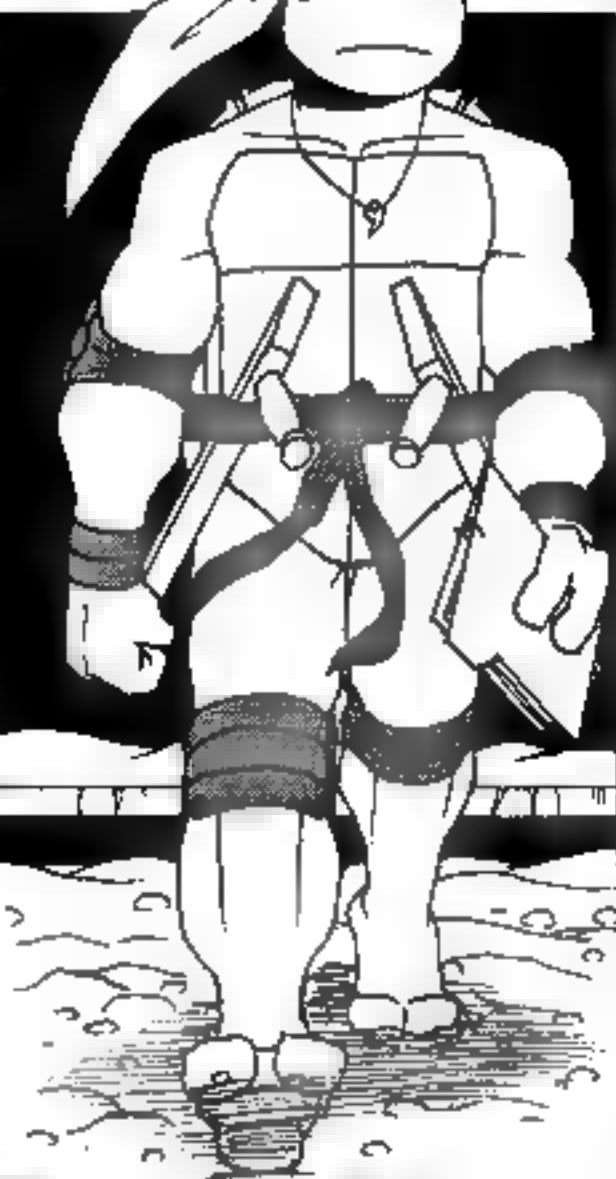
...HUM, I MEAN
THAT GREEN
PERSON YOU
THINK IS
AUGUS...TUS...?

OH!
BUT...
BUT...

WAIT...?

NO, NO.
THIS WOULDN'T
MAKE ANY
SENSE.

WHAT,
DADDY?



SO, YOU CAME
BACK AFTER
ALL.

WHOA!



ARE YOU
REALLY
A NORMAL
POLICE
OFFICER?

HALF THE
TIME.



NOW, WHERE
IS IT?

YOUR
SO-CALLED
PROOF OF
IDENTITY?



READ IT.
IT'S JUST LIKE
I TOLD YOU,
RIGHT?

YOU CLAIMED YOU ARE
"AUGUSTUS AMHERST", WHO
BUT ISSUED A RESTRICTION
ORDER ON JUNE 17TH OF LAST
YEAR AND THIS... SEEMS
AUTHENTIC. THERE IS NO WAY
YOU COULD'VE KNOWN ABOUT
THIS DOCUMENT UNLESS...

HUH. I'M DEALING
WITH MUTANTS,
SO WHILE I'M AT IT,
I MIGHT AS WELL
BELIEVE YOUR STORY.

I SAW MY FAMILY TOO, BUT... THERE WASN'T MUCH TO TALK ABOUT.

YOU'RE CLEAN.

YOU SENT ME ■ A HUMAN ENVIRONMENT TO GET PROOF THAT I'M "CLEAN".

SHOULDN'T THE PROOF COME BEFORE THAT?

YOU MET HUMANS? HMM, ALRIGHT, THEN...

WAIT A SECOND!

SUPPOSE I REALLY WERE DANGEROUS... YOU'D BE ENDANGERING PEOPLE'S LIVES!

RIGHT?

YOU'RE QUITE SHARP, MUTANT.

YOU SEE, MY PURPOSE IS TO PROTECT CITIZENS FROM ALL KINDS OF HAZARDS.

CRIMINALS.

EVIL MUTANTS.

HOWEVER, AS OF LATE, MY HANDS ARE "TIED" AND IT SEEMS LIKE ONLY YOUR LEADER CAN BE OF ANY HELP TO ME.

IRONICALLY, IT'S ONLY NOW THAT I GET THE OPPORTUNITY TO PUT DOWN ONE OF THE BIGGEST THREATS TO NEW YORK. YET...

...CAUSING HARM TO ONE OF LEONARDO'S KIND ALSO MEANS RISKING TO LOSE HIS SUPPORT.

THAT'S WHY I NEEDED A MOTIVE TO TAKE ACTION.

A BLOOD CURDLING SCREAM FROM A CITIZEN BEING DEVoured WAS TO BE MY CLUE TO CATCH YOU IN THE ACT AND PUT AN END TO YOUR EVIL DEEDS RIGHTEOUSLY... TOO BAD YOU HELD BACK THIS TIME.

IT WOULD'VE BEEN A SACRIFICE FOR A GREATER GOOD.

YOU!!
YOU
GAMBLERD
WITH MY
SISTER'S
LIFE!!



I SAID
YOU
WERE
CLEAN.

DON'T
MAKE ME
CHANGE MY
MIND.

NOW YOU WILL
GO AND TELL
YOUR LEADER...

YOU THINK
I'M GOING
TO DO YOU
A FAVOR
AFTER
THAT??

WHA...??
SCREW
YOU!!

YOU CAN TAKE YOUR
MESSAGE AND SHOVE
IT UP WHERE THE SUN
DOESN'T SHINE! I'M
NOT TELLING
ANYONE ANYTHING!

HMM, I
REMEMBER
THEM TO BE
TOUGHER THAN
THIS.

OR MAYBE
I'M THE ONE
WHO BECAME
A BIT MORE
PRAGMATIC
OVER THE YEARS.

DOOONNNNNIE!
OH DOOONNNIE!

IT'S ME,
MIKEEEEEY!

DOOONNNIE!
WHERE ARE
YOUUUUUU?

WHEREVER YOU
ARE, I'M COMING TO
SEE YOUUUUUU!

...OOOONNNIE!
DOOONNNIE!

NO...
NONONONO
NONONONONO...

THE MIKEY OF
THIS FAKE
WORLD...
HE'S GOING
TO MESS
UP
EVERYTHING!

NOT NOW.
MY WORLD,
MY SENSE,
MY FATHER.
NO ONE
MUST KNOW.

I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.
I MUST STAY CALM.

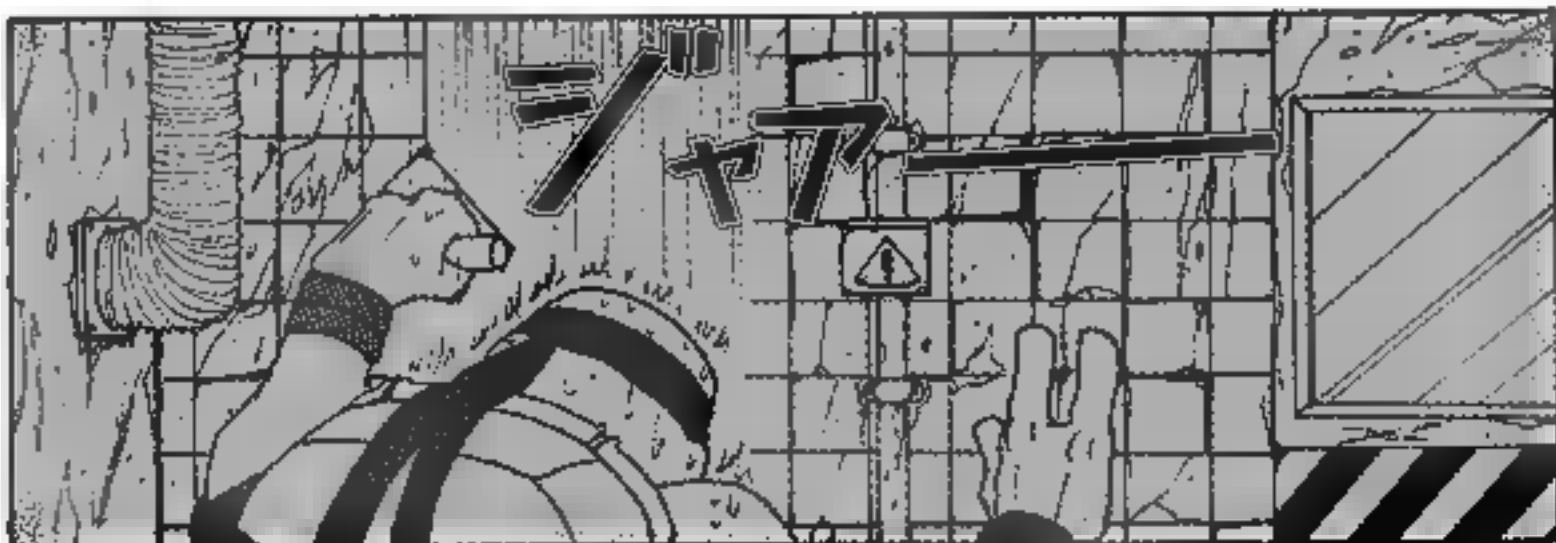
I MUST BE
AS FAKE
AS THIS
WORLD
IS!

I GUESS A
FLASHLIGHT
WILL COME
IN HANDY.

JUST YOU
WAIT, DONNIE.

PREPARE
TO BE
GREETED.

OLD MIKEY
STYLE.



OH
DOONNNNNNN...

IT'S
NEEEEEEE...



MIKEYYYY...
WHAT A
SURPRISSSSSE.

GWAAAAH!



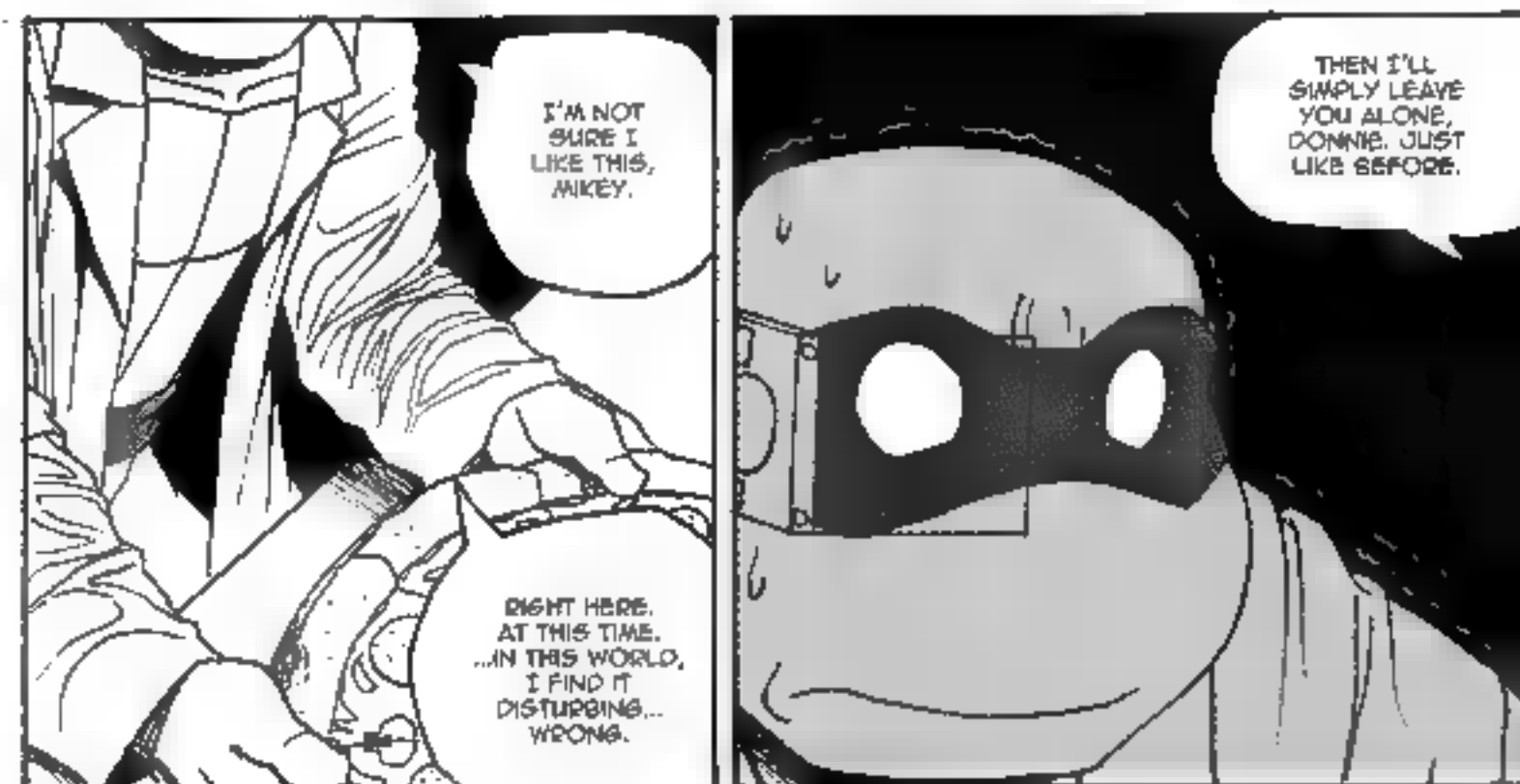
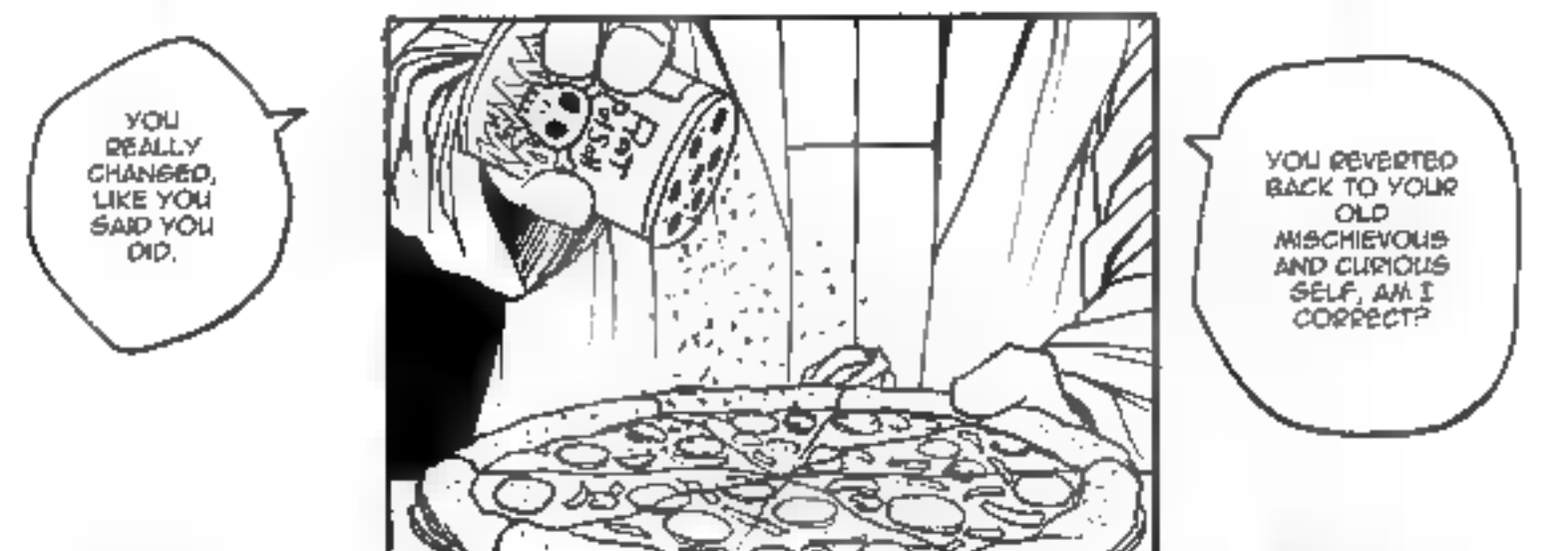
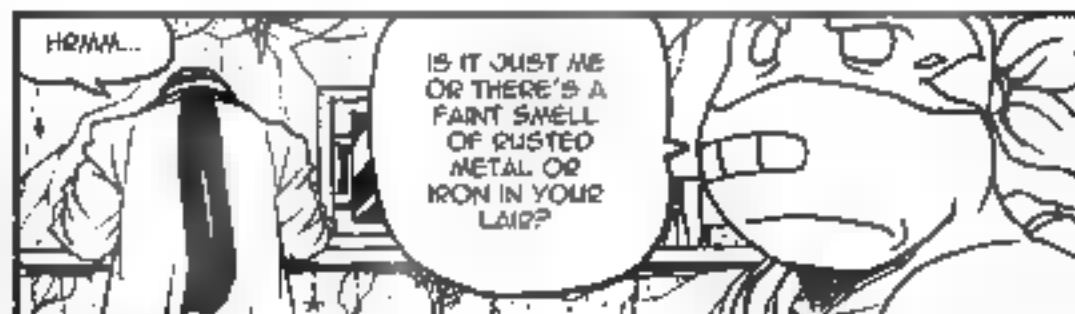
YOU MUST BE
HUNGRY,
MIKEY.
I HAVE PIZZA.

P...PIZZA?



LET'S GO
BACK UP.
HAVE SOME
PIZZA.

Y...YEAH
OKAY...

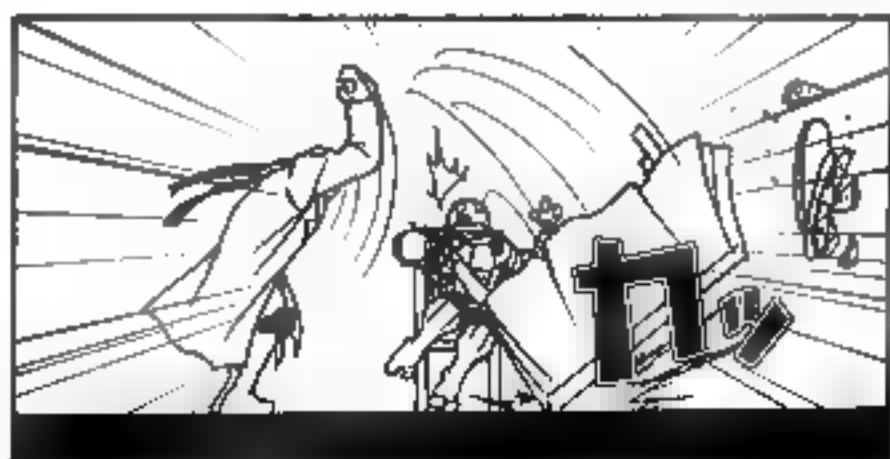


I MEAN, IT'S BEEN 17 YEARS ALREADY. I SHOULD KNOW BETTER.

I'VE COME TO REALIZE THAT YOU BECAME SOMEONE WHO NEEDS MORE PRIVACY THAN ANY OF US.

SO IF YOU DON'T FEEL LIKE OPENING UP TO ME, THAT'S FINE. I WON'T PRY.

THE LIFE I LIVED FOR THE LAST 17 YEARS GETTING TO KNOW YOU BETTER WAS NO ILLUSION, DONNIE. THINGS DON'T NEED TO CHANGE BETWEEN US IF THAT'S HOW YOU WANT THINGS TO BE.



ER...

THAT'S FOR YOUR OWN GOOD. YOU MIGHT GET EVEN FATTER.

IF YOU WERE JUST A FAKER TRYING TO ACT LIKE MY REAL BROTHER, YOU WOULD HAVE DESERVED TO BE DISPOSED OF. HOWEVER...

I'M NOT RAP!!!

OF ALL MY FAKE BROTHERS ■ THIS FAKE WORLD... YOU ARE THE ONLY REASONABLE ONE... THE MORE LIKELY TO UNDERSTAND ME.

MAYBE YOU WILL SUPPORT ME? MAYBE YOU CAN GRANT ME SOME PEACE OF MIND? MAYBE I CAN TRUST YOU?

MASTER, PLEASE ALLOW ME TO INDULGE MYSELF WITH SOME COMFORT FROM THIS WORLD. LET ME PRETEND ■ I CAN TRUST HIM.

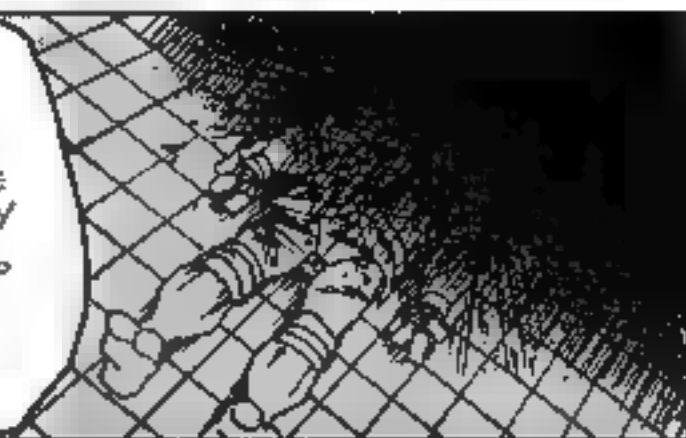
MIKEY.
TELL ME.



IF YOU WANTED
TO RECLAIM
SOMETHING VERY
DEAR TO YOU
AND YOU WERE
THE ONLY PERSON
WHO COULD
REACH FOR IT...



...DO YOU
THINK IT'S
ACCEPTABLE
TO USE ANY
MEANS
NECESSARY?



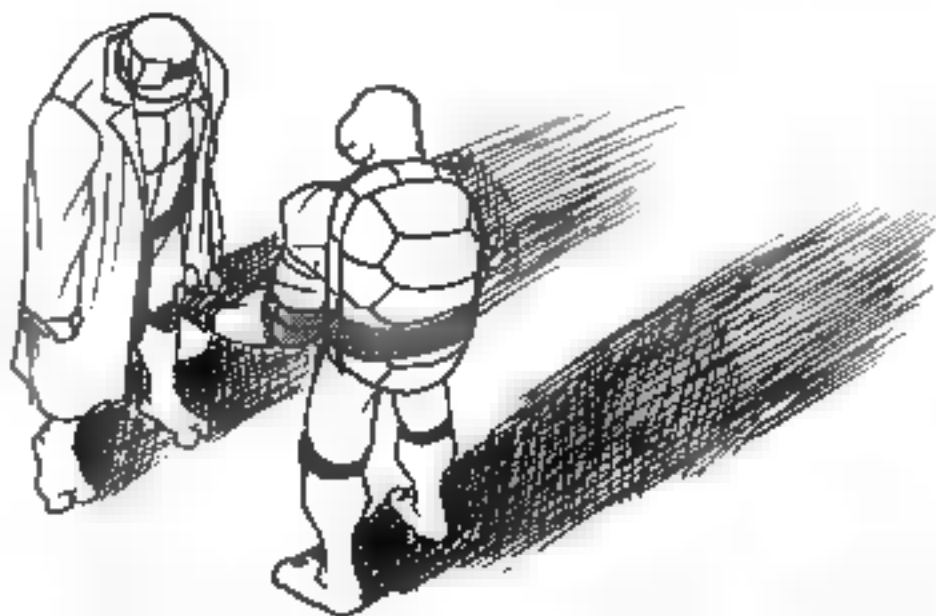
MIKEY.
DO YOU
THINK... I'M
DOING
THE RIGHT
THING?



WHATEVER
YOU'RE
TALKING
ABOUT...



...DO
YOU
BELIEVE
IT'S FOR
THE
GREATER
GOOD
AT THE END
OF THE LINE?



THANKS FOR
THE SHELL
CELL!

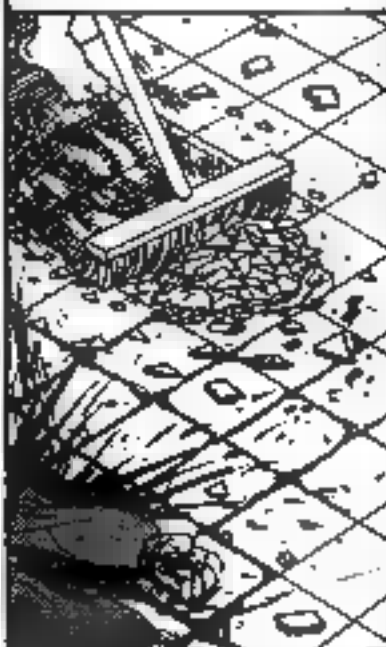


SO IT'S OKAY,
MIKEY?



TO NEVER GIVE UP
MY REALITY?

DISPOSING OF NUISANCES
IS ACCEPTABLE...



...BECAUSE THEIR FATE
IN THIS FAKE WORLD
DOESN'T AFFECT THEM
■ MY REALITY, RIGHT?

YOU DO UNDERSTAND
OUR SENSEI...



...IS NOT SUPPOSED TO
BE DEAD?

YOU'LL AGREE
WITH ME...



...THAT I'M SIMPLY
TRYING TO SET THINGS
THE WAY THEY SHOULD
BE, MIKEY?

OF COURSE HE
UNDERSTANDS YOU,
MY SON.
HE TRUSTS YOU TO
GO FORTH WITH YOUR
CONVICTIONS, SO
DO AS HE SAID.
PRESS ON.

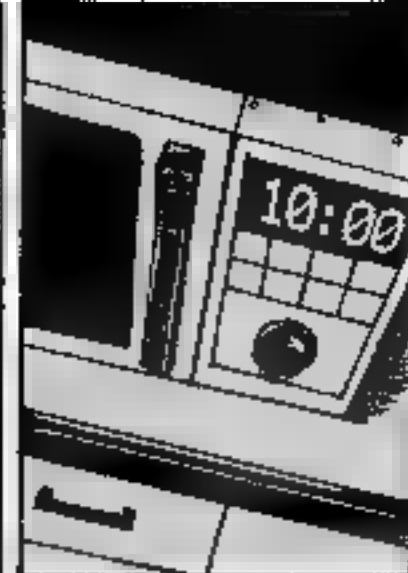
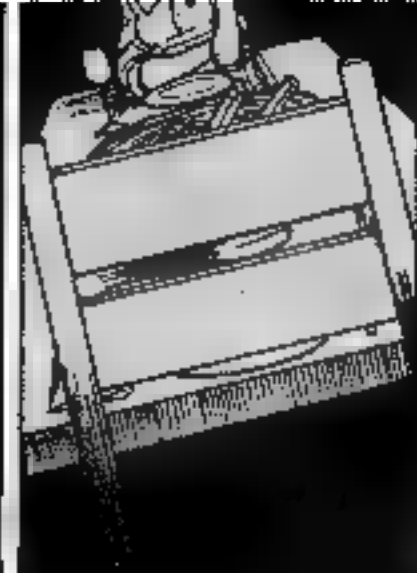
THERE IS STILL HOPE
FOR YOU... FOR ME.
HOWEVER, TIME IS
RUNNING SHORT...
YOUR EVIL BROTHER
IS CLOSER THAN
EVER...

HURRY UP AND
BRING ME BACK,
MY SON.
BRING ME BACK
AND TOGETHER,
WE WILL RECLAIM
YOUR REALITY...

DON'T
WORRY,
MASTER.

I WON'T
GIVE UP ON
YOU... EVER.





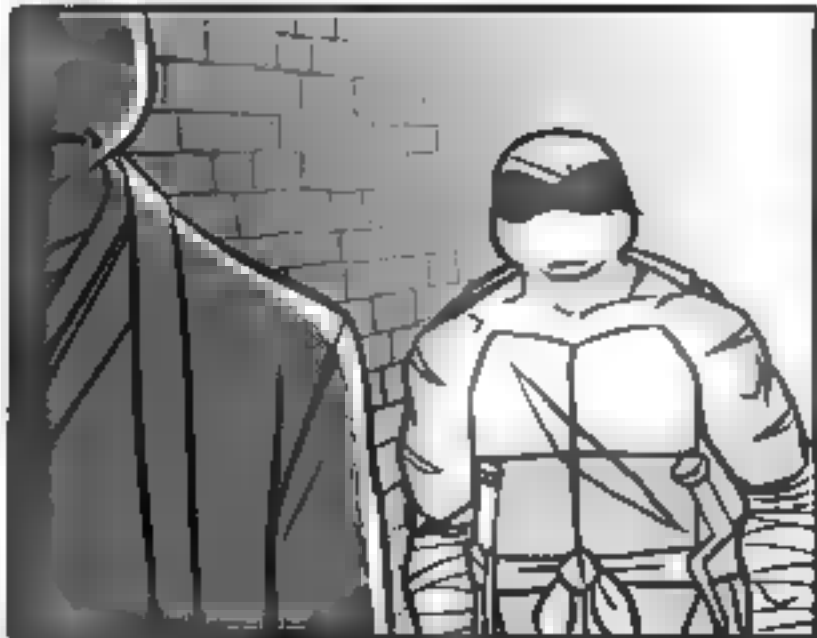





I WONDER IF
MIKEY'S OKAY..?




WHAT ARE
YOU STARING AT
ME FOR, RAPH?



I DUNNO... IT'S
KINDA WEIRD TO SEE
THE REAL YOU HERE...

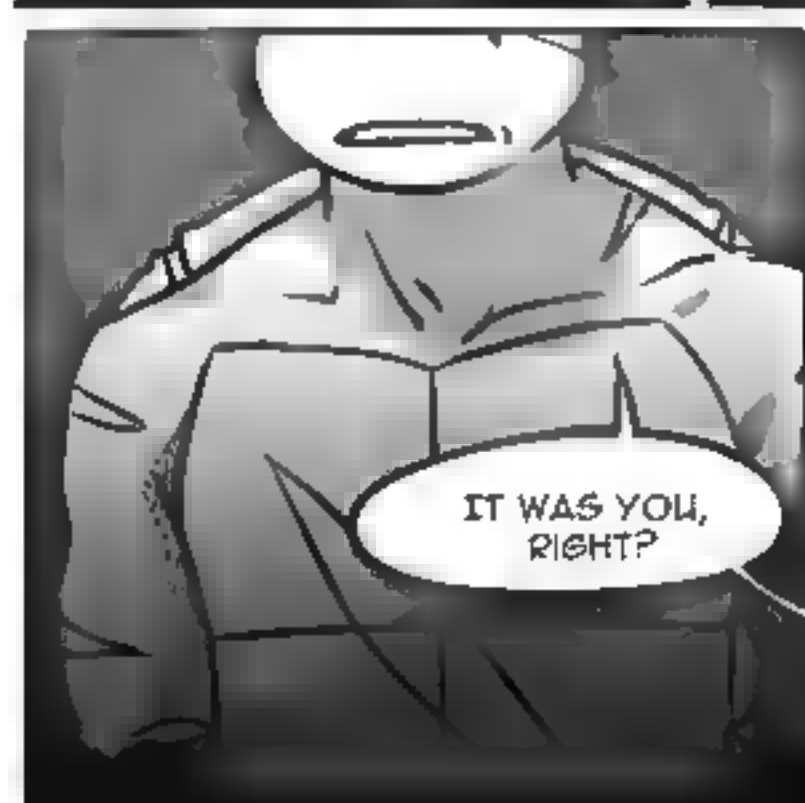


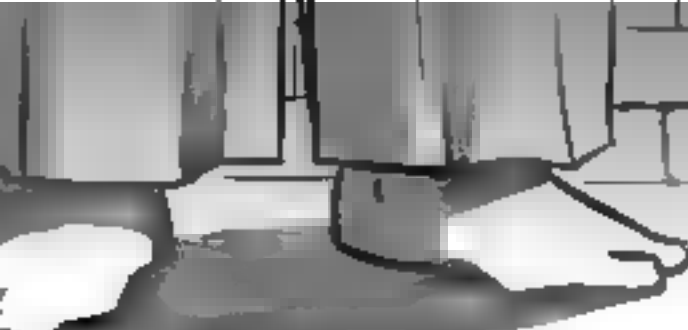
WITH YOU
BEING GONE FOR
17 YEARS AN' ALL.



HAVEN'T CHANGED
MUCH, EHP? YA CAN
SENSE THINGS WITHOUT
EVEN LOOKING. IT'S
LIKE YA HAVE A THIRD
EYE OR SOMETHIN'.








YOU WERE WATCHIN'
OVER US WHEN WE
NEEDED YA THE MOST...



JUST LIKE A LEADER.



THINK NOTHING
OF IT, RAPH.



I INTENDED TO
LEAVE YOU ALL
AGAIN UNTIL YOU
GOT ME BACK.




I'M NOT THE LEADER
I ONCE WAS.

YOU ARE.




OY, YER OUTTA YER MIND?

IF I WAS A
GOOD LEADER,
I WOULDN'T HAVE
NEEDED TO GET
MIKEY BACK IN THE
FIRST PLACE -




AND DONNIE
WOULDN'T HAVE
GONE NUTS!




THAT'S NOT IT, RAPH!
YOU STAYED HERE FOR
THEM AND YOU DID WHAT
YOU COULD TO HELP.


I DIDN'T.




THAT'S WHY I WANT
THEM TO LOOK UP TO YOU
AS A ROLE MODEL.




THAT'S NOT
WHAT I MEANT...
DO YOU REMEMBER OUR
FAMILY VALUES, RAPH?
OUR SENSEI ALWAYS
REMINDED US OF THE
IMPORTANCE OF STICKING
TOGETHER.



YA DON'T
WANT 'EM TO
BE ANGRY
CHAIN-SMOKING
ALCOHOLICS,
BELIEVE ME




IRONICALLY, I WAS
THE FIRST ONE TO
SHUN THOSE VALUES
AND YOU WERE THE
ONE WHO REMINDED
ME OF THEM.




OF ALL OF US, I FEEL LIKE YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO HASN'T CHANGED. SURE, YOU SMOKE, DRINK AND CURSE A LOT MORE THAN BEFORE,

BUT I FEEL LIKE EVERYTHING ELSE IS THE SAME WITHIN YOU, INCLUDING THE TEACHINGS OF OUR SENSEI.




...GIVE YERSELF MORE CREDIT, LEO.



WE NEED TO REMAIN TOGETHER. THIS IS WHY WE NEED YOU AS A LEADER TO SHOW THE RIGHT EXAMPLE.

YA LEFT 17 YEARS AGO IN THE WORST CIRCUMSTANCES EVER TO DO WHAT'S BEST FOR US. AT LEAST TRY TO EASE YERSELF IN, YA KNOW WHAT I MEAN?




OUTSIDE OF DONNIE, I KNOW YA HAVEN'T CHANGED IN PEOPLE'S EYES, LEO. AND YA DON'T HAVE TO JUST 'CUZ YOU WERE GONE FOR 17 YEARS. DEEP DOWN INSIDE, YER STILL THE SAME, LEO.

AND LIKEWISE, TO US, YER STILL THE PERFECT ICON OF A LEADER.




BUT DONNIE, HE...


HE'S MAD AT YA, LEO. WE ALL TRIED TO REASON WIT' HIM, BUT HE WOULDN'T LISTEN.



ARE YA GONNA TRY AS WELL OR ARE YA GONNA COWER AWAY?



LOOK, I HAD ISSUES WIT' MIKEY, BUT WE BOTH TACKLED 'EM FACE ON AND MADE PEACE WITH EACH OTHER.



DON'CHA THINK YA SHOULD STRAIGHTEN THINGS OUT WITH DONNIE YERSELF?

YOU'RE RIGHT... IT'S UNFAIR TO LET YOU DO ALL THE WORK. I'LL DO WHAT I CAN. IT'S JUST THAT I DON'T FEEL COMFORTABLE BEING A LEADER ANYMORE.



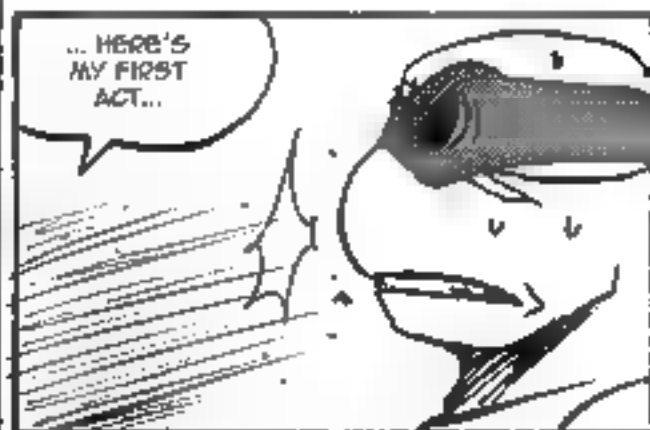
DEAL?

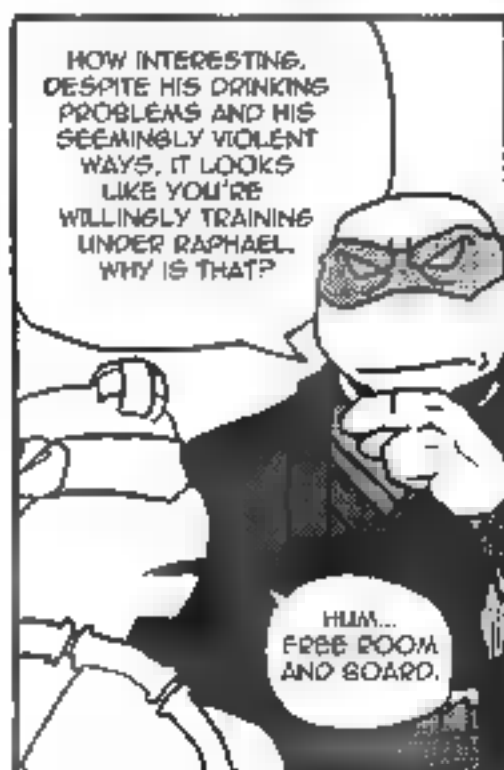
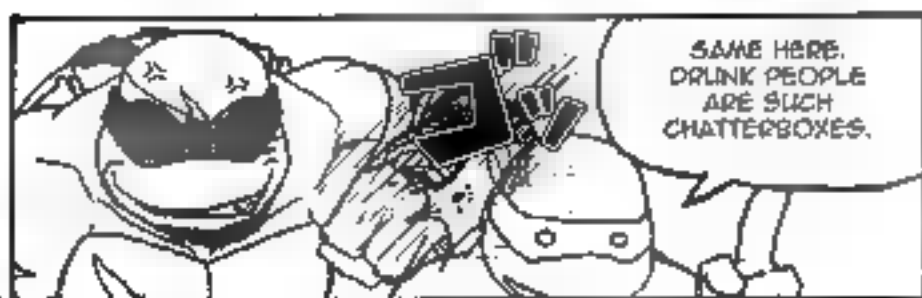
TELL YA WHAT: DONNIE'S CASE IS YER CALL. ACT LIKE A LEADER AND TAKE CARE OF HIS CASE. ONCE IT'S SORTED OUT, THEN YA CAN STEP DOWN IF YA WANT.



STRANGE. I'VE ALWAYS
THOUGHT YOU WANTED
TO BE A LEADER
YOURSELF.







HOWEVER, THAT REDEEMING ASPECT OF HIS PERSONALITY IS RENDERED OBSOLETE BY THE FACT THAT HE'S A BIPOLAR, VIOLENT, EMO, FAT AND ALCOHOLIC DEADBEAT.

RENOIR, COME HERE TO YOUR MASTERRRR.

NOW, NOW.

I HEARD FROM RAPH THAT YOU'RE A WILD MILITANT SAVED BY RAPH!

OH CRAP. DON'T BRING THAT UP. NOW, HE'S GONNA...

THERE'S PROBABLY MORE TO IT, BUT I GUESS THAT'S A FACT... AND PROBABLY THE TRUTH, I GUESS.

EH?

WHAT DO YOU MEAN "PROBABLY THE TRUTH"?

WHO CARES? I SEE A HUGE IMPROVEMENT! YA SEE, JUST YESTERDAY, HE WAS STILL BITCHIN' 'BOUT BEIN' A HUMAN OR SUMTHIN'! I HAD TO SHUT HIM UP, AND...

RAPHAEL FORCING HIM TO MOLD HIS VISION OF REALITY FROM A PARTIAL SET OF FACTS CAN SERIOUSLY MESS UP HIS MIND.

JUST LOOK AT DONNIE...

ERR.

ANYWAYS, I DON'T SUGGEST YOU TO BOTTLE UP YOUR WORRIES, ■ THAT'S WHAT YOU'VE BEEN DOING.

IF YOU SHARED THEM WITH US, WE MIGHT BE ABLE TO HELP YOU FIND SATISFACTORY ANSWERS TO YOUR QUESTIONS.

REALLY? IT'S OKAY?

OF COURSE. LET'S BRAINSTORM TOGETHER SOME OTHER TIME FOR STARTERS, YES?

AFTER ALL, YOU'RE KIND OF PART OF THE "FAMILY" NOW.

FAMILY... WITH HIM?

WHUT?

UGLY & FAT

EMO
DRINKS &
SMOKES
WE'RE ON STEROIDS



THINK FAST, LEO!



IT DOESN'T MATTER IF YOU'RE OUR LEADER OR NOT... I FEEL SAFER KNOWING WE CAN KEEP IN TOUCH WITH YOU ANYTIME NOW THAT YOU'RE BACK.



'BOUT THAT, HE DECIDED TO LEAD US ONCE AGAIN, MIKEY.

REALLY?



A SHELLCELL?



I COUNT ON YOU TO SHOW US THE HONORABLE PATH OF THE NINJA, LEO!



THE... HONORABLE PATH... YES.



SO LEADER... FROM NOW ON, THIS SHELLCELL WILL KEEP YOU CLOSELY CONNECTED TO US ALL.

WHEREVER YOU GO, WE'LL USE ITS GPS TO TRACK YOU DOWN. EVEN IF YOU VENTURE IN NAUGHTY PLACES!

THAT'S RIGHT... BIG FAREWELL TO YOUR PRIVACY. I'LL STALK YOU FROM NOW ON, DEAR LEADER!

NOW, NOW. MIKEY...

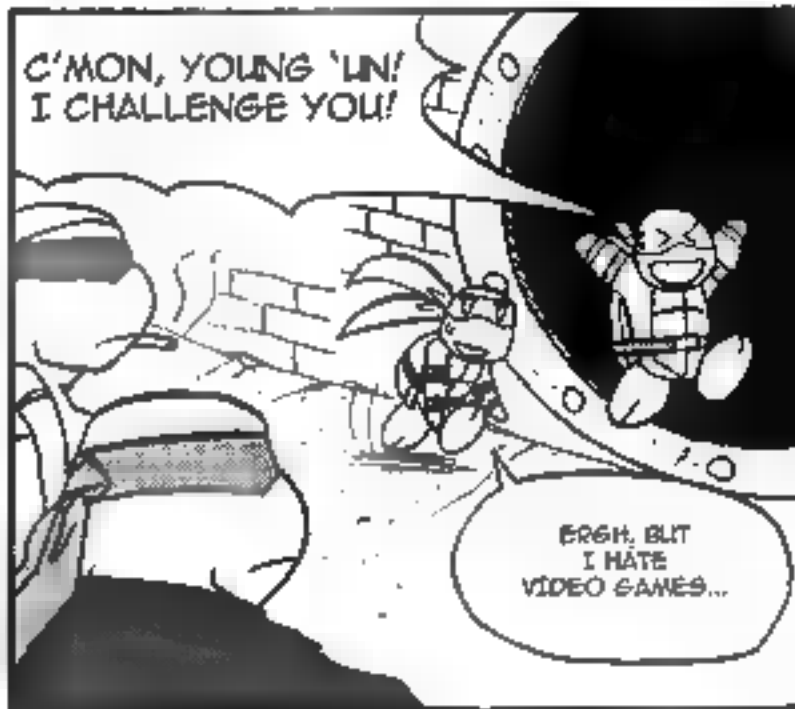
OHOO HOO...



THIS IS ALL TOO COOL! I'M OVERFLOWING WITH SO MUCH POSITIVE ENERGY!! THAT I NEED TO VENT IT ALL OUT SOMEWHERE NOW!

WELL, I STILL HAVE OUR OLD TRUSTY "BLINSTENDO" WITH THE GAME "CRACK AND FIELD" IN IT. ALSO, THE CONTROLLERS ARE ONLY WORKING HALF THE TIME.

C'MON, YOUNG 'UN! I CHALLENGE YOU!



ERGH, BUT I HATE VIDEO GAMES...

I KIND OF EXPECTED
MIKEY TO HAVE MATURED
EVEN JUST A BIT. I GUESS
SOME THINGS NEVER CHANGE.



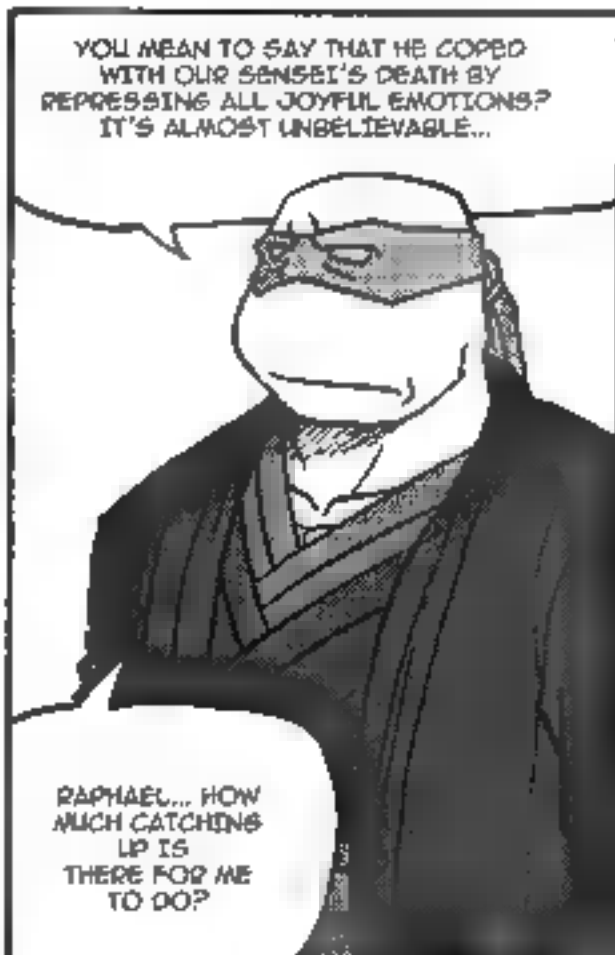
NONSENSE.
HE'S MATURE
ALRIGHT.



HE'S JUST LETTIN' OUT
THE PARTY ANIMAL IN HIM
THAT WAS BOTTLED UP
ALL THESE YEARS.



YOU MEAN TO SAY THAT HE COPE
WITH OUR SENSEI'S DEATH BY
REPRESSING ALL JOYFUL EMOTIONS?
IT'S ALMOST UNBELIEVABLE...



RAPHAEL... HOW
MUCH CATCHING
UP IS
THERE FOR ME
TO DO?

LESS THAN
A LIFETIME
IF YA
DECIDE TO
FILL US
ON YER
ADVENTURES
IN JAPAN
SOMETIME
THIS YEAR.



C'MON.
LET'S JOIN
THE OTHERS.



OH YEAH,
YA SAID
YA WANTED
PIZZA, RIGHT?
I'M GONNA
HEAT UP
LAST WEEK'S
LEFTOVERS.



IT'S LIKE
BLUE
CHEESE.
THE MORE
MOLDS
THERE ARE,
THE MORE
UNIQUE
THE TASTE
IS.



MAY I
HAVE
SOME
PRIVACY?



MAY 1

HAVE SOME
PRIVACY?

VERY WELL

HOWEVER,
I HOPE YOU'LL
KNOW WHEN TO
STOP TALKING

REMEMBER,
LEONARDO. WHAT
WE'RE DOING IS
FOR THE GREATER
GOOD. WE MUST PUT
ALL THE CHANCES
ON OUR SIDE





MUTANT
INJA
TURTLES
MNTAKE
GAIDEN

CHAPTER 21: THE CURSE
OF "YAMATA-NO-OROCHI"

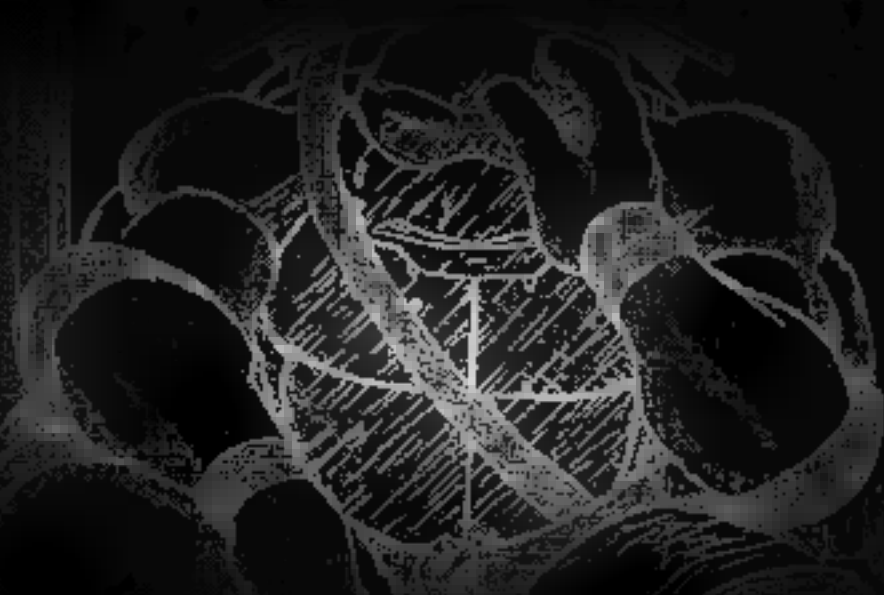
I DIDN'T WANT TO LEAVE,
BUT I HAD TO.

IT'S MY DUTY AS
A LEADER TO TAKE
RESPONSIBILITY.

RAPHAEL...
MICHELANGELO...
DONATELLO...

FORGIVE ME...

FAREWELL...
FATHER...





A...A...
AAAAAAAAAH!



SSSH...
PLEASE, DON'T
YELL!
I WON'T HURT
YOU!

THERE'S A KAPPA
HERE! A BIG ONE!!!



SOMEONE,
HEEEELP!!

WAIT! SIR,
PLEASE DON'T...


YOU'LL
REGRET...

TH... THE
KAPPA'S
GONNA
GET ME!
HEEELP!

IT'S GONNA
EAT ME! HELP!

...BLOWING A
NINJA'S
COVER.



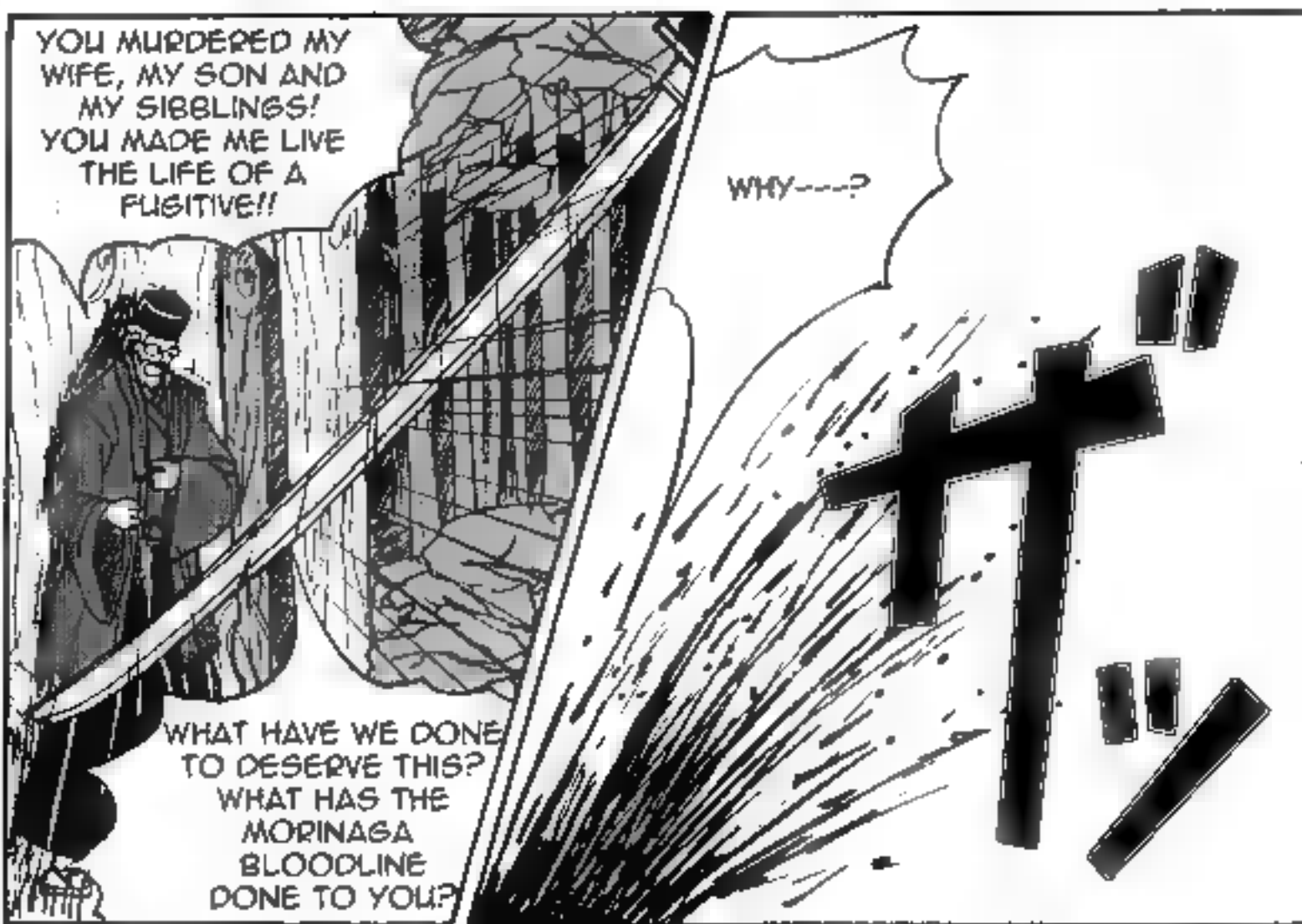


KARAI SPEAKING.
I WILL ARRIVE IN
KYOTO TOMORROW
AT 05:00.
GIVE ME A BRIEFING
ON YOUR CURRENT
STATUS.

FINISH THE JOB
AS CLEANLY AS
POSSIBLE.

*SHUNSUKE SPEAKING.
WE FOUND THE TARGET
THAT ESCAPED DURING
A PREVIOUS OPERATION.
AWAITING ORDERS.*

*ROGER THAT.
AS SOON AS WE
FIND A WINDOW OF
OPPORTUNITY,
WE'LL STRIKE.*



DID YOU READ TODAY'S
PAPER? IT SEEMS THAT
OUR LOCAL FORTUNE
TELLER MOVED TO THE
UNITED STATES! HE LEFT
LAST NIGHT WITHOUT
WARNING!

OH MY, YOU HEAR
THE ONE THAT GOES TO
MAMUONGS EVENINGS IN
THE HYOGO PREFECTURE EVERY
WEEK? DID HE LEAVE AN
ADDRESS? I STILL HAVE
SO MANY QUESTIONS TO ASK
HEN ABOUT MY FUTURE...

NO, HE WANTED TO KEEP
IT CONFIDENTIAL, I THINK.
BUT MORE IMPORTANTLY,
MY PICTURE IS IN THIS
ARTICLE! SEE?
AM I NOT DAZZLING?

MY, MY... YOU
ARE SWAPLY
CHARMING, MY
DEAR! BUT WHY
WERE YOU
INTERVIEWED?

EVEN THE FACT THAT
HIS NAME IS NOT OOMISH:
IT'S MORINASA ---
OH DEAR, THAT WAS
SUPPOSED TO BE
A SECRET. I DIDN'T
EVEN TELL THE PRESS
ABOUT THIS.

OH,
SILLY ME...
TEE
HEE!

WHY, I WAS HIS
LANDLADY... I KNEW
QUITE A BIT ABOUT
HIM.

THE WHOLE TOWN ALREADY
KNOWS THAT! YOU TOLD
MS. KUDOKI WHO THEN TOLD
MS. YAMANE WHO THEN...

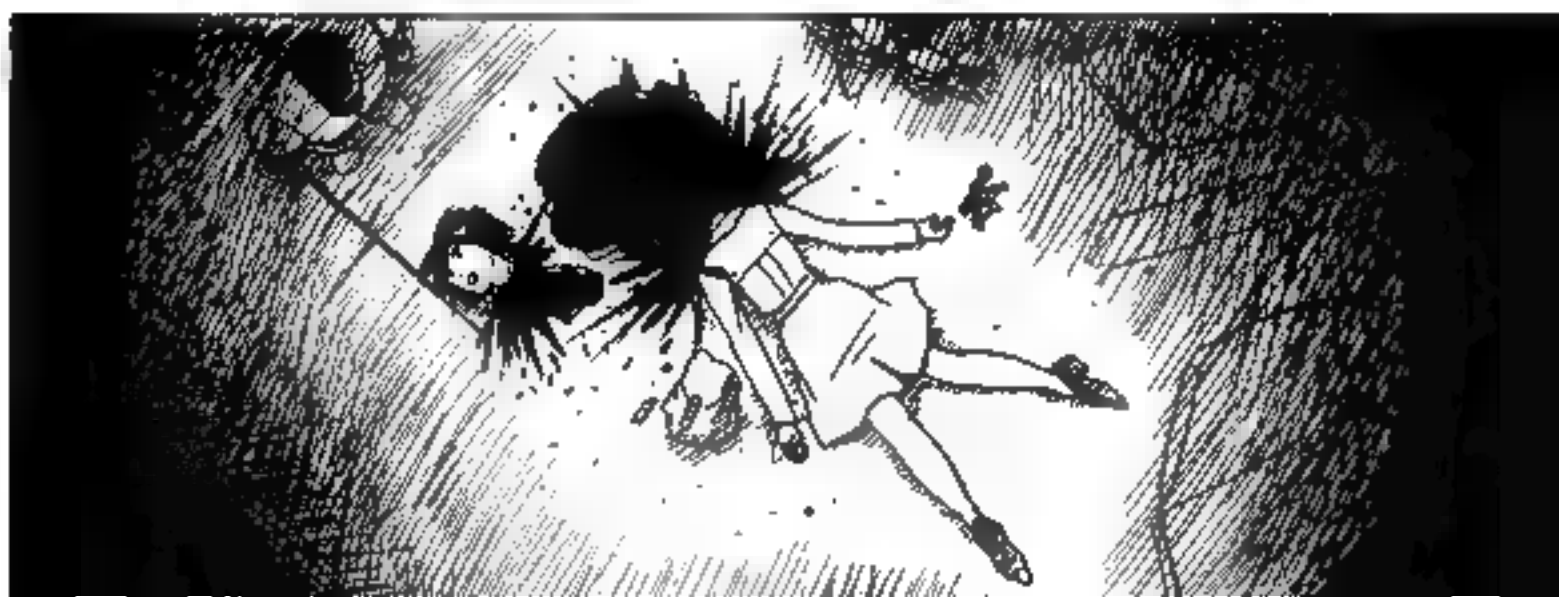
MS. KARA,
MISSION COMPLETE.
WE DISPOSED OF THE BODY,
EMPTIED HIS ROOM,
PRODUCED A FORGED
FAREWELL LETTER
AND MONITORED THE
PRESS' ACTIVITIES.


I CAN
SEE THAT.
WELL
DONE.

WE GOT A MESSAGE
FROM OSAKA. ANOTHER
TARGET WAS
ELIMINATED OVER THERE.

I HOPE YOU TOOK
THE NECESSARY
MEASURES TO COVER
THAT UP AS WELL.

KYOUTA, KAITO, SHOUHEI
AND HIROAKI ARE IN POSITION.
SHOULD ANY PROBLEM
ARISE, THEY WILL ACT
IMMEDIATELY TO CONTAIN
THE FLOW OF INFORMATION.






IT'S BEEN
A YEAR
ALREADY.

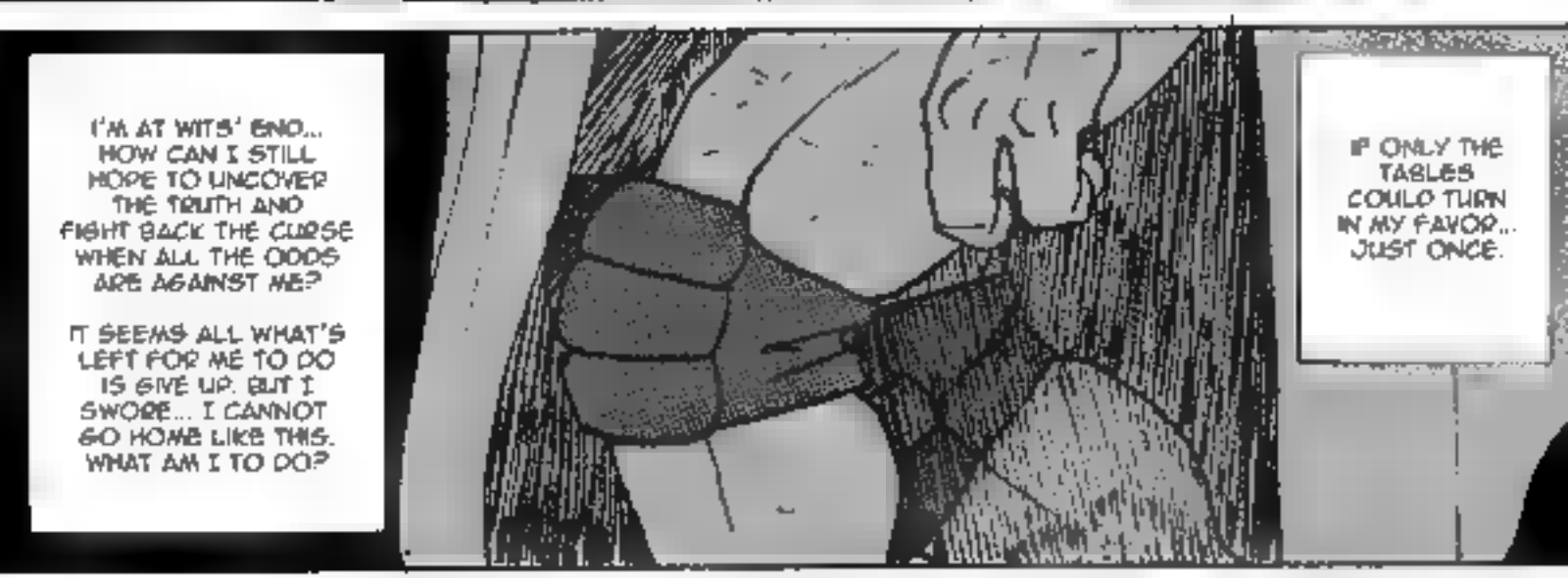
A YEAR,
AND STILL
NO LEADS.

NO MATTER WHERE I GO
IN JAPAN, THERE IS NOTHING
TO BE FOUND OUT ABOUT
THE CURSE... OR EVEN
"HAMATO YOSHI", TO WHOM
THE KATANA WAS DESTINED.
PEOPLE OF INTEREST
EITHER RUN AWAY AT MY
SIGHT, OR THEY KNOW
ABSOLUTELY NOTHING.



ALL THE BOOKS
I READ SPEAK OF
ANCIENT LEGENDS,
BUT NONE OF THEM
MENTION ANYTHING
ABOUT A CURSE THAT
MIGHT STILL EXIST
NOWADAYS.

AS FOR "HAMATO
YOSHI", WHY
CAN'T I FIND
ANY INFORMATION
ABOUT HIM?
IT IS AS IF
HE NEVER
EXISTED!



I'M AT WITS' END...
HOW CAN I STILL
HOPE TO UNCOVER
THE TRUTH AND
FIGHT BACK THE CURSE
WHEN ALL THE ODDS
ARE AGAINST ME?

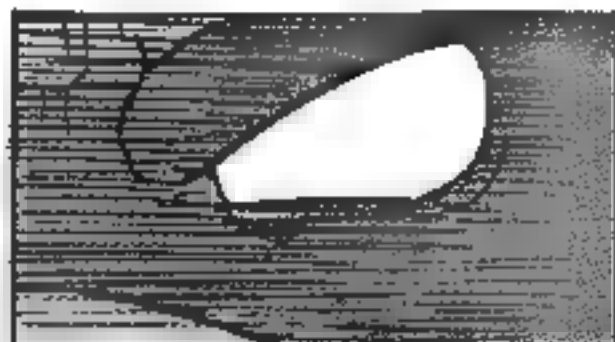
IT SEEMS ALL WHAT'S
LEFT FOR ME TO DO
IS GIVE UP. BUT I
SWORE... I CANNOT
GO HOME LIKE THIS.
WHAT AM I TO DO?

IF ONLY THE
TABLES
COULD TURN
IN MY FAVOR...
JUST ONCE.



MR.
KAPPA.

WE'D LIKE
TO HAVE A
WORD WITH
YOU



YOU'RE FROM
HAMATO'S
LINEAGE,
AREN'T YOU?

WE'D LIKE
YOU TO
COME WITH
US.

OF COURSE... IF ANYONE
SHOULD KNOW ABOUT
"HAMATO YOSHI", IT WOULD
BE THE PEOPLE WHO
SLAYED HIM: THE FOOT
CLAN, MY SENSEI'S MORTAL
ENEMIES. THAT MAKES
THEM MY ENEMIES
AS WELL. NO MATTER
HOW MUCH INFORMATION
THEY HAD, I HAD TO
AVOID THEM. THE
ODDS WERE AGAINST ME.

THEY HAVE PROBABLY
BEEN STALKING
ME SINCE THE MOMENT
I SET FOOT IN JAPAN,
WAITING FOR ME TO BE
WORN OUT FROM TRAVELING
TO FINISH ME OFF.
THEY KNEW I WAS ALONE.
THEY KNEW I HAD ABSOLUTELY
NO RESOURCES OR
ALLIES TO BACK ME UP.
THEY WATCHED ME FROM
THE SHADOWS ALL THIS
TIME...

THIS MEANS...
THEY KNOW WHY I
AM HERE.



WE COME IN
PEACE OUR
LEADER WOULD
LIKE TO TALK
TO YOU

WE CAN
HELP YOU
WITH
YOUR PROBLEMS

THEY KNOW THAT
I AM INVESTIGATING
A MAN THEY
KILLED SEVERAL
YEARS AGO!
NATURALLY, THEY
DO NOT WANT
ME PRYING INTO
THEIR BUSINESS!

"HAMATO YOSHI"
WAS THEIR
ENEMY.
SO WAS MY
SENSEI...
AND SO AM I.

THIS CAN ONLY
MEAN ONE
THING:

THEY MUST
HAVE BEEN
CONSTANTLY
ONE STEP AHEAD
OF ME AND
ERASED
ALL TRACES
OF "HAMATO
YOSHI" TO
ENSURE THAT
I FAIL MY
MISSION!!

I'LL REDEEM
MYSELF...

PLEASE.

ALL THOSE
INSTRUMENTAL IN
DISHONORING
THE NAME OF
HAMATO...

..WILL FALL
BY MY HAND!

COME
WITH US.

DIE!!!

WHAT
THE...?

**YOU'RE ALL
DEAD!!**

KOJIRO! HANG
IN THERE!
I'LL...
AARGHH!

**YOU'RE
ALL
DEAD!!**



IT'S JUST
HIS HOOD.

HE'S TRYING TO PUT
US ON THE WRONG
TRACK. HE PROBABLY
WENT BACK IN WOODS.
LET'S GO.



HUFF...

HUFF...



WHY...

WHY CAN'T
I RESIST...?

THE CURSE IS
TOO STRONG.

I CAN'T HELP BUT
BE OVERWHELMED
WITH RAGE EACH
TIME I FEEL THAT MY
HONOR AS A NINJA
IS THREATENED.

AT THOSE MOMENTS,
I CAN'T THINK RATIONALLY
NO MATTER HOW HARD
I TRY...

...AND I CAN'T STOP MYSELF
FROM SLAYING PEOPLE...

NOW, THAT I CLAIMED
TWO LIVES FROM THE
FOOT CLAN, THEY
PROBABLY WANT ME
DEAD MORE THAN
EVER... AS IF THEIR
VENDETTA FOR
SHREDDER'S DEATH
WASN'T ENOUGH
OF A REASON
TO HOLD A BRIDGE
AGAINST ME...

I'D BETTER REMAIN HIDDEN FOR A WHILE.
AT LEAST UNTIL THEY'RE GONE.
I FEEL SO SAD AND HUNGRY THOUGH...

ONE DAY LATER...

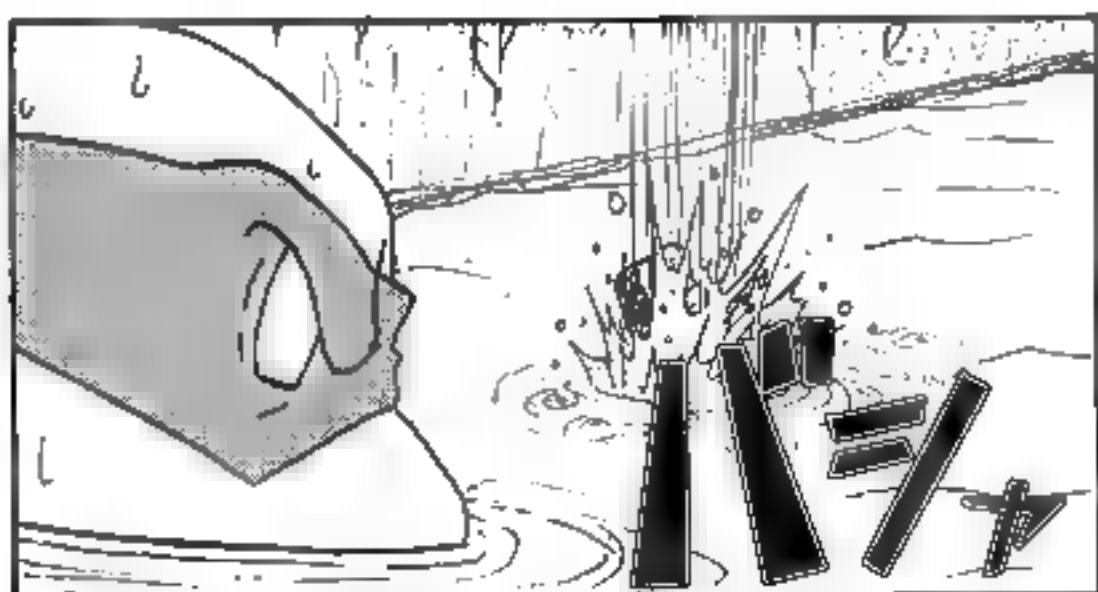
I CAN
STILL
FEEL
THEIR
PRESENCE.

TWO DAYS LATER...

THREE DAYS LATER...

THEY JUST
DON'T GIVE
UP...

FOUR DAYS LATER...



SUSHI...

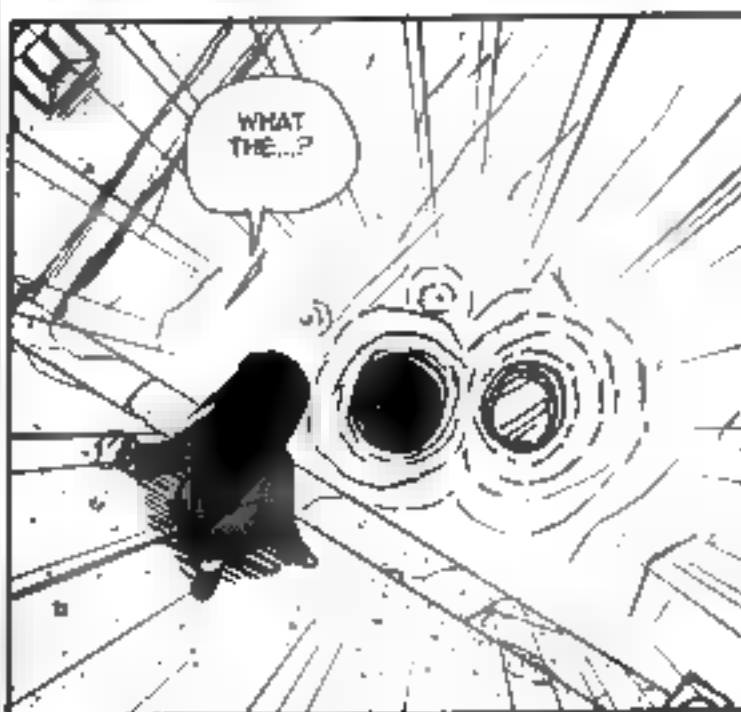
I HAVEN'T
EATEN
IN DAYS...

EVEN IF IT'S
A TRAP...
IF I ACT
SWIFTLY,
MAYBE...



AS IF I
WAS GOING
TO ACCEPT
HIS BRIBE...

WHAT WAS
HE THINKING,
TRYING TO
GET ON MY
GOOD SIDE
BY BUYING
ME SUSHI...?



WHAT
THE...?

IS SOMEONE
HIDING
DOWN THERE?

HELLO?

"MUNCH"
"MUNCH"
"MUNCH"



SO IT DOESN'T
SEEM TO BE
A TRAP
AFTER ALL.

NOW WHY WOULD
ANYONE THROW
AWAY A BOX FULL
OF SUSHI IN A
RIVER?



MS. KARAI, A
GIRL UNWITTINGLY
FED HIM.

HOW ODD.
WELL, THERE GOES
OUR CHANCE TO
APPROACH HIM
IN A WEAKENED
STATE.

MAYBE WE
SHOULD HAVE
ACTED SOONER.



STAY WITH THE PLAN.
LET HIM STARVE
FOR A FEW MORE
DAYS. I DOUBT
THIS GIRL WILL
COME BACK AND
WASTE MORE FOOD
ON SOME CREATURE
SHE DOESN'T
KNOW ANYTHING
ABOUT.

UNTIL THEN,
AVOID CONTACT
WITH HIM AT ALL
COSTS. HE'S
DANGEROUS.

THE NEXT
NIGHT...



ANYONE
DOWN
THERE?



...GUESS
I'LL JUST
GET RID OF
THIS AND
LEAVE.



PFFFTT!

FILLED
WITH
WASABI



IT'S NO USE
FOOLING ME.
ANYONE KNOWS
SUSHI ROLLS
DON'T GROW
ARMS AND POP
OPEN THEIR
BOX TO
ESCAPE.



WHOEVER YOU
ARE, I CAN TELL
YOU'RE HIDING
FROM SOMETHING.
IN THAT SENSE,
WE'RE BOTH IN
THE SAME
SITUATION, YOU
KNOW?

EXCEPT YOU
PROBABLY KNOW
WHAT YOU'RE
HIDING FROM.
I DON'T.

I'M NOT
GOING TO
ASK YOU
TO COME OUT
OF HIDING.



BUT PLEASE,
AT LEAST
HEAR ME OUT.
I FEEL LIKE
YOU'RE THE
ONLY ONE WHO
CAN RELATE TO
MY PROBLEMS.

MY FATHER
AND I ARE
CONSTANTLY
ON THE RUN.

WE'RE
ALWAYS
EITHER
HIDING IN
AN INN OR
TRAVELING
ON A TRAIN.

HE TOLD ME
LOAN SHARKS
ARE TO BLAME
FOR OUR
PREDICAMENT.

I'M SURE
THIS IS A
LIE.

I ONCE HAD
A GLANCE AT
MY FATHER'S
BANK ACCOUNT.
HIS BALANCE
IS THAT OF A
PERSON WHO
CAN EASILY
PAY OFF ANY
DEBT.
THEN... WHY
WON'T HE LET
ME LIVE A
NORMAL LIFE?

IT'S AS IF
HE'S TRYING TO
TURN ME INTO
SOME IGNORANT
AND DOCILE GIRL
WHOM HE CAN
MARRY OFF TO A
RICH MAN TO
MAKE EVEN MORE
MONEY...

IF IT'S TRUE THAT
HE'S BEEN LYING
TO YOU, THEN
IT'S PROBABLY
HARDER ON HIM
THAN IT IS FOR
YOU.

WHAT IF THE TRUTH HE
HID FROM YOU IS SO
HARSH THAT A LIFE
■ BLISSFUL IGNORANCE
TRULY IS THE ONLY
WAY FOR YOU TO BE
HAPPY?

DO YOU THINK IT'S
EASY FOR SUCH
A CARING FATHER
TO DO WHAT'S BEST
FOR HIS DAUGHTER,
KNOWING VERY WELL
THAT SHE MIGHT THINK
LESS OF HIM AS
A RESULT?

WHAT... THE
NERVE OF YOU!
ARE YOU
IMPLYING THAT
I'M AN
UNGRATEFUL
PERSON
EVEN AFTER
I TOLD YOU
HOW MY
FATHER MADE
ME LIVE SUCH
A HELLISH
LIFE?

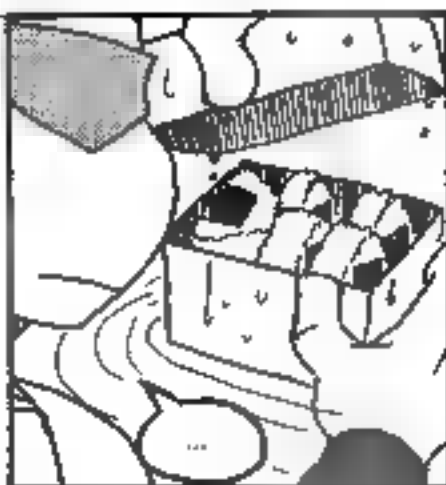
I'M JUST
SUGGESTING
YOU TO GIVE
HIM THE
BENEFIT OF
THE DOUBT.
HE'S YOUR
FATHER.

OH, I'VE
HEARD
ENOUGH FOR
TONIGHT.

BESIDES, I ASKED YOU
TO LISTEN, NOT LECTURE
ME ABOUT FAMILY
VALUES.
GO BACK UNDER THE
ROCK WHERE YOU
CAME FROM, WHOEVER
YOU ARE.

DON'T EVEN
THINK I'LL COME
BACK TO GIVE
YOU ANY MORE
FOOD SCRAPS,
YOU HOBO.

TWO DAYS
LATER...



I APOLOGIZE
FOR YESTERDAY.

I ADMIT I
WAS WRONG
TO LASH OUT
AT YOU LIKE
I DID. BUT
MY OPINION
ABOUT MY
FATHER
STANDS.

IT'S OKAY.
I WASN'T VERY
CONSIDERATE
EITHER...



ANYWAYS, I
TOLD YOU THE
STORY OF MY
PATHETIC LIFE.

WHAT'S
YOURS?



I LIVED IN
THE SHADOWS
ALL MY LIFE
JUST LIKE YOU
DID.

BUT I WAS
HAPPY.



MY BROTHERS AND I WERE
BROUGHT UP HIDDEN
FROM SOCIETY BY OUR
SENSEI, WHO WAS ALSO
OUR FATHER.

THOUGH HE TRAINED US
ALL OUR LIVES TO EXACT
REVENGE ON HIS MASTER'S
ENEMIES, HE DEEPLY CARED
FOR EVERY EACH OF US.

THAT HAPPINESS WAS
SHORT-LIVED: OUR FATHER
WAS ONE DAY STRUCK WITH
AN INCURABLE DISEASE.
I HAD TO PUT AN END
TO HIS SUFFERING.



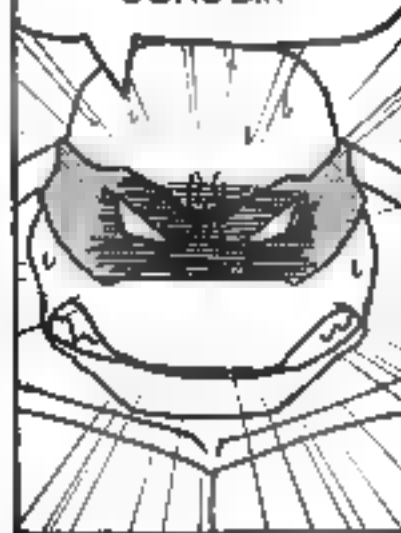
THAT'S KILLING TWO BIRDS
■ ONE STONE, CORRECT?

YOU EASED
YOUR
FATHER'S
PAIN.

AT THE SAME TIME,
YOU CAN NOW
TO BREAK FREE
FROM THE LIFE
OF REVENGE HE
SAVE YOU.

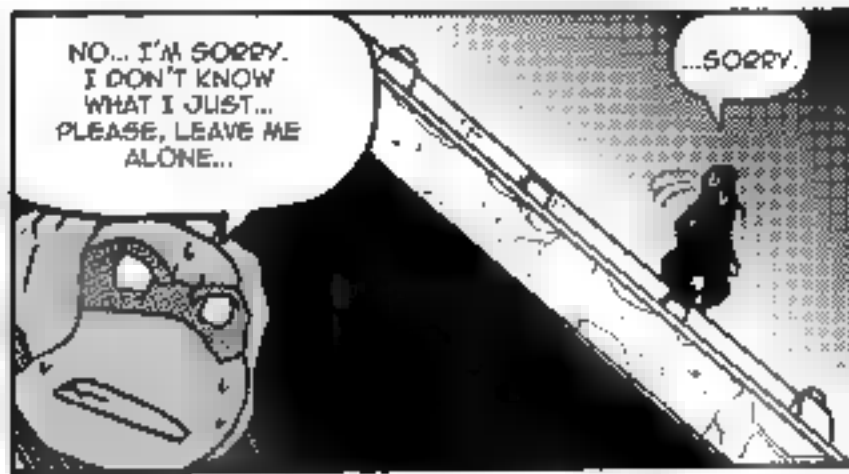


DON'T INSULT
MY HONOR OR
THAT OF MY
SENSEI!!



NO... I'M SORRY.
I DON'T KNOW
WHAT I JUST...
PLEASE, LEAVE ME
ALONE...

...SORRY.



ARE YOU FEELING
ANY BETTER TODAY?

WHAT KIND OF
DISEASE IS IT?

SO YOU'RE HIDING
FROM YOUR THERAPISTS?

HOW LONG DO YOU
PLAN ON STAYING
HIDDEN?

I NEVER SAW
ANYBODY PASS THROUGH
HERE... BUT WHATEVER YOU
SAY.

CAN YOU KEEP
A SECRET?

I'M ALRIGHT. SORRY ABOUT
YESTERDAY. IT WAS MY
DISEASE ACTING UP.

SOME BIPOLAR
DISORDER.


YES, LET'S SAY
THAT.

UNTIL THEY'RE
GONE. I CAN STILL
FEEL THEIR PRESENCE.

...


WHAT IS IT?





MY FATHER MADE
ME SWEAR NEVER
TO TELL ANYONE,
BUT... I WANT TO
TELL YOU HALF OF
IT.

MY NAME IS...
SAYAKO.



FINE, I'LL DO
THE SAME SO
WE'LL BE EVEN.

MY NAME IS
LEONARDO.

THERE
YOU
ARE.

AH?

I FINISHED
WORK AT THE
TEMPLE EARLY
TODAY... TO MY
SURPRISE,
YOU WEREN'T
HOME!

NOW, WHO
WERE YOU
TALKING TO?

TO MY NEW
IMAGINARY
FRIEND ABOUT
MY VERY
EXCITING
LIFE. WANT
TO SHARE
HIM WITH ME?

DON'T USE THAT
TONE WITH ME!

WHAT WERE YOU
THINKING, LOITERING
IN THE FOREST AT
NIGHT LIKE THIS?

TOUGH
LOVE...

YOU'RE SUPPOSED
TO GO STRAIGHT
BACK HOME AFTER
YOUR LESSONS AT
YOUR TUTOR'S HOUSE!
I NEVER WANT TO
SEE YOU WANDER
AROUND AIMLESSLY
LIKE SOME DRUGGED
RUSTIC WHORE AGAIN!
DO I MAKE MYSELF
CLEAR?

UNDERSTOOD.

IT HAS
BEEN THREE
DAYS SINCE
THEN.

SAYAKO
NEVER CAME
BACK. I WAS
STARVING.

I THINK I
FINALLY GET IT.
THIS IS NOT A
GAME OF HIDE-
AND-SEEK I AM
PLAYING AGAINST
THE FOOT CLAN.
IT IS A GAME OF
CHESS.


THEY TRAPPED
ME HERE AND
TRIED TO STARVE
ME TO CALL
"CHECKMATE"
BEFORE I EVEN
DO MY LAST
MOVE...
THOSE SCUMS OF
THE EARTH...
THOSE DIRTY
PLAYERS...

FOOT
CLAN!!

I WON'T
LET YOU
WIN!!!

SEIJI HERE!
HE STARTED
MOVING!

EVERYONE,
PREPARE TO
INTERCEPT HIM
AND...



EVERYONE, STAY
BACK AND TEND TO
THE WOUNDED.
I CAN HANDLE
THIS BY MYSELF.

I'M KNOWN
AS
KARAI.

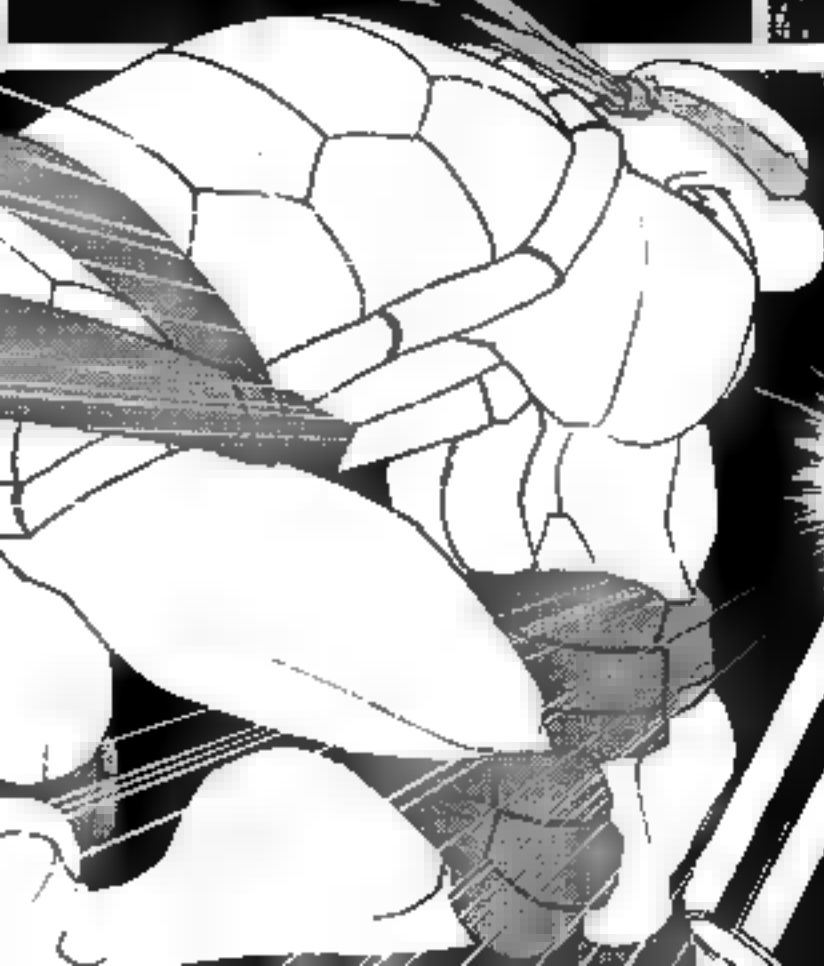
I'M THE HEAD
OF OPERATIONS
OF THE FOOT
CLAN IN JAPAN.

AT
LAST

I'LL
REDEEM
MYSELF.


WE'RE NOT
YOUR
ENEMIES!

LOWER YOUR
WEAPONS AND
WE'LL DO THE
SAME!!







I VISITED
YOUR
HOMELAND
LAST YEAR!




I CAME TO PURGE
IT FROM THE CHAOS
THAT RESULTED FROM
THE SHREDDER'S
DEATH BY YOUR
BLADES!



YES... THE
CITY WAS
"AT WAR"!




DESPITE OUR NUMBERS,
WE WERE NO MATCH FOR
THE SHREDDER'S SKILLED
FOLLOWERS.



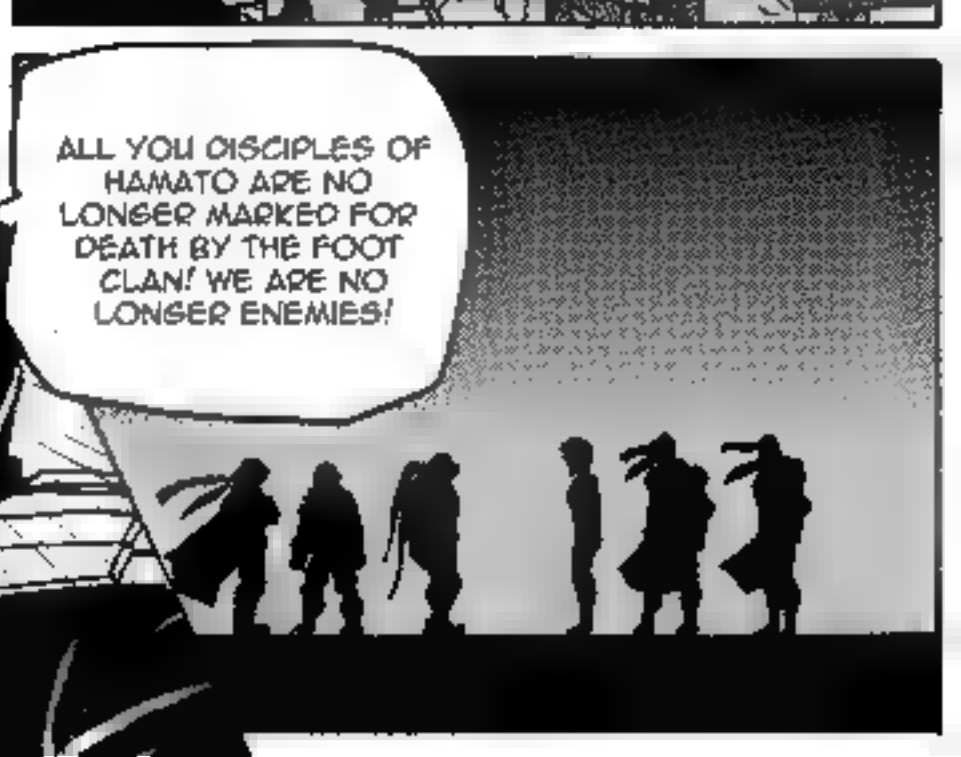
WE WOULD
HAVE
LOST...



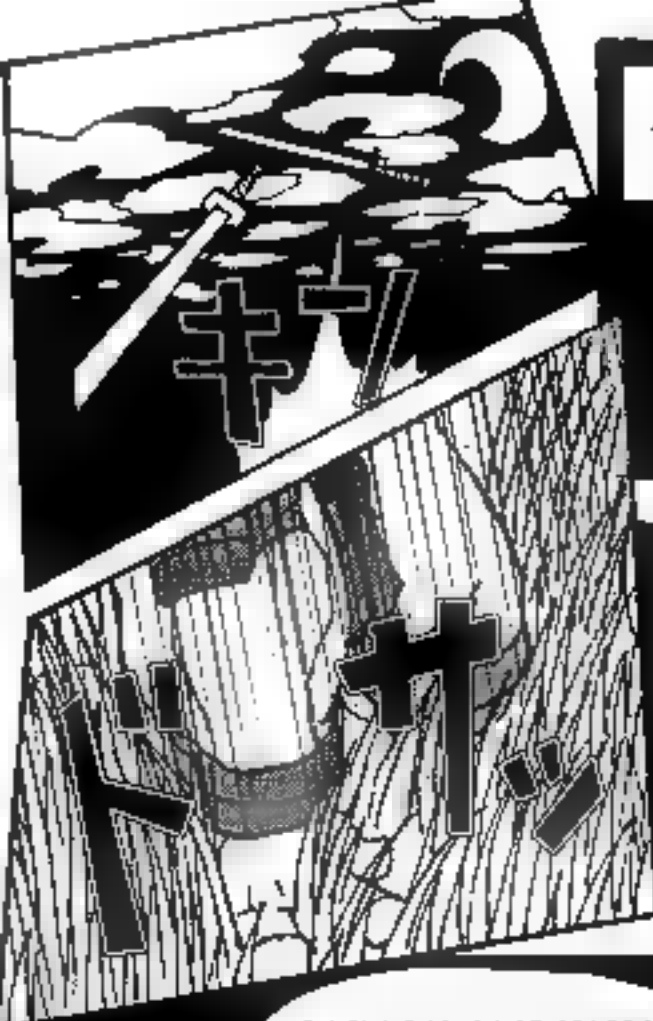
...IF IT WEREN'T FOR
YOUR FELLOW
HAMATO NINJAS
JOINING OUR CAUSE
TO RESTORE PEACE
IN NEW YORK!
WE MADE A DEAL:
THEIR HELP IN
EXCHANGE OF A
PEACE TREATY!



THAT'S
RIGHT!



ALL YOU DISCIPLES OF
HAMATO ARE NO
LONGER MARKED FOR
DEATH BY THE FOOT
CLAN! WE ARE NO
LONGER ENEMIES!



"YER GOIN' BACK
TO JAPAN, AIN' CHA.?"

"YES.
WHY
DO YOU
ASK?"



"EXTEND OUR TREATY TO
YER OWN COUNTRY. THE
MOMENT A FOOT NINJA
LAYS A FINGER ON ANY
OF MY BROS, ANYWHERE..."

"...YER ALL GONNA
BE HEARIN' FROM
MY SALS."



BY SLAYING MY COMRADES
TONIGHT, YOU HAVE VIOLATED
THE PEACE TREATY THAT YOUR
ALLIES IN NEW YORK HAVE
WORKED SO HARD FOR.

HOWEVER, OUT OF
RESPECT FOR THEM, I'LL
GIVE YOU A CHANCE TO
JUSTIFY YOUR ACTIONS.
WHY DID YOU CHOOSE
TO REMAIN HOSTILE
DESPITE US TELLING YOU
THAT WE CAME IN PEACE?



SPEAK.

THOSE
TRAITORS.

THOSE
FAKES.

WHAT THE
HELL WERE
THEY THINKING?

I KNEW
THEY
WERE
WORTHLESS...

...BUT THIS
IS A RECORD
LOW, EVEN
FOR THEM!

HELPING
THE
ENEMY??

IT WAS BAD
ENOUGH THAT
THEY'RE SORRY
EXCUSES
FOR NINJAS...

NOW
THIS?

A PACT?

HOW DARE THEY
TAKE SUCH A
DECISION IN THE
NAME OF OUR
CLAN?

AND I
WOULDN'T HAVE
ALLOWED THAT!

SOME
PEACE
TREATY?
HA!

I'M THE ONLY
WORTHY ONE!!
I SHOULD'VE
CALLED THE
SHOTS!

NINJAS
NEVER BOW
BEFORE
THEIR
ENEMY!!

AH...NOW
OUR HONOR
IS FOREVER
LOST...

MY
LIFE...

NO!!!

HAH...
HAH...

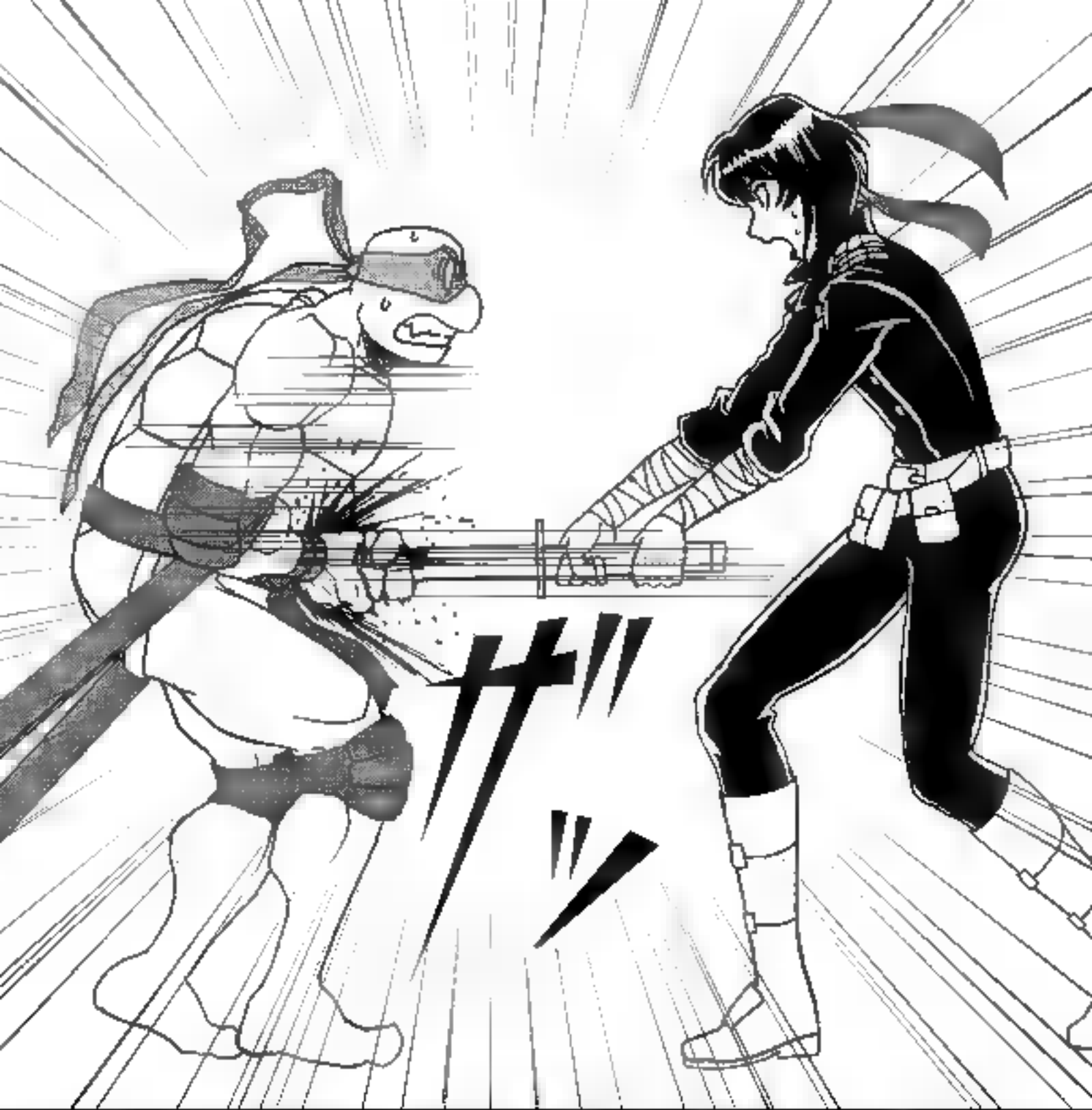
I'LL

MY
HONOR...

...MOMENTARILY
SPARED THANKS
TO THOSE
COWARDS?

I WON'T
HAVE IT!
NOT BY
THEM!!

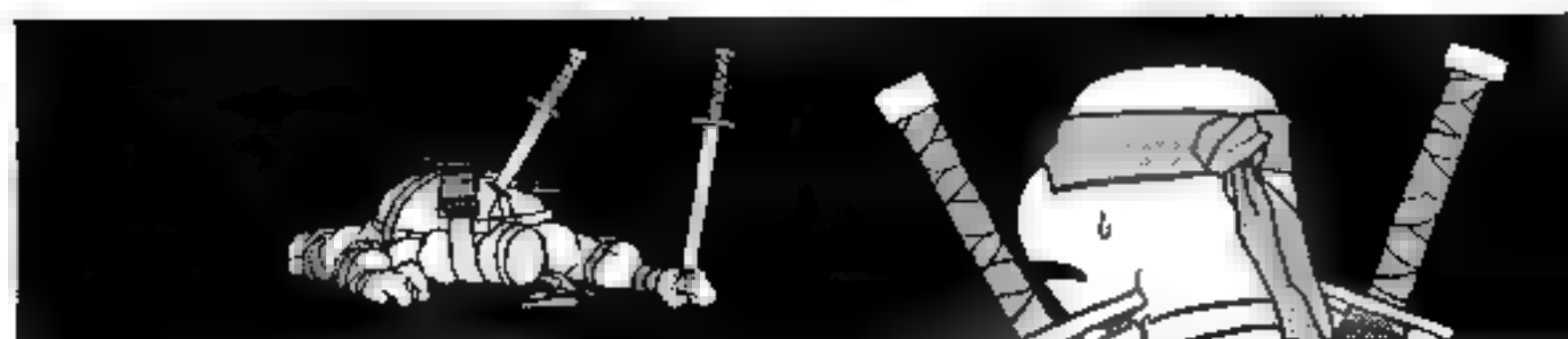
SHOW
THEM!!



THEY TAINTED EVERYTHING IN MY LIFE,
BUT THEY HAVE NO INFLUENCE ON THE WAY I
CHOOSE TO LEAVE THIS WORLD.

AT THE VERY LEAST... MY
DEATH WILL BE AN HONORABLE ONE,
THAT'S ALL I HAVE LEFT.

SENSEI... I'LL BE BY YOUR SIDE
VERY SOON.



YOU KNOW
WHAT AWAITS
US IF WE WAKE
UP! SHAME
AND DISHONOR!

FOR ONCE,
DO OURSELVES
A FAVOR!!
ACCEPT THIS
HONORABLE
DEATH!!

WHERE ARE YOU
GOING...?
COME BACK
HERE...

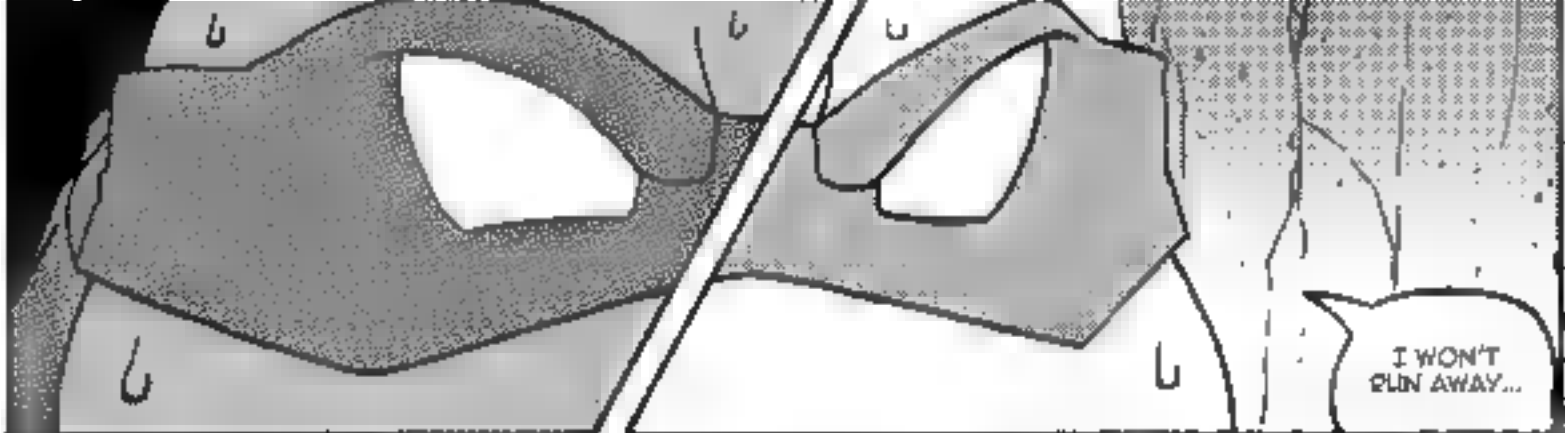
YOU CAN'T
BE SERIOUS...



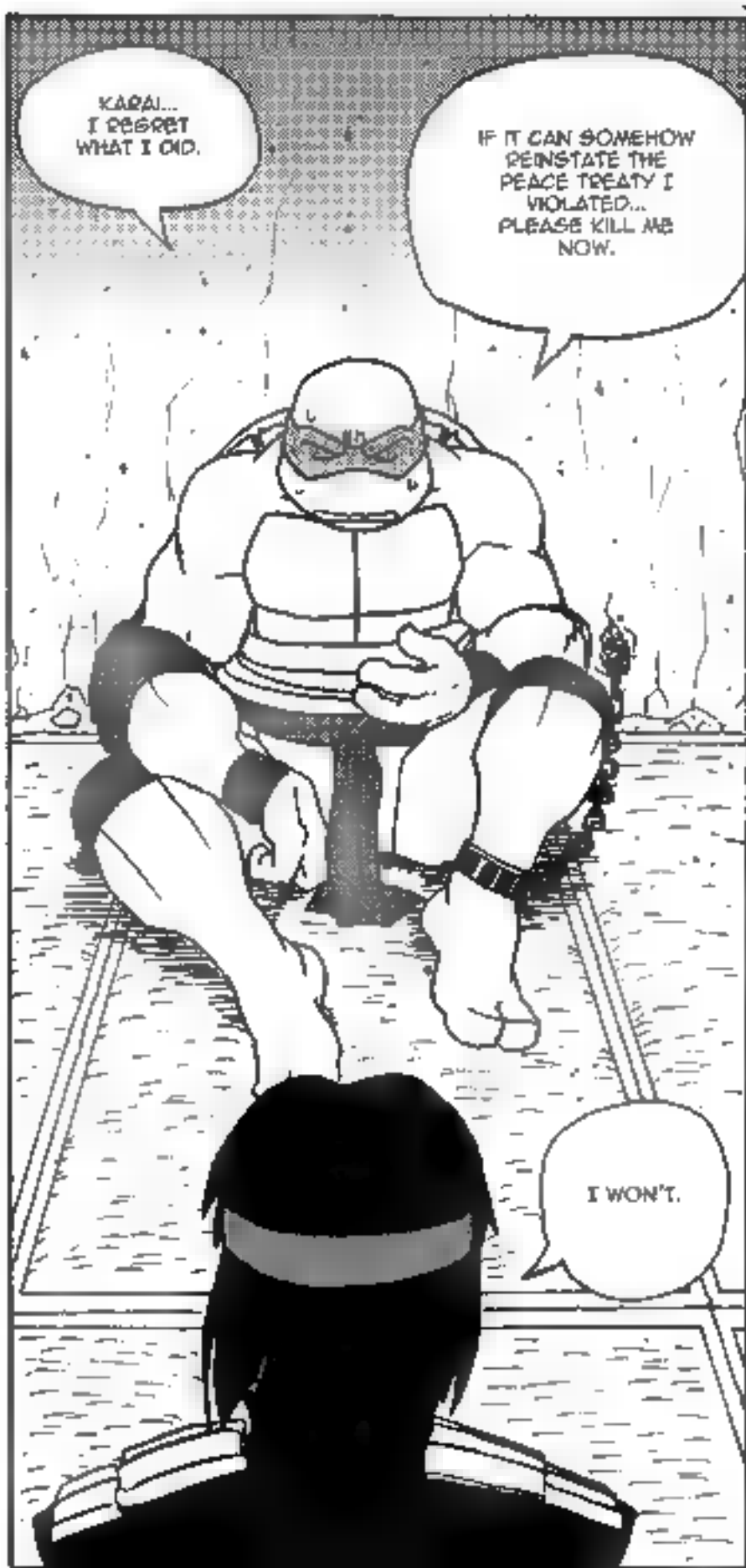
I DID THIS FOR
US!!! I DID THE
RIGHT THING!!

STAY HERE
WITH ME!!!

DIE WITH
ME!!!



I WON'T
RUN AWAY...



KARAI...
I REGRET
WHAT I DID.

IF IT CAN SOMEHOW
REINSTATE THE
PEACE TREATY I
VIOLATED...
PLEASE KILL ME
NOW.

I WON'T.



I CAN ASSURE
YOU THAT DOING
SO WILL HAVE
ABSOLUTELY
NO EFFECT ON
THE TREATY.

NOW, I'M STILL
EXPECTING AN
EXPLANATION FOR
YOUR ACTIONS.
AND NOT SOME
HATEFUL ORDEL.



I'M CURSED.

IT ALL
STARTED
WITH AN
ANCIENT
KATANA...



SO YOU'RE
THE ONE...

...WHO
RELEASED
IT?



YES! YES!
THAT CURSE!
THE ONE YOU
KNOW ABOUT!

AM I
RIGHT?



A WHOLE YEAR OF
INVESTIGATION HERE
IN JAPAN... AND
NOTHING CAME OUT
OF IT!!

IT WAS YOUR
DOING, RIGHT?

DID YOU ERASE
ALL TRACES OF
THE CURSE'S
EXISTENCE AND ITS
LINK TO HAMATO
YOSHI?



YOU'RE MISTAKEN...
YOUR INVESTIGATION
YIELOED NOTHING
BECAUSE THE
EXISTENCE OF THE
CURSE IS A SECRET
KEPT WITHIN
THE FOOT CLAN...



...AND SINCE I KNOW
ABOUT THE CURSE, I
CAN ALSO ASSUME
THAT YOU AREN'T
COMPLETELY AT FAULT
FOR THE DEATH OF MY
COMRADES.
YOUR SPIRIT WAS
CORRUPTED BY THE
CURSE, WASN'T IT?

...AH... YOU...
YOU KNOW
ABOUT THAT?
J...JUST WHAT
DO YOU KNOW
ABOUT THE
CURSE?



IT ALL
STARTED
WITH...

...YAMATA-NO-
OROCHI.

IN THE SHINTO
LEGENDS
THAT SPOKE
OF IT...

...THIS DEMON WAS DESCRIBED AS AN
EIGHT-HEADED SNAKE WITH EIGHT
TAILS AND A CONSTANTLY BLOODY
AND INFLAMED BODY THAT EXTENDED
OVER EIGHT VALLEYS AND EIGHT HILLS.

ITS REIGN OF TERROR
WAS ENDED BY
SUSANO-O, THE
GOD OF THE SEA
AND STORMS,
BANISHED FROM
THE HEAVENS.

AFTER PUTTING EACH
OF THE DEMON'S HEADS
TO SLEEP WITH SAKE,
THE GOD CUT THEM ALL
OFF.

WHILE CHOPPING OFF
THE DEMON'S FOURTH TAIL,
SUSANO-O'S WEAPON,
THE TOTSUKA SWORD,
BUT SLIGHTLY NOTCHED
BY SOMETHING WITHIN
THE DEMON'S FLESH.

UPON INVESTIGATING
THE CAUSE OF THIS,
THE GOD FOUND THE
KUSANASI SWORD,
WHICH HE OFFERED
TO HIS SISTER,
AMATERASU AS A
RECONCILIATION
GIFT.

THE KUSANASI
SWORD WENT TO
BECOME ONE OF THE
THREE IMPERIAL
REGALIA OF JAPAN.

ON THE OTHER HAND,
THE TOTSUKA SWORD
BECAME A FORGOTTEN
RELIC, DESTINED TO
REMAIN NOTHING BUT
A MYTH, DESPITE
BEING INSTRUMENTAL
IN THE DEMISE OF
YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.

THE RESTLESS SOUL
OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI
FELT THE ANGER OF THE
TOTSUKA SWORD AND
USED THIS WEAKNESS
TO CORRUPT IT AND
FUSE WITH IT.

VOWING TO TAKE
REVENGE UPON THE
WORLD, YAMATO-NO-OROCHI
USED THE TOTSUKA SWORD
AS A VESSEL TO
AWAKEN THE DARKNESS
THAT LIES WITHIN THE
HEARTS OF PEOPLE.

THE CURSED
KATANA...



YET IT EXISTS AS MUCH AS
THE IMPERIAL REGALIA OF
JAPAN DO.



IN FACT, IT WAS THE
MOST PRIZED POSSESSION
OF THE FOOT CLAN.

ITS EXISTENCE AND ITS POWER IS ONLY KNOWN
BY LEADERS OF NINJA CLANS... WITH SUCH A
FEARSOME ARTIFACT IN OUR ARSENAL, NO ONE
DARED TO OPPOSE US.

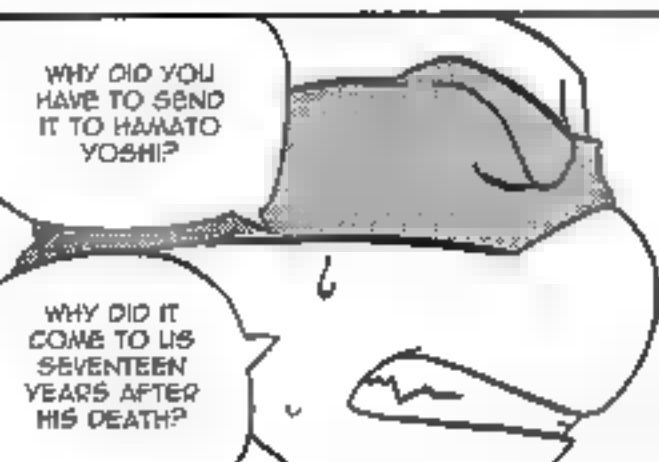


FOR GENERATIONS, WE WERE THE MOST
POWERFUL CLAN OF NINJA ASSASSINS IN
ALL OF JAPAN.

IF THAT RELIC
WAS THAT
IMPORTANT TO
YOUR CLAN,
WHY DIDN'T
YOU KEEP
IT?



WHY DID YOU
HAVE TO SEND
IT TO HAMATO
YOSHI?



WHY DID IT
COME TO US
SEVENTEEN
YEARS AFTER
HIS DEATH?

LIKE
YOU
SAID...




IT WAS IN OUR
BEST INTEREST
TO KEEP IT...
■ WASN'T
OUR CLAN'S
WILL TO
PART WITH IT.

THE ONE
WHO STOLE
THE TOTSUKA
SWORD AND
SENT IT ACTED
ON HIS OWN.
YOU KNOW
HIM WELL.



OROKU
SAKI.
THE
"SHREDDER".

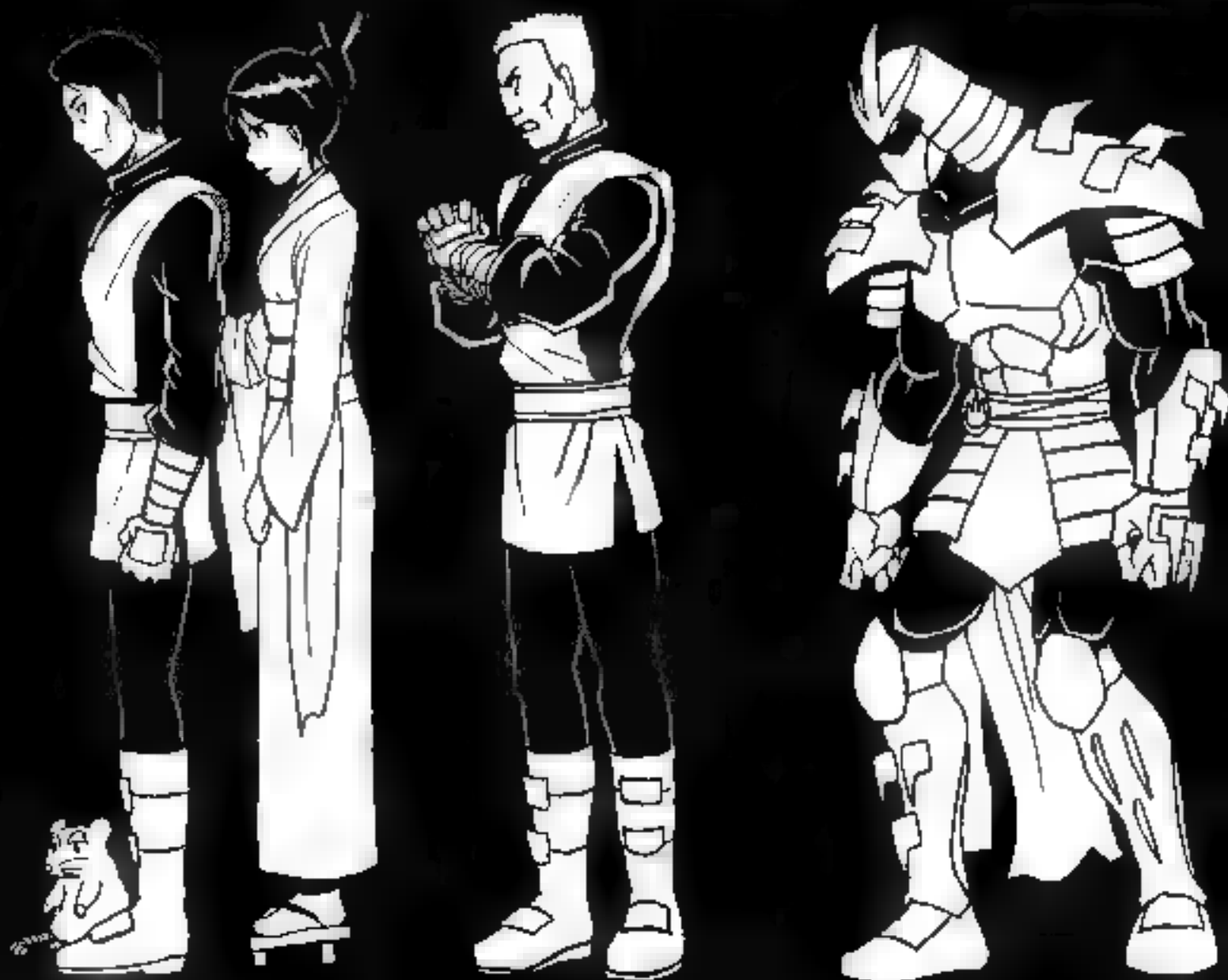


THE CIRCLE OF
HATE IS THE
CAUSE OF
EVERYTHING...

BACK WHEN HE WAS IN THE
FOOT CLAN, HAMATO YOSHI
WON THE HEART OF A
WOMAN CALLED TANG SHEN.

YOSHI'S RIVAL, OROKU NASI,
WAS ALSO INFATUATED WITH
HER. WHEN SHE TURNED
HIM DOWN, HE ALMOST BEAT
HER TO DEATH. YOSHI KILLED
HIM IN RETALIATION AND
FLED TO NEW YORK WITH
HIS BELOVED.

NASI'S YOUNGER BROTHER,
OROBU SAKI, ROSE TO POWER
WITHIN THE FOOT CLAN, GOT
ASSIGNED AS HEAD OF THE
NEW YORK DIVISION OF THE
CLAN AND EXACTED REVENGE
ON BOTH HAMATO YOSHI
AND TANG SHEN.



THEN, HAMATO YOSHI'S
PET RAT, SPLINTER,
AVENGED HIS MASTER
BY SENDING YOU OFF
TO KILL OROBU SAKI.

THIS CIRCLE OF HATE
ENDED AFTER I MADE
A TRUCE WITH YOUR
FELLOW KAPPAS IN
NEW YORK...

LITTLE DID WE
KNOW THAT THE
BIGGEST PROBLEM
STEMMING FROM
THESE CONFLICTS
HAD YET TO BE
TAKEN CARE OF.

THAT BIGGEST
PROBLEM BEING...

THAT'S HOW LONG
IT TOOK US TO
NOTICE IT
WAS MISSING...

THE TOTSUKA SWORD CAN
CORRUPT ANYONE BY ITS
MERE AURA AND
PERMANENTLY CURSE
THOSE WHO WIELD IT.
THEREFORE, IT WAS
WRAPPED IN A CLOTH
AND KEPT AWAY IN A
PLACE ONLY LEADERS
OF THE CLAN KNEW ABOUT.

AS OROKU SAKI ROSE
IN RANK AND BECAME A
LEADER HIMSELF, HE
LEARNED ABOUT
THE SWORD'S CURSE
AND DECIDED TO USE IT
AGAINST HAMATO YOSHI.

...THE MISSING
TOTSUKA SWORD?
WHY DID YOU
WAIT SO LONG
BEFORE DOING
ANYTHING ABOUT
IT?

...BECAUSE NO ONE
HAS EVER LAID
THEIR EYES ON IT.

DUE TO THE RISK OF
GETTING CORRUPTED
OR CURSED, NO ONE
EVER DARED TO
TAKE THE SWORD
OUT OF ITS BUNDLE.

KNOWING THIS, OROKU
SAKI SWAPPED THE
SWORD WITH A BUNDLE
CONTAINING A
NORMAL SWORD.
NO ONE FOUND OUT
ABOUT IT... UNTIL NOW.

HE DID
THAT?

WASN'T HE
AFRAID OF
THE CURSE?

I DON'T THINK SO.
HIS HEART WAS
PROBABLY ALREADY
SO FULL OF HATRED
THAT EVEN THE CURSE
WOULDN'T BE
ABLE TO CORRUPT
HIM ANY MORE
THAN HE ALREADY
IS HIMSELF.

FOR
NORMAL
PEOPLE
THOUGH...
IT'S A
WHOLE
DIFFERENT
STORY.

AS THE SWORD
MADE ITS WAY
TO NEW YORK,
IT CORRUPTED
PEOPLE'S
HEARTS.

PEOPLE WERE
KILLING EACH
OTHER, LETTING
THEIR INNERMOST
DARKNESS TAKE
OVER...

WHEN THE SWORD REACHED
NEW YORK, THE MAILMAN
THAT WAS SUPPOSED TO
DELIVER IT ALSO GOT
CORRUPTED BY ITS AURA
AND BECAME A MAIL
HOARDER.

THE SWORD
REMAINED IN
HIS COLLECTION
OF UNDELIVERED
MAIL AND
NEVER REACHED
HAMATO YOSHI.

A YEAR LATER,
OROKU SAKI AGREED
TO BE HEAD OF THE
NEW YORK DIVISION
OF THE FOOT CLAN.
HE MOST LIKELY
REALIZED THAT
HIS PLAN FAILED
SINCE THERE WAS
NO WORD ABOUT
HAMATO YOSHI
DYING OF A CURSE
OF SOME KIND.
THEREFORE,
HE TOOK MATTERS
INTO HIS OWN
HANDS.

YEARS AFTER THE DEATHS
OF BOTH HAMATO YOSHI
AND OROKU SAKI, THE
HOARDING MAILMAN GOT
ARRESTED AND HIS MAIL
WAS SENT TO ITS
RECIPIENTS.

SINCE HAMATO YOSHI
WAS DEAD, THE SWORD
SHOULD'VE BEEN
UNCLAIMED.

YET, SOMEONE DID
CLAIM IT, AND THAT'S THE
LAST INFORMATION WE
HAVE ABOUT IT.

WAIT... IF YOU
ALL FEARED THE
CURSE...

HOW DID YOU
FIND OUT THAT
THE TOTSUKA
SWORD WAS
GONE?

WE GOT WORD
FROM THE
JAPANESE
EMPEROR'S
ENTOURAGE
THAT THE
KUSANAGI
SWORD SUDDENLY
TURNED TO DUST
AND WAS BLOWN
AWAY BY THE
WIND.

THE OTHER
SWORD FROM
THE LEGEND?

WAS THAT
AN OMEN?

YES. THE KUSANAGI SWORD
WAS A PART OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI'S
BODY. WHEN THE MONSTER DIED,
THE SWORD LOST ITS PURPOSE.

THE FACT THAT IT DESINTEGRATED
MEANS THAT YAMATA-NO-OROCHI IS
NO LONGER BOUND TO THE LIFELESS
TOTSUKA SWORD AND HAS FOUND
AN ORGANIC HOST...
SO THE KUSANAGI SWORD IS
RETURNING TO ITS MASTER TO HELP
IT RECOVER.

SO IT
SURRENDERED ITSELF
TO SUSANO-O.

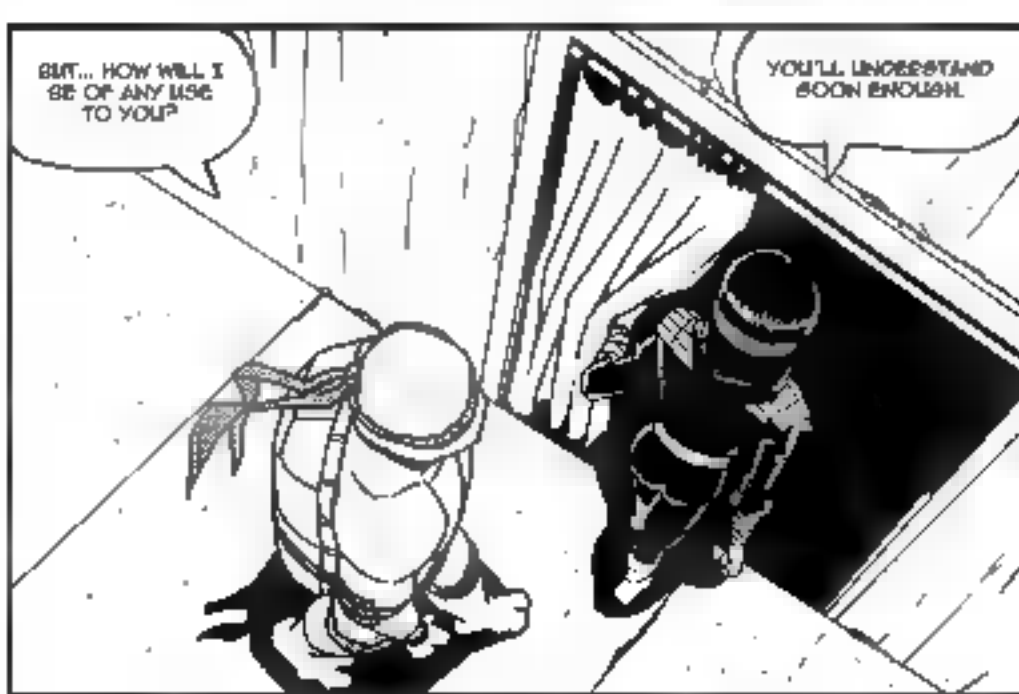
IN OTHER WORDS, THIS IS
A SIGN THAT YAMATA-NO-OROCHI
IS ONE STEP CLOSER TO
ITS REBIRTH.


WE CANNOT
ALLOW THIS
TO HAPPEN.

FOR IF THAT
MONSTER
WERE TO
RISE AGAIN...

...IT'LL MOST
LIKELY PREY
ON HUMANKIND,
JUST LIKE IT
DID BEFORE.

IF WHAT THE LEGENDS
SAY ABOUT HIS SIZE
IS TRUE... I DON'T
THINK WE'LL STAND
A CHANCE...





THOSE DEAD
NINJAS...
ARE THEY...?

YES. CASUALTIES
OF YOUR RAMPAGE,
KAPPA.


I'LL MAKE SURE
THEY GET A BURIAL
FITTING OF THEIR
DILIGENCE.

I MUST TAKE
RESPONSIBILITY
FOR THEIR DEATHS...

...FOR IT
WAS UNDER MY
COMMAND THAT
THEY DIED.

KARAI.
I'M AT A LOSS
OF WORDS...
EVEN IF IT WAS
THE CURSE'S
DOING, I...

WHAT'S DONE
IS DONE, KAPPA.
HOWEVER, THEIR
DEATHS HAVE
NOT BEEN IN VAIN.



THIS IS THE
YATA-NO-KAGAMI.
ANOTHER ONE OF
JAPAN'S IMPERIAL
REGALIA.

I WANT YOU TO CLOSE
YOUR EYES AND TOUCH
IT... THEN DESCRIBE TO ME
WHAT YOU'LL HAVE SEEN.

WHAT'S THIS...
I SEE IMAGES
IN MY MIND.
PLACES.

SLIDING
DOORS,
TATAMIS,
TEMPLES...

I... I ALSO SEE
A WOMAN TRYING
ON A WEDDING
DRESS...

...A CHILD IN
BED CALLING
HIS MOTHER...

...A MIDDLE AGED
MAN IN TRADITIONAL
JAPANESE CLOTHES...
HE SEEMS TO BE
NEAR A TEMPLE.

STOP THERE.
FOCUS ON THAT
MAN. DO YOU
RECOGNIZE THAT
TEMPLE?

...YES. IT'S THE
SAME ONE
THAT COULD
BE SEEN FROM
UNDER THE BRIDGE
WHERE I HID.

KOUSHIKE, CALL A MEETING IN THE
BRIEFING ROOM IMMEDIATELY.
WE WERE RIGHT ALL ALONG: THAT
NEW KENDO INSTRUCTOR NEAR
THE TEMPLE IS A MORINABA.
HE'S TONIGHT'S TARGET.

YES,
KARAI.

THE OLD MIRROR YOU TOUCHED IS
CONNECTED TO THE CURSED SWORD
WHICH USED TO BE THE EMBODIMENT
OF YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.
HOWEVER, ONLY THOSE CURSED
BY THAT MONSTER CAN UNLOCK
ITS TRUE POTENTIAL.

THAT POWER ■ TO TRACK
DOWN THE PEOPLE WHOSE
BLOODLINE KEEPS THE
CURSE ALIVE...
AND WE NEED THEIR LOCATION
TO SUCCEED OUR MISSION.

THAT'S RIGHT.
IN ORDER
TO PULL THE
PLUG ON YAMATA-
NO-OROCHI'S
EXISTENCE
AND ITS CURSE...

...THE
ENTIRE
BLOODLINE
OF MORINABA
HAS TO BE
ERADICATED.

WAIT... WHAT?
TARGET? WHAT'S
THE MEANING
OF THIS?

THIS ■ ABSURD.

I HAVE THE ABILITY
TO SEE RANDOM
PEOPLE...

AND YOU
PLAN ON
KILLING
THEM
ALL?

WE HAVE NO CHOICE.
THIS IS A FAIL-PROOF
WAY TO PREVENT THE
MONSTER'S REBIRTH.

YOU'RE LYING!
WHAT PROOF
DO YOU HAVE
ABOUT THAT?

WHAT'S THE
TRUTH?
WHAT'S IN
IT FOR YOU?

DON'T INSULT
MY HONOR,
KAPPA!

IF WE HAD A CHOICE,
WE WOULDN'T
RESORT TO KILLING
ENTIRE FAMILIES!
BUT THAT'S THE
ONLY SOLUTION
RECORDED IN THE
FOOT CLAN'S
ARCHIVES!

WAIT! WAIT!
WHAT IF
THE FOOT
CLAN'S VERSION
OF THE
LEGENDS
WERE NOTHING
MORE BUT
LIES?

WHAT IF THEY WERE ALL MADE
UP BY THE FOUNDERS OF THE
CLAN TO HAVE THEIR
SUCCESSORS CLEAN UP
UNDESIRABLE RIVAL
CLANS?

...THEN
YOUR CURSE
WOULD BE
A LIE AS WELL...
NO?

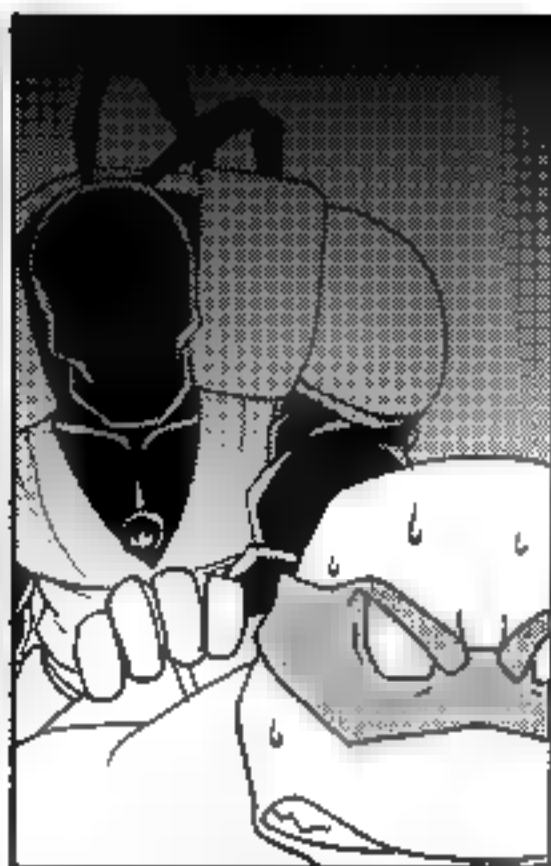
IT WOULD ALSO MEAN
THAT YOU MADE UP
THAT EXCUSE ABOUT
THE CURSE TO KILL
MY COMRADES...

NO...

I...

SADAO. I'M CALLING
AN URGENT MEETING.
PULL YOURSELF
TOGETHER AND COME
WITH ME.

I...
I WOULDN'T
STOOP
DOWN THAT
LOW...





CALM
DOWN!!



I...
I COME
IN PEACE!

I DON'T CARE...
I DON'T CARE
WHAT YOU SAY.

RYOTA ALSO
CAME IN PEACE...

SADAO. AS A MEMBER OF THE
FOOT CLAN, YOU SHOULD
KNOW BETTER THAN TO LET
YOUR EMOTIONS GET THE
BETTER OF YOU.

YES,
KARAI.

THERE WILL BE TIME TO
MOURN LATER, BUT RIGHT
NOW, I NEED YOU TO
BE CALM AND COLLECTED.
UNDERSTOOD?

...YET... YOU
KILLED HIM,
YOU FUCKER!!





I KNOW WHAT YOU
HAVE IN MIND, KAPPA.
GO AHEAD.
WARN THAT MAN
ABOUT OUR IMMINENT
ATTACK WHILE WE
DEVISE A PLAN.



I WON'T
EVEN TRY
TO STOP
YOU.

IF YOU
GET IN THE
LINE OF FIRE, I
WON'T BE ABLE
TO GUARANTEE
YOUR SAFETY.

SO PLEASE, WHEN
THE TIME COMES,
STAY OUT OF
OUR WAY, AND LET
US DO OUR JOB.

BUT KNOW THIS.
WE'RE NINJAS ON
A MISSION. FAILURE
IS NOT AN OPTION.



I KILLED MY SENSEI.
I DISHONORABLY
SLAYED FOOT NINJAS
WHO CAME IN PEACE.
I COMPROMISED THE
TRUCE THAT MY
BROTHERS HAVE
WORKED SO HARD
TO ACHIEVE.

MY BLOODSTAINED HANDS
ARE STILL WET FROM ALL
THE SINS I'VE COMMITTED...

EVERYTHING IS
GOING TOO
FAST FOR ME.

TOO MUCH
INFORMATION.

TOO MANY
DUTIES.

AND NOW...

AN INNOCENT
WILL DIE...

TOO MANY
CONFLICTS.

TOO MUCH
DOUBT.

...AND YET, I KEEP
KILLING... AND KILLING...
AND MY ATONEMENT
GROWS FURTHER AWAY
FROM ME WITH EACH
LIFE I TAKE.

I DON'T CARE ABOUT
ALL OF THAT...
ALL THIS BLOODSHED
MUST CEASE
IMMEDIATELY!

...BY MY
WORDS!

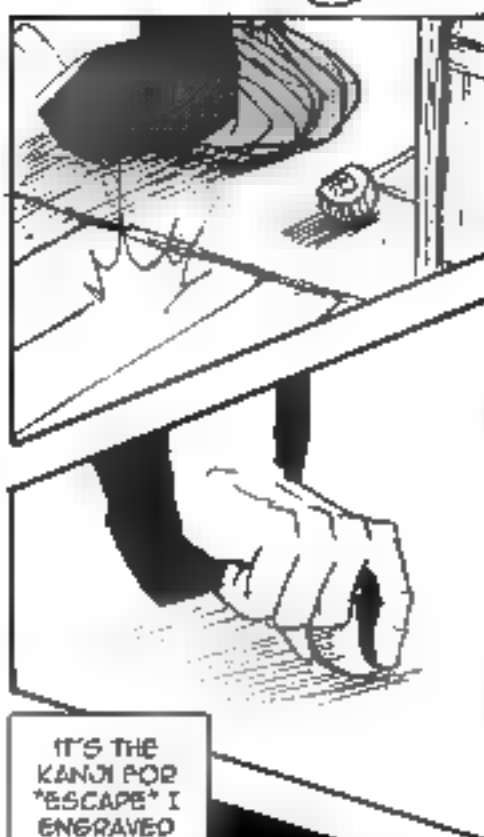
NEAR THE
TEMPLE...

A SMALL
HOUSE...

THIS
IS IT!

...IF HE SEES
A MUTANT LIKE
ME, HE'LL CREATE
A COMMOTION
AND HASTEN HIS
DEATH AT THE
HANDS OF THE
FOOT CLAN!

I MUST
WARN HIM
DISCREETLY...



IT'S THE
KANJI FOR
"ESCAPE" I
ENGRAVED
ON IT!



COME ON...
DON'T YOU
GET IT?



FATHER?
MAY I HAVE
A WORD
WITH YOU?



YOU CAME IN JUST
IN TIME.



SIT DOWN RIGHT
NOW. I'LL DO THE
TALKING AND I WANT
YOU TO LISTEN TO MY
EVERY WORD.

WAIT, I RECOGNIZE
THAT VOICE!
IT'S SAYAKO
SO THE MAN I SAW
■ MY VISION...
THIS MAN HERE IS
HER FATHER!

THEN SAYAKO'S
FULL NAME IS...
SAYAKO MORINAGA?

SHE'S MARKED
FOR DEATH
AS WELL?

I'M TIRED OF RELOCATING AND
CHANGING MY IDENTITY ALL THE TIME
TO HIDE FROM LOAN SHARKS.
I WANT TO SETTLE DOWN...
AND I WANT YOU OUT OF MY LIFE.

YOU'RE A
BURDEN...
AND YOU'LL
BLOW MY
COVER
SOME DAY.
I KNOW IT.

PACK YOUR
BAGS AND
GET OUT
OF MY
HOUSE.

YOU HAVE
ONE MINUTE.

SO IT HAS COME
DOWN TO THIS...
AND YOU STILL
BRING UP THOSE
LOAN SHARKS?
DON'T MAKE ME
LAUGH...

WHY DON'T
YOU SAY WHAT
REALLY GOES
THROUGH
YOUR MIND?



...PACK YOUR BAGS.

I'M NOT WIFE MATERIAL...

WHAT A PITY! ALL THIS TIME AND MONEY INVESTED IN A DAUGHTER WHO ISN'T OBLIGED ENOUGH TO SECURE A WEDDING WITH A RICH MAN, DESPITE BEING RAISED IN ISOLATION HER WHOLE LIFE!

DON'T AVOID MY QUESTION!

...SO YOU DON'T WANT TO BE STUCK WITH ME, RIGHT?

HAHAHAHA!

HOW MUCH DID YOU HOPE TO GET FOR SELLING ME OFF?
200,000 YEN?
100,000 YEN?

IT HAS ALWAYS BEEN ALL ABOUT MONEY... WASN'T IT?



YES! YES, IT WAS ALL FOR THE MONEY!! HAPPY?

NOW PACK YOUR ALL OF YOUR BELONGINGS! YOU HAVE THIRTY SECONDS!!



MY "BELONGINGS"? THOSE THINGS THAT FIT IN A SINGLE BACKPACK?

DON'T WORRY. THERE'S SO LITTLE OF IT THAT IT WON'T EVEN TAKE ME THIRTY SECONDS.

HURRY!



THEY'LL BE HERE ANY MINUTE NOW!



I'M DONE. NO NEED TO SEND ME OFF OR ANYTHING.

FOR ONCE, WE STAYED LONG ENOUGH AT A LOCATION FOR ME TO KNOW MY WAY AROUND HERE.

THAT WON'T DO... I WANT YOU OUT OF MY LIFE... FAR AWAY FROM HERE.



TAKE THIS UNDERGROUND TUNNEL. IT'LL LEAD YOU TO THE OUTSKIRTS OF THIS TOWN, NEAR A TRAIN STATION.

HOW AMAZING. IT'S LIKE YOU HAD IT ALL PLANNED AHEAD OF TIME.



YOU DIDN'T PLAN TO TAKE OFF
WITH MY MONEY, DID YOU?
LET ME SEE...

AH...
HEY!!

EMPTY...

EVEN AS A THIEF
YOU DON'T HAVE
ANY POTENTIAL.
NOT THAT I CARE,
ANYWAYS...

TH...THAT
DOES IT!!

YOU KNOW, DAD?
I USED TO BELIEVE
THAT THERE WAS SOME
GOOD IN YOU DESPITE
EVERYTHING YOU MADE
ME DO...

BUT...

...NOW IT'S CRYSTAL-CLEAR TO ME
THAT I WAS NAIVE TO BELIEVE THAT!
NAIVE TO THE POINT WHERE I FEEL
ASHAMED OF MYSELF!

YOU DON'T CARE ABOUT ANYONE BUT
YOURSELF! SOMEDAY, KARMA WILL
STRIKE BACK AND YOU'LL PAY FOR
YOUR SELFISHNESS!!

I KNOW.

THAT'S WHY I
WANT YOU TO
GET FAR,
FAR AWAY
FROM ME.

HEY...

WHY
THE TEARS?

BECAUSE I THINK
OF ALL MY
PRECIOUS MONEY
WASTED ON YOU.

YOU
USELESS
DYKE.

I HOPE YOU
BURN IN HELL!



I... I KNOW
HOW IT FEELS...

TO BETRAY
YOUR OWN
HEART...

...FOR THE
GOOD OF
OTHERS.

YES...
I HAD TO
ENDURE
THIS PAIN
FOR THE
PAST 18
YEARS...

I WANTED TO
LOVE HER...
YET, I HAD
NO CHOICE
BUT TO MAKE
HER RESENT
ME.

I HAD TO MAKE
SURE THAT
WHEN THE TIME
COMES FOR HER
TO OUTLIVE ME...

...SHE'D BE ABLE
TO LEAVE ME BEHIND
WITHOUT ANY SECOND
THOUGHT AND
LIVE OUT THE REST
OF HER LIFE AS
NORMALLY AS
POSSIBLE.

AND NOW...
SHE WILL.

THANKS TO
YOU.

I DON'T KNOW WHY
YOU HELPED ME OR
HOW YOU KNEW I WAS
A MORINAGA...

BUT YOU HAVE
MY GRATITUDE.

WHEN I'LL DIE
TONIGHT BY THE
HANDS OF THE
FOOT CLAN...

...SAYAKO WILL NO LONGER
BE MARKED FOR DEATH
BY THEM.

I'M SO HAPPY FOR
HER... MY DEAR,
BELOVED SAYAKO...
SHE HAS SUCH A
BRIGHT FUTURE NOW...

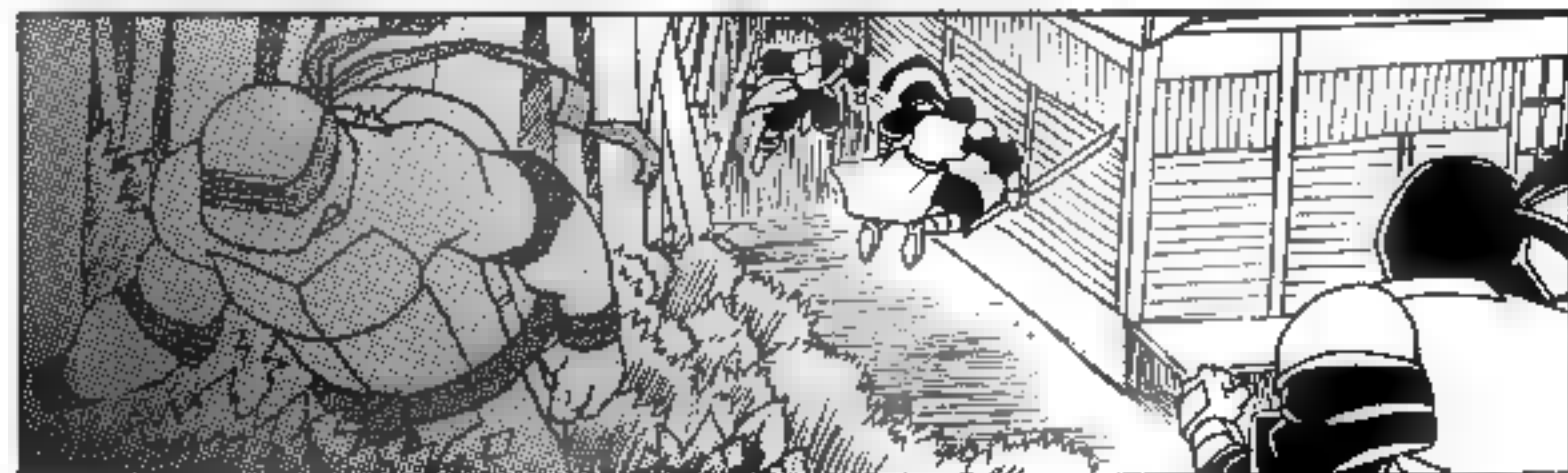
IT IS TIME
NOW...
YOU SHOULD
LEAVE.
I CAN SENSE
THE PRESENCE
OF MY OLD
COMRADES.

I WILL FIGHT
TO THE VERY
END... IN THE NAME
OF ALL THE
MORINAGA
SLAIN BY THEM.

FAREWELL,
NOBLE
NINJA.

FAREWELL.

I... NEVER GOT THE CHANCE TO
SEE HER SMILE FOR ME...
BUT PERHAPS... AFTER HER
LONG HAPPY LIFE... WHEN WE
MEET AGAIN... I'LL TELL HER
HOW MUCH I LOVED HER...
AND THEN... SHE'LL SMILE BACK...





TIME TO
DIE...
KAPPA.

WAIT!!



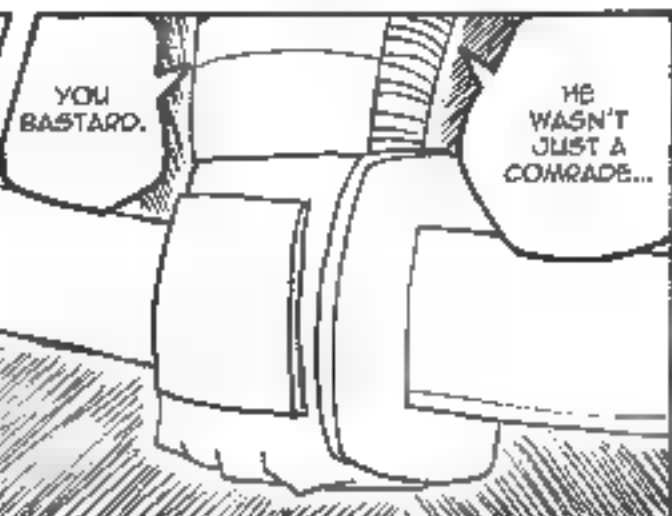
THIS TIME, KARAI
WON'T SAVE YOU.
SHE'S BUSY WITH
THE MISSION.

I'LL AVENGE
RYOTA...



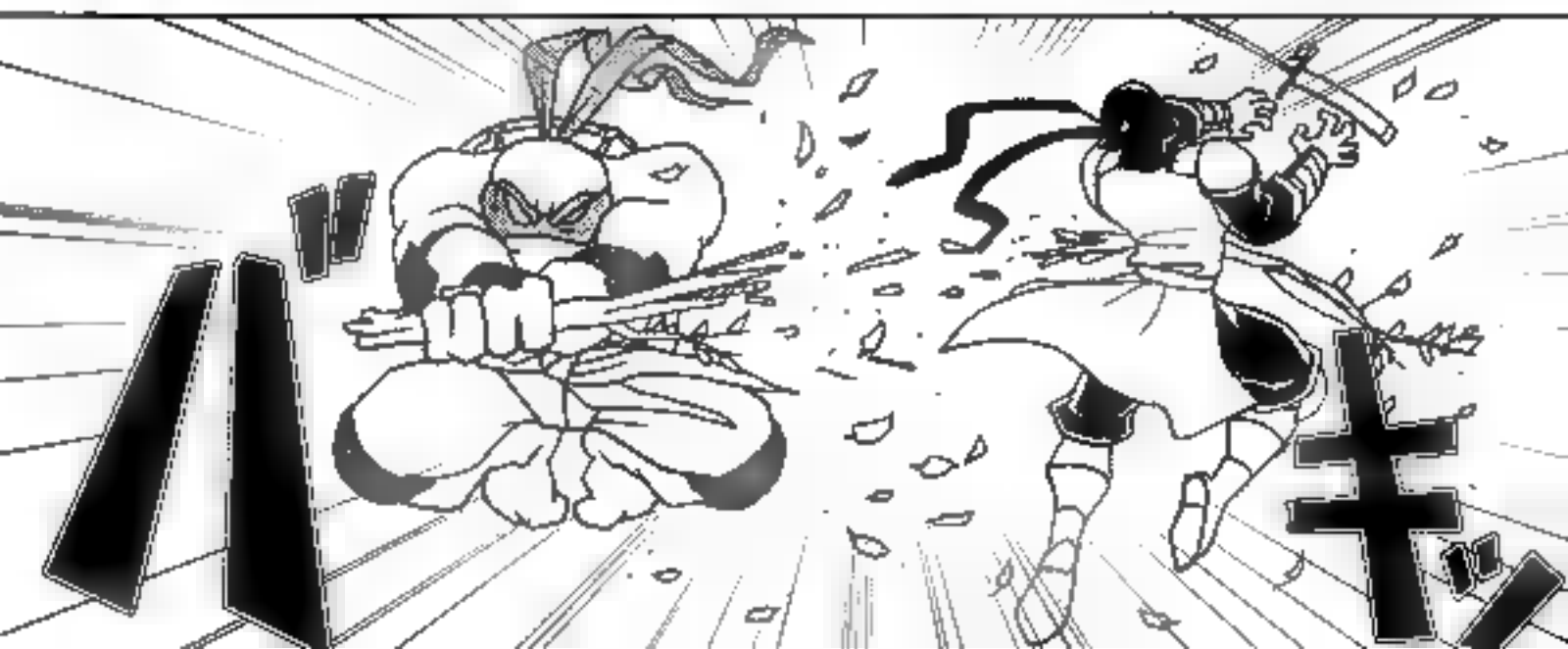
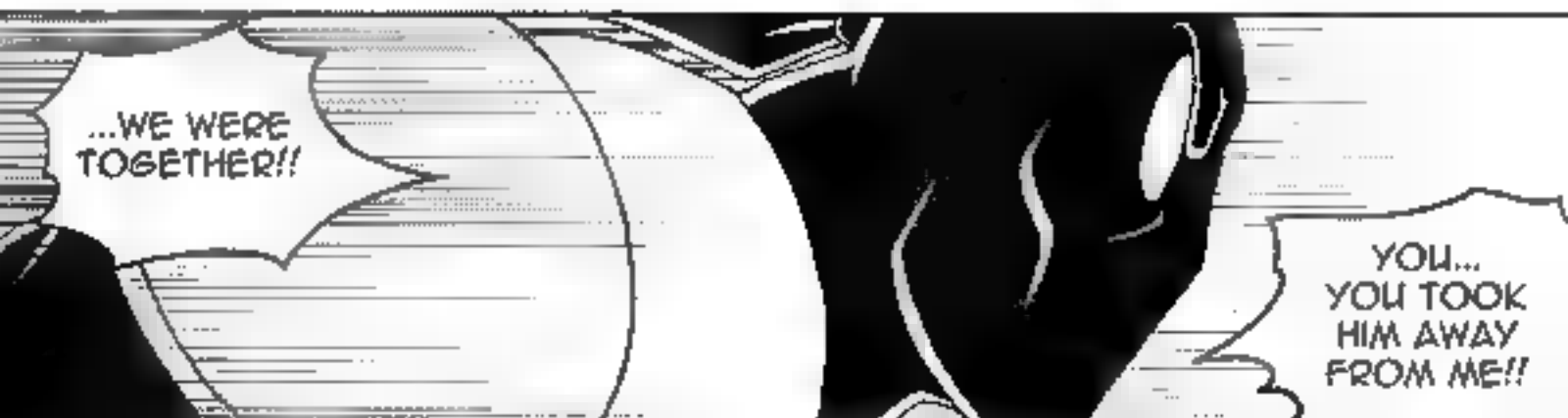
LISTEN
TO ME!
I'M CURSED!
I COULDN'T
CONTROL
MYSELF!

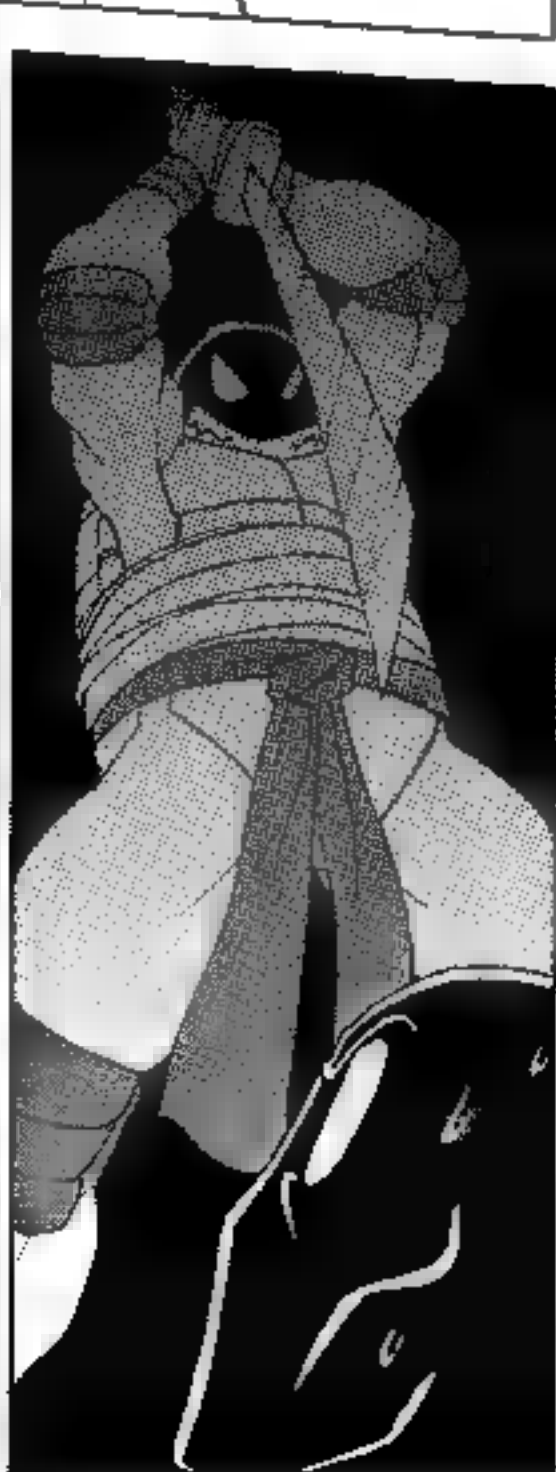
I'M SORRY
ABOUT
YOUR
COMRADE!
I REALLY
DIDN'T
MEAN TO
KILL
HIM!!



YOU
BASTARD.

HE
WASN'T
JUST A
COMRADE...



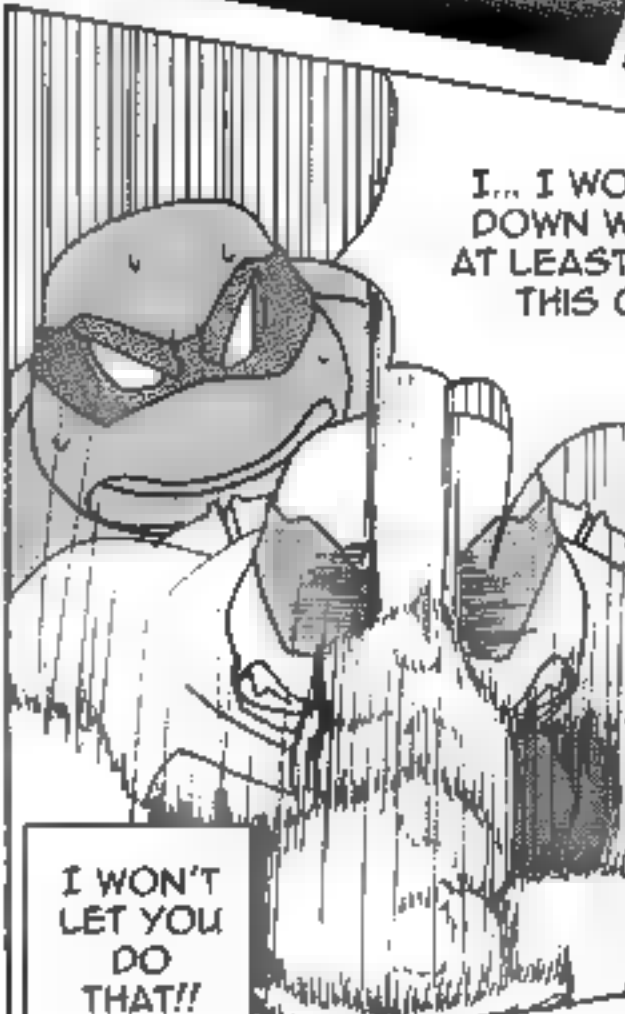




AAH...!!

NO... NO!!! IT
WAS MY TURN
TO TAKE
CONTROL!!

NO...!!



I... I WON'T GO
DOWN WITHOUT
AT LEAST OFFING
THIS ONE!!

I WON'T
LET YOU
DO
THAT!!

I'M
SORRY!!

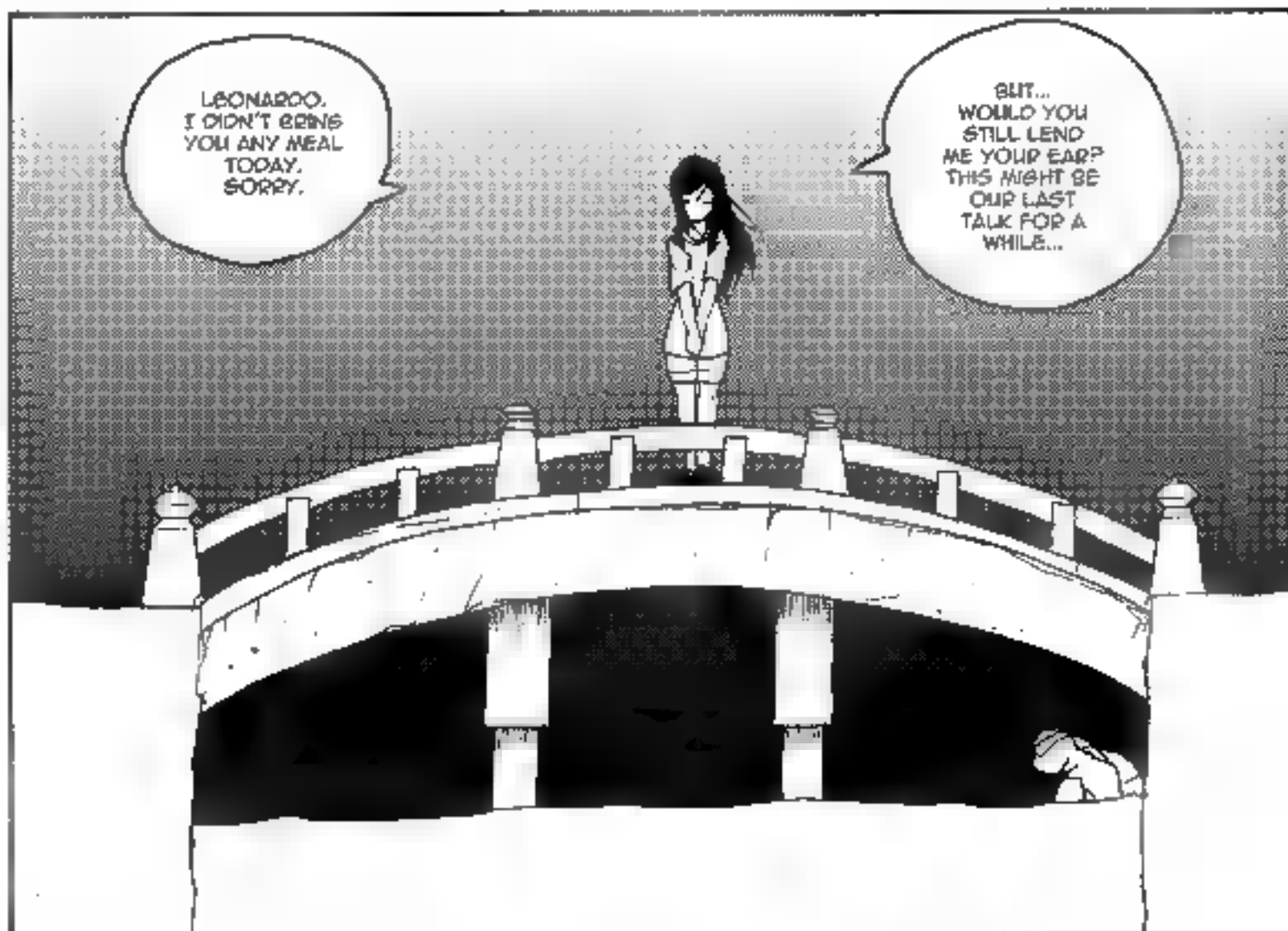
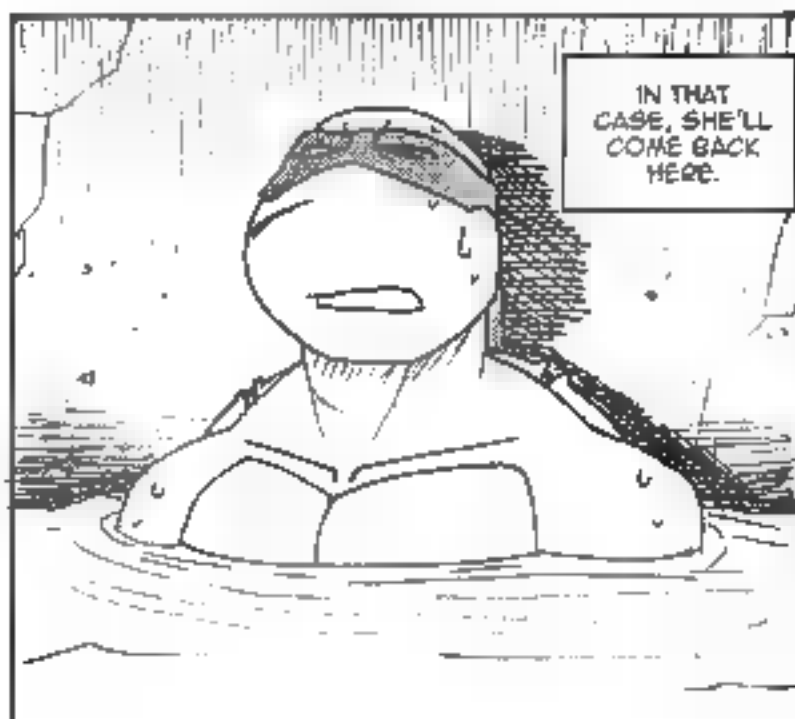
WE'LL SETTLE
THIS LATER!

WHY WAS I ABLE TO
FIGHT BACK THE
CURSE'S INFLUENCE
SO EASILY?

I DON'T WANT TO
BELIEVE IT... BUT I
HAVE THE FEELING
THERE MIGHT BE MORE
TRUTH TO KARAI'S
WORDS THAN I THOUGHT.

WHAT... BY NOW, SAYAKO'S
FATHER HAS PASSED AWAY...
AND THAT'S WHAT WEAKENED
THE CURSE'S INFLUENCE
AND ALLOWED ME TO SUPPRESS IT?

SAYAKO
MORINAGA...
I NEED TO FIND
HER NOW.



I'M ON MY OWN NOW.

MY FATHER CHASED ME AWAY.

HE SAID HE WANTED ME TO GO SOMEWHERE FAR AWAY FROM HIM.

...BUT I CAN'T LEAVE JUST YET. NOT AFTER WHAT HE TOLD ME!

HE HURT MY PRIDE... HE SAID THAT ON MY OWN, I'D PROBABLY EARN A LIVING BY STEALING FROM PEOPLE!

I'LL SETTLE HERE IN THIS TOWN AND PROVE HIM WRONG! I'LL GET A JOB, MAKE FRIENDS WITH EVERYONE IN TOWN, FIND A BOYFRIEND, LIVE A PERFECTLY RESPECTABLE LIFE... I'LL DO EVERYTHING MY WAY!

THE DAY HIS LIFE WILL HIT ROCK BOTTOM DUE TO HIS SELFISHNESS. I WANT EVERYONE IN TOWN TO LET HIM KNOW HOW MUCH BETTER HIS DAUGHTER IS DOING COMPARED TO HIM!

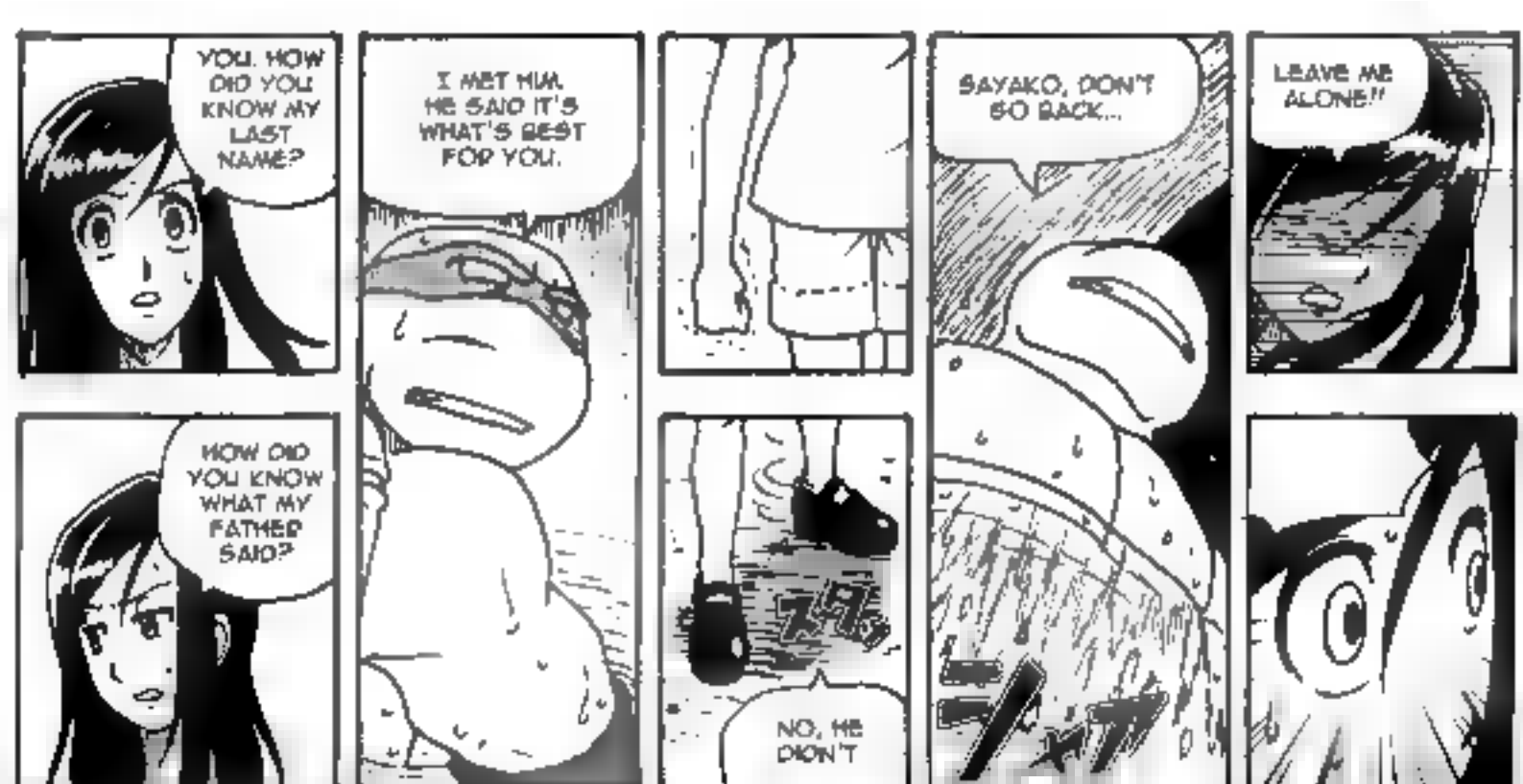
YOU CAN'T DO THAT!!

YOU DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME, SAYAKO MORINAGA.

DO AS YOU WERE TOLD.

GET AS FAR AWAY FROM YOUR FATHER AS YOU CAN...

...AND CUT TIES WITH HIM.





S...SO WHAT?
YOU THINK YOU'RE
SCARING ME?

YOU
WISH...



MY APPEARANCE
STRIKES FEAR
IN YOUR HEART.
I CAN SENSE IT.

I SUGGEST YOU
FOLLOW YOUR
BUT FEELING AND
LEAVE NOW.



YET... IT SEEMS
YOUR DESIRE
TO GO HOME'S
STRONGER THAN
YOUR FEAR OF ME.

WHY IS THAT?



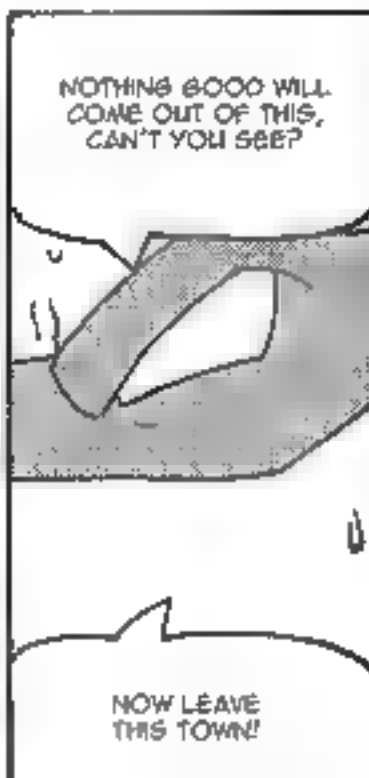
YOU SAID MY FATHER
WANTED WHAT'S BEST
FOR ME. I SAY THAT'S
NOT TRUE... IF YOU CAN
"SENSE" THINGS,
YOU'D KNOW I
DON'T BELIEVE YOU.

IN FACT, ALL
THIS IS SO
ABSURD THAT
I WANT TO
HUMOR MYSELF
AND HAVE A
LOOK AT MY
FATHER ONE
LAST TIME.



IF IT TURNS OUT HE
WAS BEING SINCERE,
THEN THERE'S A GOOD
REASON WHY YOU
SHOULDN'T COME BACK
IN THE FIRST PLACE.

AND IF IT TURNS OUT
HE LIED ABOUT IT LIKE
YOU SAID, THEN YOU'RE
THE ONE WHO'LL HUMOR
HIM BECAUSE YOU LEFT
UPON HIS REQUEST.



NOTHING GOOD WILL
COME OUT OF THIS,
CAN'T YOU SEE?

NOW LEAVE
THIS TOWN!



I DON'T
WANT TO.



LET GO.



NO.

I CAN'T ALLOW YOU TO SEE YOUR FATHER.



"ALLOW"? MY ASS!



MY FAMILY IS NONE OF YOUR BUSINESS YOU FREAK!

LEAVE ME ALONE!



DON'T SCREAM!

YOU'RE PUTTING YOURSELF IN DANGER! LISTEN YOU MUST...

HELP! HELP!

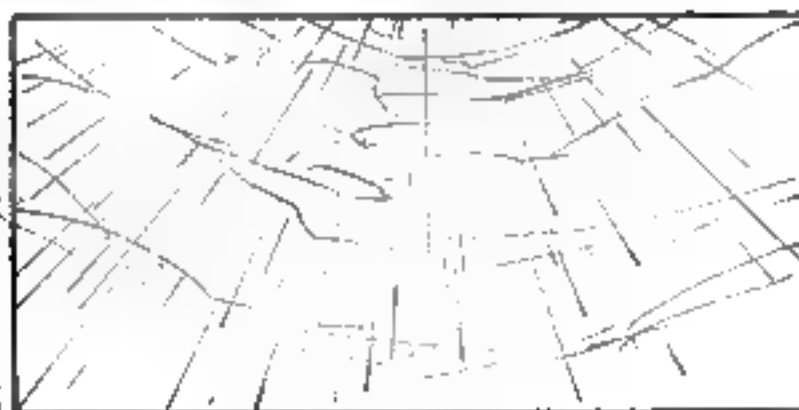
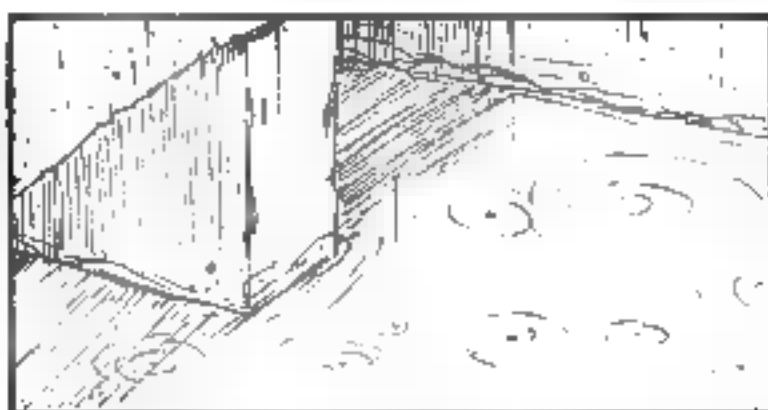


SHHHH! CALM DOWN, SAYAKO!!

HELP!

SOMEBODY HEEELP!

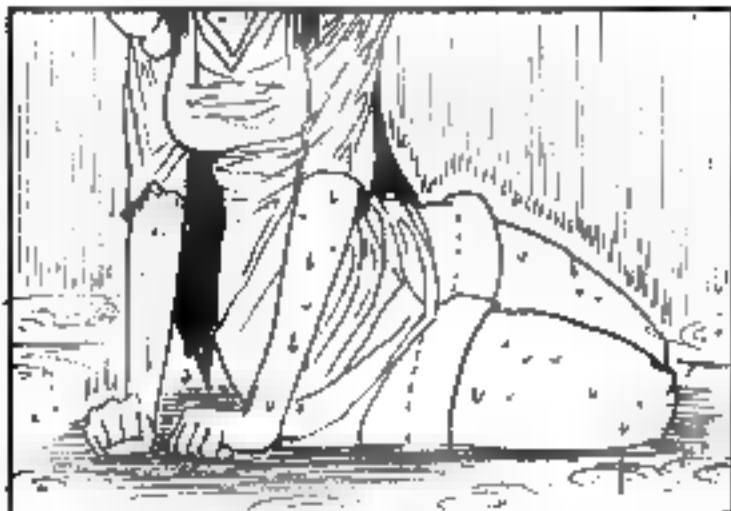
YOUR
FATHER
IS DEAD.



I DIDN'T
WANT HER
TO KNOW.



BUT THERE
WAS NO
OTHER WAY.
TIME WAS
RUNNING
SHORT.



GO AWAAAAY!!

YOU'RE LYING!
YOU'RE LYING!

LET GO
OF ME!!

THIS...
THIS CAN'T
BE TRUE...
I... I WAS
SO MEAN
TO HIM...

I... I WANT
TO SEE HIM...
I WANT TO SEE
MY DAD...

I'M NOT
LYING,
SAYAKO.

PEOPLE HAVE BEEN
DISAPPEARING ALL
OVER JAPAN AS YOU
PROBABLY SAW ON
THE NEWS.
IT'S NOT A MASSIVE
EXODUS... IT'S THE
ERADICATION OF
YOUR BLOODLINE
BY A SECRET
ORGANIZATION.

BUT WHY US?
WHAT DID WE
DO TO THEM?

WHO MARKED
US FOR DEATH?
WHO CHOSE US?

WHY DO WE
HAVE TO DIE??

YOU WERE NEXT UP
ON THEIR LIST, BUT YOUR
FATHER SAW IT COMING,
SO HE MANAGED TO
HELP YOU ESCAPE...

YOU SHOULDN'T
BE WASTING TIME
WITH THOSE
DETAILS RIGHT
NOW, SAYAKO.

IF YOU DON'T ESCAPE
NOW, YOUR FATHER'S
DEATH WILL BE IN
VAIN! IS THAT WHAT
YOU WANT?



NO... I...
DON'T WANT
THAT... BUT...



YOU'LL CHANGE YOUR NAME
AND GO ON WITH YOUR LIFE WHILE
KEEPING A LOW PROFILE - JUST
LIKE YOUR FATHER DID.

AND DON'T TRUST ANYONE.
THAT ORGANIZATION HAS TIES
EVERYWHERE, EVEN WITHIN THE
JAPANESE GOVERNMENT.



NOW,
GO
ON.



I CAN'T
GO WITH
YOU



I TOLD YOU
BEFORE.
I CARRY A
DISEASE.

IF WE STAY
TOGETHER, YOU'LL
END UP GETTING
HURT.



I DON'T
CARE.

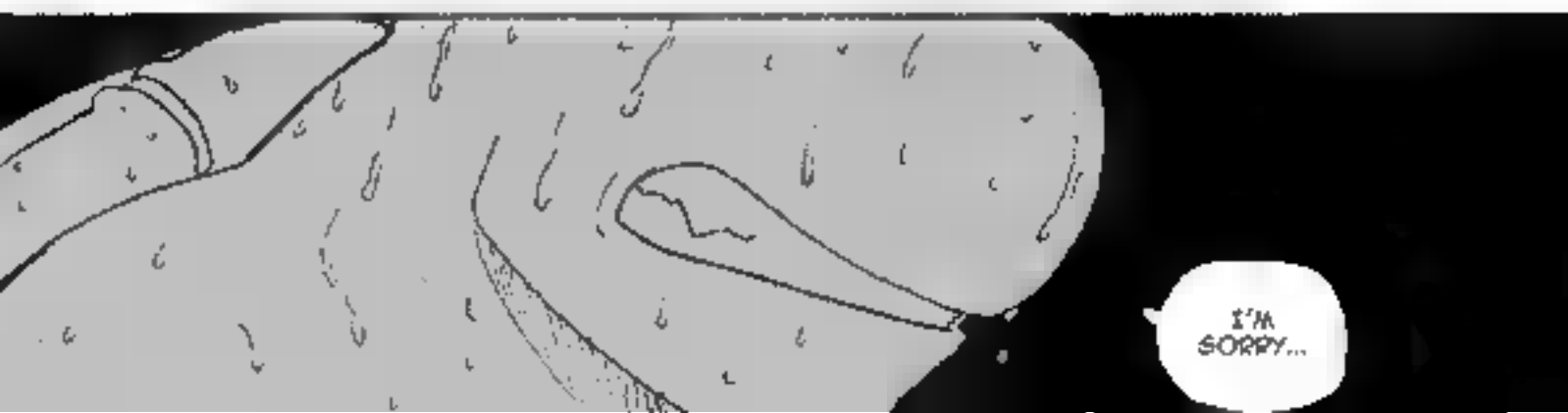
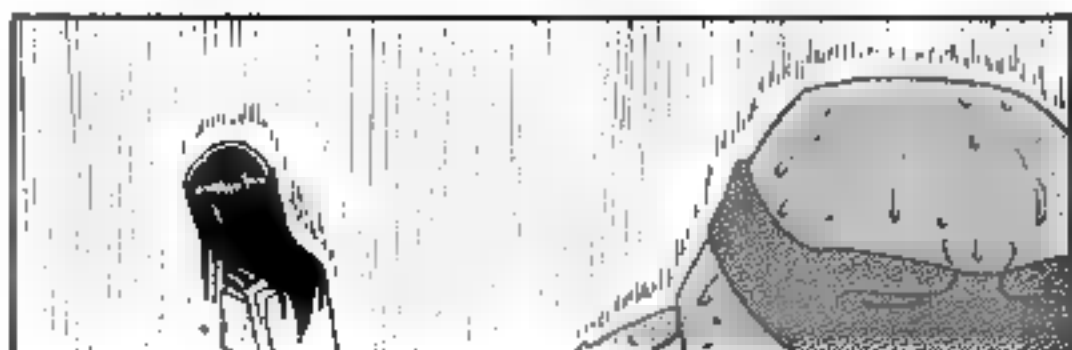
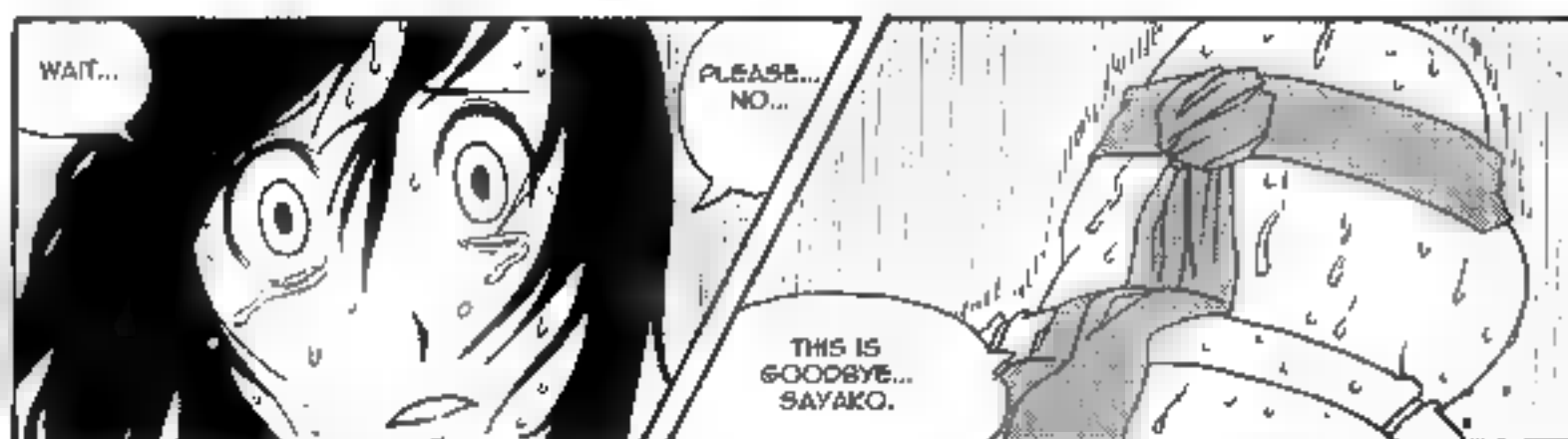
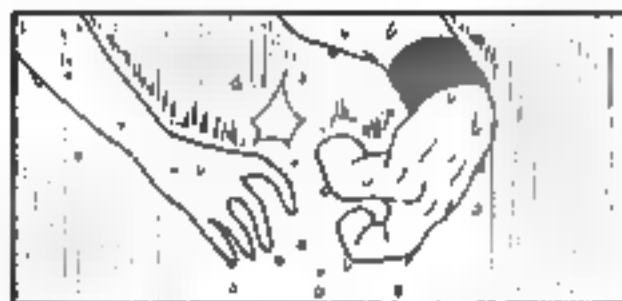
I... I JUST DON'T
WANT TO BE ON
MY OWN OUT THERE.
I... I'M SO SCARED.

PLEASE...
I WANT TO BE
WITH YOU...



I TOLD YOU
NOT TO TRUST
ANYONE.

DON'T GIVE ANYONE
THE CHANCE TO
BETRAY YOU...
NOT EVEN ME.



WITHIN A FEW DAYS,
I WENT FROM BEING
COMPLETELY OUT OF
CLUES ABOUT THE
CURSE TO BEING DIRECTLY
INVOLVED IN A CONFLICT
THAT WILL DETERMINE
ITS SURVIVAL.

THAT CURSE WILL BE THE END
OF ME... IT WEREN'T FOR IT,
I WOULDN'T HAVE KILLED THOSE
FOOT NINJA, BREAKING THE
PEACEFUL LIFE THAT MY
BROTHERS HAVE WORKED
SO HARD TO ACHIEVE...

IF IT WEREN'T FOR
IT, SAYAKO WOULDN'T
HAVE HAD TO GO
THROUGH ALL THAT...
SHE'S THE ONLY ONE
WHO SHOWED ME KINDNESS
FOR A LONG WHILE, AND
IN RETURN, ALL I DID
WAS TAKING AWAY
HER FUTURE...

AND UNFORTUNATELY,
NO MATTER HOW BAD
THINGS GOT... THERE'S NO
WAY OUT.
I CAN'T BRING BACK
THE DEAD, I CAN'T
IGNORE THE TRUTH ABOUT
THE NATURE OF THE CURSE
NO MATTER HOW UNFAIR
IT SOUNDS...
I CAN'T HOPE FOR A
HAPPY ENDING ANYMORE.

THERE'S ONLY
ONE THING LEFT
FOR ME TO DO.
I MUST ...
GO SEE
HER.



I THOUGHT YOU
DIDN'T WANT
ANYTHING
TO DO WITH US.

OUR TARGET WAS
DOLAN MORINAGA.
HE USED TO BE
A LEADER IN THE
FOOT CLAN.

THERE ARE OTHERS OUT
THERE WHO MANAGE TO
ELUDE US, NO MATTER
HOW MUCH INFLUENCE
WE HAVE IN JAPAN.

WE NEED
YOU.

HIS POSITION GAVE HIM
ACCESS TO INFORMATION
ABOUT THE CURSE, SO
HE WAS ABLE TO GO
INTO HIDING LONG BEFORE
THE PURGE BEGAN.

HOWEVER,
HIS LUCK
RAN OUT
TODAY.

WITH YOU BY OUR SIDE,
WE'LL BE ABLE TO
ROOT THEM OUT AND PUT
AN END TO THIS CURSE.

I... I KNOW YOU
DO, KARAI.

ANYWAYS,
WE'RE DONE
HERE.

THE MOMENT YOU KILLED
DOLAN MORINAGA, THE
CURSE'S INFLUENCE
ON ME WEAKENED.
BUT WHAT ABOUT
OTHER CURSED PEOPLE?

WILL THEY BE
MOMENTARILY
RELIEVED FROM
IT AS WELL?

THEY WILL...
BUT THAT'S JUST
A SMALL REPRIEVE.
AS LONG AS THERE
ARE MORINAGAS
ALIVE, IT'LL KEEP
COMING BACK.

THAT'S WHY...
I THINK IT'S
IN YOUR BEST
INTEREST TO LEND
US A HAND.

I SEE... I ALWAYS DREADED
THE DAY I'D HAVE TO STRAY
FROM THE PATH OF HONOR
AND RIGHTEUSNESS...

BUT IF THIS WILL MAKE IT
EASIER FOR MY BROTHERS
TO LIVE WITH THE CURSE,
EVEN JUST A LITTLE BIT...

...AND MEND THE
TRUCE I VIOLATED BY
KILLING YOUR COMRADES...

...THEN I PLEDGE
ALLEGIANCE TO THE FOOT
CLAN IN THEIR MISSION TO
ERADICATE THE CURSE
THROUGH THE ONLY
POSSIBLE METHOD:
THE EXECUTION OF ALL
MORNABAS.

I'M SORRY, SAYAKO.
THIS IS THE PATH
I CHOSE... I MUST
PROTECT MY FAMILY.

MAY YOU LIVE
HAPPILY
UNTIL YOUR
TIME IS UP...

LEOP

LEOP

HUH?

STOP STARIN'
INTO SPACE AND
TELL US 'BOUT
YER TIME IN
JAPAN ALREADY!

C'MON, YOU CAN TELL
US ANYTHING! YOUR
GOOD LOOKS GOT YOU
HOOKED UP WITH A CHICK?
IT'S OKAY...!

THAT'S RIGHT,
TELL THEM THE
TRUTH. ALL OF IT,
THAT'S WHAT YOU
SET OUT TO DO,
RIGHT?

THEN LET THEM
KNOW WE DID
IT ALL FOR THEM.

ABOUT OUR
ALLIANCE WITH
THE FOOT CLAN...
ABOUT HOW WE
BETRAYED SAYAKO
AND HER OLD
MAN...

YOU'LL SEE... THEY'LL
BLAME US INSTEAD
OF SHOWING US A
SHRED OF GRATITUDE.
THAT'S THE TRUE FACE
OF THOSE IGNORANT
BASTARDS... THOSE
WORTHLESS NINJAS...

NO... THAT'S
WRONG.
I BELIEVE
IN THEM.
I WANT TO
PROTECT
THEM.

ACTUALLY,
MIKEY... I
MOSTLY KEPT
TO MYSELF
■ JAPAN.

FOR THE LAST
17 YEARS, I JUST
FOCUSED ON
GATHERING
INFORMATION TO
ELIMINATE THE
CURSE.

THAT'S WHY
I'LL CARRY
THIS BURDEN
BY MYSELF
AFTER ALL...
I CAN'T SHARE
IT WITH THEM.

I TOLD THEM EVERYTHING
I KNEW ABOUT THE
CURSE OF YAMATA-
NO-OROCHI.

EVERYTHING, EXCEPT THE
MORINAGA BLOODLINE AND
MY INVOLVEMENT WITH THE
FOOT CLAN.
INSTEAD, I MADE UP A
STORY ABOUT ANCIENT
RELICS WE NEEDED TO
FIND AND DESTROY TO
PUT AN END TO THE CURSE.



AS I SPUN MY WEB OF LIES,
RAPHAEL PAID ATTENTION TO
EVERY SINGLE WORD THAT
CAME OUT OF MY MOUTH.



RAPHAEL, THE MOST REBELLIOUS
AND HOT-HEADED OF US ALL,
IS FOR ONCE CALM AND COLLECTED...
BELIEVING MY LIES.

IT HURT ME JUST
TO SEE THEM SO
EAGER TO HELP ME.



BUT I KNEW THIS
PAIN WAS THE PRICE
TO PAY TO
PROTECT THEM.

HE COULD'VE
CHOSEN A
LESS
COMPLICATED
LIE...

WE'LL
HAVE TO
PLAY
ALONG
TO COVER
FOR HIM...

LET'S GET BACK TO YOU.
YOU'RE THE LAST OF OROKU
SAKI'S ELITE NINJAS...
EIKICHI GOTOU,
WE'VE COLLECTED A
LOT OF INFORMATION
ABOUT YOU OVER THE
YEARS.

YOU'RE THE ONE WHO
DROPPED THE TOTSUKA
SWORD INTO THE
SEWERS AS AN ACT
OF REVENGE AGAINST
THE TURTLES.

ARGGH!

YOU THEN
TRAVELED TO JAPAN
TO LOOK FOR
YOUR TWIN
BROTHER, RYOTA.
SINCE HE PASSED
AWAY, YOU RETURNED
TO NEW YORK TO
PERSUE YOUR
AMBITIONS.

LET'S SEE IF
YOU CAN TELL
US SOMETHING
WE DON'T KNOW
YET... FOR
INSTANCE, WHAT
ELSE YOU DID
WHILE YOU
WERE IN JAPAN.

BE GENEROUS
WITH WORDS,
OR WE'LL HAVE
TO BE GENEROUS
WITH THE TASER.

F...
FUCK
OFF...

...BITCH!

YOU DOGS
OF THE
FOOT
CLAN...

...WON'T GET
ANYTHING
OUT OF
ME!

■ WAS ONE OF MY MOMENTS OF WEAKNESS... I WANT TO KEEP IT TO MYSELF.

16 YEARS AGO, AFTER
SURVIVING KARAI'S
ATTEMPT TO RIG NEW
YORK CITY OF US
SHREDDER SUPPORTERS

...I WANTED TO BUILD
AN INDEPENDENT
FACTION OF FOOT NINJAS.
THE FIRST PERSON I
CONSIDERED RECRUITING
WAS MY BROTHER, RYOTA.

A MOLE TOLD ME HE
WAS ASSIGNED TO WORK
UNDER KARAI AND
WAS DISPATCHED TO
HOKKAIDO, SO I WENT
TO LOOK FOR HIM.



UNFORTUNATELY,
I FOUND OUT
THAT HE RECENTLY
PASSED AWAY...

...SO, I TOOK
A TRAIN BACK
TO THE NEAREST
URBAN CITY.

UH...
UH... SNIF...
SNIF...

THIS ONE GIRL
WAS THE ONLY
OTHER PASSENGER
ABOARD AT THIS
TIME OF THE NIGHT.

SHE WAS
DRENCHED TO
THE BONE AND
SEEMED
HYSTICAL.

NORMALLY,
I'D RATHER IGNORE
"NORMAL" PEOPLE...

...BUT IT WAS A
LONG RIDE AND
HER CONSTANT
SOBBING STARTED
GETTING ON MY
NERVES.



HEY.

KEEP IT DOWN.



SNIF.

I...

I'M SORRY.



WH...

WHUH...



SNIF...

SNIF...



BITCH JUST WOULDN'T GIVE IT A REST.



(HIC)

SNIF...
SNIF...

I WAS PLANNING ON TOSSING HER OUTSIDE, SINCE WE WERE ALONE THERE WOULD BE NO WITNESS.

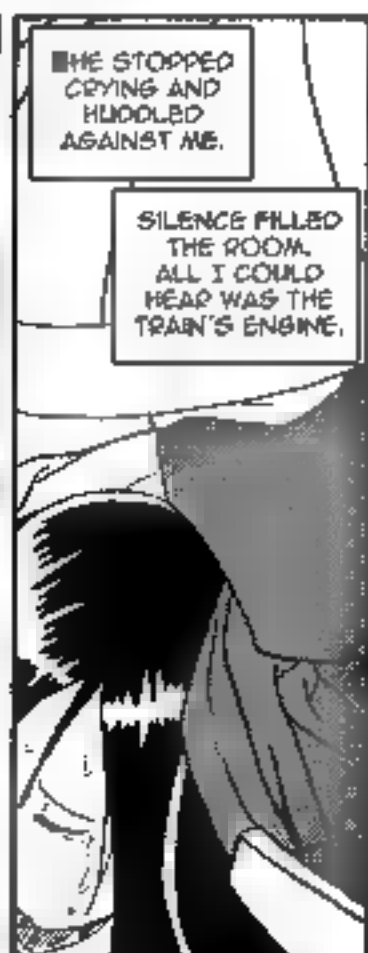
THEN I REALIZED: WE WERE INDEED COMPLETELY ALONE.

MAYBE THAT'S WHY, AS I GOT CLOSER, MY FRUSTRATION SUBSIDED AND I WAS OVERCOME BY AN UNFAMILIAR FEELING.



INSTEAD OF YANKING HER ARM...

...I FOUND MYSELF PULLING HER TOWARDS ME.



HE STOPPED CRYING AND HUGGED AGAINST ME.

SILENCE FILLED THE ROOM. ALL I COULD HEAR WAS THE TRAIN'S ENGINE.

THAT'S WHEN I REMEMBERED THIS FEELING: IT WAS SUPPRESSED A LONG TIME AGO BY MY DEDICATION TO MY POSITION AS AN ELITE NINJA.

WHEN WAS THE LAST TIME I HAD A PRIVATE MOMENT WITH A WOMAN?



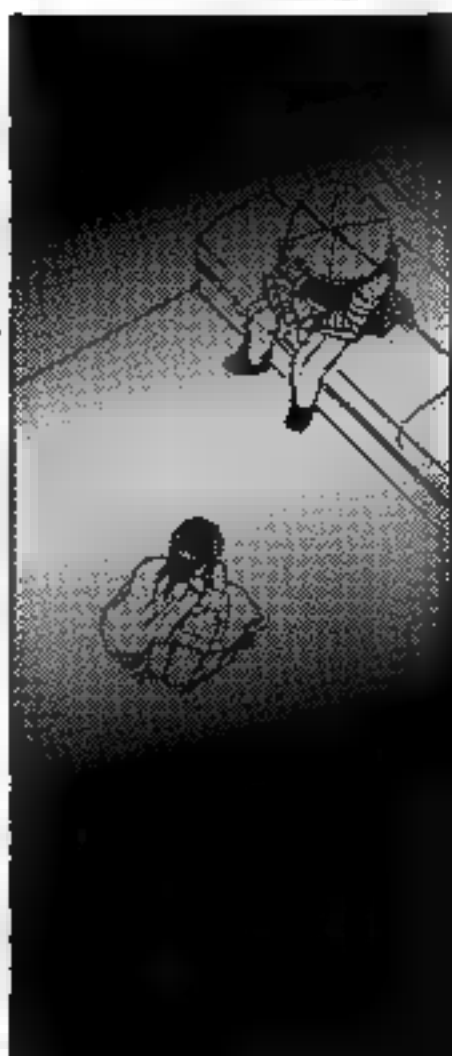
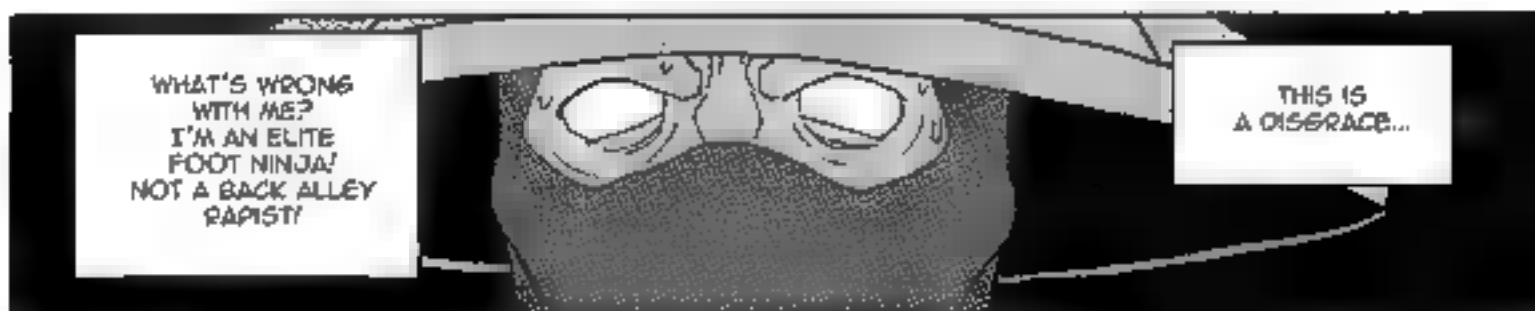
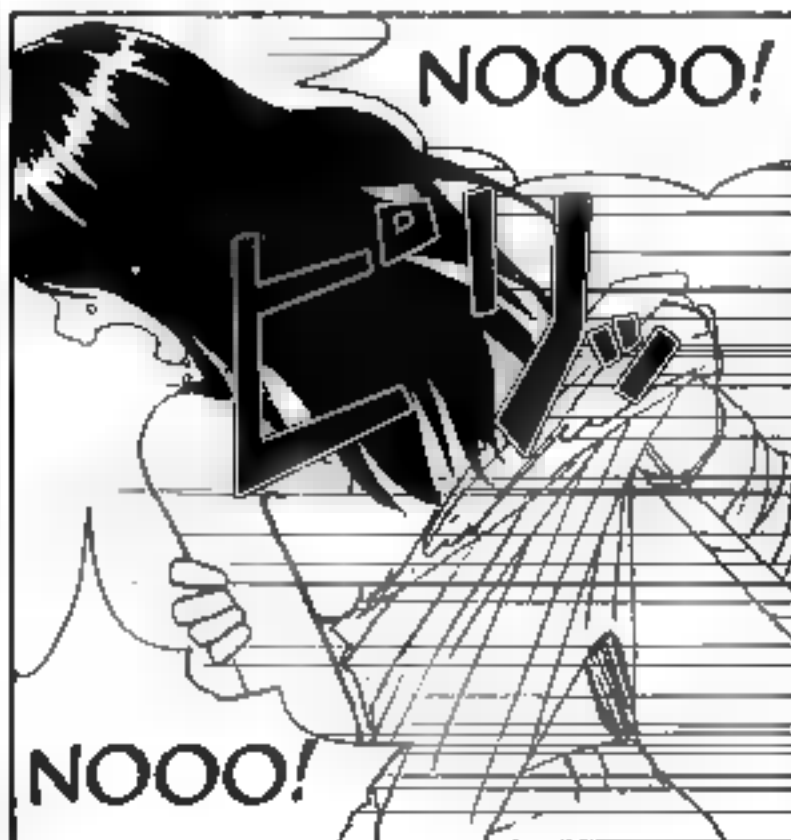
WHEN WAS THE
LAST TIME...

...I GAVE
IN TO MY
URGES...

...EVEN
JUST
A BIT...?

...!!

A...
AAAH...!!



I GOT OFF
AT THE NEXT
STOP.

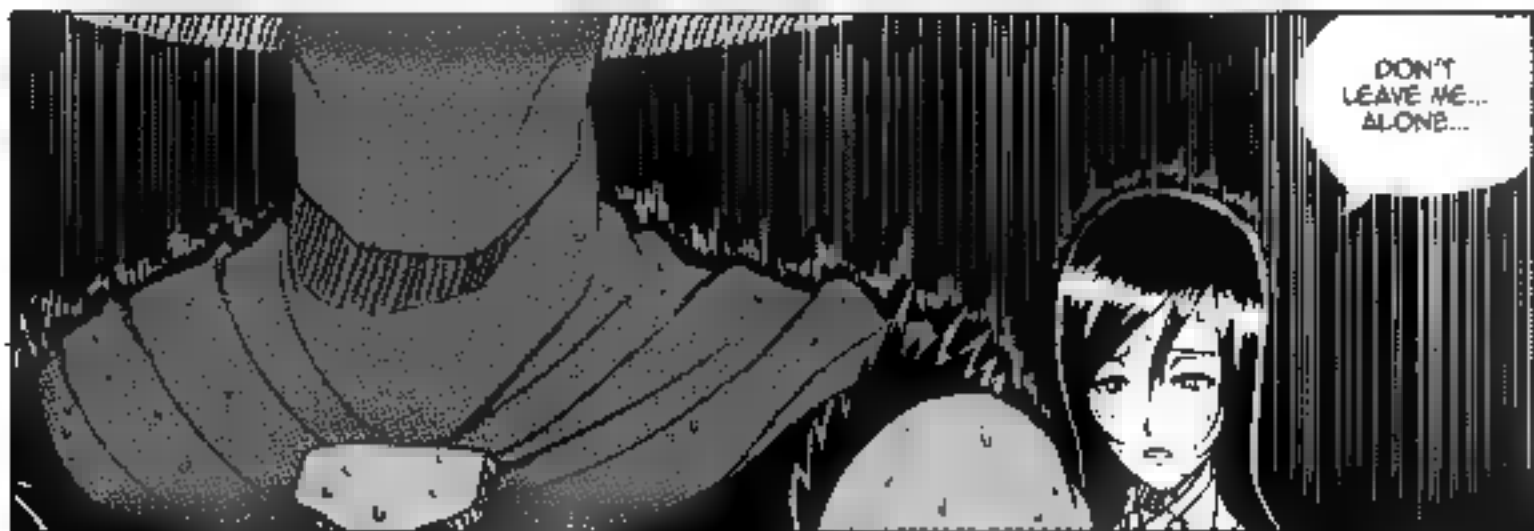
THE LONGER I STAYED
NEAR THIS GIRL, THE
MORE I FELT I'D LOSE
CONTROL OF MYSELF



WAIT...



DON'T
LEAVE ME...
ALONE...



PLEASE...
STAY
WITH ME...







MY FIRST ACT AS A LEADER TO MY BROTHERS WAS TO MAKE THEM FOLLOW A RED HERRING. I FEEL AWFUL...

RAFH WAS REALLY EAGER TO HELP ME TOO...

HE MEANS WELL BUT HE WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO ACCEPT WHAT DESTROYING THE CURSE TRULY MEANS.

I WANT TO SPARE MY BROTHERS THE PAIN AND SORROW I WENT THROUGH.

AND FOR THAT, I'LL HAVE TO KEEP WORKING WITH THE FOOT CLAN ■ SECRET...

LEO HERE. NOW'S A GOOD TIME TO MEET UP FOR A QUICK REPORT.

TRACK DOWN MY POSITION AND SEND ME SOMEONE ON A NEARBY ROOFTOP.

I MADE A DEAL WITH RAFH: TO ASSUME THE POSITION OF LEADER ONCE MORE, AT LEAST UNTIL I PATCH THINGS UP WITH DONNIE.

I DID MY JOB AS A LEADER AND AS A BROTHER... TO PROTECT MY FAMILY FROM HARM, NO MATTER WHAT.

THEY LET YOU OFF THE HOOK ALREADY? YOU WEREN'T EVEN BROUGHT IN FOR ANY KIND OF QUESTIONING?

I COMPLETELY FORGOT ABOUT HIM. I'M SURPRISED AT HOW MUCH THAT RENOR GUY IS WELL ADJUSTED FOR SOMEONE WHO DOESN'T EVEN KNOW WHERE HE CAME FROM OR WHAT HE ■. I WONDER IF IT WAS RAFH'S DOING.

BUT YOUR HAND WAS CUT! YOU WERE BLEEDING! DIDN'T THEY ASK ABOUT THAT?

IT DOESN'T MATTER IF HE SEES ME STEP OUT. UNLIKE MIKEY AND RAFH, I DON'T THINK HE'LL FOLLOW ME AROUND OR ASK QUESTIONS THAT WOULD BLOW MY COVER.

SO THE POLICE ASKED YOU IF YOU WERE GOING THROUGH DEPRESSION BECAUSE IT LOOKED LIKE YOU TRIED TO CUT YOUR VEINS... AND YOU SAID "YES"?

I THOUGHT YOU'D GET INTO TROUBLE FOR ALL THIS MESS, ESPECIALLY SINCE YOU WENT MISSING ON CHRISTMAS EVE. AT LEAST YOUR PARENTS DIDN'T DISOWN OR SOMETHING, RIGHT?

NO, NOT
AT ALL, BUT...

I'M GLAD
TO THEM
AS
PARENTS...

GUESS WHAT I'M
WEARING ON MY
BALD HEAD RIGHT
NOW?

OH OH OH!

INSTEAD, THEY TRIED TO
FIND REASONS THAT
COULD'VE CAUSED MY
SO-CALLED DEPRESSION.
THEY EVEN THOUGHT THAT
I WAS ASHAMED OF BEING
ADOPTED! REALLY!

BY THE WAY,
I PAID SHADOW
A VISIT THIS
EVENING.

I HEARD YOU
DIDN'T EXACTLY
LEAVE EMPTY-
HANDED.

YOU
IDIOT...

YOU KNOW,
YESTERDAY
WHEN I TOLD YOU
I DIDN'T FIND MY
TRUE SELF YET...
IT'S BECAUSE I
DON'T REMEMBER
MUCH ABOUT THE
TIME I SPENT ■
JAPAN BEFORE
I WAS ADOPTED.

IT'S ONE THING
TO SAY THAT WHO
I AM AS A PERSON
IS MY "TRUE SELF",
BUT IN MY HEART, I
KNOW THAT THE
PICTURE'S NOT COMPLETE
UNTIL I PIECE OUT MY
CHILDHOOD FROM COLD
HARD FACTS ABOUT
MY ORIGINS.

I SEE
WHAT YOU'RE
GETTING AT...
LET'S BOTH
DO OUR BEST
IN OUR QUESTS
FOR OUR
TRUTHS.

UNTIL THEN,
I'M JUST GLAD
THAT EVEN IF I'M
"RENOR" TO YOU,
WE CAN TALK
AS IF... THINGS
WERE THE SAME
AS THEY ALWAYS
WERE... ■ OUR
MEMORIES.

OH, BY THE WAY, CAN YOU TELL ME HOW YOUR OTHER FRIENDS ARE YOU DOING? LIKE THE ONE WITH THE ORANGE MASK? HE SAVED ME BUT GOT HURT BADLY...

AND THAT OTHER ONE TOO... HE WAS AT THE FACTORY AS WELL. YOU KNOW, THE HUGE GUY WHO TALKS LIKE A GANGSTER? THE ONE WHO LIED TO ME AND ALMOST K...KISSED ME?

WHY DO YOU BRING THAT UP AGAIN? DON'T TELL ME GOT A THING FOR THAT STINKY, VIOLENT FATSO! PLEASE PLEASE PLEASE!

Y...YOU DON'T? S...SORRY.

IT'S JUST... I'M UGLY ENOUGH AS I AM, BUT HE'S EVEN UGLIER.

IF YOU LIKE HIM MORE THAN ME, THEN... SNIF...

BUT SINCE YOU'RE ASKING, THEY'RE DOING VERY WELL... THEY'RE ACTUALLY NICE PEOPLE WHEN YOU LOOK PAST THEIR APPEARANCE.

I'VE ONLY BEEN WITH THEM FOR A FEW MONTHS SINCE I... TURNED INTO THIS. HOWEVER, WE'VE BEEN THROUGH A LOT. THEY ARE ALMOST LIKE A SURROGATE FAMILY TO ME.

I'VE ONCE BEEN CLOSE TO THEM AS WELL. I'VE GONE THROUGH A LOT WITH THEM. BUT THAT WAS 17 YEARS AGO.

HOW IRONIC. I SPENT 17 YEARS OF MY LIFE WITH MY BROTHERS, YET I FEEL LIKE MORE OF AN OUTSIDER THAN THIS GUY WHO ONLY KNEW THEM FOR A FEW MONTHS.

WHO AM I KIDDING... IT'S OBVIOUS THAT I'M THE ONE WHO SET UP A BARRIER BETWEEN MY FAMILY AND I. ONCE THIS IS ALL OVER, THEN MAYBE... JUST MAYBE THEY WILL FORGIVE ME. MAYBE I'LL FEEL LIKE PART OF THE FAMILY AGAIN.

...AND THERE'S A LONG LOST BROTHER IN THEIR FAMILY.

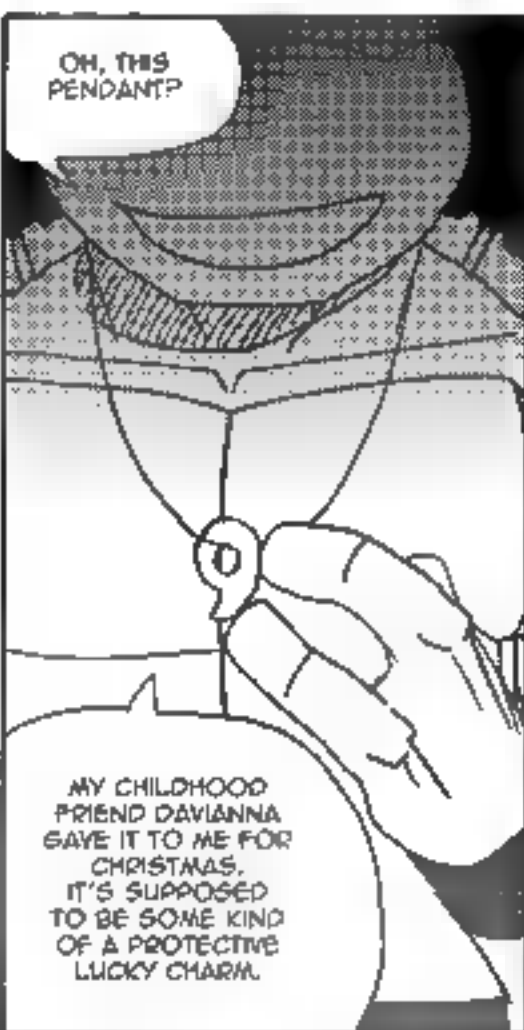
JUST BETWEEN YOU AND ME, HE'S VERY KIND, BUT HE ACTS SO ZEN IT MAKES ME FEEL UNCOMFORTABLE. HE'S LIKE A MONK WITH A METAL POLE UP HIS ASS.

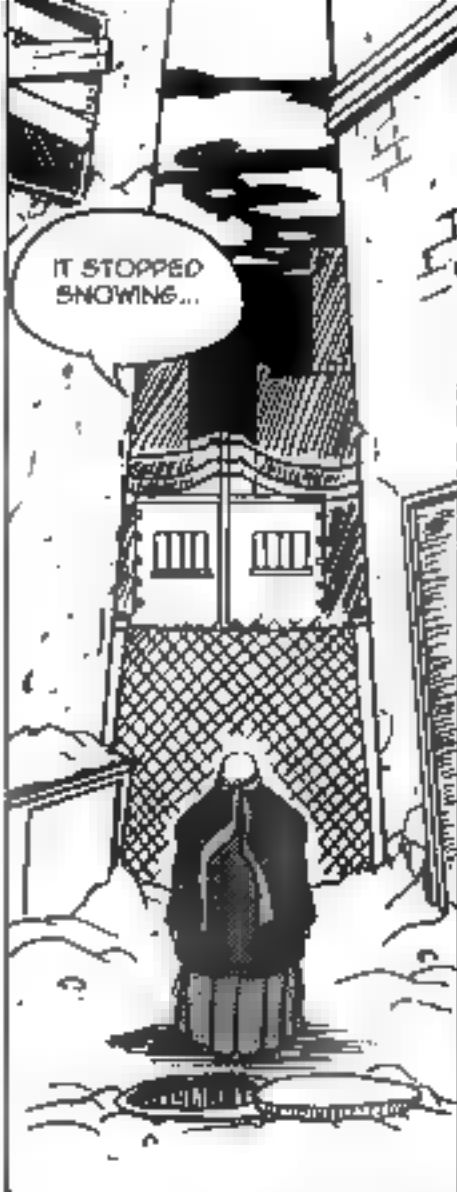
ERGL.

HIS NAME'S LEONARDO.

HI, RENOIR.

AH.





YOU SAW YOUR BROTHERS. ARE YOU SATISFIED?

YES I AM. THEY ARE BETTER OFF THAN I IMAGINED THEY'D BE, CONSIDERING HOW I DROPPED THE BALL ON THEM WHEN THEY NEEDED ME THE MOST 17 YEARS AGO.

YOU'RE DOING WHAT'S BEST FOR THEM RIGHT NOW. YOU'RE A GOOD BROTHER.

(SIGH)

HEY... ABOUT THE ROGUE FOOT NINJAS IN NEW YORK...

IT'S ALL UNDER CONTROL. WE ALSO CAPTURED THEIR LEADER.

I HEARD HE'S THE LAST OF SHREDDER'S ELITE NINJAS... WHAT'S HIS NAME?

EIKICHI GOTOH. HE'S RYOTA'S OLDER BROTHER.

I'M FINE. JUST LET GO OF IT. IT COULDN'T BE HELPED.

I... I SEE. HEY, I DIDN'T MEAN TO BRING HIM UP, I...

NOW WHAT?



ARE YOU
COMING ON
TO ME?
AGAIN?

I'M FLATTERED,
BUT I TOLD YOU
BEFORE: I'M NOT
INTO REPTILIAN
MUTANTS... UGH.

SORRY, THAT
WASN'T MY
INTENTION AT ALL.
I DIDN'T TRY TO...
YOU KNOW?

MAN...
YOU'RE SO UPTIGHT,
TALKING TO YOU
IS A SURE WAY
TO FEEL AWKWARD.

OH COME ON.
AND CAN YOU
LOOK ME IN
THE FACE WHEN
WE TALK?

THERE YOU GO
AGAIN. SOMETIMES
I WONDER IF
YOU'RE DOING
IT ON PURPOSE.



WHATEVER YOU SAY...
BUT YOU KNOW, A LONG TIME
AGO, I'D NEVER HAVE IMAGINED
THAT WE'D BE ON SPEAKING
TERMS ONE DAY.

FATE IS A CRUEL, BIPOLAR
MISTRESS, RIGHT?

IT'S ALMOST A MIRACLE THAT
THE BOTH OF US ARE
STILL ALIVE, RIGHT HERE,
RIGHT NOW.



MISTRESS, HUH?
I'D SAY BITCH TO BE HONEST.
BUT I AGREE.
BACK THEN, I THOUGHT
ONLY ONE OF US WOULD
BE LEFT STANDING
TODAY.





AS SOON AS I
JOINED THE FOOT
CLAN, I WAS
ASSIGNED THE TASK
OF TRACKING DOWN
PEOPLE OF THE
MORINAGA BLOODLINE
BY USING THE ONE
THING THAT CONNECTS
ME TO THEM..
MY CURSE.

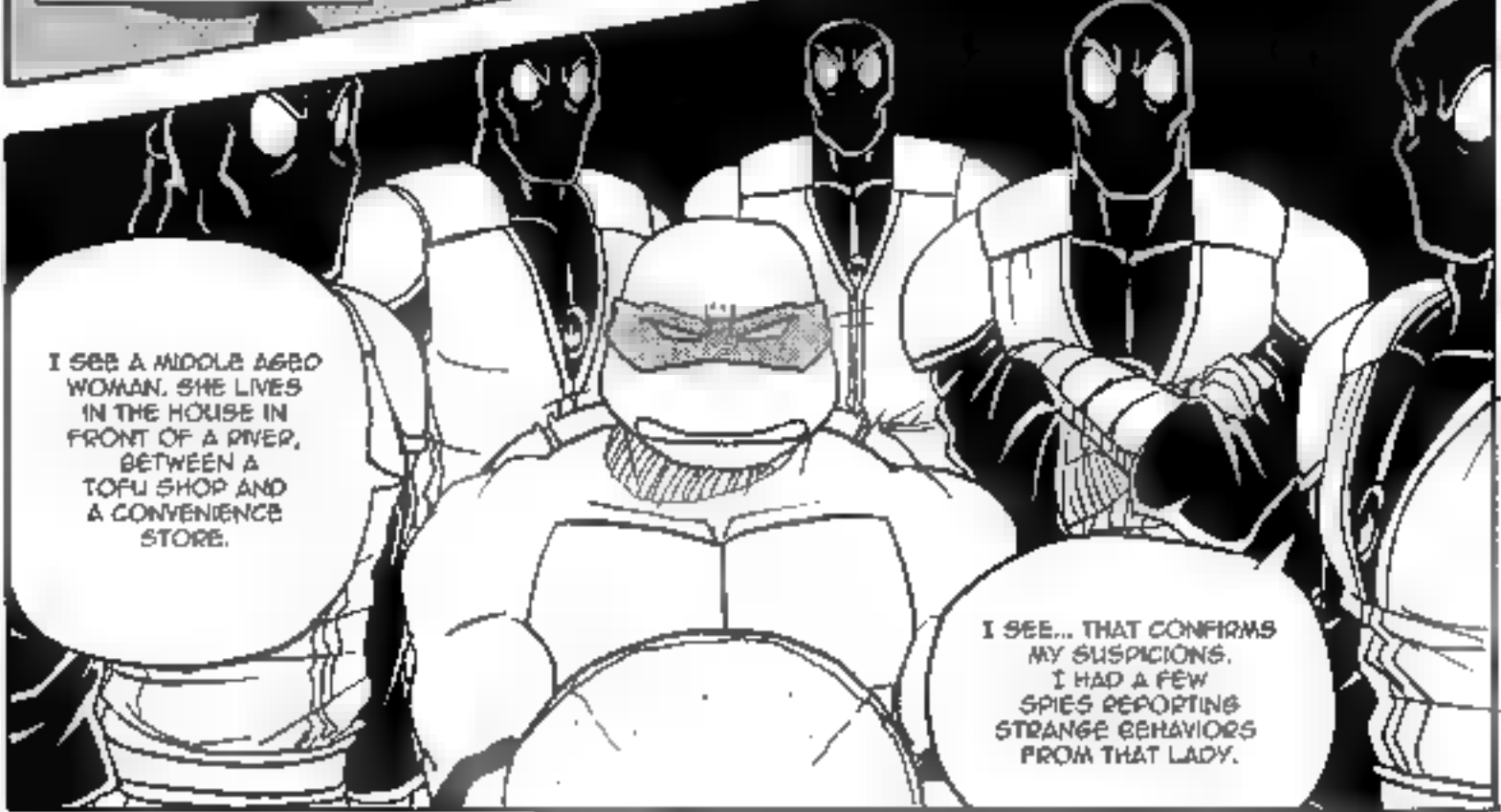
ONE TOUCH OF
THE MIRROR,
YATA-NO-KAGAMI,
AND THEY APPEAR
IN MY MIND...

COMPLETE STRANGERS
WHOM I HANDPICK
TO BE THE NEXT
ONES ON THE FOOT
CLAN'S "LIST".

ASSUMING THE
MANTLE OF A REAPER
TO THOSE PEOPLE
FELT VERY WRONG,
BUT I HAD NO
CHOICE.

THE CURSE WAS LIKE
A TICKING CLOCK
INSIDE OF ME...
IF IT GOES ON FOR
TOO LONG WITHOUT
BEING WOUND UP, I
LOOSE CONTROL...
AND MY DARK SELF
TAKES OVER.

I KNEW MY BROTHERS
WERE GOING THROUGH
THE SAME ORDEAL.
SO I HAD TO KEEP
KILLING... FOR ALL OF US.



I SEE A MIDDLE AGED
WOMAN. SHE LIVES
IN THE HOUSE IN
FRONT OF A RIVER,
BETWEEN A
TOFU SHOP AND
A CONVENIENCE
STORE.

I SEE... THAT CONFIRMS
MY SUSPICIONS.
I HAD A FEW
SPIES REPORTING
STRANGE BEHAVIORS
FROM THAT LADY.

THE FOOT CLAN AND I
WERE A DEADLY
COMBINATION
THANKS TO THEIR
CONTACTS WITHIN THE
JAPANESE GOVERNMENT,
THEY COULD GATHER
INFORMATION ON JUST
ABOUT ANYONE WHO
LIVED IN JAPAN

KNOWING WHO CHANGED
THEIR IDENTITY OR MOVED
OUT OF JAPAN MERELY
HELPED THE FOOT CLAN
PUT SOME PEOPLE ON
WATCH. SOMETIMES, THEIR
INVESTIGATION WOULD BE
UNCONCLUSIVE AND
THEY WOULD PROCEED
WITH THE EXECUTION OF
THE SUSPECTS REGARDLESS

HOWEVER, WITH MY HELP,
THEY COULD NOT ONLY
CONFIRM WHO THE TRUE
TARGETS WERE ON THEIR
LIST OF SUSPECTS, THEY
COULD ALSO ROOT OUT
SOME MORINAGAS WHO
WENT COMPLETELY
BELOW THEIR RAMP

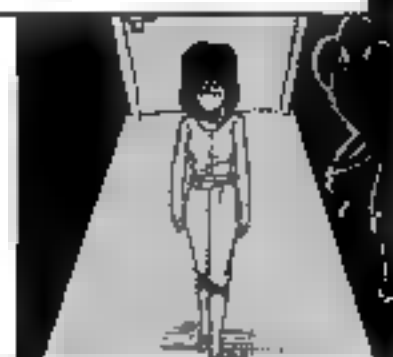
IT WAS A MASSACRE
MEN, WOMEN, CHILDREN
THE FOOT CLAN SPARED
NO ONE

THESE WERE
CASUALTIES WITHIN
THE FOOT CLAN AS WELL
IT WAS ONE THING TO
KILL NINJAS FROM RIVAL
CLANS, BUT KILLING
HELPLESS CHILDREN
OR BABIES BROKE
DOWN THE PSYCHE OF
MANY FOOT NINJAS

SOME OF THEM,
UNABLE TO FORGET THE
FACES OF THE INNOCENTS
THEY SLAYED, WOULD
COMMIT SEIKU, PROBABLY
IN A DESPERATE ACT
OF REDEMPTION FOR
THEIR ACTIONS.



KARAI FREQUENTLY MET WITH INFLUENTIAL PEOPLE THROUGHOUT JAPAN TO REMIND THEM OF THE IMPORTANCE TO KEEP OUR MISSION SECRET.



■ HER ABSENCE, I WAS ■ CHARGE OF OPERATIONS ■ THE FOOT CLAN BECAUSE OF MY AFFINITY WITH THE CURSE.



SHE GAVE ME ACCESS TO ALL DOCUMENTS ABOUT POTENTIAL TARGETS AS WELL AS INFORMATION ABOUT THE CURSE THAT WAS PASSED ON FOR GENERATIONS WITHIN THE CLAN.

ACCORDING TO THE CLAN'S RECORDS, THE FIRST PERSON WHO TOUCHED THE CURSED TOTSUKA SWORD WAS A MORINAGA.

YAMATA-NO-OROCHI TRIED TO CORRUPT HIM, BUT COULDN'T. JUST LIKE HIS NAME SUGGESTED, MORINAGA WAS BLESSED WITH THE "ETERNAL PROTECTION".

守永

MORINAGA IMMEDIATELY TRIED TO EXORCISE THE MONSTER, BUT THE RITUAL FAILED AND AS A RESULT, IT WAS ABLE TO MIX PART OF ITS SOUL WITH MORINAGA'S.

THUS, YAMATA-NO-OROCHI SHARES THE MORINAGA'S "ETERNAL PROTECTION"... AS LONG AS THE MORINAGAS ARE ALIVE, SO IS THE MONSTER.



I THOUGHT YOU'D BE HERE, AS USUAL... KAPPA.

JUST BECAUSE KARAI PUT YOU IN COMMAND IN HER ABSENCE DOESN'T MEAN YOU CAN SLACK OFF.

SADAO, I'M DOING SOME RESEARCH ABOUT THE CURSE. I NEED TO KNOW MORE ABOUT THE ENEMY THAT WE'RE FIGHTING.

ANYTHING TO REPORT?

YES! WE KILLED ANOTHER FAMILY TONIGHT! AND ONE OF MY COMRADES KILLED HIMSELF RIGHT AFTER THAT!!

BUT YOU CAN'T RELATE TO THAT AT ALL, CAN YOU? YOU HYPOCRITE!!

DON'T YOU DARE SAY THAT YOU'RE "FIGHTING" ANYTHING AT ALL! EVER SINCE KARAI TOOK YOU IN, ALL YOU DID WAS TELL US WHO TO KILL AND STAY COOPED IN HERE READING SCROLLS WHILE WE TAINT OUR HANDS AND SOULS ON YOUR ORDERS!



WHY SHOULD YOU, OF ALL PEOPLE, GET TO TURN A BLIND EYE TO THE HORRORS OF OUR MISSION?

YOU'VE ALREADY KILLED SO MANY... YOU'VE ALREADY KILLED RYOTA!! WHAT DIFFERENCE DOES IT MAKE FOR YOU TO STOP KILLING NOW? YOU'RE STILL GOING TO HELL.. WE ALL ARE!



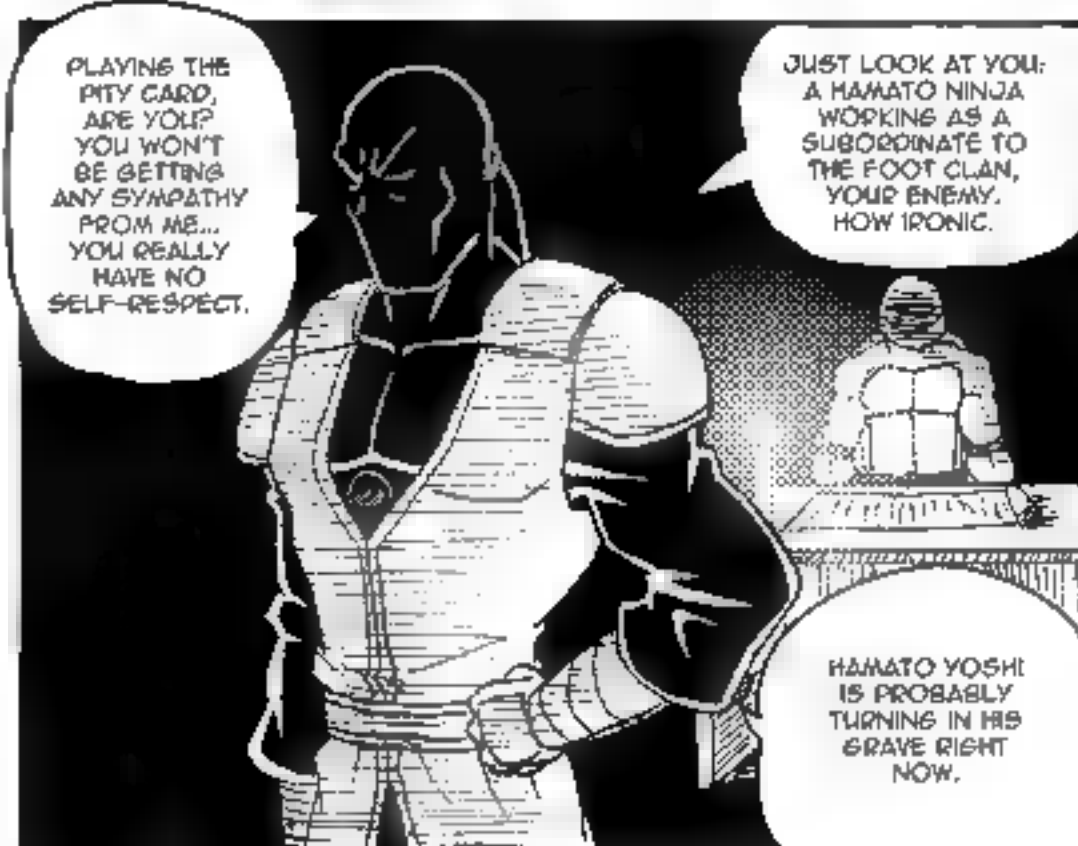
NOW...
WHAT DO
YOU HAVE
TO SAY FOR
YOURSELF?

WELL?



I... I'VE BEEN
THROUGH A LOT TOO.
THE CURSE MADE ME
DO UNSPEAKABLE
THINGS TO THOSE
DEAR TO ME...

...THINGS SO HORRIBLE
I'D RATHER NOT TALK OR
THINK ABOUT IT RIGHT NOW...



PLAYING THE
PITY CARD,
ARE YOU?
YOU WON'T
BE GETTING
ANY SYMPATHY
FROM ME...
YOU REALLY
HAVE NO
SELF-RESPECT.

JUST LOOK AT YOU:
A HAMATO NINJA
WORKING AS A
SUBORDINATE TO
THE FOOT CLAN,
YOUR ENEMY.
HOW IRONIC.

HAMATO YOSHI
IS PROBABLY
TURNING IN HIS
GRAVE RIGHT
NOW.



YOU'RE LIKE A
WILD BOAR THAT DECIDED
TO BASK IN CAPTIVITY
SO IT CAN BE USED TO DIG
UP TRUFFLES FOR HUMANS...
EVER SO SLIGHTLY USEFUL,
YET SO SADLY PATHETIC.



HOW DARE
YOU INSULT
MY HONOR?

YOU...
A SLIMY
FOOT NINJA
LIKE YOU...



BUT BECAUSE
OF YOU... MY
TURN CAME UP
AT LAST...



I COULDN'T
FINISH YOU
OFF LAST
TIME...



THIS TIME...
I'LL MAKE
SURE YOU
DIE LIKE THE
DOG YOU
ARE...



DON'T
MAKE ME
LAUGH...



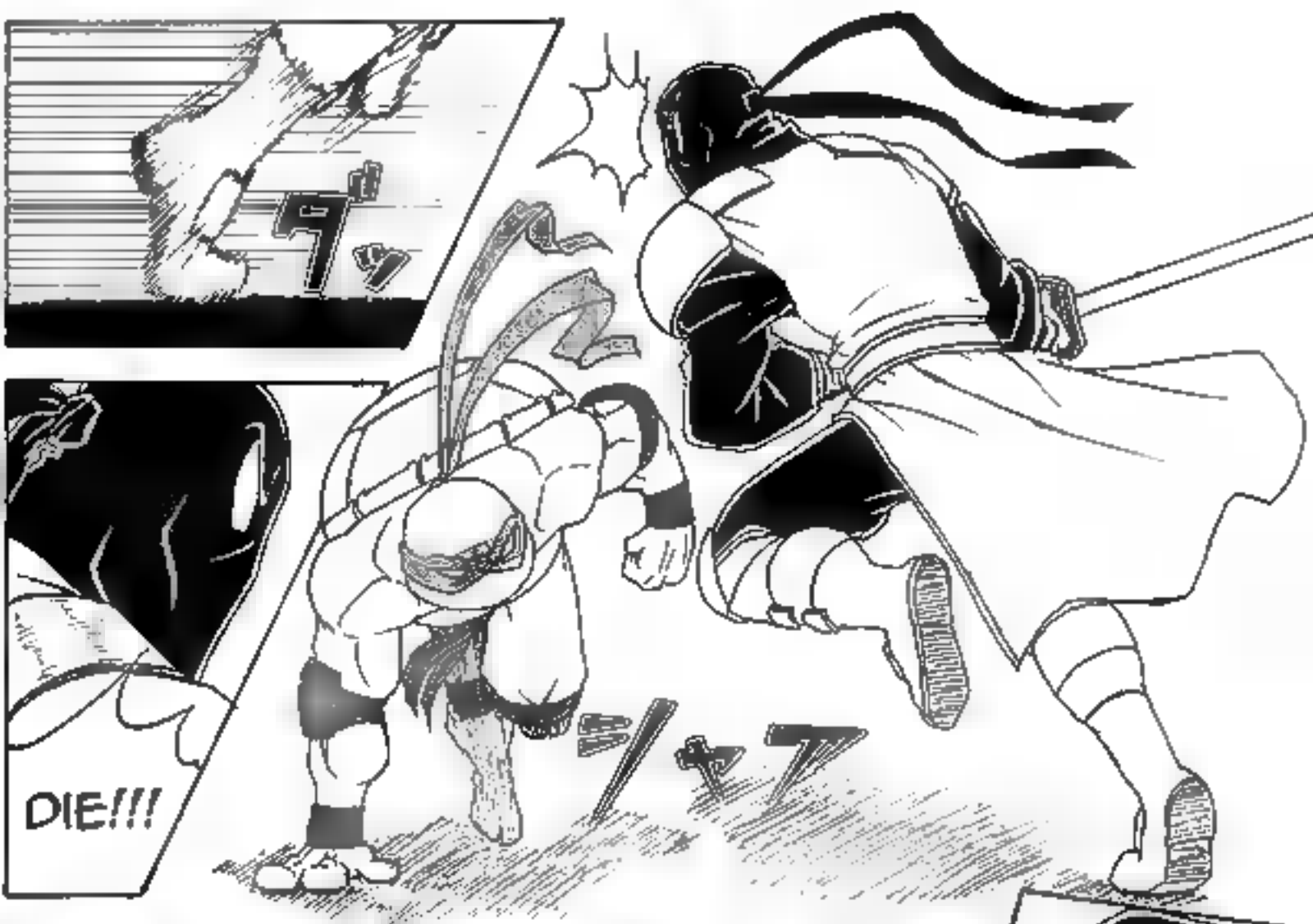
YES... YES!!
THAT'S RIGHT!
ATTACK ME!

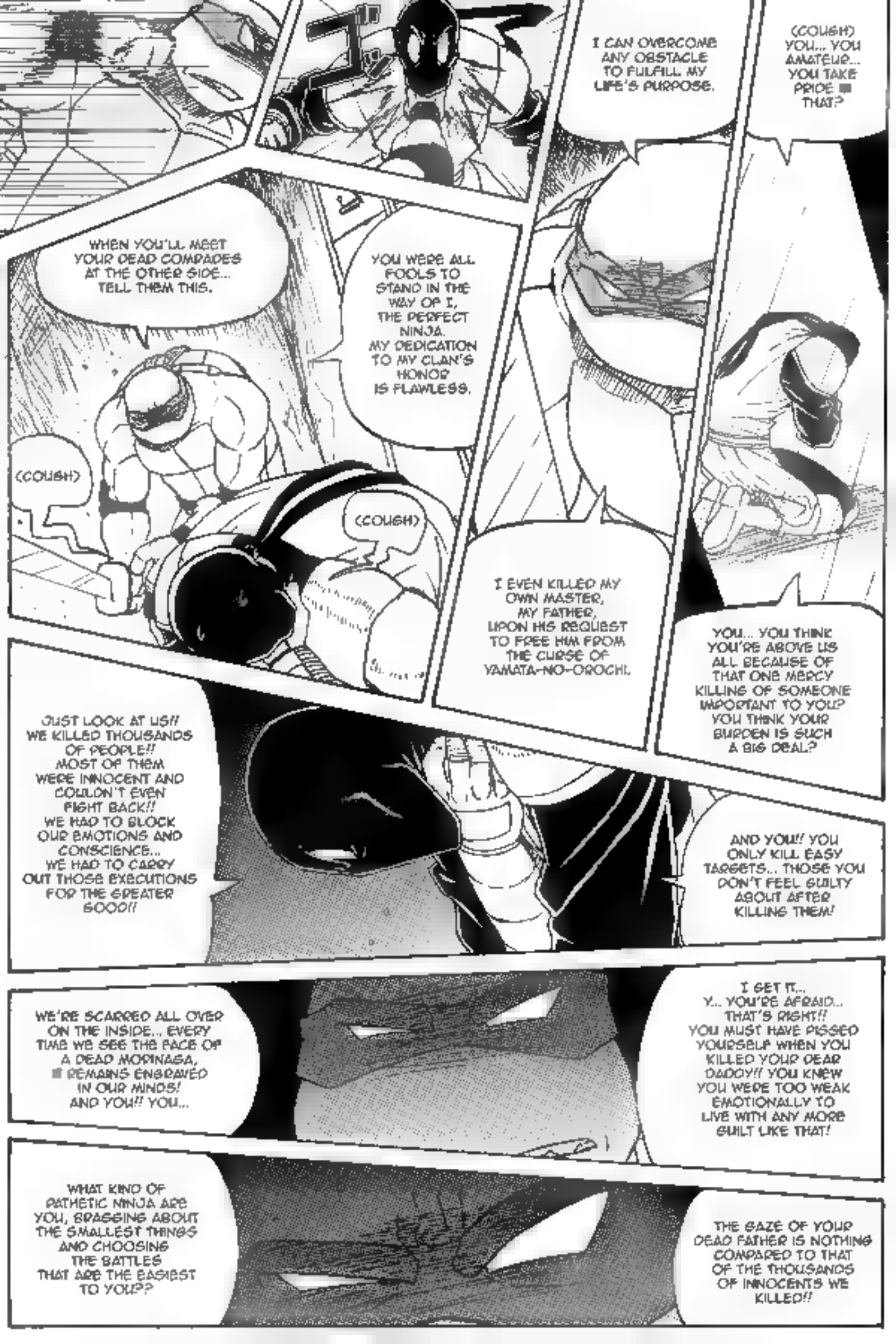
I'LL AVENGE
ALL THOSE YOU
KILLED...



NOW I CAN KILL
YOU AND TELL KAPAI
IT WAS IN SELF-DEFENSE!

...AND
RYOTA!





I CAN OVERCOME
ANY OBSTACLE
TO FULFILL MY
LIFE'S PURPOSE.

(COUGH)
YOU... YOU
AMATEUR...
YOU TAKE
PRIDE ■
THAT?

WHEN YOU'LL MEET
YOUR DEAD COMPANES
AT THE OTHER SIDE...
TELL THEM THIS.

YOU WERE ALL
FOOLS TO
STAND IN THE
WAY OF I,
THE PERFECT
NINJA.
MY DEDICATION
TO MY CLAN'S
HONOR
IS FLAWLESS.

(COUGH)

(COUGH)

I EVEN KILLED MY
OWN MASTER,
MY FATHER,
UPON HIS REQUEST
TO FREE HIM FROM
THE CURSE OF
YAMATA-NO-OROCHI.

YOU... YOU THINK
YOU'RE ABOVE US
ALL BECAUSE OF
THAT ONE MERCY
KILLING OF SOMEONE
IMPORTANT TO YOU?
YOU THINK YOUR
BURDEN IS SUCH
A BIG DEAL?

JUST LOOK AT US!!
WE KILLED THOUSANDS
OF PEOPLE!!
MOST OF THEM
WERE INNOCENT AND
COULDN'T EVEN
FIGHT BACK!!
WE HAD TO BLOCK
OUR EMOTIONS AND
CONSCIENCE...
WE HAD TO CARRY
OUT THOSE EXECUTIONS
FOR THE GREATER
GOOD!!

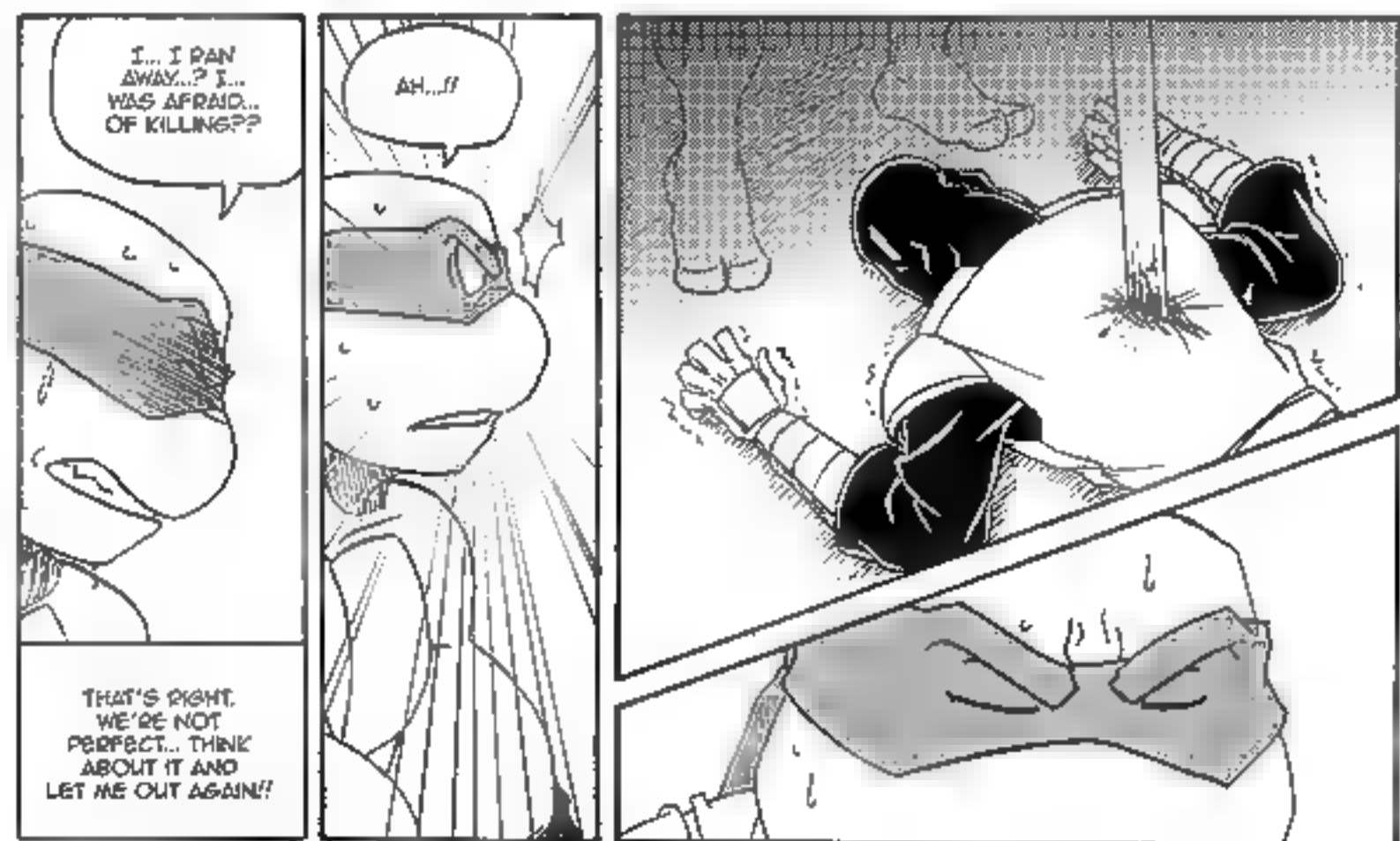
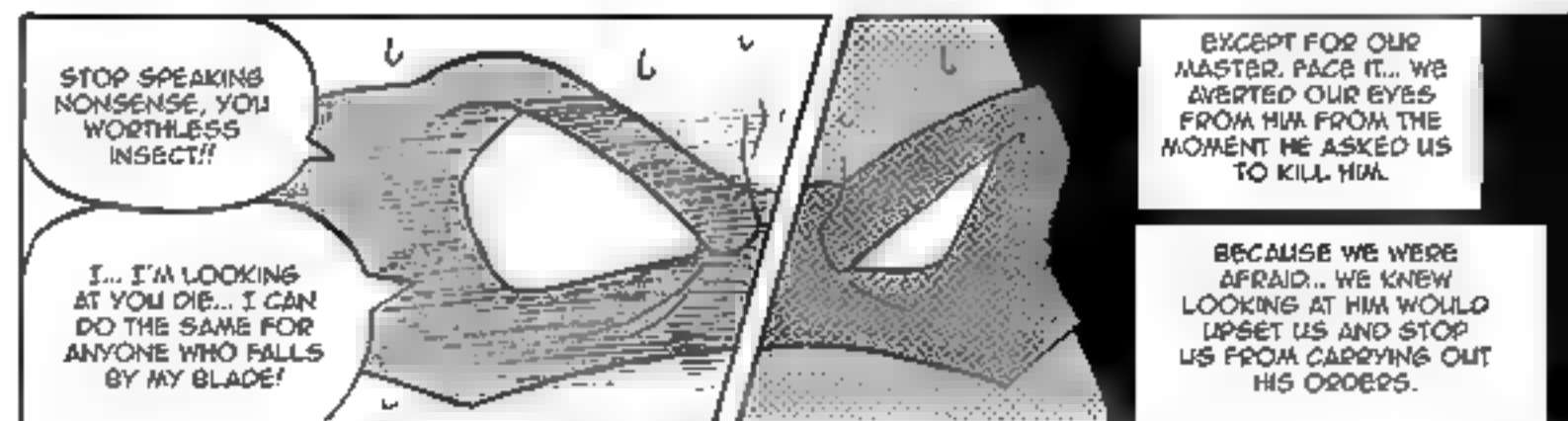
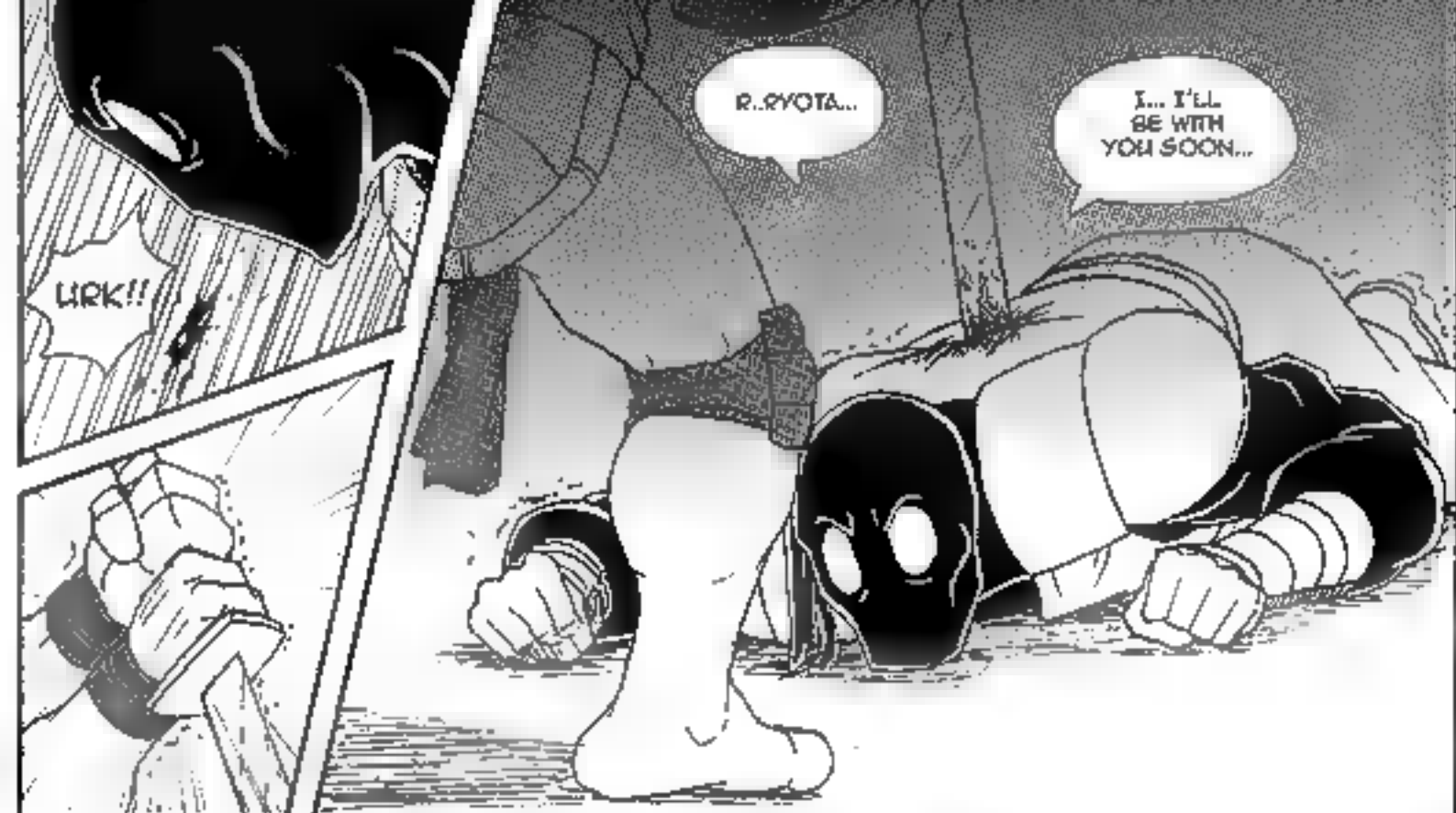
AND YOU!! YOU
ONLY KILL EASY
TARGETS... THOSE YOU
DON'T FEEL GUILTY
ABOUT AFTER
KILLING THEM!

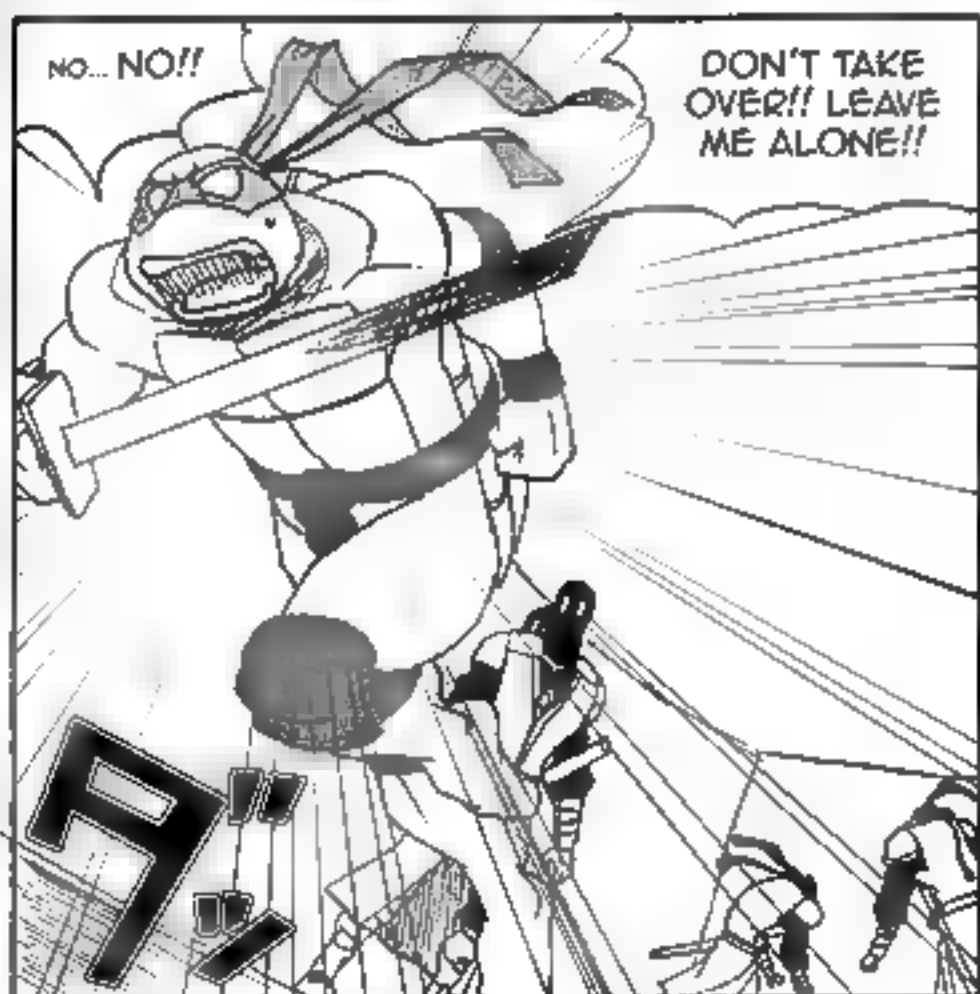
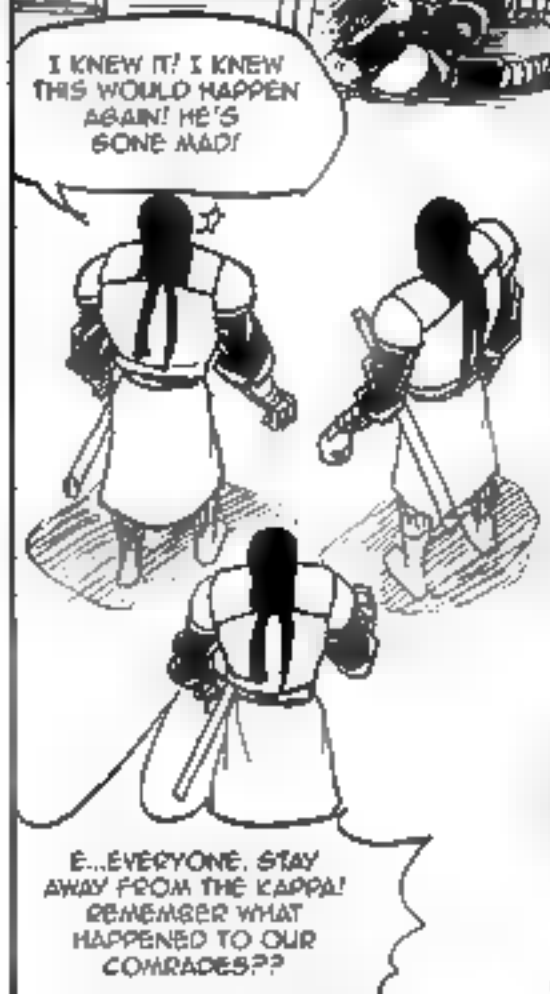
WE'RE SCARRED ALL OVER
ON THE INSIDE... EVERY
TIME WE SEE THE FACE OF
A DEAD MOPINAGA,
■ REMAINS ENGRAVED
IN OUR MINDS!
AND YOU!! YOU...

I GET IT...
Y... YOU'RE AFRAID...
THAT'S RIGHT!!
YOU MUST HAVE PISSED
YOURSELF WHEN YOU
KILLED YOUR DEAR
DADDY!! YOU KNEW
YOU WERE TOO WEAK
EMOTIONALLY TO
LIVE WITH ANY MORE
GUILT LIKE THAT!

WHAT KIND OF
PATHETIC NINJA ARE
YOU, BRAGGING ABOUT
THE SMALLEST THINGS
AND CHOOSING
THE BATTLES
THAT ARE THE EASIEST
TO YOU??

THE GAZE OF YOUR
DEAD FATHER IS NOTHING
COMPARED TO THAT
OF THE THOUSANDS
OF INNOCENTS WE
KILLED!!







THE MERE PRESENCE
OF THOSE NINJAS
TRIGGERED MY DARK
SELF!

EVEN AS WEAKENED AS IT
WAS, IT WAS STILL ABLE TO
AWAKEN QUICKLY!
WITH ALL THOSE NINJAS
AROUND ME, I CAN'T
CONTAIN IT!



I CAN'T KEEP KILLING
THEM... THEY ARE
MY ALLIES IN MY
MISSION...

EVEN WHEN
THEY KNEW HOW
POTENTIALLY
DANGEROUS I
COULD BE, THEY
PUT UP WITH ME
TO FIGHT THE
CURSE...

I CAN'T RUN AWAY
EITHER, EVEN IF IT
WERE TO SAVE
THEIR LIVES!
WITHOUT MY
POWERS, THEY
CAN'T DETECT
WHO THE TARGETS
ARE!



I MUST
WEAKEN
THE CURSE'S
INFLUENCE
ON ME...



THERE IS NO
WAY I CAN
BACK DOWN.

I HAVE COME
THIS FAR IN MY
INVESTIGATION....
AND NOW
IT HAS ALL COME
DOWN TO THIS.

AS MUCH AS I
FEEL HORRIBLE
ABOUT IT, I NOW
KNOW THAT
THERE IS NO
OTHER WAY.

A SINGLE
THOUGHT...

...HAS KEPT
ME MOVING
FORWARD.

HERE
I AM...

...STRUGGLING
TO DEAL WITH
THE CURSE'S
INFLUENCE ON
ME.

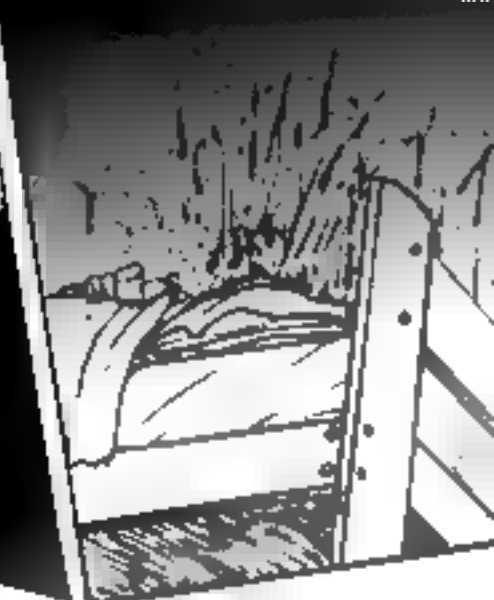
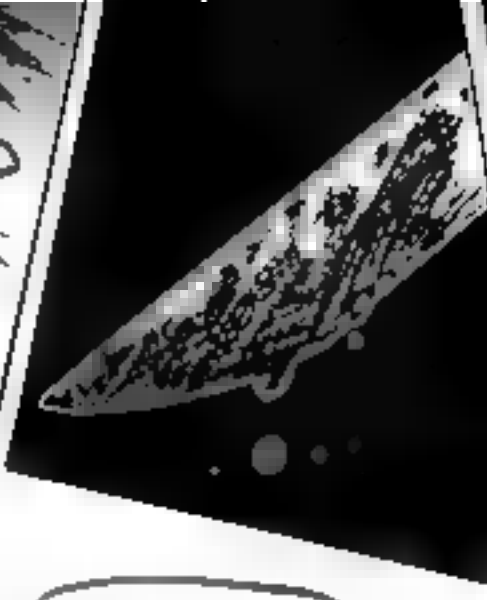
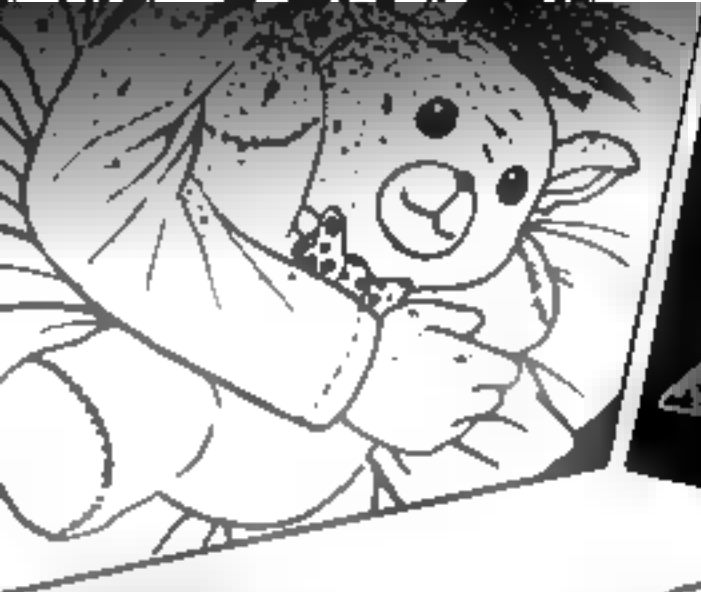
BUT WHAT OF
THE OTHER
PEOPLE WHO
ARE CURSED
AS WELL?

WHAT ABOUT...
RAPHAEL?

HE MUST BE
SUFFERING
AS WELL...

...AND ONLY
I CAN HELP
HIM RIGHT NOW.

HIS LIFE
DEPENDS
ON ME!!



I'M
SORRY

I HAD NO
CHOICE
PEOPLE ARE
COUNTING ON
ME



SOME
NINJAS
CAUGHT UP
WITH ME

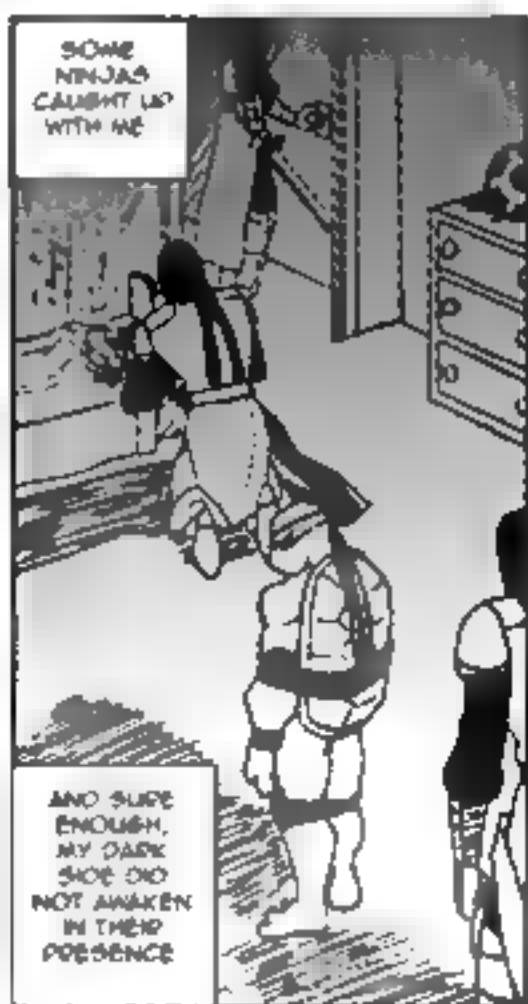
THEY
FINISHED
THE JOB
I STARTED

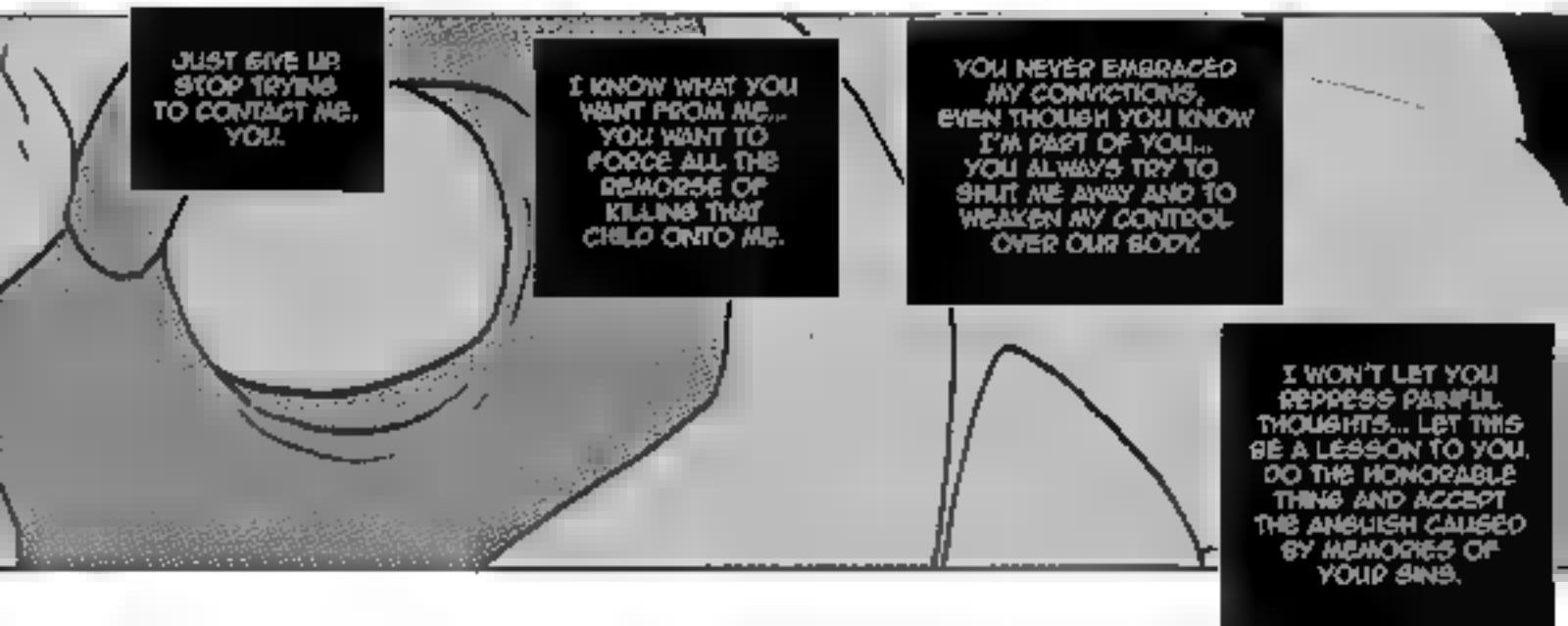
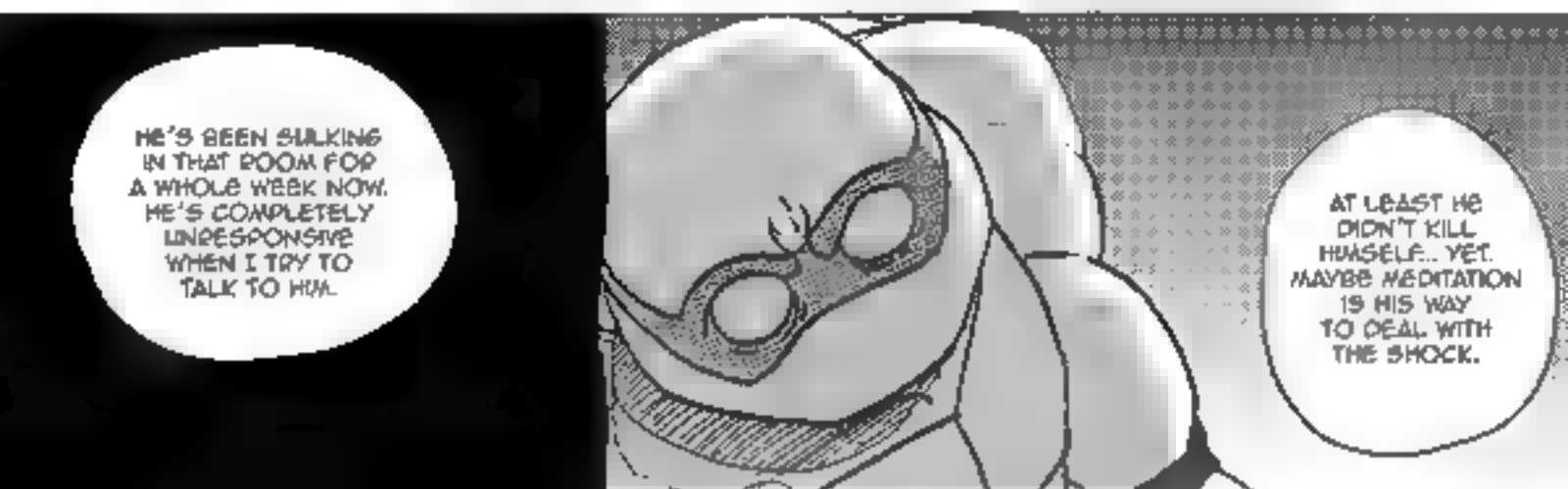
SENSEI

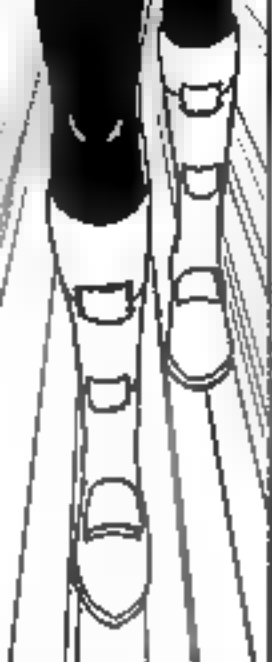
IF YOU WERE ME
WHAT WOULD YOU
HAVE DONE?

AND SURE
ENOUGH,
MY DARK
SIDE DID
NOT AWAKEN
IN THEIR
PRESENCE

AND
CLEANED
UP AFTER
ME







HE'S
IN
HERE...

HAMATO.

...FOR A
WHOLE
WEEK...?

I'M NOT
HERE TO
CONSOLE YOU
OR TO GIVE
YOU ORDERS...

...BUT I MUST
REMAND YOU OF THE
REALITY OF THINGS.

FOR THE SAKE OF
HUMANITY,
NO MATTER HOW YOU FEEL
ABOUT ALL THIS RIGHT NOW,
WE NEED TO PROCEED WITH
OUR MISSION...

...WITH OR
WITHOUT YOUR
SUPPORT.

IN THE LATTER
CASE, WE'LL GO
BACK TO RELYING
ON OUR CONTACTS
TO TRACK DOWN
PEOPLE OF THE
MORNAGA
BLOODLINE.

THOUGH BY
DOING THIS
WE MIGHT
END UP HUNTING
THE WRONG
PEOPLE... WE
CANNOT LET
THIS STOP US.

I WON'T
GIVE UP, KARAI.

IT WAS JUST...
MY FIRST TIME
KILLING A CHILD.
I NEEDED SOME TIME...
I... I NOW
UNDERSTAND WHAT
THE OTHER NINJAS
ARE GOING THROUGH...

AND I THINK
I CAN LIVE
WITH THE GUILT.
I REALIZED
THAT... I WAS
ALREADY USED
TO IT ANYWAYS...
IF I BLOCK
PART OF MY
EMOTIONS
AND CONSCIENCE,
I CAN REMAIN
FUNCTIONAL...
JUST LIKE
SADAO SAID...

SO... FROM
NOW ON,
I'LL DO
OWN SHARE
OF THE DIRTY
WORK.
I'LL KILL
THE TARGETS
MYSELF...



...AND SO,
THE HAMATO
NINJA IS NOW
WORKING ON
THE FIELD.



IT WAS A DECISION
HE TOOK HIMSELF
A MONTH AGO, RIGHT
AFTER HE INCAPACITATED
YOU IN THAT INCIDENT.

THANKS TO HIS
SKILLS WE'RE
MAKING A LOT OF
PROGRESS IN OUR
MISSION.



AS A RESULT,
THE CURSE
WAS CONTINUOUSLY
■ A WEAKENED
STATE.
THIS KEPT HIS
"OTHER SELF"
AT BAY.



THAT'S IT
FOR THE
BRIEFING.

SORRY I
CAN'T BE OF
ANY HELP,
KARAI...

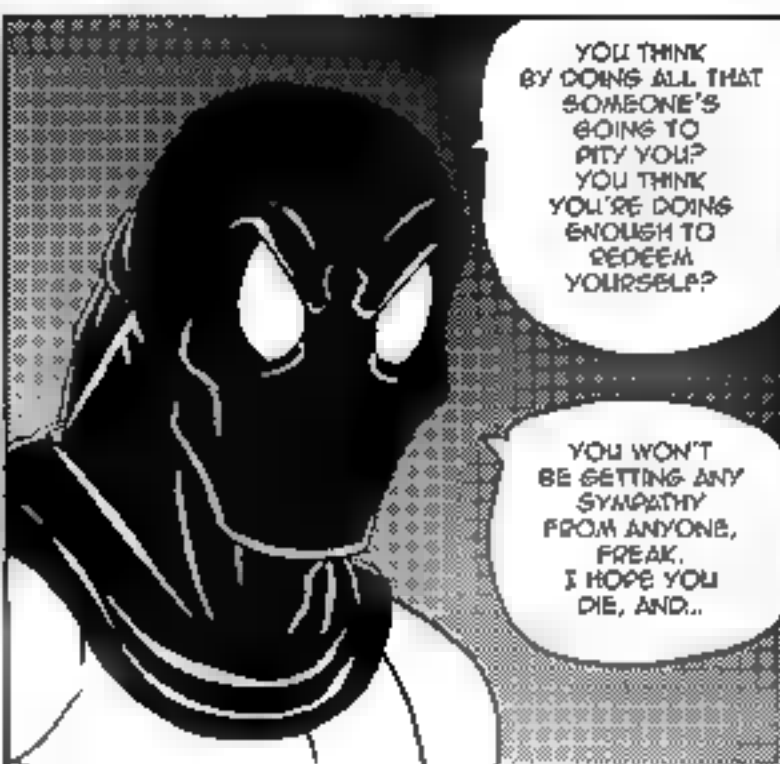
REST WELL,
SADAO.
EVERYTHING IS
UNDER CONTROL.



HEY,
YOU.



I HEARD
EVERYTHING
FROM KARAI.



YOU THINK
BY DOING ALL THAT
SOMEONE'S
GOING TO
PITY YOU?
YOU THINK
YOU'RE DOING
ENOUGH TO
REDEEM
YOURSELF?

YOU WON'T
BE GETTING ANY
SYMPATHY
FROM ANYONE,
FREAK.
I HOPE YOU
DIE, AND...



SA...DAO...!

YOU'RE...
ALIVE...!!!

S...STAY
STILL....

HAH?

I... I CAN
FEEL YOUR
PULSE...

THE HELL
I WILL!!

I WON'T GO
DOWN WITHOUT
A FIGHT, YOU...!!

AT LAST...
AT LAST,
SOMEONE
SURVIVED...

WHAT THE...
LET GO!!

PLEASE...
TAKE OFF
YOUR
MASK...

HANDS OFF!!
WHAT ARE YOU
DOING?

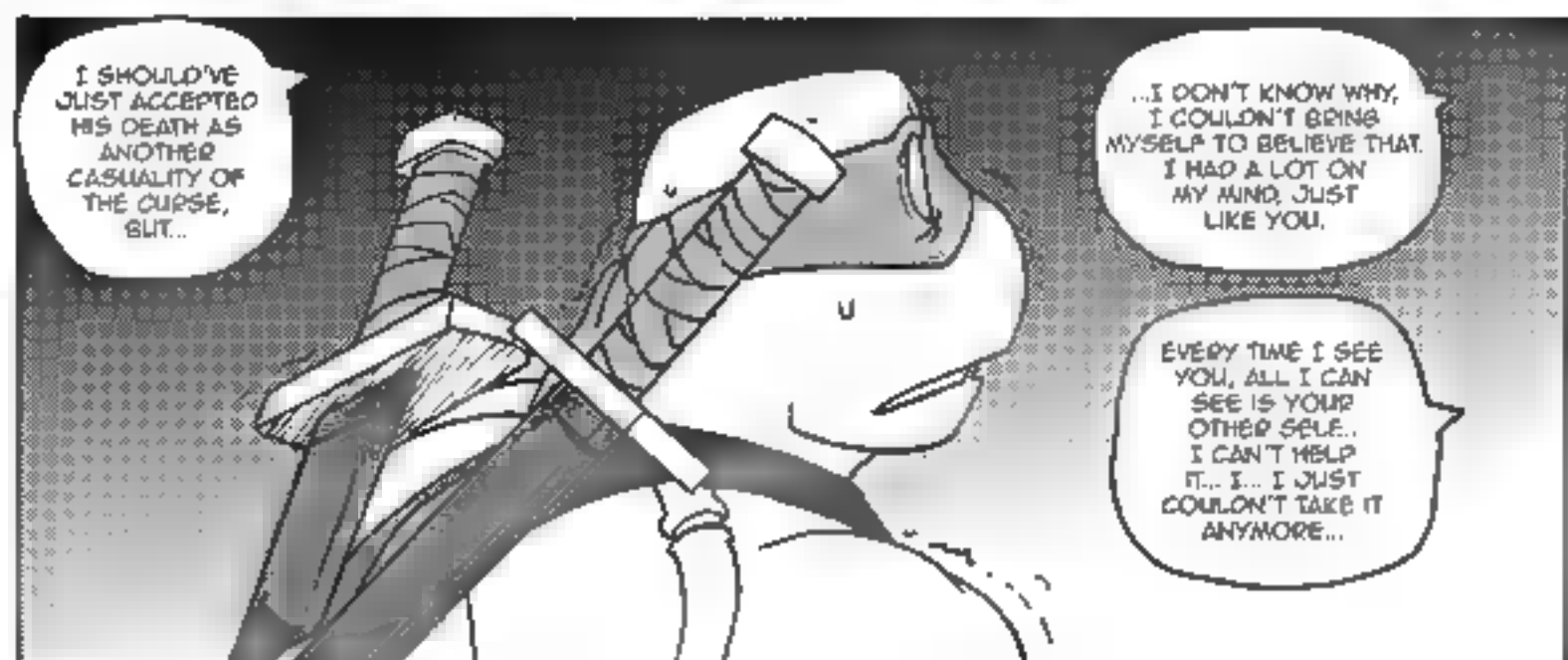
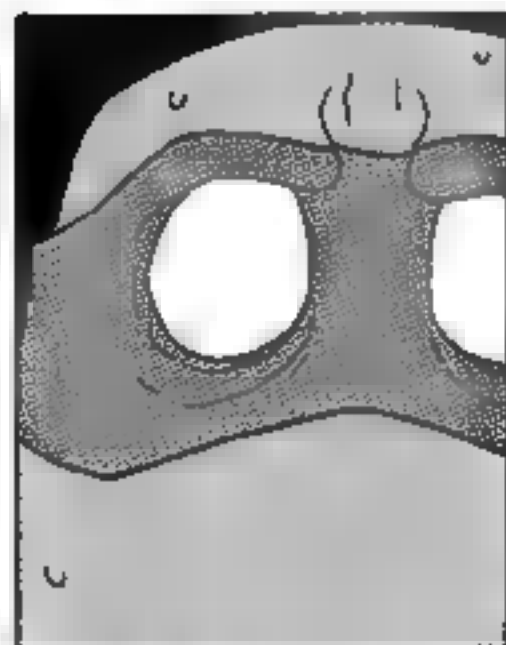
I... I NEED
TO SEE YOUR
FACE...
PLEASE...

WHAT?
WHY?

I...
I THOUGHT
I COULD
ENDURE IT...
BUT I CAN'T.
I CAN'T STOP
SEEING THE
FACES OF
THOSE I
EXECUTED...

THERE ARE SO MANY
OF THEM NOW... THEY JUST
WON'T LEAVE MY MIND...
ALL THOSE MORINAGAS...
ALL THOSE FOOT NINJAS...
ALL THOSE INNOCENT
BYSTANDERS... EVEN
MY OWN FATHER...

SO I THOUGHT
MAYBE... JUST
MAYBE... SEEING
THE FACE OF
A SURVIVOR
WOULD EASE
MY MIND...



IT WAS JUST...
USELESS...
BLAMING SOMETHING
IMMATERIAL AND
ABSTRACT LIKE
THE CURSE.
I FEEL LIKE I'M
BLAMING NO ONE
ELSE BUT MYSELF
WHEN I DO THAT...

AND THEN
FOR ONCE,
IT WAS SOMEONE
ELSE'S FAULT...
A REAL PERSON.
I COULD AT
LAST SEE THE
FACE OF SOMEONE
TO BLAME THAT
WASN'T ME...
SO... I IMMEDIATELY
BLAMED YOU.

AT FIRST,
IN MY HEAD
IT WAS ALL
ABOUT RYOTA.

NEXT
THING
I KNEW...

I WAS TRYING
TO FORCE
ALL MY BLUNT
ONTO YOU...

YET YOU HAD
YOUR OWN
PROBLEMS
TOO.

I SHOULD'VE
KNOWN
BETTER...

YOUR
FACE...

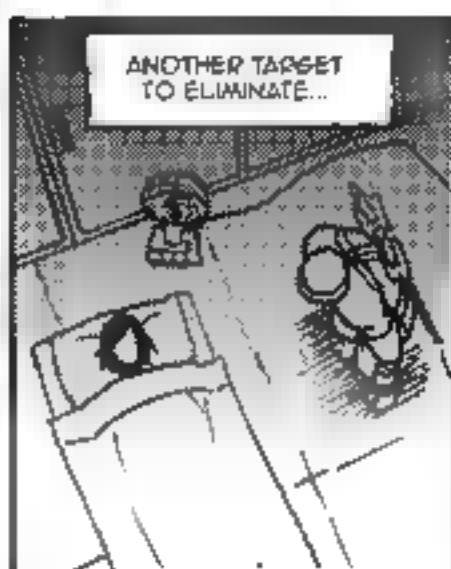
PLEASE...
REMOVE YOUR
MASK...

I NEED...
SOME PEACE
OF MIND...

I'M WILLING TO TRY
TO UNDERSTAND YOUR
SITUATION, BUT...
I CAN'T DO YOU
ANY FAVORS RIGHT NOW.

I WAS STILL PART OF
YOU THAT KILLED SOMEONE
DEAR TO ME.
I NEED SOME TIME TO
THINK IT OVER.





AND SO, FOR THE FOLLOWING FOUR YEARS, SADAO REMAINED BY MY SIDE THROUGHOUT MY MISSIONS.

WE WOULD TAKE TURNS EXECUTING OUR TARGETS. IT WASN'T LIKE THE OTHER NINJAS DIDN'T ALSO DO THEIR SHARE OF THE WORK, BUT JUST BY INTERACTING DIRECTLY WITH ME THE WAY HE DID, I FELT LIKE I WAS NO LONGER ALONE CARRYING MY BURDEN.



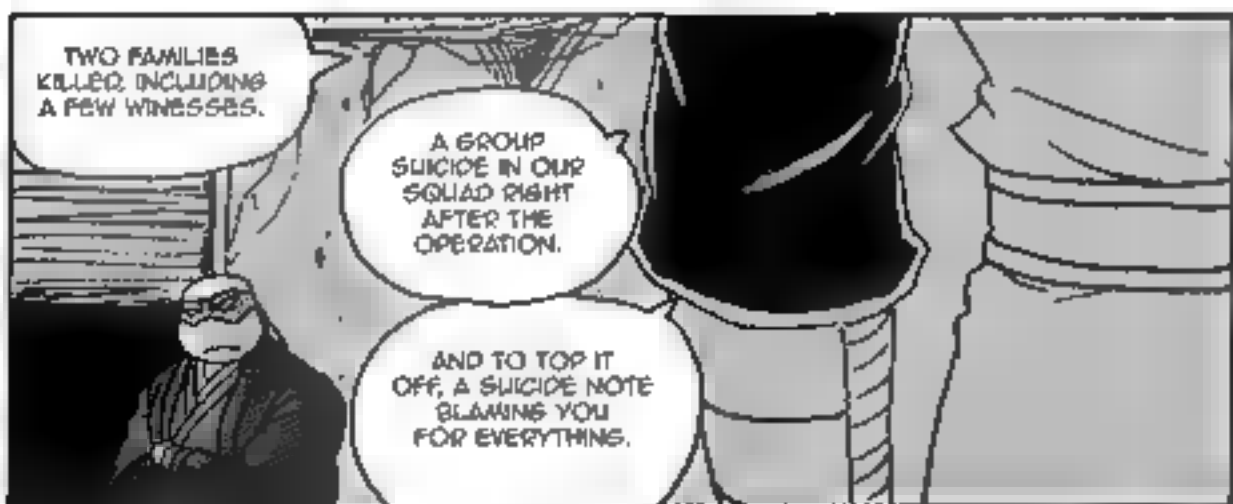
I STOPPED REACTING TO HEADS ROLLING AT MY FEET. THE SMELL OF RUST NO LONGER MADE ME UNEASY. WHENEVER I LOOKED AT MY BLADES AT NIGHT, THEY ALWAYS SHOWED ME THE SAME CRIMSON MOON... AND THAT LEFT ME UNFAZED.

I LEARNED TO BLOCK MY EMOTIONS.

FOUR YEARS
LATER...



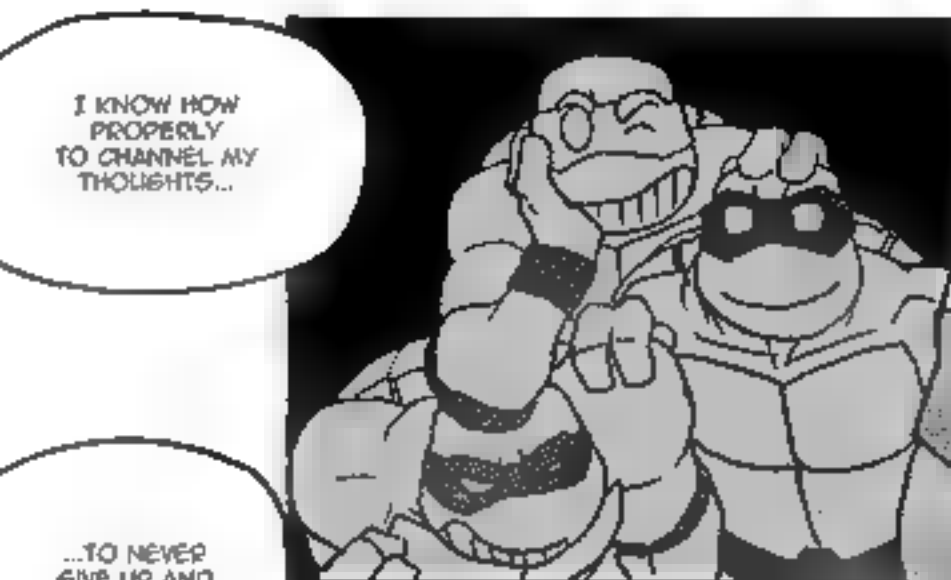
SADAO...?

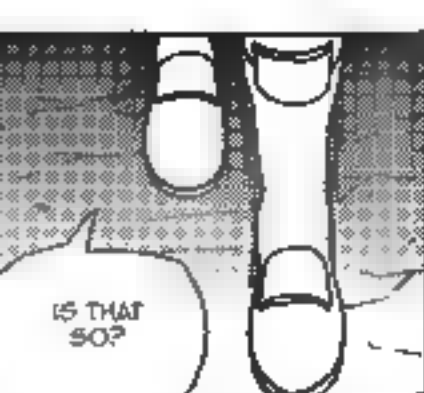


OUR OPERATIONS
WERE MOVED
TO SENDAI.



BESIDES...





IS THAT
SO?



YOU DIDN'T
NEED TO
SEE MY FACE
AFTER ALL.



MAY I
SEE IT
NOW,
ACUTALLY?

YOUR IMAGE
IS ACTUALLY
PART OF MY
THOUGHT
PROCESS WHEN
I MEDITATE LIKE
THIS.



I THOUGHT YOU
GAVE UP THAT
STRANGE IDEA...

WHY WOULD YOU
NEED TO DO THAT
NOW, ANYWAY?
DIDN'T YOU JUST
SAY YOU WERE
COPING WELL
ALREADY?



EVERY LITTLE BIT
HELPS.
ALSO, I WANT TO
GET TO KNOW
YOU BETTER.

WE'RE
ALLIES.



WHAT'S
WRONG?
ARE YOU
SHY?

WE'RE ALONE
HERE.
IT'S OKAY.



ALRIGHT,
STOP IT THERE.
LEONARDOO...
ARE YOU
COMING ON
TO ME?

HUM?
ERR...

NO.
BUT...

RIIIGHT... I GET THAT, FOR
YOU, "TAKING MY PULSE"
MEANS TO GROPE ME.
SO I HAVE AN IDEA WHAT
THAT MASK THING IMPLIES...
LOOK, REPTILIAN MUTANTS
ARE NOT MY TYPE...

Eww...



OH, HEY... FOR THE
FIRST TIME, IT'S
"LEONARDO"
INSTEAD OF
"KAPPA"...

IS IT SAFE
TO ASSUME...
THAT YOU HATE
ME A BIT LESS?




...JUST
A BIT.

IT SEEMED ABSURD TO
TALK CASUALLY THE WAY
WE DID, RIGHT AFTER SO
MANY LIVES WERE LOST
AROUND US.

BUT IT SEEMED A LOT
LESS ABSURD WHEN
I WASN'T THE ONLY
ONE DOING IT.
I FELT RELIEVED.

HAD I BEEN ALONE...
I WOULD'VE BEEN
LOCKED IN A STATE OF
EMOTION BLOCKING
PERMANENTLY.
I WOULD'VE TURNED INTO
NOTHING MORE BUT
A MINDLESS
KILLING MACHINE.

ULTIMATELY, BY FINALLY
OPENING UP TO SADAO,
I FOUND A KINDRED
SPIRIT IN HIM, WITHIN
ALL THE ASSURDITY
AROUND US...
A PRESENCE THAT KEPT
THE HUMANE SIDE OF ME
ALIVE, DURING ALL
THOSE YEARS.



WE'VE COME A
LONG WAY,
HAVEN'T WE.

THE LAST MORINAGAS
ARE HERE IN NEW YORK.
JUST A FEW MORE, AND
AFTER THAT, WE'LL NO
LONGER HAVE TO KILL...

BY THE WAY,
SOMEONE'S BEEN
EAVESDROPPING
ON US ALL THIS
TIME. I WAS WAITING
FOR YOU TO
REACT, BUT YOU
JUST IGNORED
HIM. WHY?

IT'S ALRIGHT.
I KNOW HIM...
HE'S SUPPOSED
TO BE ON OUR
SIDE.

I ASKED KARAI
TO WORK OUT A
DEAL WITH HIM,
SINCE HE'S IN THE
POLICE FORCE.

THOUGH KNOWING
HER METHODS,
I EXPECTED HIM
TO SHOW UP AND
ASK ME QUESTIONS.

WELL, OUR
DISCUSSION
CERTAINLY FILLED
HIM IN ON SOME
DETAILS.

GO ON,
NOW. YOU
HANDLE
HIM.

THIS IS
MADNESS.

DO YOU
EXPECT ME
TO OVERLOOK
ALL OF THAT?

NOBODY.

THE DEAL I MADE WITH
THAT OLD HAS WAS TO
OVERLOOK THE INCIDENT
ON CHRISTMAS EVE!

IT'S BEEN
A WHILE,
HASN'T IT?

BUT THIS...
THIS IS
TOO MUCH!

WE NEED YOUR
HELP. WE NEED
YOU TO COVER UP
OUR ACTS DURING
OUR STAY HERE...

WE'RE TALKING
ABOUT
ASSASSINATIONS!!

IT'S BAD
ENOUGH
THAT I'M
STUCK UNDER
SOME NINJA
CLAN'S
THUMB...

...AND NOW THIS?
IS THIS WHAT
YOU REALLY
WANT, LEONARDO?

DON'T THINK FOR A
SECOND THAT I'M
BUYING INTO ALL
THIS "CURSE" BULLSHIT!
SEEMS TO ME LIKE
YOU AND YOUR NEW
LITTLE FRIENDS HAVE
BEEN KILLING UNDER
THE GUISE OF SOME
SICK FAIRY TALE!

WHAT
HAPPENED TO
YOUR SENSE
OF JUSTICE?

HAVE YOU
EVER ASKED
YOURSELF
WHO THE TRUE
ENEMY WAS?

T...THE...
ENEMY...??

MY...
ENEMIES...

ADMIT IT... YOU'RE
ANGRY BECAUSE
YOU HAVE TO
STOOP DOWN
TO HIS LEVEL
TO NEGOTIATE.

HE'S NOTHING
BUT A SLAVE
TO SOME
VAIN AND
CORRUPT
SYSTEM...

...ALL THOSE
NOT WORTHY
OF BREATHING
THE SAME AIR
I DO...!!

WHAT
DID YOU
SAY?

..!!

NOBODY... I KNOW
I'M ASKING A
LOT OF YOU, BUT...

YOU'RE THE ONLY
ONE IN THE POLICE
FORCE OF NEW YORK
I CAN TRUST.

...YET YOU FEEL RELIEVED BECAUSE
THIS SLIPPOON IS THE FIRST "FRIEND"
FROM THE PAST TO WHOM YOU
COULD REVEAL THE TRUTH BEHIND
YOUR ABSENCE...

...OR WAS IT
MORE LIKE A
CONFESSION...?

PLEASE,
YOU MUST
COVER UP
OUR ACTS!

YOU DON'T EVEN TRUST
HIM... AFTER SEVENTEEN
YEARS, HE'S JUST A
VAGUE MEMORY TO YOU...
BUT... YOU'RE SO
DESPERATE FOR
ACCEPTANCE...

YOU'RE NINJAS...
EVEN IF THE WORLD
FOUND OUT ABOUT
YOUR "MISSION",
YOU'D STILL
BE ABLE TO
STEALTHILY CARRY
ON WITH IT.

HE'S PLAYING
WITH YOU...

HE ENJOYS
SEEING YOU
AT HIS
MERCY...!

YOU NEED MY
INTERVENTION FOR
SOMETHING ELSE...
I WANT TO KNOW
WHAT IT IS,
LEONARDO...



I BEG OF YOU!
WE NEED YOUR
HELP HIDING THE
BLOODY TRAILS
LEFT BY OUR
MISSION!

YOU MEAN...
YOU'RE HIDING
THE TRUTH FROM
THEM?

THEY MUST
NOT KNOW
ANYTHING
ABOUT IT!!

OR ELSE...
MY BROTHERS WILL
LOOK INTO IT!!

HOW CAN YOU
BOW DOWN
BEFORE THIS
INSECT??

AND WHAT FOR?
THOSE THREE
DISHONORABLE
FOOLS YOU
CALL YOUR
SIBLINGS?

THE INNOCENT
LIVES BOUND TO
IT, THE PURGE I'VE
BEEN CARRYING
OUT TO STOP
THE TICKING TIME
BOMBS INSIDE
THOSE OF US
WHO ARE CURSED...!

CAN YOU IMAGINE
WHAT THEY'LL THINK
ABOUT THEIR
CONDITION?
ABOUT ME??

YOUR DEDICATION
TO YOUR BROTHERS
IS ADMIRABLE,
LEONARDO.
HOWEVER...

...I'M STILL NOT
BUYING IT.
EVERYTHING YOU
SAY REVOLVES
AROUND THE CURSE.
WHAT IF YOU
WERE FOOLED...?

...BY
THEM!

THERE IS
A CURSE!!

THEY'RE
ASSASSINS!

S...STOP IT!

DON'T
WAKE
UP...!!

THEY MUST
BE LYING!

BE ON
THE SIDE
OF JUSTICE!

REALLY...?

THERE IS
NO CURSE!

THE FOOT CLAN
IS MY... MY...!!

DO THE RIGHT
THING!

LEO...!

YOU ASKED
FOR IT!!

PERMANENTLY
SHUTTING YOU
UP..

THAT'S THE
RIGHT THING...



ERGH!

!!!



NO!!
YOUR
FRIEND'S
ON HIS
OWN!!



NOBODY!!
YOU
LIAR!

YOU WERE
GOING TO
HELP THIS
NINJA KILL
LEO!!

YOU'RE
ONE
OF
THEM!!



WHAT??
NO, NO,
NO!!

YOU GOT IT WRONG
AGAIN, YOU STUPID
MUTANT!!!
I TOLD YOU, I'M
NOT WITH THOSE...

SILENCE!

LEONARDO!

SETTLE
DOWN!

HUMPH...

THIS IS SPIRALING
OUT OF CONTROL!
TELL HIM I'M NOT
YOUR ENEMY!!

I DON'T
KNOW
HIM...

I DON'T
CARE WHAT
HE THINKS
OF YOU...

I DON'T
CARE
ABOUT
THAT
CURSE...

AND ANYONE LESS
WORTHY THAN
I WHO CROSSES
MY PATH...

I'M THE
PERFECT
NINJA.

...WILL DIE
BY MY
HAND!!



H...
HAVE AT
YOU!!



HE'S THE
REAL THING...



SHIT
SHIT
SHIT...



MAH...

FOCUS...



FOCUS...

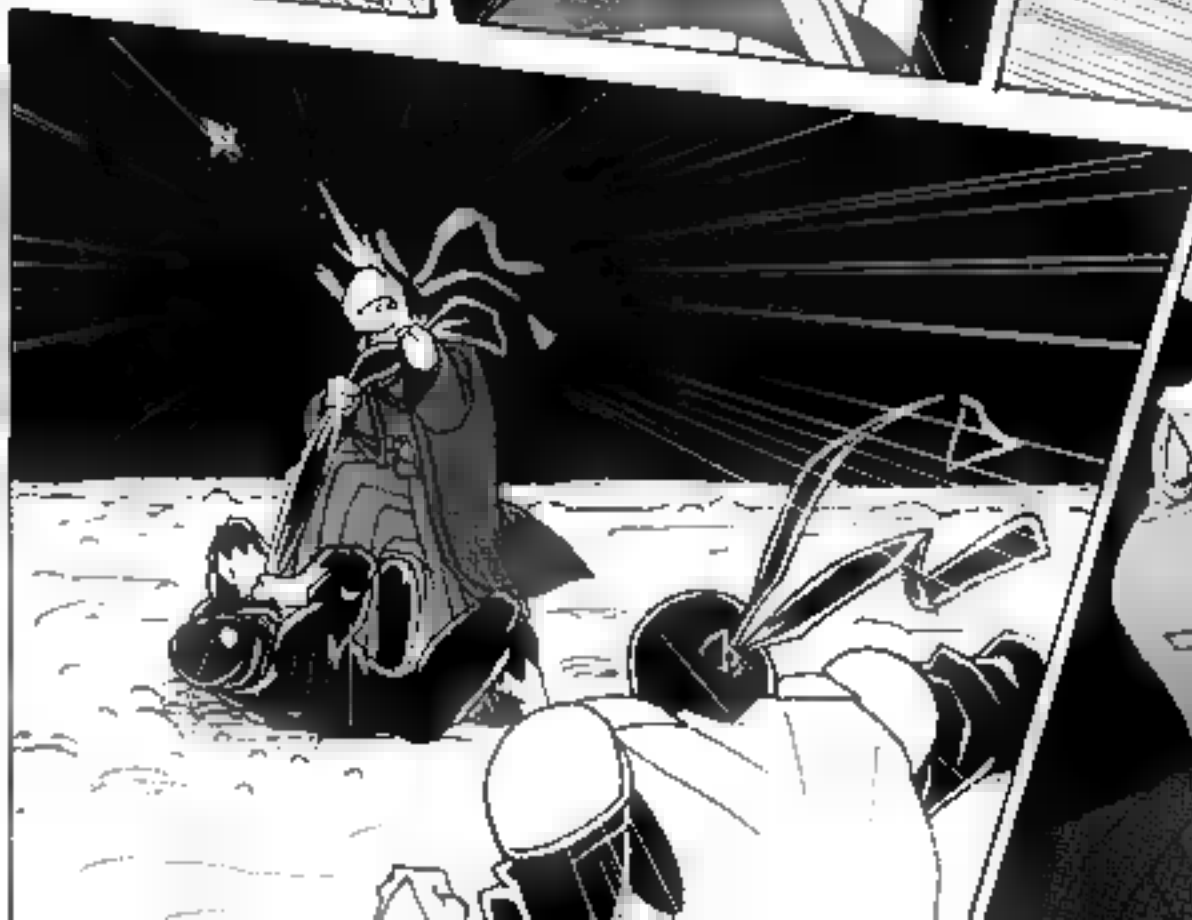
FOCUS...



FO--AAAHH!!



THE FOOT
CLAN...



MY SENSEI'S
ENEMY...



I'M... NOT...
(COUGH COUGH)
...NOT YOUR
ENEMY!!



IF... IF I WERE
A CRIMINAL,
A FOOT
NINJA...

...YOU'D BE DEAD
BY NOW, SEEING
HOW BUSY YOU
WERE WHINING
IN PAIN ALL THE
TIME!!



N...NOW...
(COUGH COUGH)
WHA... WHAT
DID YOU
HEAR...?

MB?
HEAR
WHAT?

WHAT'S
GOING
ON?



DON'T
PLAY
DUMB!!

I
JUST
GOT
HERE!!

I JUST WANTED TO
ASK MR. LEONARDO
A FEW QUESTIONS!!

I KNEW HE WAS
STILL OUT HERE
GETTING SOME AIR,
SO I WENT
AFTER HIM...

...AND I
FOUND HIM
WITH YOU
GLYS!

AND NOW HE'
RAN OFF!!
I'LL HAVE TO TRACK
HIM DOWN AGAIN...!!

GIVE ME
THAT
DEVICE.

PFF...

I'M NOT
HEARING
ANY
MAGIC
WORDS...



YOUR WOUND... DID IT JUST HEAL?

I... IS THAT DUE TO YOU BEING A MUTANT? OR IS IT... THE CURSE?



I DON'T KNOW AND EVEN IF I DID...

DO YOU REALLY THINK I'D TELL YOU? YOU PRICK! PSYCHO! LOSER! "RAPEMAN"!



VERY WELL... I... I KNOW SOMEONE WHO CAN TELL ME... (COUGH) (COUGH)

WAIT! WHERE DO YOU THINK YOU'RE GOING?

DON'T WALK OUT ON ME!!

AND STOP CALLING ME RAPEMAN. I FIND THAT OFFENSIVE



SORRY...
THAT'S THE ONLY
WAY I CAN BRING
YOU BACK
TRY TO REMEMBER
WHAT THIS PAIN
STANDS FOR.

ALL THOSE YEARS,
YOU KEPT TELLING
ME HOW SIGNIFICANT
THAT SINGLE SCAR
YOU BEAR ON YOUR
PLASTRON IS TO YOU.

IT'S A
REMINDER
OF ALL THE
HARDSHIPS
YOU HAD TO
ENDURE...

...AND ALL THE
SACRIFICES
YOU HAD TO MAKE
TO COME THIS
FAR!

STOP THINKING
ABOUT THAT
SCAR. RIGHT
NOW YOU HAVE
TO LIVE.

THAT
SCAR.

A TRACE
LEFT
BY...

...HARDSHIPS.

MY FIRST
NEAR-DEATH
EXPERIENCE...
BY MY OWN HAND.

...AND
SACRIFICES.

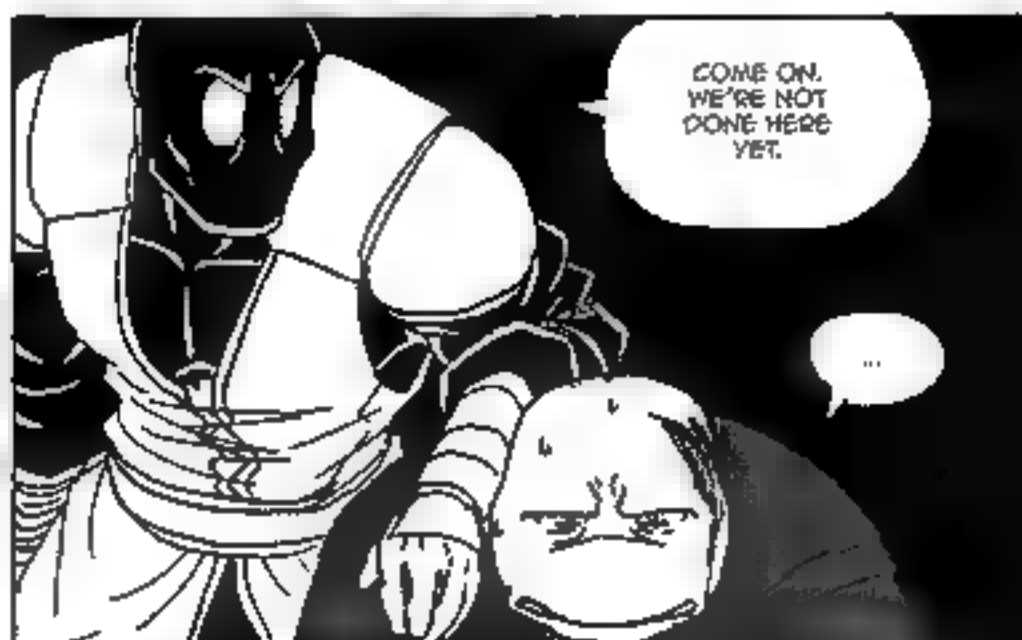
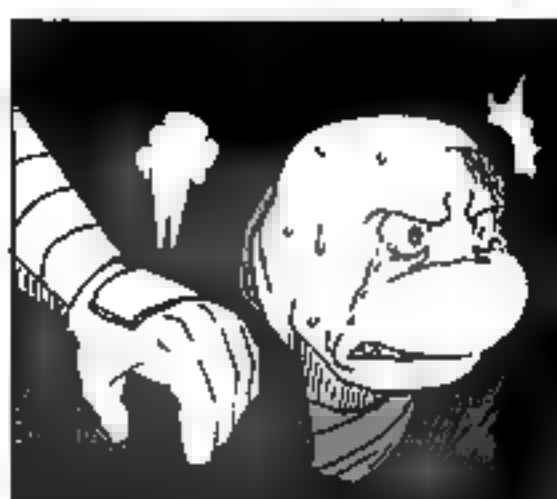
THAT INCIDENT,
IN SENDAI.



Y...YOU'RE
RIGHT.
I...I'VE
COME THIS
FAR...

I CAN'T
LET THE
CURSE WIN...
I CAN'T
FAIL...





COME ON.
WE'RE NOT
DONE HERE
YET.

...



THAT'S GOING
TO LEAVE A
MARK...

YEAH... I
GUESS IT
WILL.



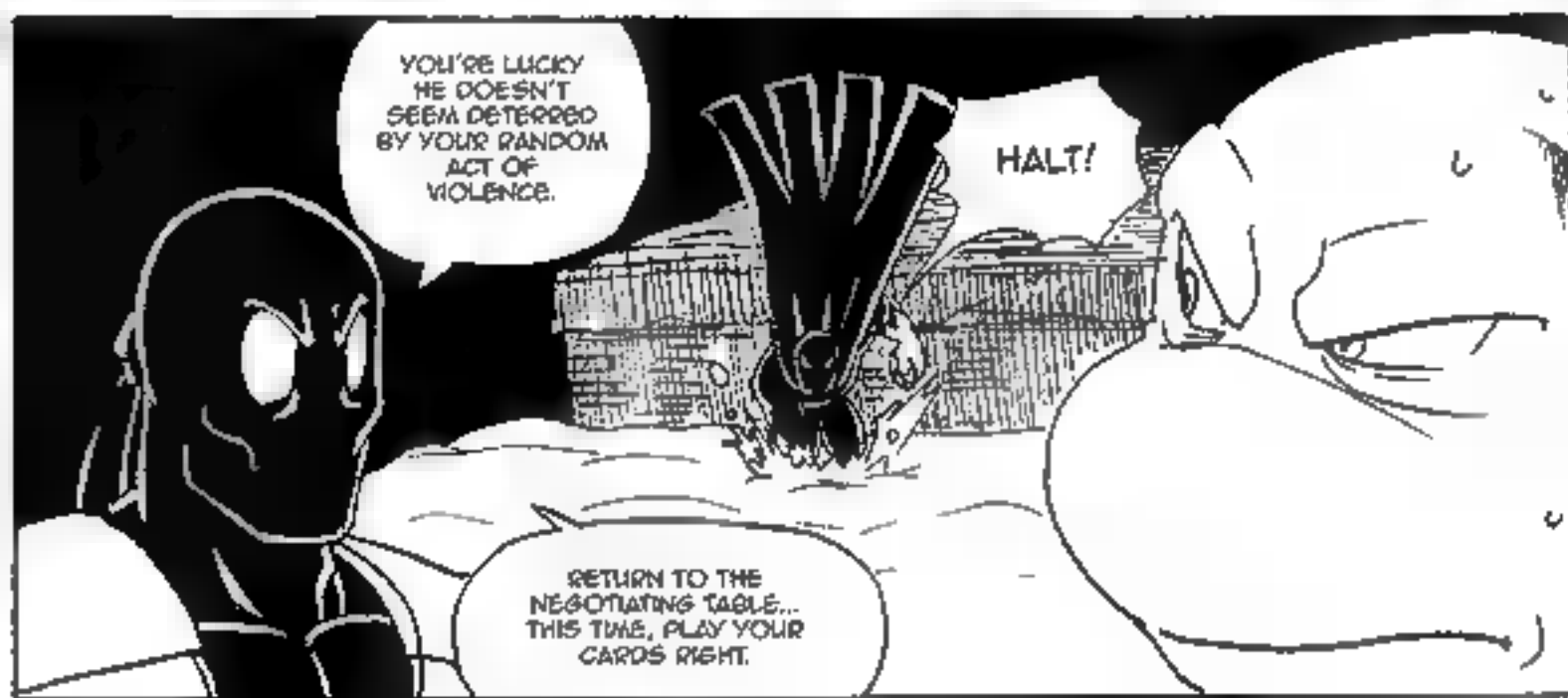
FOR WHAT IT'S
WORTH... SORRY
ABOUT THAT...

...AND FOR
BRINGING UP
THOSE
MEMORIES.



DON'T
WORRY.
I'LL BE
FINE.

THANKS,
SADAO.



YOU'RE LUCKY
HE DOESN'T
SEEM DETERRED
BY YOUR RANDOM
ACT OF
VIOLENCE.

HALT!

RETURN TO THE
NEGOTIATING TABLE...
THIS TIME, PLAY YOUR
CARDS RIGHT.



WHA... WHAT WAS
THAT FOR...?
'COUGH' 'COUGH'

WAS... IT ALL...
A SET UP...



NO... IT
REALLY
WAS THE
CURSE...

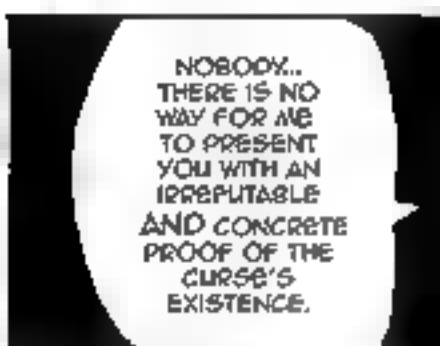


WHAT TELLS
ME YOU'RE
NOT MAKING
THAT UP?

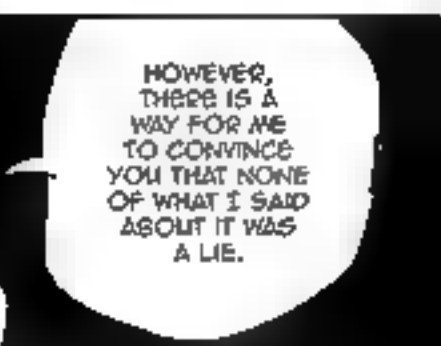
WHAT'S NEXT?
YOUR FELLOW
MUTANT PAL
HEALING UP
FAST, THAT'S
THE CURSE,
TOO?

I'M NOT
SURE ABOUT
THAT, BUT...

I WANT
CONCRETE
PROOF!



NOBODY...
THERE IS NO
WAY FOR ME
TO PRESENT
YOU WITH AN
IRREFUTABLE
AND CONCRETE
PROOF OF THE
CURSE'S
EXISTENCE.



HOWEVER,
THERE IS A
WAY FOR ME
TO CONVINCE
YOU THAT NONE
OF WHAT I SAID
ABOUT IT WAS
A LIE.



MASTER
SPLINTER.

THIS IS
THE LAST
TECHNIQUE
YOU TAUGHT
ME...



WAIT! WHAT
ARE YOU PLANNING
TO DO...

MOVE
OVER!



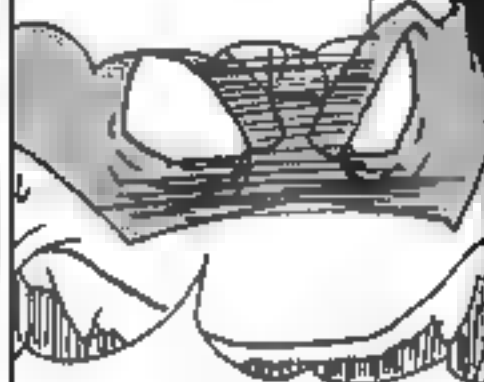
UGH. WE'RE IN
THE ASTRAL PLANE...
AND TODAY, IT'S
YOUR OWN TERMS.



AND YOU DRAGGED
ME ALONG FOR THE
RIDE, TOO.
TCH. YOU COULD'VE
LEFT ME IN OUR BODY.

LISTEN WELL, WHAP...
YOUR FEELINGS FOR
THOSE... FOOLS YOU
CALL "BROTHERS" MIGHT
BE STRONG ENOUGH TO
SUBDUCE ME FOR THE
TIME BEING...

BUT THIS WILL
FAIL EVENTUALLY,
AND YOU KNOW IT!



THE MOMENT THEY KNOW
THE TRUTH, THEY'LL TURN
THEIR BACKS ON YOU!

YOUR SACRIFICES WON'T
MEAN A THING TO THEM!



THEN I'LL TAKE
OVER... FOREVER!

JUST BE QUIET
AND FOLLOW ME.



YOU CAN MOCK THE
FAITH I HAVE IN MY
BROTHERS ALL YOU
WANT, BUT IT'S CLEAR
TO ME THAT IT'S A
VERY EFFECTIVE MEANS
TO KEEP YOU UNDER
CONTROL.

NOBODY...
I FOUND YOU.



I'M GOING TO
PERUSE THE DARK
CORNERS OF YOUR
SOUL JUST A BIT...





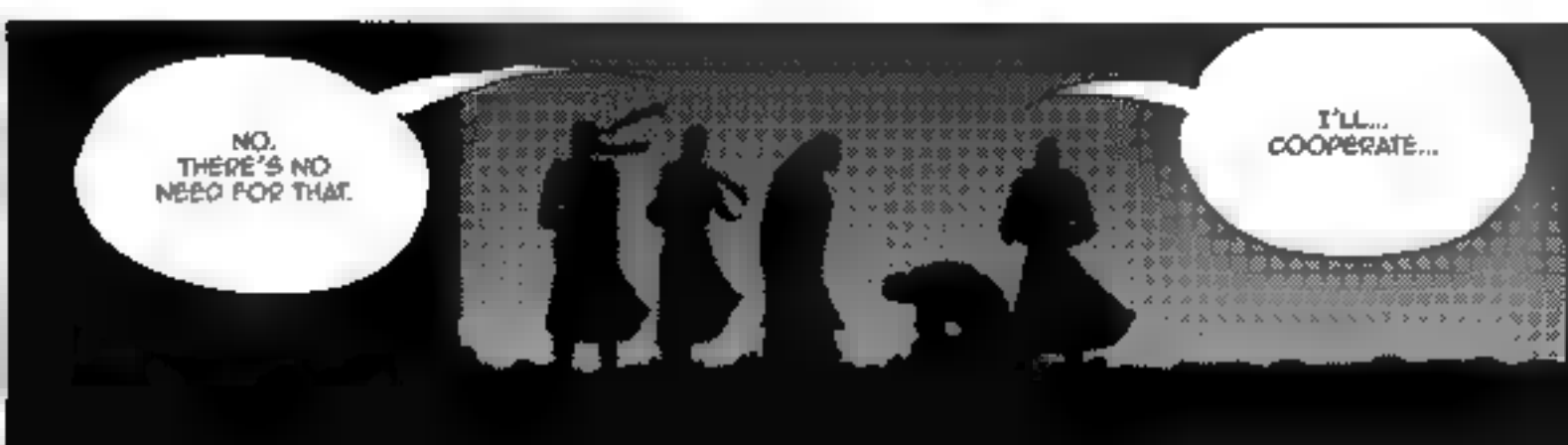
DON'T
TELL
ME...

...YOU SAW
ALL OF
THIS??



YES. ALL OF IT.
THE PURSUIT,
THE UNMASKING
AND THE EXECUTION.
THROUGH THE EYES
OF MY DARK SELF,
I CAN SEE YOURS.

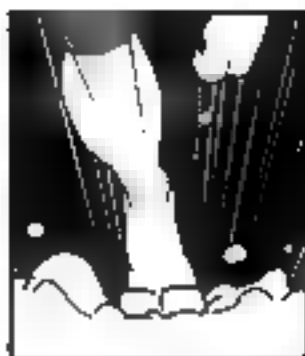
I DON'T INTEND TO
BLACKMAIL YOU WITH
THIS INFORMATION.
I ONLY WANT YOU TO
UNDERSTAND THAT
THIS CURSE PROBLEM
IS NO JOKE.
IF YOU NEED MORE
CONVINCING, I CAN
DIG DEEPER IN
YOUR SOUL...



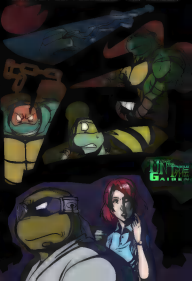
NO.
THERE'S NO
NEED FOR THAT.

I'LL...
COOPERATE...

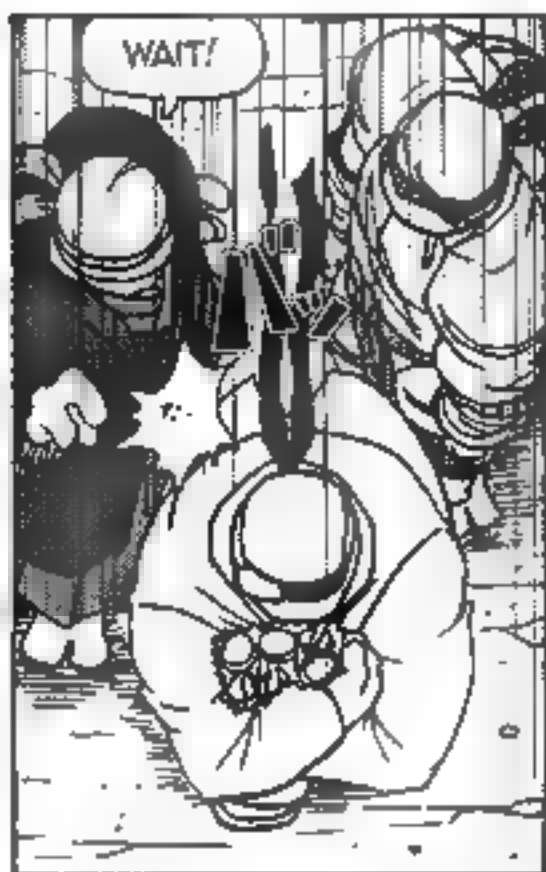




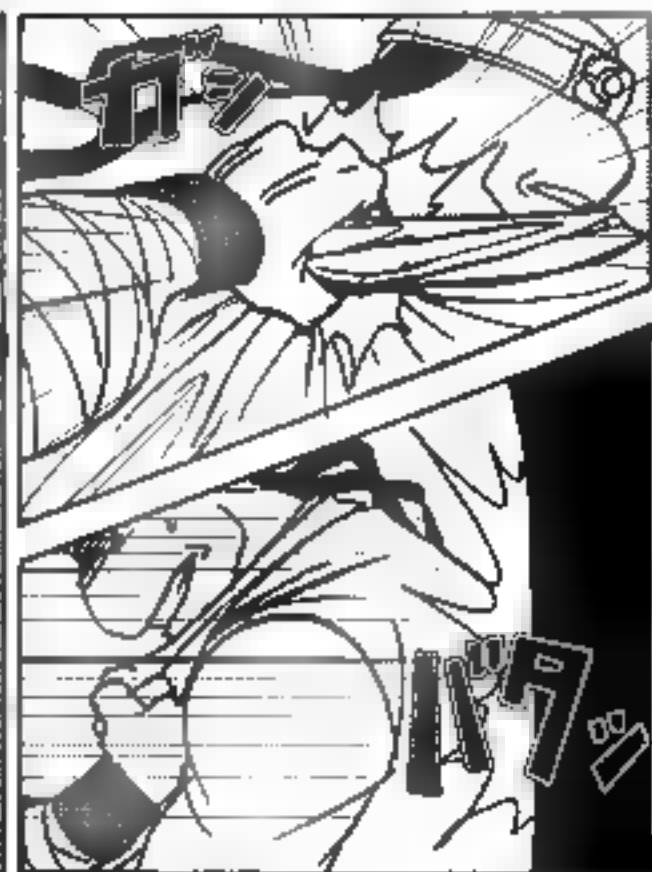
CHAPTER 23: FOLLOWING THE LEADER







ARE YA
FUCKIN'
KIDDIN'
ME...?



CRAZY
WORLD...

NO
TIME
LEFT...

EVERYTHING'S
SO
ASSURD...

IT AIN'T LEO'S
FAULT THAT THE
SENSEI'S DEAD!
FACE THE
GODDAMN
TRUTH AND
FUCKIN'
ACCEPT IT!!
QUIT BEIN' A
DICK TO OUR
LEADER!!



THAT'S
NOT
HELPING!



TCH!

OK...

LEO CAME TO CHECK
ON YER SORRY
CARCASS EVERY SINGLE
DAY SINCE HE CAME
BACK TO US... THAT'S
MORE THAN A MONTH.

THINK
'BOUT
IT..
JACKASS.



DONNIE... RAPH DIDN'T MEAN TO HURT YOU VERY CONCERNED YOU... THAT

RAPH, RAPH, RAPH... WHY HOLD BACK?

I KNOW YOU... YOU WANTED TO HIT ME SO BADLY...

YOU'RE NOT BEING YOURSELF.

BUT I FIND THIS ENTERTAINING...

WHO ARE YOU TRYING PLEASE BY BEHAVING YOURSELF?

ARE YOU LOST? DID YOU MISS BEING SOME KIND OF MINDLESS DRONE?



HEY SHUDOAP! YER BLABBERIN' NONSENSE!

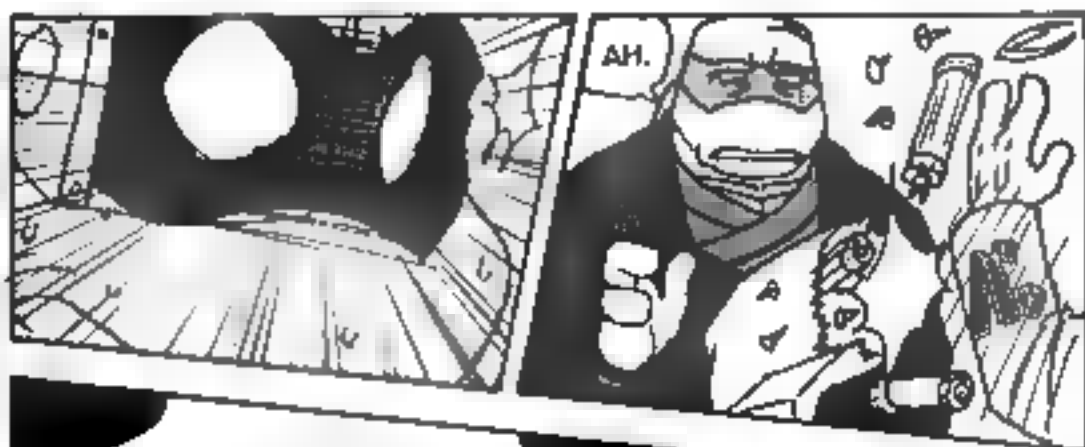
I AMN'T NO DRONE AND I AMN'T LOST! I MADE LEO THE LEADER! T'WAS MY OWN DECISION!



HAHA... THERE IS NO LEADER, RAPH... BECAUSE THERE IS NO... LEO...

SURE, I COEXIST WITH YOU ALL IN THIS DISTORTED REALITY... HOWEVER, THERE IS NO LEONARDO.

DONNIE... YOU DROPPED THOSE FUSES...



AH.

YA DAMN PRICK! I TOLD YA TO STOP DISSIN' OUR LEADER!!

RAPH, EASY!!

HAHA... THERE YOU GO AGAIN... TALKING ABOUT A "LEADER"...

YOU'RE A CHAOTIC BEAST,
RAPHAEL, NOT AN ORDERLY
PAWN...
BY PUTTING ON THIS ACT,
YOU'RE OVEREXERTING
YOUR PSYCHE.

BEWARE NOT TO LOSE IT
FROM NOW ON...
WHO KNOWS WHO YOU'LL
HURT NEXT... OR HOW
MUCH FURTHER YOU'LL
HAVE TO DIS INTO
YOURSELF.
YOUR CHOICE...

DONNIE,
I WON'T GIVE
UP ON YOU.
I'LL BE
BACK...

RAPH, I'M SORRY YOU HAD
TO PUT UP WITH THIS.
ARE YOU REALLY FINE WITH
ME BEING THE LEADER?

WHAT?

WRRGH...

I...IDIOT! I
AIN'T GOIN'
BACK ON MY
WORDS! I PUT
ALL MY TRUST
IN YOU, BRO!

HE
HE...

THANKS,
RAPH.

WE NEED YA,
LEO.

STUPID...
FAKE...
WORLD...

RIGHT...

I DISPOSED
OF HIM...

LEO...

I'M
COMING
FOR
YOU...

I... I THINK
I FOUND MOST
OF HUA.

LOOK,
MASTER...
HE'S BACK.

YES...
YES,
MASTER.
I'LL DO
THAT AGAIN.
I'LL
PUNISH
HIM...

YES,
MASTER.

YES.


YES.

I'M
REJECTING
HIM AND
THIS REALITY.

YES...
HE DESERVES
THIS...

YES.

YES,
MASTER.



IT'S BEEN ALMOST
TWO MONTHS SINCE
I REINSERTED MYSELF
INTO THE LIVES OF
MY BROTHERS.

ALMOST TWO MONTHS
I'VE BEEN TRYING AS
HARD AS I COULD TO
KEEP THEM OUT OF THE
FOOT CLAN'S WAY,
USING NINJUTSU TRAINING
AND HEALING AS
MY MAIN ARGUMENTS
TO KEEP THEM UNDERGROUND
AS MUCH AS POSSIBLE.

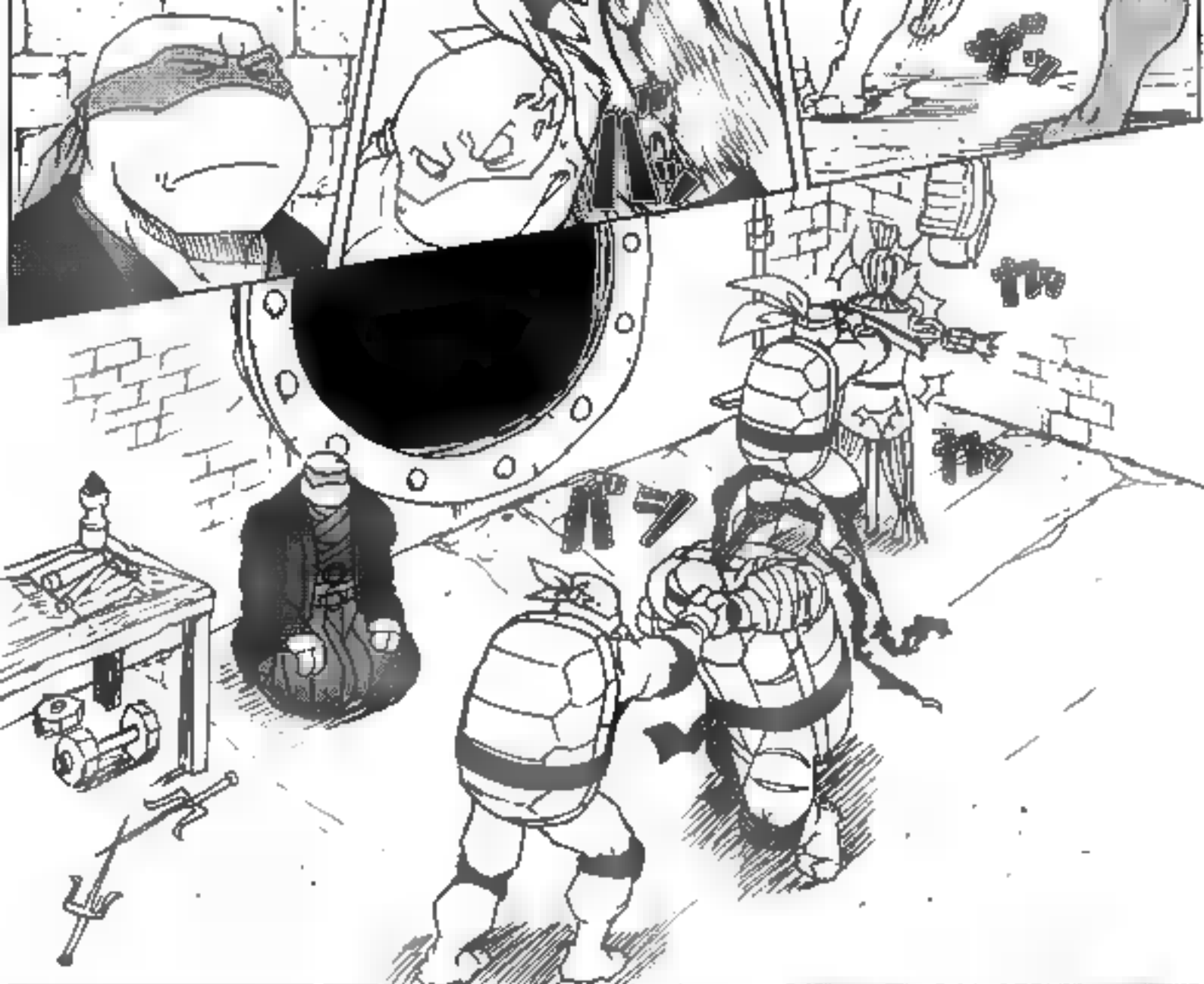
■ THE MEANTIME, THE FOOT
CLAN PROCEEDED WITH THEIR
MISSION. THERE ARE VERY
FEW MORINAGAS LEFT TO
TAKE OUT BEFORE THE CURSE
IS ERADICATED.

HOWEVER, I'VE BEEN HAVING
A HARD TIME SLIPPING AWAY
FROM MY FAMILY WITHOUT
RAISING SUSPICION TO HELP
THE FOOT CLAN PINPOINT THEIR
TARGETS WITH THE MIRROR
YATA-NO-KAGAMI.
AS A RESULT OF THIS, THERE
IS ALWAYS A LONG DELAY
BETWEEN EACH TARGET'S
ELIMINATION.

LUCKILY, NEITHER RAPHAEL
OR MYSELF HAVE LOST
CONTROL TO THE CURSE
DESPITE THOSE DELAYS.
MAYBE OUR CURRENT SITUATION
AS A REUNITED FAMILY
GRANTED US WITH A
TEMPORARY INNER PEACE
THAT STRENGTHENS OUR
RESISTANCE TO THE CURSE.

I DON'T THINK
MIKEY'S CURSED,
SO I'M NOT WORRIED
ABOUT HIM.
SAME THING FOR
RENOIR.

AS FOR CONNIE...
HIS BEHAVIOR
CONCERNS ME...



ALRIGHT, STOP!
MIKEY, GOOD FOOTWORK
AND EVASIONS. AS SWIFT
AS ALWAYS, I SEE.

HOWEVER,
TAUNT LESS
AND FIGHT
MORE.

YEP! STILL
GOT IT!

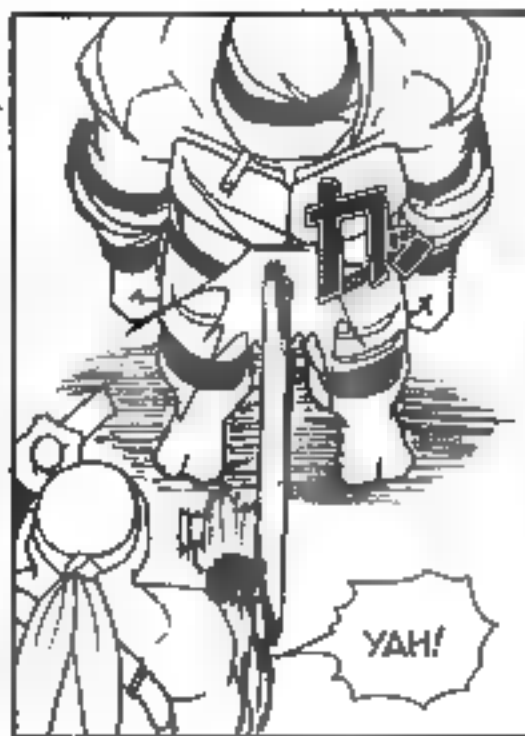
RAPH, GREAT EFFORT APPLYING
MORE FINESSE THAN USUAL.
HOWEVER, YOUR ENDURANCE
IS...

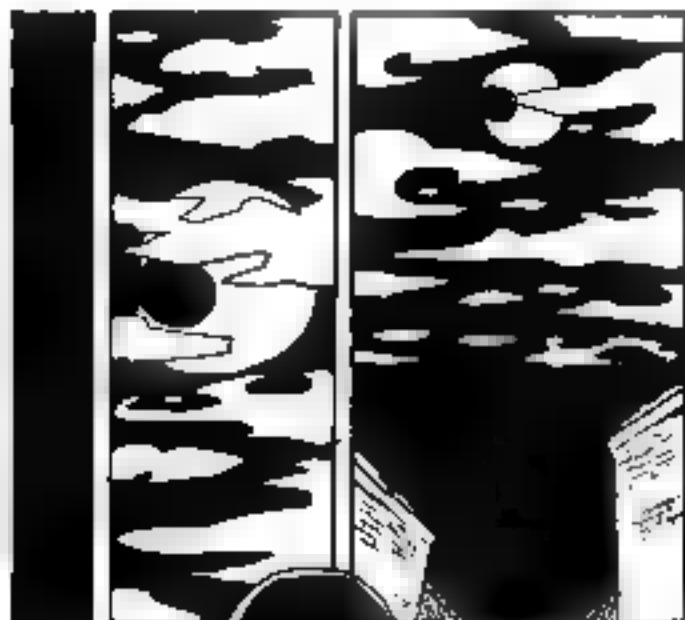
RAPH! I TOLD YOU
SMOKING IMPAIRS
YOUR FIGHTING SKILLS!

NO, IT
DOESN'T.

I CAN SMOKE AND
SPAR ALL I WANT
AND STILL KICK
ASS!

RENOIR!
GIT'CHER
ASS OVER
HERE!





MY BROTHERS
ARE GROWING
RESTLESS.

IT'S GETTING
HARDER AND
HARDER TO
STALL THEM.



I CAN ONLY DISTRACT
THEM WITH TRAINING FOR
SO LONG BEFORE THEY
DECIDE TO TAKE
ACTION AGAINST THE
CURSE.

IT DOESN'T
HELP THAT I
MADE UP SOME
STORY ABOUT
THE CURSE
BEING LINKED
TO SOME RELICS.
NOW THEY WANT
TO FIND THEM.



KARAI TOLD US
ABOUT YOUR
FLIMSY LIE.
A STORY LIKE THAT
SCREAMS FOR
SOMETHING TO BE
DONE ABOUT IT.

I KNOW.
WHAT HURTS ME
MORE IS THAT
THEY ALL SEEM
TO TRUST MY
EVERY WORD.



AT LEAST WITHIN THE LAST
TWO MONTHS, WE'VE DONE
A LOT OF PROGRESS.
ALMOST ALL THE TARGETS
HAVE BEEN ELIMINATED,
I BELIEVE.

NOW, LET'S
DO THE
USUAL.
HAND ME THE
MIRROR.



...WELL, WHERE
IS IT? THE
YATA-NO-KAGAMI.

YOU KNOW THAT
WITHOUT IT, I
CAN'T IDENTIFY
THE MORINAGA
FOR YOU.



IT'S NO
LONGER IN OUR
POSSESSION.

RYOTA'S BROTHER,
EIKICHI, STOLE IT
FROM US AND
RAN AWAY.



KARAI THOUGHT HE KNEW MORE ABOUT THE CURSE THAN HE LET ON, SO SHE TRIED TO MAKE HIM TALK.

HOWEVER, SHE WAS UNSUCCESSFUL... EVERY TIME HE OPENED HIS MOUTH, IT'D BE TO INSULT US OR REITERATE HIS ALLEGIANCE TO THE LATE SHREDDER.

SOMETIME YESTERDAY, HE MANAGED TO ESCAPE...

...AND TO STEAL THE YATA-NO-KABAH FROM US.

WHAT HAPPENED?

WITHOUT THE GUIDANCE OF THAT ANNOY, YOU KNOW THAT WE MIGHT PLACE HITS ON INNOCENT PEOPLE.

WE NEED IT BACK.

KARAI.

DIDN'T YOU USED TO ACCEPT THAT RISK?

YES, BUT THOSE WERE ONLY INSTANCES WHERE WE HAD RELIABLE INTEL.

EVEN WITH THE COMBINED EFFORTS OF ALL OUR CONTACTS, WE'RE UNABLE TO CONCLUSIVELY IDENTIFY MORINABAS...

I THINK WE RAN OUT OF LEADS.

SO... THE ONE WHO LEFT THE TOTSUKA SWORD IN THE SEWERS TO CURSE US...

...AND ATTACKED MY BROTHERS LAST CHRISTMAS EVE...

...IS NOW CARRYING WITH HIM A RELIC LINKED TO THE CURSE?

I CAN SEE A SILVER LINING IN THIS WHOLE SITUATION... AND IT'S UNBELIEVABLY CONVENIENT FOR ME.

INDEED.

PLEASE
HANDLE
IT.

I APPRECIATE IT.
IT'LL HELP ME
WITH MY
FAMILY
SITUATION.

DO YOU HAVE
ANY LEADS
ON EIKICHI'S
WHEREABOUTS?

UNFORTUNATELY, ALL
I CAN DO FOR YOU
IS NARROW IT TO THE
FOLLOWING:

HE'S STILL WITHIN A
RADIUS OF TEN MILES
AROUND OUR
HEADQUARTERS.

I SET UP A TIGHT
SECURITY PERIMETER
AS SOON AS HE
ESCAPED... WE'D HAVE
KNOWN IF HE GOT
ANY FURTHER.

DON'T WORRY.
WE'LL LAY DOWN
LOW WHILE YOUR
FAMILY TAKES
TO THE STREETS.

JUST DO WHAT
YOU ANITANTS DO
BEST. PATROL THE
CITY YOU KNOW
SO WELL.

SURE, BUT...

A TEN MILE RADIUS IS
A LOT OF GROUND TO
COVER.
ANY OTHER LEADS?

WAIT... YOU
WON'T NEED
TO GO LOOK
FOR EIKICHI.

HE'LL BE
THE ONE
LOOKING FOR
YOU.

?

REALLY?

YES. I KNOW HIM.
HE HOLDS GRUDGES
AGAINST THOSE
WHO WRONG HIM.

HE'LL SEEK
REVENGE FOR
HIS DEFEAT AT
THE HANDS OF
YOUR SIBLINGS.

THAT SOUNDS
GOOD ENOUGH
FOR ME.

AS SOON AS I
RECLAIM THE MIRROR,
I'LL CONTACT YOU
AND LET YOU KNOW
WHO THE NEXT
MORINAGA IS.
IN THE MEANTIME,
TRY TO GATHER MORE

OOOOY!!!
LEOOO!!
WE'RE COMING!



FOUND
YOUUU!!



SAY, HOW
DID YOU
FIND ME?

TRACKED YOU
DOWN WITH
THIS LITTLE
BABY HERE.

GOOD THING
KARAI IS A
MASTER FOR
QUICK EXITS...



SHELL CELL
OWNERS CAN
TRACK DOWN
EACH OTHER,
REMEMBER?



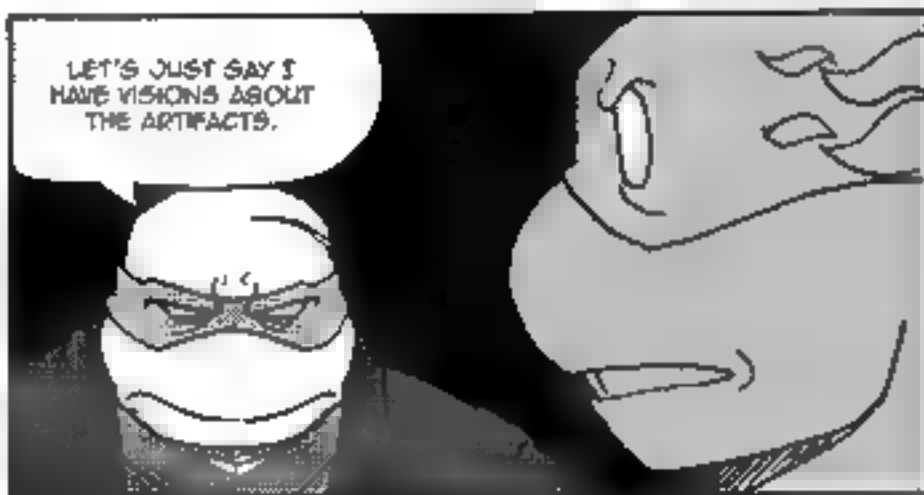
YA WEAKLING!!
GET UP OR
I'LL KICK YA!



SAPH,
RENOIR...

WELL, WELL...
I MADE IT HERE
FIRST DESPITE
BEING "A BIT
FATTER"... IRONIC.

SHUDOAP, MIKEY!
LEO, THAT'S
YER IDEA OF
"DOUBLE CHECKING"
YER INTEL?
YOU'RE JUST
MEDITATIN' ON
YER OWN, BRO!
HOW'S THAT
HELPIN' US?



LET'S JUST SAY I
HAVE VISIONS ABOUT
THE ARTIFACTS.



THE ONE
RESPONSIBLE
FOR SENDING
US THE
CURSED
SWORD...

...HAS
ONE OF
THEM.

THAT PERSON ■
EIKICHI GOTOH.

SHREDDER'S
LAST ELITE NINJA.

WAIT... THAT
PSYCHO IS
STILL ALIVE?

HEY...

DON'T WORRY,
RAPH.

I GOT YER
BACK, BRO.
JUST LETTIN'
YA KNOW.

THANKS.

IT MUST
FEEL
NICE.

I GOT
YOUR BACK,
RENOIR.

WHAT??

REALLY??
WELL...

...THANK
YOU, SIR.

SO MUCH FOR
FEELING GOOD.

WELL, I DIDN'T EXACTLY
BACK HIM UP LAST TIME.

'KAY,
LEO.

WHAT'S THE
PLAN?

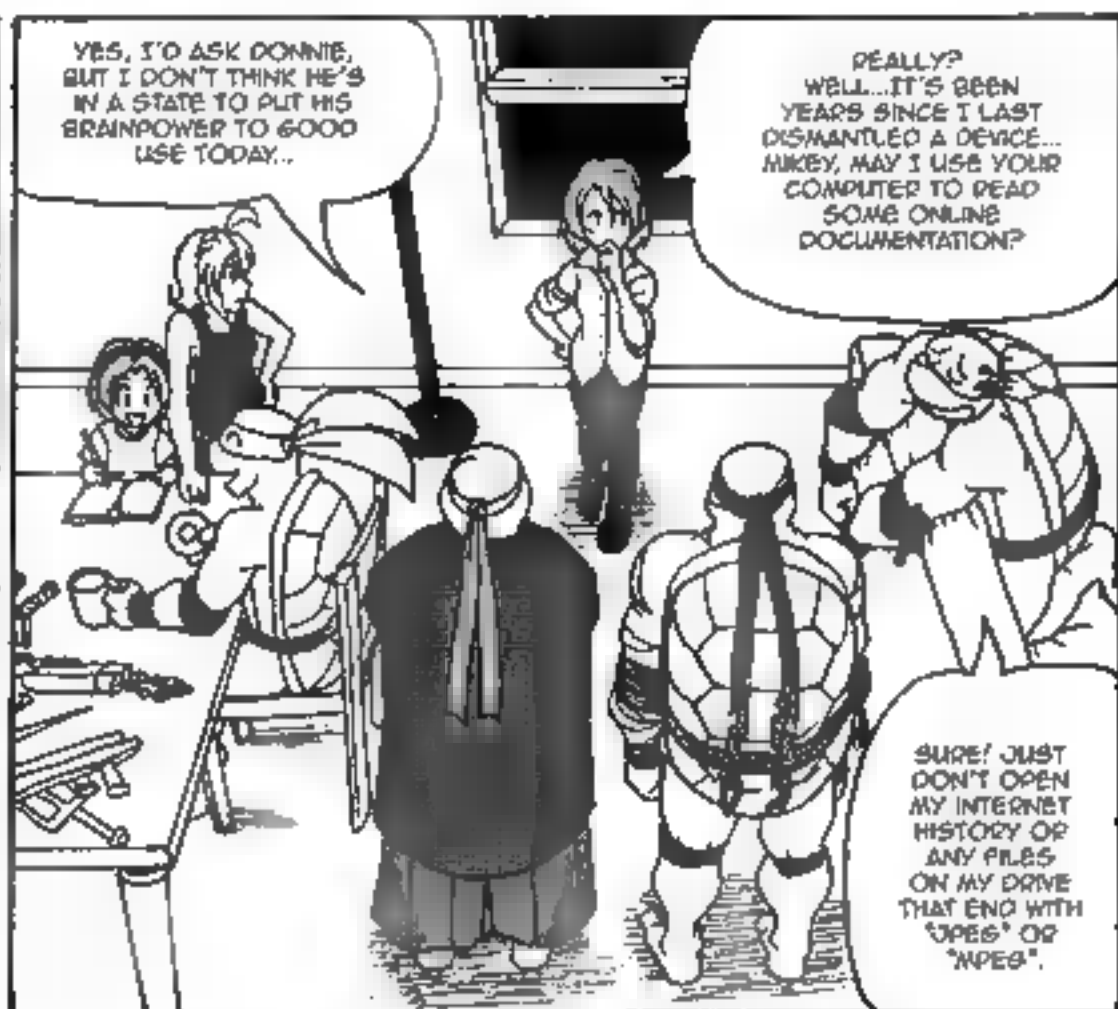
FIRST, I'D LIKE
TO CHECK
SOMETHING
WITH THE
SMELL CELL.

LET'S GO SEE
SOMEONE
WELL-VERSED
IN TECHNOLOGY.
SOMEONE WHO'S
ON SPEAKING
TERMS WITH ME.



SAY
AGAIN?

YOU WANT ME
TO RETRIEVE THE
SHELL CELL'S
TRACKING
COMPONENT?



YES, I'D ASK DONNIE,
BUT I DON'T THINK HE'S
IN A STATE TO PUT HIS
BRAINPOWER TO GOOD
USE TODAY...

REALLY?
WELL...IT'S BEEN
YEARS SINCE I LAST
DISMANTLED A DEVICE...
HIKEY, MAY I USE YOUR
COMPUTER TO READ
SOME ONLINE
DOCUMENTATION?

SURE! JUST
DON'T OPEN
MY INTERNET
HISTORY OR
ANY FILES
ON MY DRIVE
THAT END WITH
'JPEG' OR
'MP3'.



...JUST MY
IMPERSONATION
OF RENOID!
HAH!!

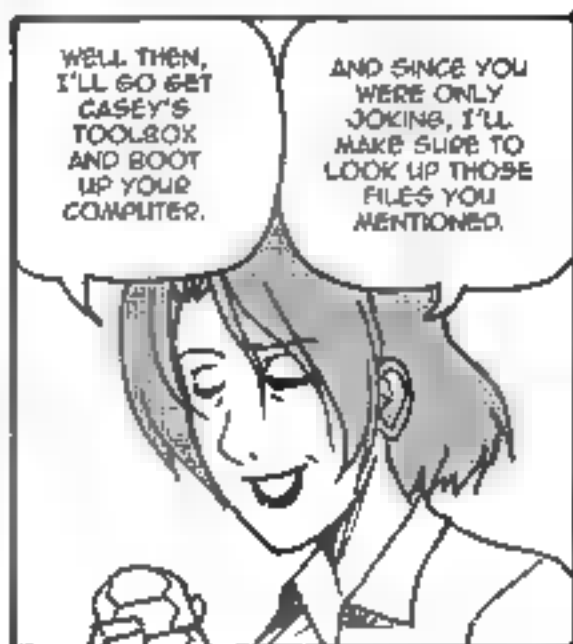
OH
YOU...

WHAT'S
A 'JPEG'?



ALRIGHT, APRIL!
HERE'S MY SHELL
CELL. GO FOR IT!

THANKS.



WELL THEN,
I'LL GO GET
CASEY'S
TOOLBOX
AND BOOT
UP YOUR
COMPUTER.

AND SINCE YOU
WERE ONLY
JOKING, I'LL
MAKE SURE
TO LOOK UP
THOSE
FILES YOU
MENTIONED.



ARE 'JPEG'
AND 'MP3'
LIKE YOUR
DIRTY
MAGAZINES?

WHY DOES
YOUR SISTER
KNOW ABOUT
THOSE
THINGS?

ACTUALLY,
DON'T
OPEN THOSE
FILES...!!

OUCH.



THERE. I MODIFIED THE TRACKING COMPONENT SO IT CAN FUNCTION ON ITS OWN. IT SEEMS LIKE I STILL REMEMBERED A THING OR TWO FROM MY TIME AS BAXTER STOCKMAN'S ASSISTANT.

YOU'RE A GENIUS, APRIL.

WELL, THIS "GENIUS" HAS ONE MORE TRICK UP HER SLEEVE. CARE TO HEAR ABOUT IT?

I REPROGRAMMED THE TRACKING COMPONENT TO MAKE IT SEND ITS COORDINATES TO MIKEY'S COMPUTER ■ ADDITION TO THE OTHER SHELL CELL.

YES?



IN OTHER WORDS, THIS COMPUTER HERE CAN ACT AS A THIRD SHELL CELL WITH THE PROPER EQUIPMENTS.

WHOEVER SITS IN THIS CHAIR HAS THE WEB OF INFORMATION AT THEIR FINGERTIPS.

THIS COULD PROVE VERY USEFUL, IF YOU'RE ON THE MOVE AND NEED A SPECIFIC PIECE OF INFORMATION, OR A SHORTCUT...

WAIT... YOU MEAN...

THAT'S RIGHT, MIKEY.

I FEEL LIKE THERE IS SO MUCH MORE I SHOULD'VE DONE FOR YOU.

APRIL...
I...
WELL...

FROM TODAY ON, I'LL BE YOUR NAVIGATOR.

I DON'T LIKE BEING A BYSTANDER TO MY FAMILY'S SUFFERING... LET ME BE PART OF THE SOLUTION.

THANK YOU...
APRIL...

ALRIGHT, LISTEN UP,
THE PLAN'S QUITE
SIMPLE.

FIND EKICHI,
THE ELITE
FOOT NINJA...

...AND ACQUIRE THE "YATA NO
KASANI", A RELIC
LINKED TO THE CURSE.

YA SURE HE'S
GONNA CARRY
IT WITH HIM?

CHANCES ARE HE
WON'T, SO WE'LL
PLANT ON A
TRACKING BUG ON
HIM FIRST.

IF HE DOESN'T HAVE
THE RELIC ON HIM,
WE'LL LET HIM ESCAPE.
HE'LL LEAD US TO WHERE
HE STASHED IT.

SURE, BUT HOW WILL
WE FIND HIM IN THE
FIRST PLACE?

GOOD OBSERVATION, MIKEY.
WE'LL NEED TO USE
YOU AS A BAIT.

ME?

THAT NINJA SUFFERED A
CRUSHING AND HUMILIATING
DEFEAT IN HIS ATTEMPT
TO SILENCE YOU TWO
MONTHS AGO.

IF ANYONE CAN "RUB IT
IN PEOPLE'S FACES",
IT'S YOU, MIKEY.
I KNOW SOMEWHERE IN
YOU, YOU STILL HAVE
WHAT IT TAKES TO PROVOKE
HIM TO THE POINT WHERE
HE'LL COME OUT OF HIDING.

OK.
LEAVE
IT TO
ME.

HEY, I'M
LEAVING
NOW.

I ENVY YOU...
WELL, HAVE FUN
PATROLLING!

I DON'T
FIND IT
EXACTLY
"FUN"...

HUMP
ALREADY?

YOU KNOW, I'M
SLEEPING OVER,
SO WHEN YOU'LL
BE DONE WITH YOUR
WORK, CAN YOU
COME WAKE ME
UP AND SAY HIP

SURE, NO
PROBLEM!

AWW, HOW
SWEET.
NOW I KINDA
WANT A HUG
TOO.

HAHAHA

HAHAHA

I HEARD YOU! MOMMY'S
HUGS TO THE RESCUE!

AH, GEEZ,
MOM!

ALIGUSTUS... STAY
CLOSE TO RAPHAEL
AND LISTEN TO HIM,
ALRIGHT?

NO WORRIES, MRS. JONES!
EVEN THOUGH I MIGHT
NOT ALWAYS AGREE WITH
HIM...

MOVE OUT,
YA WUSS!
AND IF YOU
STILL SUCK
AT RUNNING ON
ROOFTOPS,
YOU'LL
REGRET IT!!

I TAKE IT ALL
BACK,
MRS. JONES!!

...I KNOW MOST OF THE
TIME, HE'S RELIABLE AND
HAS MY BEST INTEREST
IN MIND.

MAYBE
VOODOO
DOESN'T
WORK...

ALRIGHT! FIRST
OPERATION IN
SEVENTEEN YEARS
FOR THE HAMATO
CLAN!
AND APRIL'S IN
ON IT TOO!

KINDA
BRINGS YOU
BACK, HUH?

MAYBE THAT WAS A
STRETCH. WE
DO HAVE A NEWBIE
THIS TIME AROUND.

RENOIR...
HE'S A BIT
SKITTISH, BUT
HE'LL GET THE
HANG OF IT.

ERRR...
YES, IT DOES...
LIKE OLD
TIMES...

AND NO
DONNIE...

I KNOW...
I KNOW THAT
TOO WELL.

LISTEN, LEONARDO.
IT MIGHT SEEM LIKE I'M
ALWAYS EASYGOING, BUT
I'M VERY WELL AWARE OF
THE ELEPHANT IN THE ROOM.

I WAS JUST GIVING YOU
TIME TO SETTLE DOWN...
NOW, I ASKED RAPH TO GIVE
ME A MINUTE ALONE WITH
YOU SO YOU CAN LEVEL
WITH ME ABOUT IT.

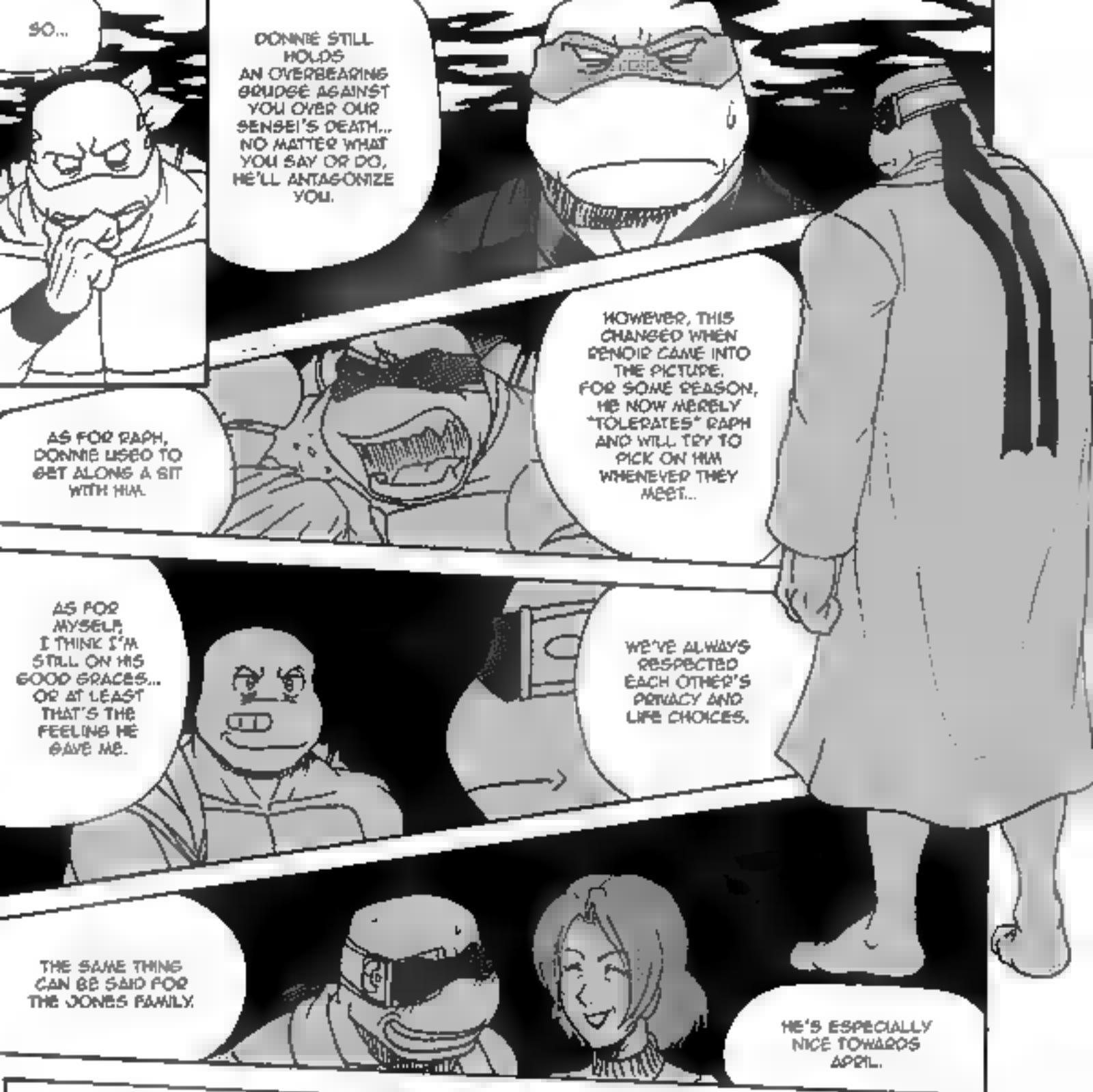
SURE...

SORRY, YOU BEING
OCCASIONALLY
SERIOUS AND CALM
IS STILL NEW TO ME.

REALLY?

CAN YOU DO
THAT FOR
ME?

ALSO, YOU
USUALLY JUST
CALL ME "LEO"...



SO...

DONNIE STILL
HOLDS
AN OVERBEARING
GRUDGE AGAINST
YOU OVER OUR
SENSEI'S DEATH...
NO MATTER WHAT
YOU SAY OR DO,
HE'LL ANTAGONIZE
YOU.

AS FOR RAPH,
DONNIE USED TO
GET ALONG A BIT
WITH HIM.

HOWEVER, THIS
CHANGED WHEN
RENOIR CAME INTO
THE PICTURE.
FOR SOME REASON,
HE NOW MERELY
"TOLERATES" RAPH
AND WILL TRY TO
PICK ON HIM
WHenever THEY
MEET...

AS FOR
MYSELF,
I THINK I'M
STILL ON HIS
GOOD GRACES...
OR AT LEAST
THAT'S THE
FEELING HE
GAVE ME.

WE'VE ALWAYS
RESPECTED
EACH OTHER'S
PRIVACY AND
LIFE CHOICES.

THE SAME THING
CAN BE SAID FOR
THE JONES FAMILY.

HE'S ESPECIALLY
NICE TOWARDS
APRIL.

THERE'S STILL SOME GOOD IN
DONNIE, I KNOW IT,
HOWEVER, IT'D BE FOR THE BETTER
IF YOU COULD LET APRIL OR
MYSELF DO THE TALKING.

WE'LL HAVE A BETTER
SHOT AT REASONING
WITH HIM.

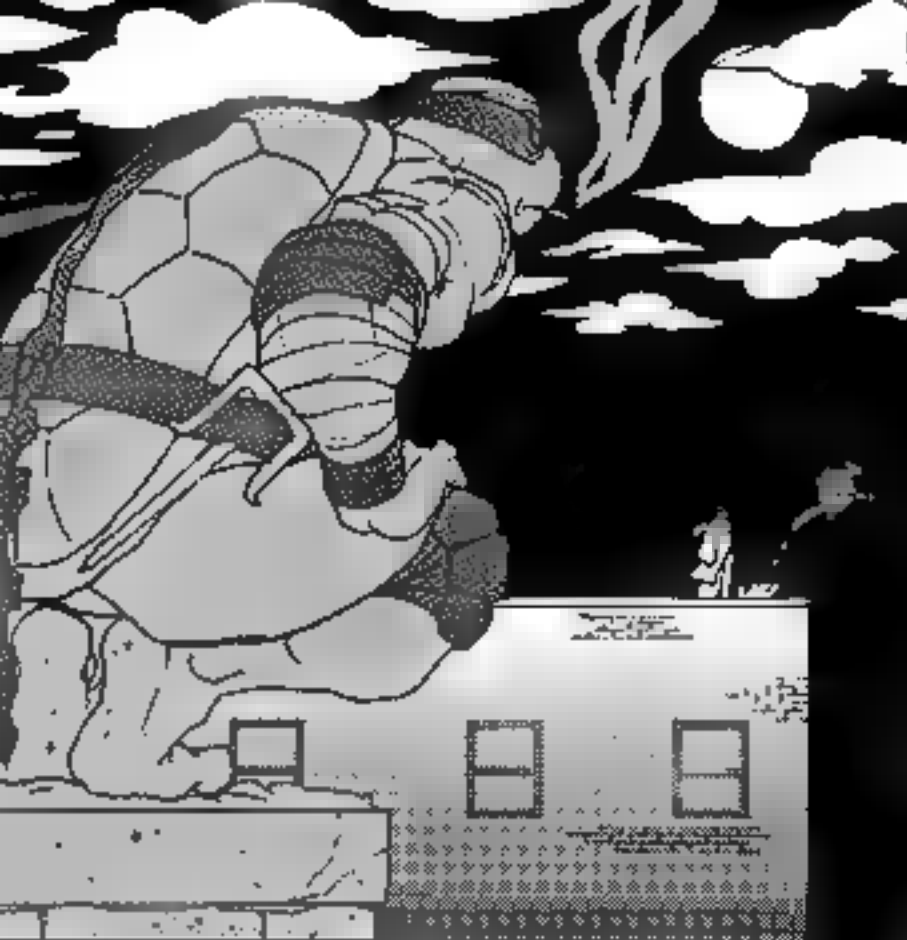
TRUST...
YES,
YOU'RE
RIGHT...
THANKS,
MIKEY.

SO DON'T WORRY.
HE'LL COME
AROUND ONE
OF THESE DAYS.
TRUST ME!

HE HE
HE.

HAHAHAHA...





HEY, MASTER. WHAT
IF THAT ERICHI PERSON
SUDDENLY DECIDES
TO ATTACK
MRS. JONES?

BECAUSE,
YOU KNOW,
HE WENT
AFTER SHADOW
LAST TIME...

'TIS OK,
CASEY'S
GONNA
PROTECT
HER.

OKAY, BUT
MR. JONES
WASN'T
HOME...

HE'S GONNA BE
SOON! HE'S JUST
OUT ON AN ERRAND!

QUIT
WORRYIN'!

...STUPID WORTHLESS
RENTAL CAR BROKE
DOWN AFTER I LEFT
THE CONVENTION
CENTER! NOW I'M IN
THE MIDDLE OF
NOWHERE WAITIN'
FOR THE TOW TRUCK...
I'M AFRAID
I'M GONNA BE HOME
MUCH LATER, HONEY.

OH CASEY, I TOLD YOU
TO GO EASY ON THE
CAR! IT'S NOT AS ROBUST
AS YOUR HUMVEE!
WELL ANYWAYS, JUST
COME HOME IN ONE
PIECE, ALRIGHT?

YEAH, OKAY.
I WILL, PROMISE.
LOVE YA!
'KISS'

GREAT.
THE MAN WHO
TRIED TO KILL
SHADOW IS ON
THE LOOSE
AND I'M ALONE.
WHAT IF HE
COMES BACK
TO FINISH THE
JOB? HOW
WILL I KEEP
SHADOW SAFE?

I DON'T STAND
A CHANCE AGAINST
A TRAINED ASSASSIN
ON MY OWN.
CASEY'S FAR AWAY
FROM HOME AND
EVERYONE ELSE
IS ON PATROL
TONIGHT. I COULD
ASK ONE OF THEM
TO COME BACK.
OR PERHAPS
"HE" WILL HELP ME...



(SIGH)
WHO IS
IT?

I DON'T
WANT TO BE
DISTURBED
RIGHT NOW...

HELLO.

HUH?
APRIL?

NO, NO, NO!
IT'S ALRIGHT!

I WASN'T DOING
ANYTHING IMPORTANT
AT ALL!

SO CASEY'S
GONE AND
YOU NEED
SOME MUSCLE?

I'LL HOP IN
THE SHOWER
AND I'LL
BE RIGHT
OVER!

APRIL AND I...
ALL ALONE FOR
ONCE. NO
CASEY.

THIS FAKE
WORLD IS
GIVING ME
ALL THE RIGHT
REASONS TO
PLAY ALONG
THIS TIME...





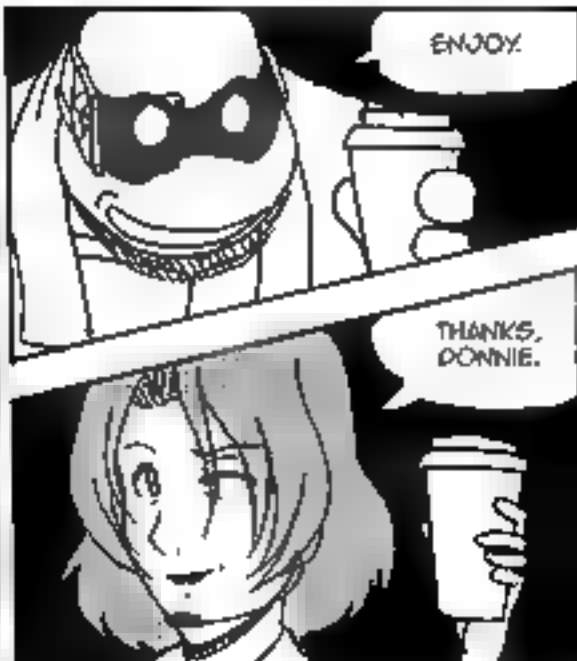


HEY.



WOW, THAT WAS FAST... AND YOU BROUGHT COFFEE!

I DIDN'T WANT TO COME EMPTY HANDED.



ENJOY.

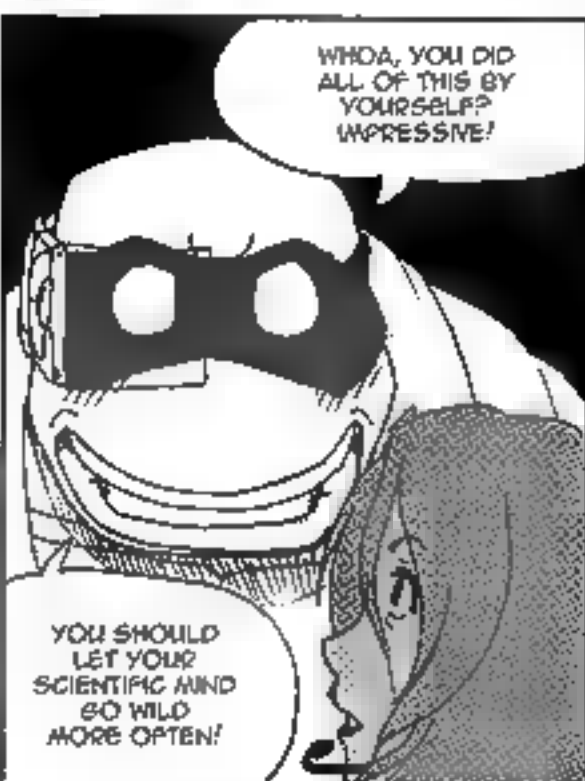
THANKS, DONNIE.



AND WHAT'S THIS ON YOUR SCREEN... A RADAR ON MAP OF BROOKLYN?

THAT'S CORRECT. YOUR BROTHERS ARE OUT ON PATROL TONIGHT AND ASKED ME TO BE THEIR NAVIGATOR.

I DISMANTLED ONE OF THE SHELL CELLS FOR THIS SETUP... SORRY I DIDN'T ASK FOR YOUR OPINION FIRST, BUT THEY WERE IN A HURRY. NO HARD FEELINGS, RIGHT?



WHOA, YOU DID ALL OF THIS BY YOURSELF? IMPRESSIVE!

YOU SHOULD LET YOUR SCIENTIFIC MIND GO WILD MORE OFTEN!



AHAHA... I'LL TAKE THAT AS A "NO"... AND THANKS, I'M FLATTERED.



WAIT! I'M GETTING SOMETHING!

REALLY? MIKEY'S ATTEMPTING SOME PROVOCATION STRATEGY?



EIKICHI
GOTOH!

YEAH, YOU!
SHREDDER'S
#1 LAPDOG!


SO MUCH
FOR TRYING
TO SHUT
ME UP,
HUH?

I'M STILL ALIVE
AND KICKING!
I CAN STILL
DIG OUT DIRT
ON YOU!




I HOPE
YOU LIKE
LOVE
STORIES...

...BECAUSE MY
NEXT BOOK WILL
BE ABOUT HOW
YOUR BOSS,
OROKU SAKI,
PROBABLY
NEVER GOT LAID!



EXACTLY WHAT I EXPECTED OF
AIKEY... HE KNOWS EXACTLY
HOW TO PUSH THE BUTTONS
OF OUR TARGET.

AND AS A
COMPANION
PIECE...



HEY... DESPITE BEING IN A
MOSTLY INDUSTRIAL AREA,
THERE MIGHT BE BYSTANDERS
WHO'LL HEAR AIKEY...

AS ONE OF SHREDDER'S
ELITE NINJA, EIKICHI
WORSHIPS HIS BOSS.
HE'LL WANT TO
SILENCE AIKEY.

I'LL WRITE ABOUT
HIS LOSER BRO
WHO DIED TRYING
TO SCORE!!

YEAH? THAT JUST ADDS TO THE
PRESSURE FOR THAT ELITE NINJA
TO SHUT UP AIKEY.
THERE AIN'T ENOUGH PEOPLE AROUND
TO INTERFERE WITH OUR PLAN, JUST
ENOUGH TO PISS OFF THAT GUY.

YOU'RE AN
ELITE ALRIGHT...

...AN ELITE
LOSER IN THE
FOOT CLAN!!

HUFF...HUFF...
HE'S FAST!

THEN RUN
FASTER,
SLOWPOKE!

WE GOTTA BE
READY TO
BACK MIKEY
UP!

MY TURTLE
SENSE IS
TINGLING!

GAHAHAHA!
MISSED ME!

YOU...

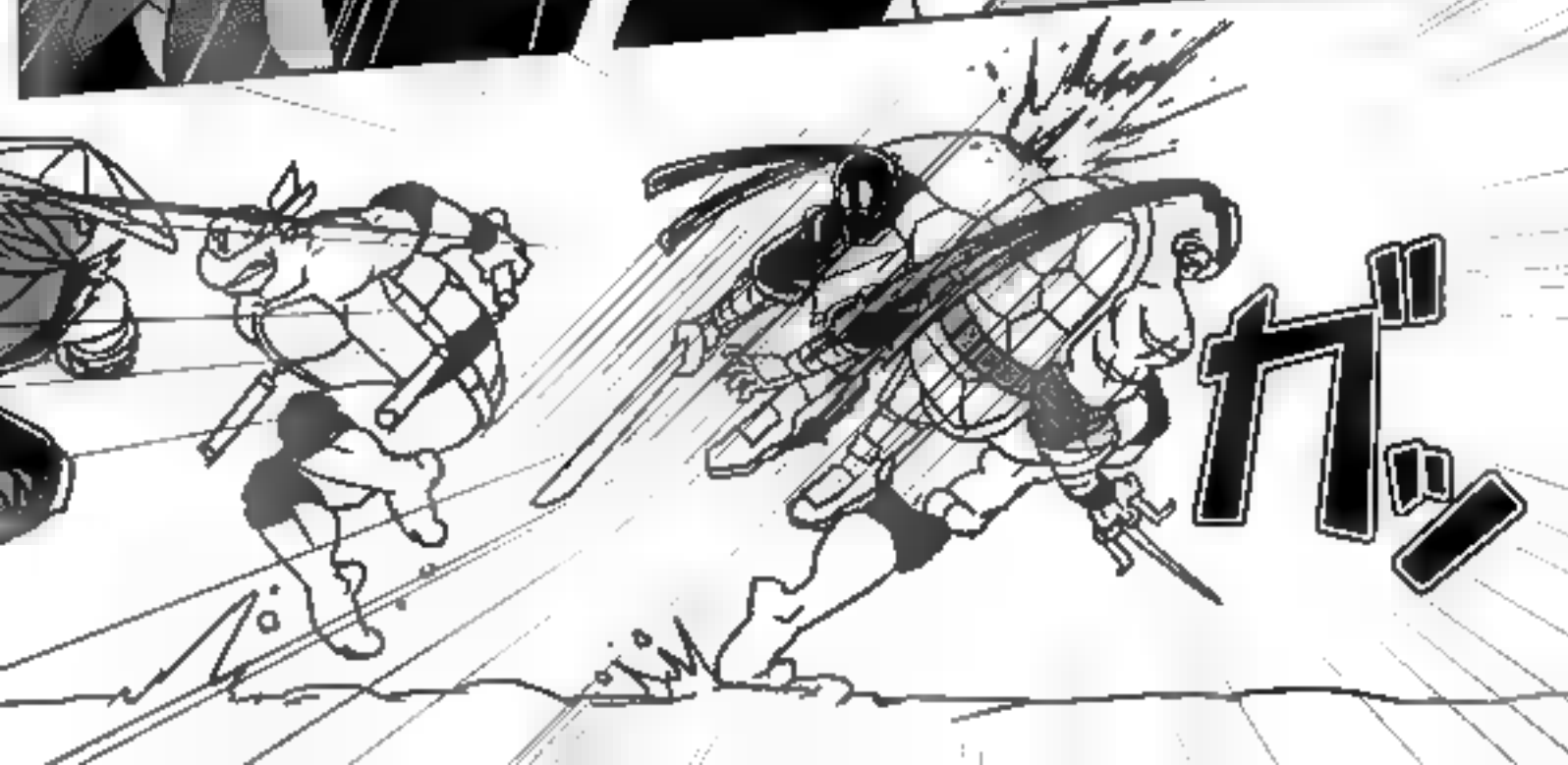
I'LL...
KILL YOU...!!

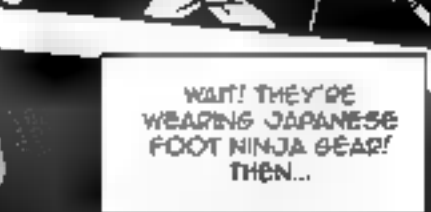
CRAP!
BOOST
ME UP,
RENOIR!


AH!

OK... OK!

READY WHEN
YOU ARE!







CHECKED
NO MIRROR
ON HIM.

SWITCHING
TO PLAN B.

YOU FREAKS
HAVE RUINED
ME TWICE
ALREADY!

YOU'LL PAY
FOR THAT
HUMILIATION!!

HUFF...
HUFF...

HOW UNWISE OF YOU
TO FIGHT US...YOU LOOK
LIKE YOU JUST CAME BACK
FROM ANOTHER BATTLE AND
STILL HAVEN'T RECOVERED.

OUT OF THE
FRYING
PAN AND INTO
THE FIRE...

SILENCE!
YOU HAVEN'T
HEARD THE
LAST OF ME!

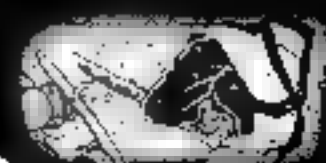
EVERYBODY!
FALL BACK
NOW!



RENOIIIIIR!!
SPEAK UP OR
I'M GONNA KICK
YER ASS!!

HEY... YOUR
FRIENDS ARE
ALL GONE...

WHY ARE
YOU STILL
HERE...?



WHAT ARE
YOU TELLING
ME?

WAIT...
NO!
IT CAN'T
BE!



YOU
SURVIVED!

I... I MEAN
THAT IN A
GOOD WAY!



YOU KNOW,
IT WAS AN
ACCIDENT!
I JUST
WANTED
TO PUSH
YOU OFF
AND...



EGG...



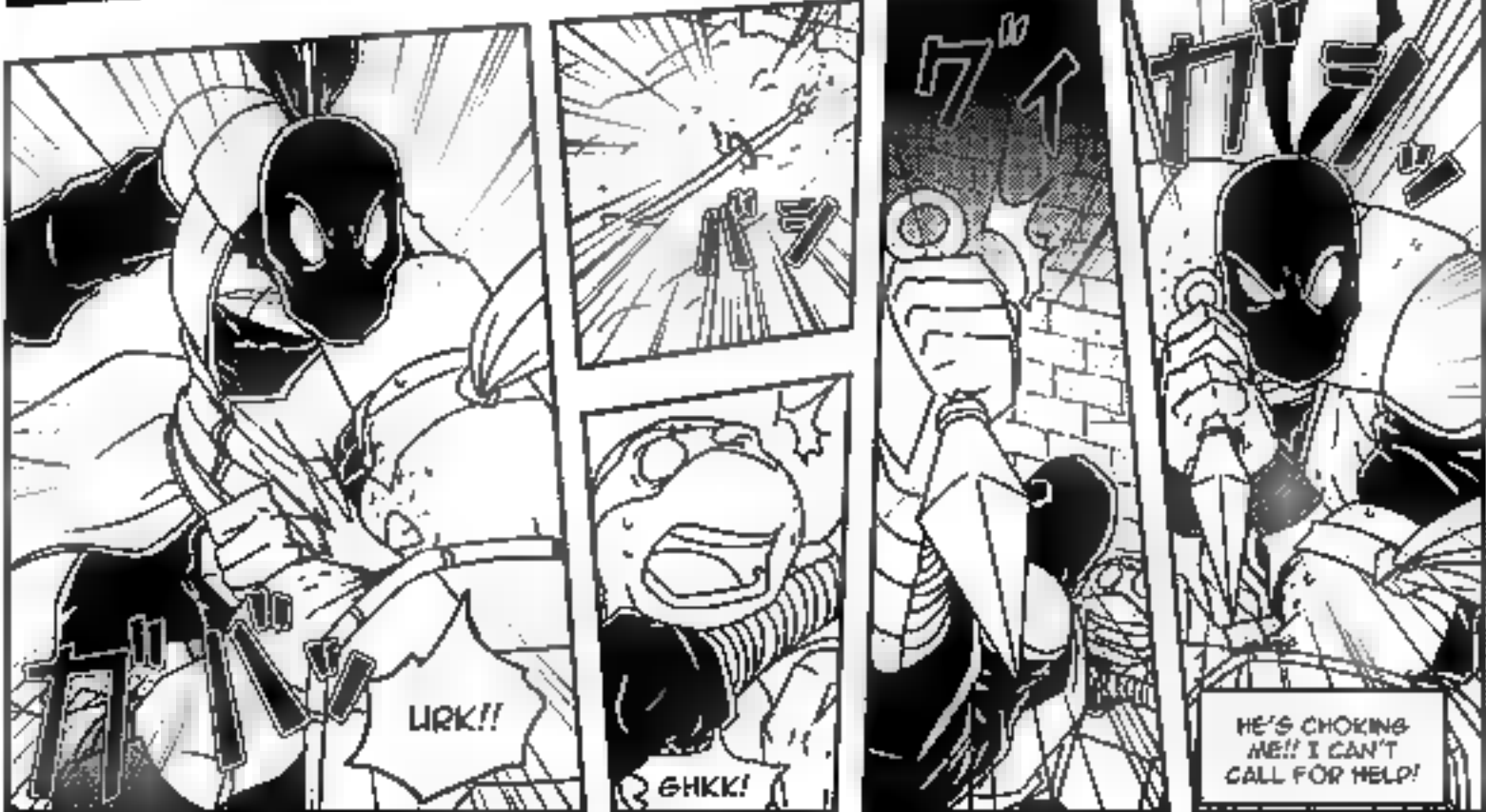
THIS TIME,
LET'S NOT
FIGHT,
OKAY?

WE
DON'T
HAVE
TO!



ACK!!

SH...!!



URK!!

GHKK!

HE'S CHOKING
ME!! I CAN'T
CALL FOR HELP!



I WAS ABLE
TO BOOST
RACHAEL
UPWARDS!
I'M STRONG
ENOUGH!

I CAN HOLD
HIM OFF, BUT
FOR HOW
LONG?

COME ON...
WHERE ARE
THEY?

AM I GOING
TO DIE HERE,
ALONE?

HE...
DYING...

ALONE...
AGAIN...?

MY BODY... I FEEL
LIKE IT'S
REMEMBERING
SOMETHING.

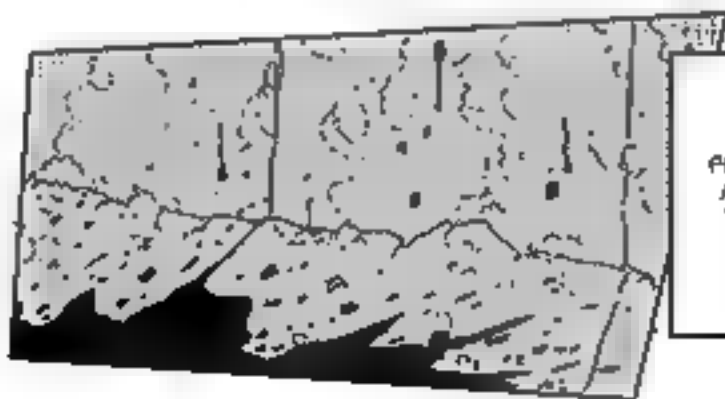
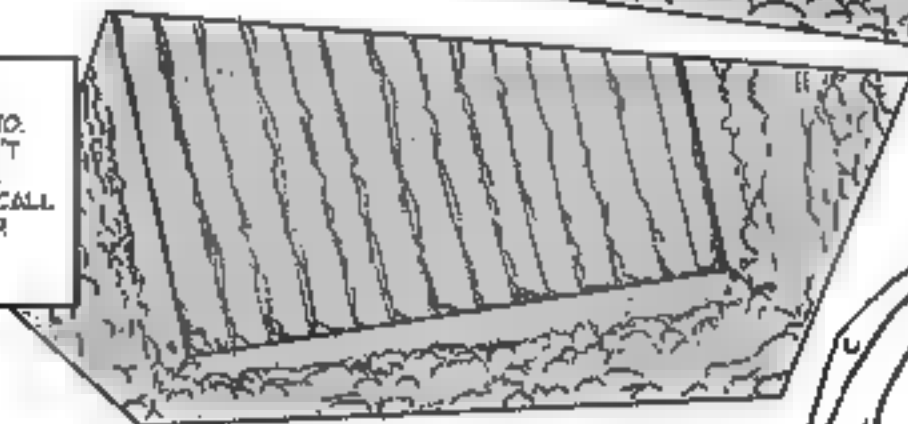
A DARK PLACE.
I FELT WEAK AND
CONFUSED.

A DEAD END.
I COULDN'T
SCREAM.
I COULDN'T CALL
FOR HELP.

THEN I
FELT BETTER.
AND IT WAS
WARM AND
SALTY.

AGAIN,
COULDN'T
BREATHE.
COULDN'T
CALL FOR
HELP.
TRIED TO GET
SOME AIR.
DYING.

AGAIN.
WARM...
SALTY...
SAME
TASTE...







H...
MASTER?

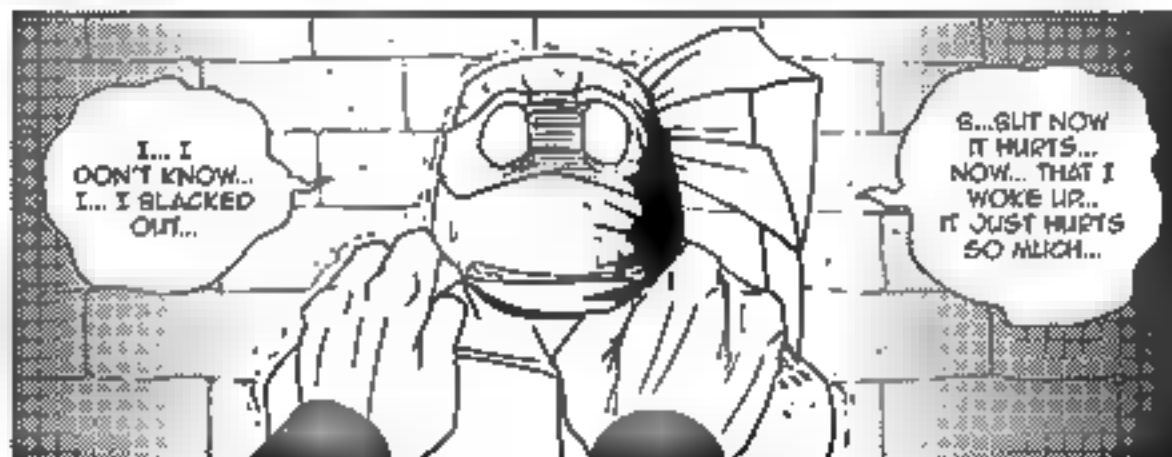


...GOOD.
SNAPPED OUT
OF IT... GOOD...

SIT STILL, I'M
GONNA TRY TO
STOP THE
BLEEDIN'.



...YA DUMBASS!
WHY DIDN'T YA
FIGHT BACK?



I... I
DON'T KNOW...
I... I BLACKED
OUT...

B...GLIT NOW
IT HURTS...
NOW... THAT I
WOKE UP...
IT JUST HURTS
SO MUCH...



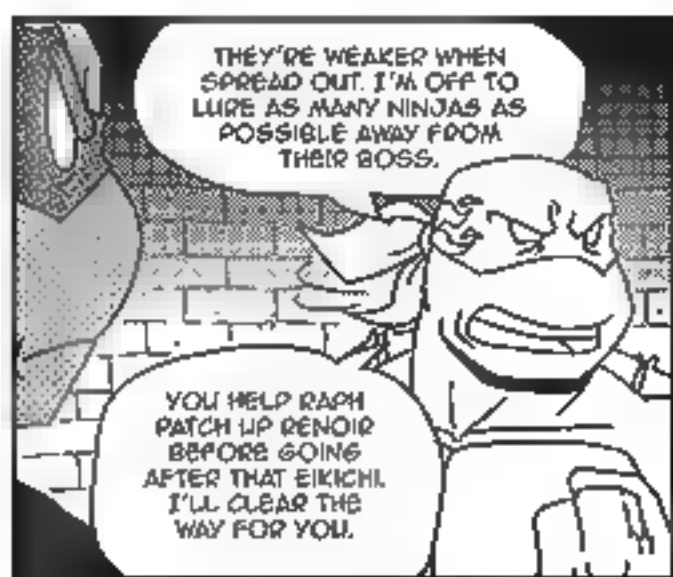
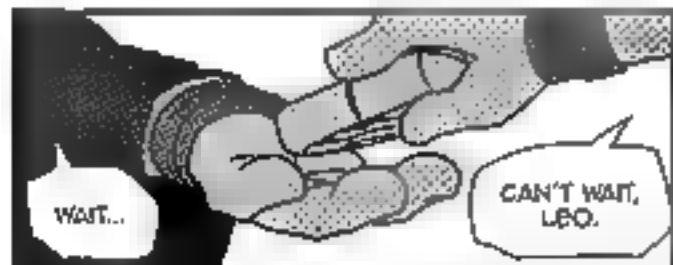
RAPH, LEAVE MIKEY AND I/
CARRY RENZO TO
DONNIE AND HAVE
HIM ADMINISTER
FIRST AID ON HIM!

I AGREE!
I MEAN, JUST
LOOK AT HOW
MUCH HE'S
BLEEDING!



HE CAN
TOUGH IT
OUT!!
HE'S STAYIN'
WITH US!!

NO!





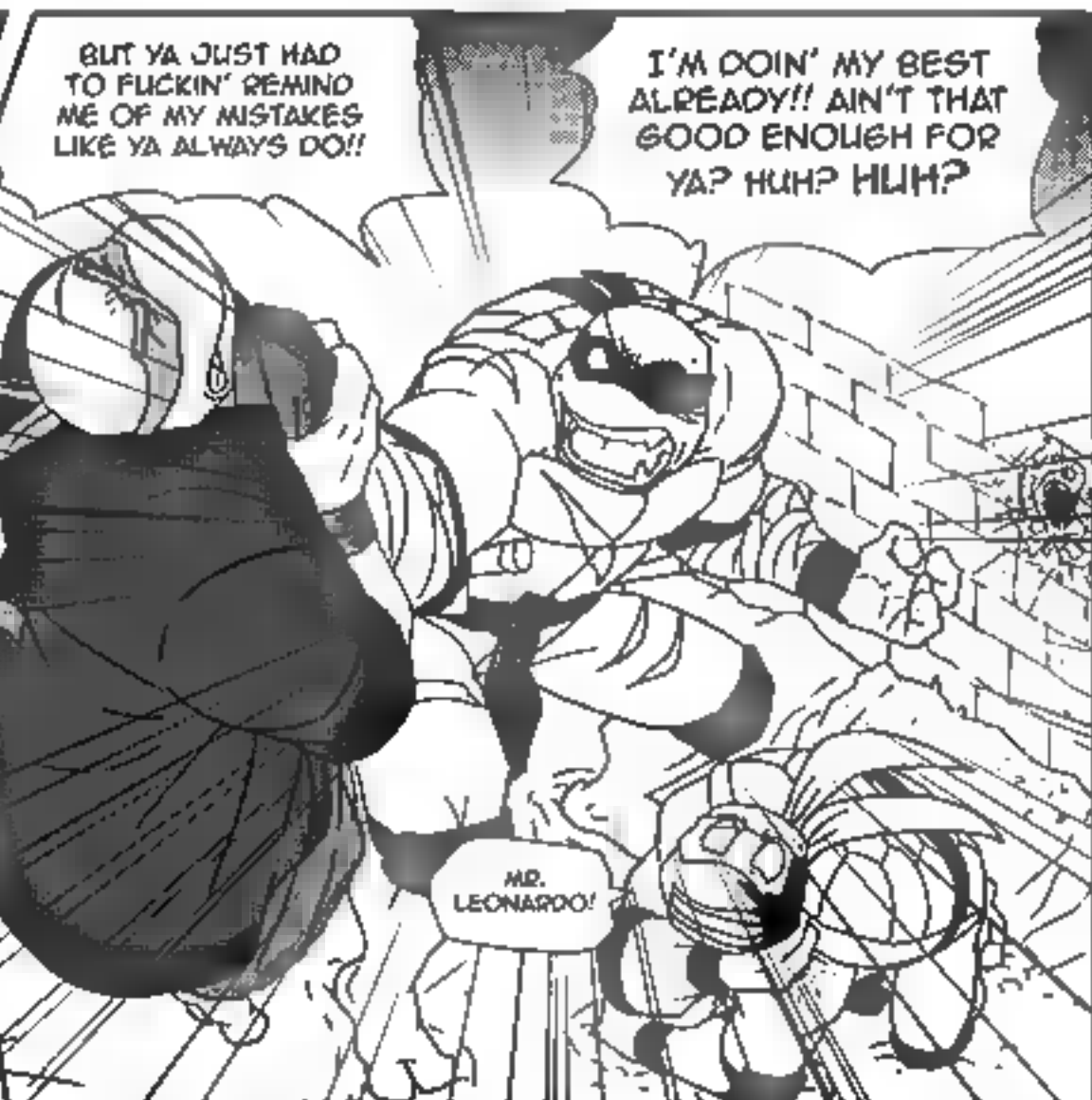


BUT YA JUST HAD
TO FUCKIN' REMIND
ME OF MY MISTAKES
LIKE YA ALWAYS DO!!

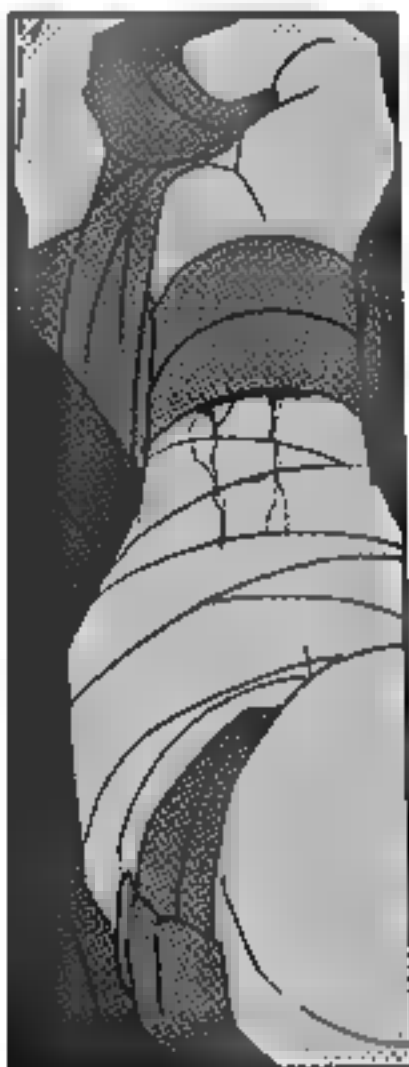
I'M DOIN' MY BEST
ALREADY!! AIN'T THAT
GOOD ENOUGH FOR
YA? HUHP HUHP?



...YA KNOW
THAT!!



MR.
LEONARDO!



RAPH... DON'T LET
THE CURSE WIN...

SHUDDAP...

DON'T GIVE IN TO
YOUR DARKNESS...

SHUDDAP...!

FOCUS!! YOU
MUST RESIST!



DON'T FUCKIN'
PATRONIZE ME,
ASSHOLE!!

HE CAN DEAL WITH
HIS RAGE ALONE.

HE'LL JUST HAVE
TO CARVE A LITTLE
DEEPER INTO
HIS SCARS.

I KNOW MYSELF
AND I KNOW
RENOIR, DAMMIT!!

...WHAT
THE...!

MASTER!
DON'T
DO IT!!

NOT...
AGAIN...

HAAH...
HAAH...

HAAH...
HAAH...

R...
RENOIR.

EVERY TIME YOU'RE
GONNA MESS UP IN
BATTLE TODAY...
I'M GONNA DO THIS

Y...YE KNOW
EXACTLY WHAT I'M
GETTIN' AT...

YEAH... BUT THAT'S
NOT HOW IT WORKS.



AND THE REASON WHY
YOU DID THIS...
MASTER IT'S NOT...



CRAM IT,
KID.

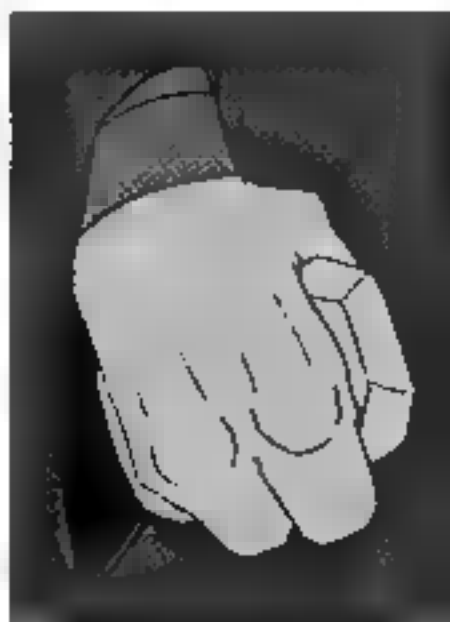
HOP ON
MY BACK,
PRONTO.

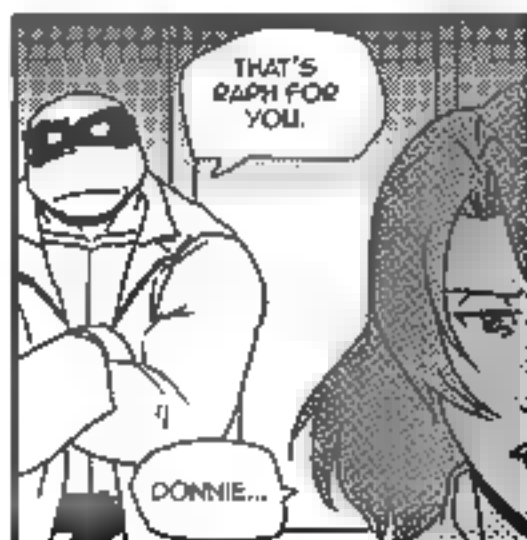


BETTER NOT
HEAR A WORD
FROM YOU TILL
WE'RE DONE

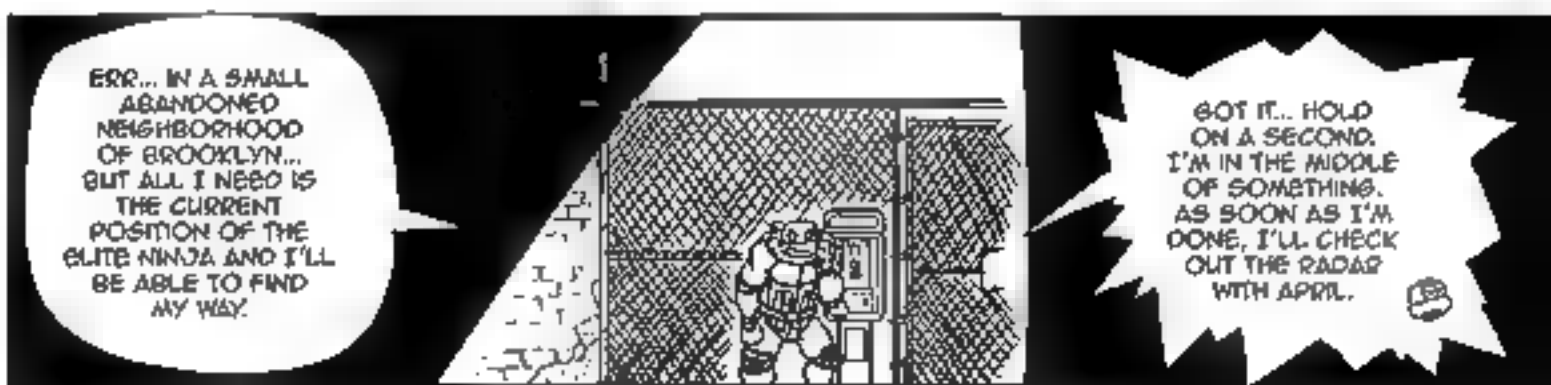
(SNIFF)

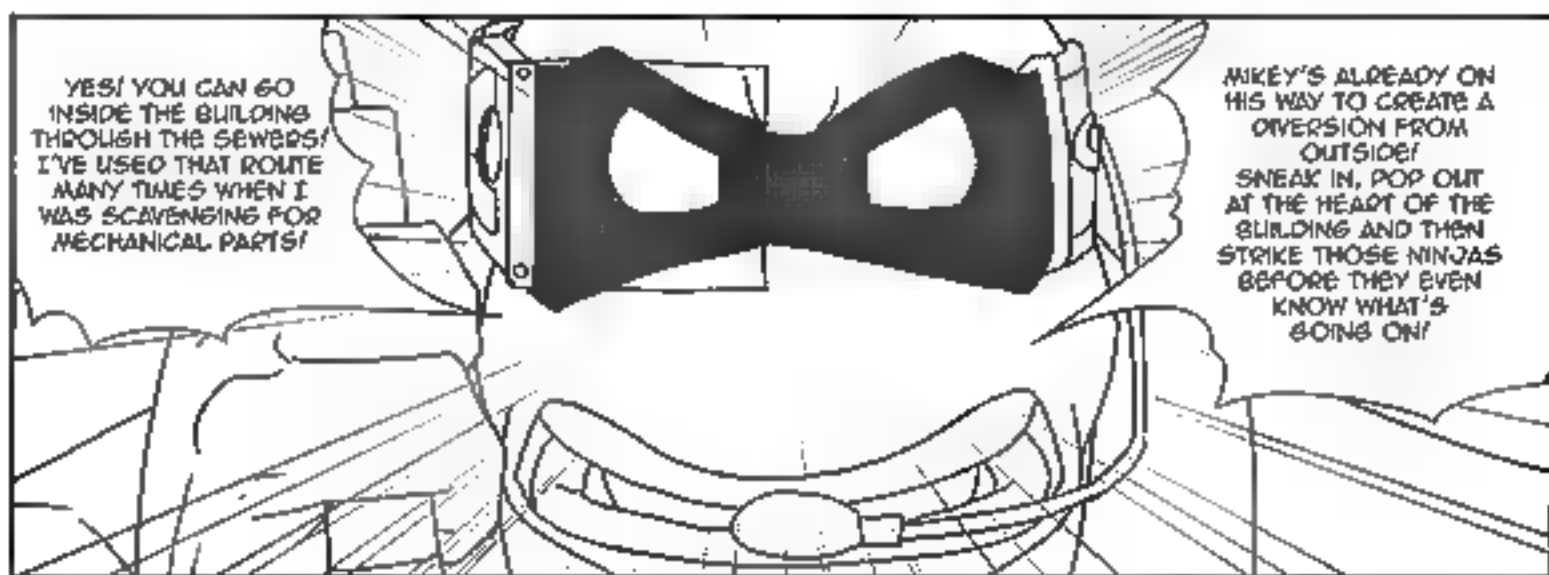
SHUT
UP!

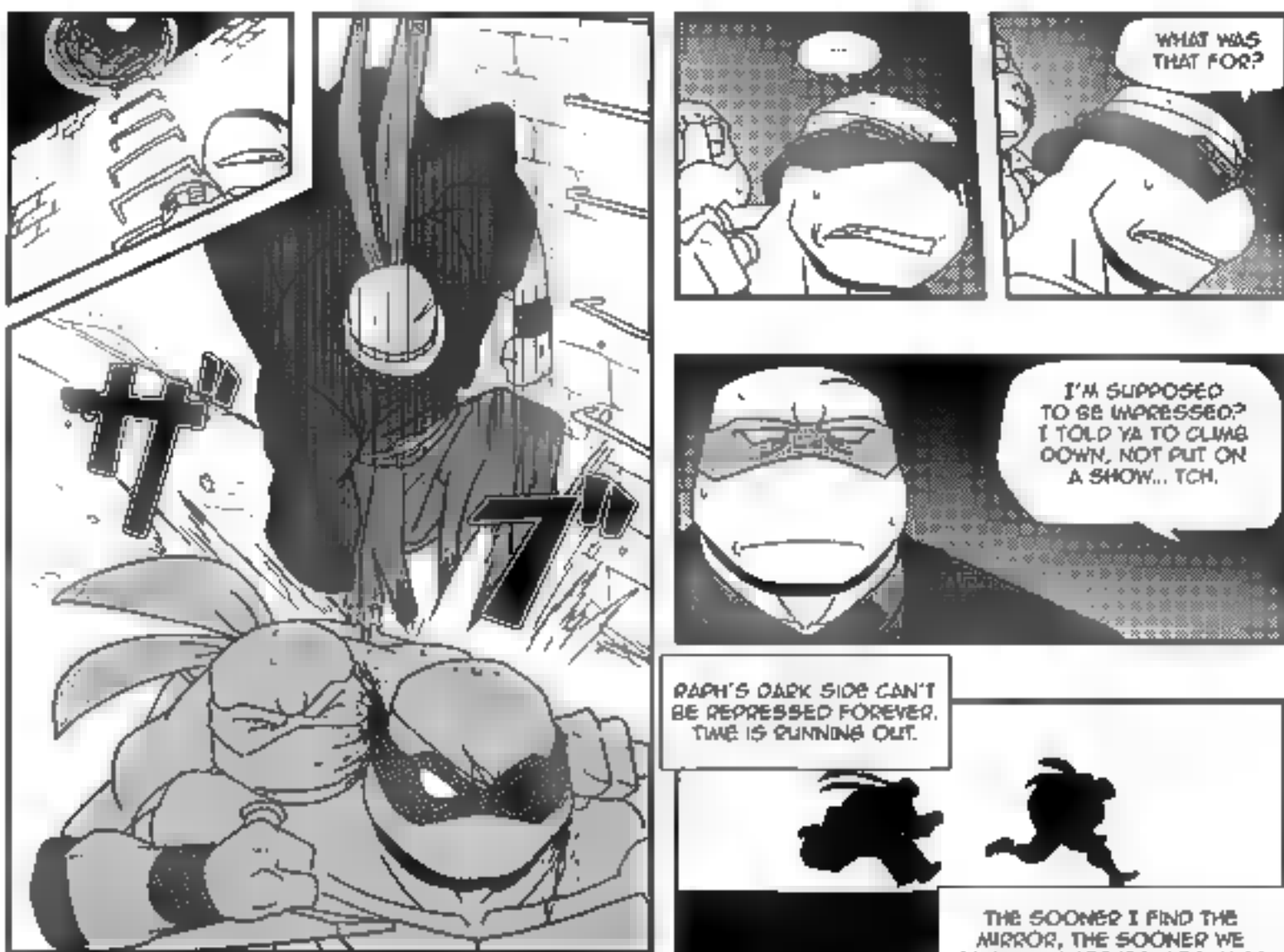






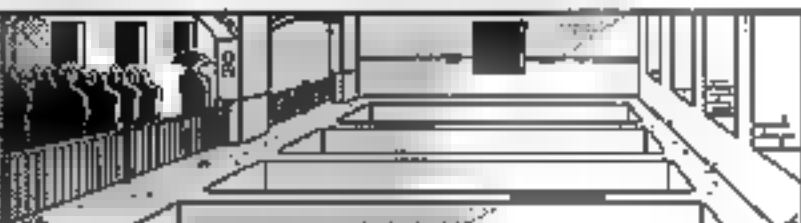






LEADER, WHAT
ARE WE TO DO
NOW THAT WE'VE
REASSEMBLED?

THINGS AREN'T LOOKING
GOOD FOR US... WHAT WITH
THE GREEN FREAKS AND
THE JAPANESE FACTION
OF THE CLAN BEING
ON OUR TAIL...



THEY'RE ALL
ENEMIES OF THE
SHREDDER... WE'LL
TAKE CARE OF THEM
ONE BY ONE...

FOR STARTERS,
WITHOUT THIS MIRROR,
I KNOW THE CLAN WON'T
BE ABLE TO CARRY OUT
THEIR MISSION.



I DON'T CARE ABOUT
THEIR MISSION.

I DON'T CARE
ABOUT YAMATA-
NO-OROCHI.

I DON'T CARE
ABOUT SAVING
THE WORLD.

THE SHREDDER DIDN'T
CARE ABOUT IT EITHER.
THAT'S WHY HE TRIED TO
USE THE TOTSUKA SWORD
AS A TOOL FOR HIS
REVENGE AGAINST
HAMATO YOSHI...



...AND I FINISHED
THE JOB FOR HIM.
I BROUGHT THAT
SWORD TO THOSE
FREAKS...
AND THAT'S
PROBABLY WHY...



...I CAN SEE
PEOPLE USING
THIS MIRROR.



MUTANT NINJA TURTLES
MNT 外伝
G A I D E N

CHAPTER 24:
BLIND TRUST

YOU'RE NO LONGER SAFE HERE!

YOUR UNCLE TOLD ME "THEY" WERE IN NEW YORK BEFORE HE VANISHED WITHOUT A TRACE YESTERDAY!

THEY MUST BE ON CLOSING IN ON US AS WE SPEAK. NO TIME TO WASTE!

WAIT, DAD...

WHY ARE ONLY PACKING ONE LUGGAGE?

BECAUSE YOU'LL HAVE TO ESCAPE WITHOUT ME!

I'LL STAY HERE AND STALL THEM... I DON'T KNOW HOW BUT I WILL!

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO! MAKE YOUR WAY TO A PUBLIC PLACE... LIKE A SUBWAY STATION AND STAY THERE UNTIL DAWN! THEY CAN'T LAY A FINGER ON YOU WHEN THERE ARE PEOPLE AROUND. AND STAY OUT OF SHADOWS!! THEY'LL GET YOU IF YOU'RE IN THE DARK!

BUT DAD!

UPON SUNRISE, GO TO THE AIRPORT AND BOARD A PLANE USING THE MONEY AND FORGED PASSPORT IN YOUR LUGGAGE! DO YOU UNDERSTAND?

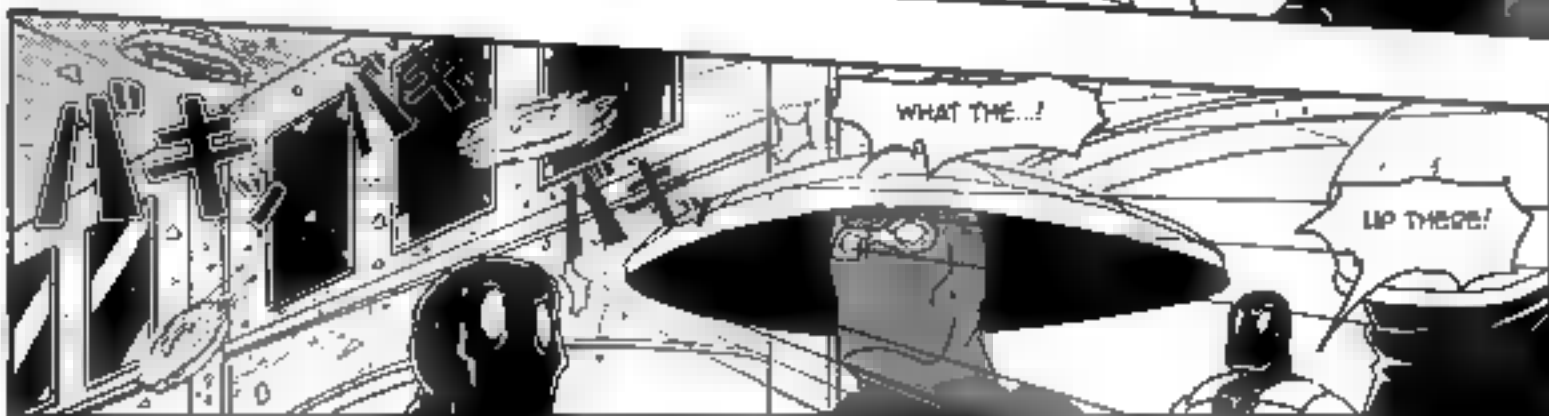
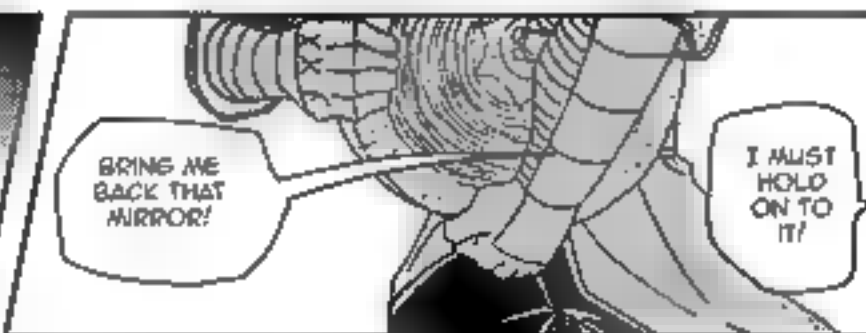
YES...

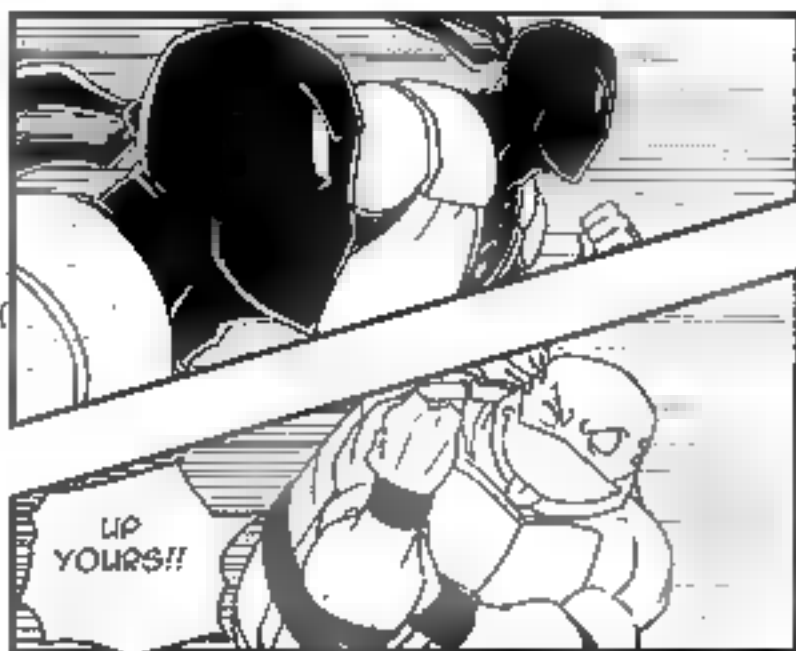
DAD... I... I'M SORRY... FOR EVERYTHING... IF IT WEREN'T FOR MOM AND I... YOU...

MARCELLA... DON'T APOLOGIZE FOR ANYTHING.

EVERY SECOND THAT YOU SPEND ENJOYING LIFE, DEFYING THOSE WHO WISH FOR A WORLD WITHOUT YOU IN IT...

...YOU MAKE ME VERY PROUD. YOUR LATE MOTHER WOULD FEEL THE SAME WAY AS WELL.







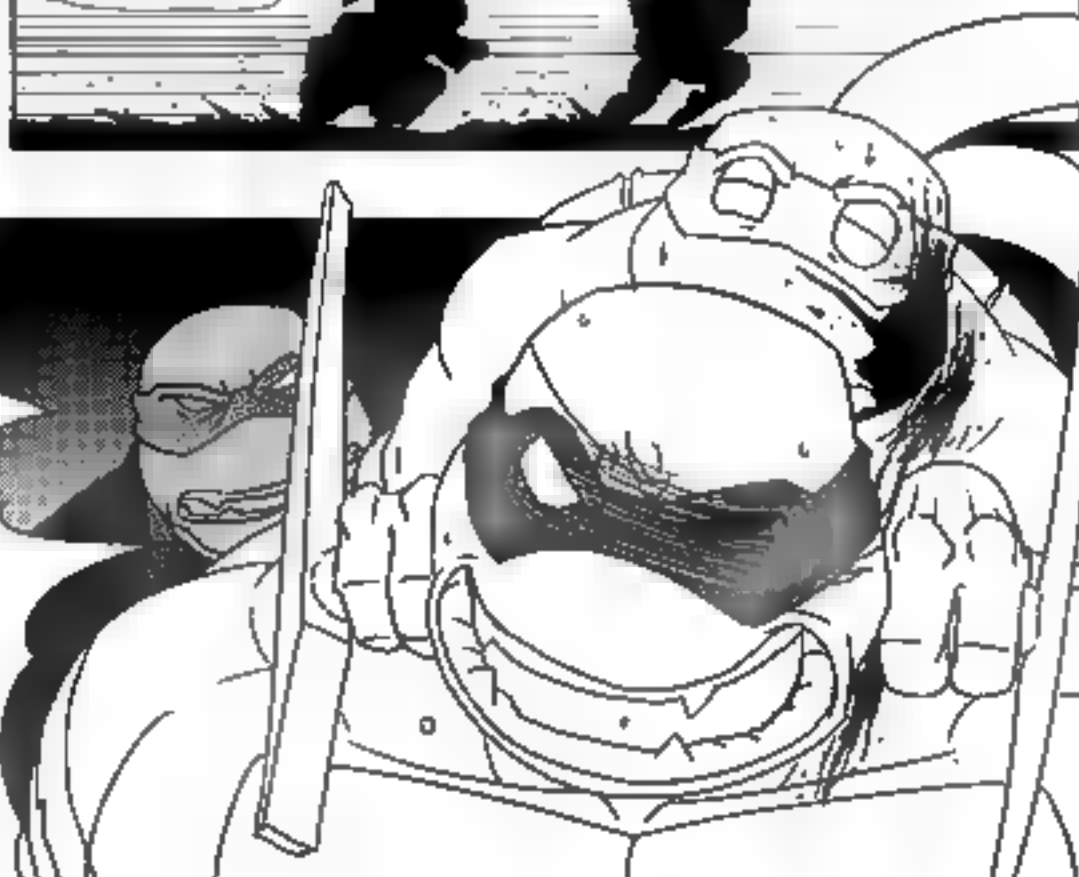
SO, BY THE TIME
WE GET THERE,
MIKEY'LL HAVE
WORKED HIS
MAGIC, RIGHT?

UGH.

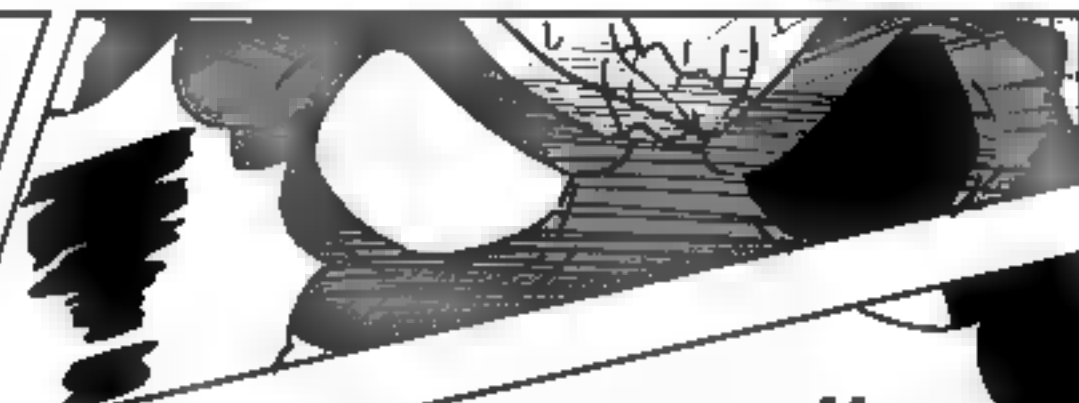


...RAPH! LISTEN.
THEIR NUMBERS HAVE
DUNISHED AND
WE HAVE THE ELEMENT
OF SURPRISE. LET'S
TRY TO HIT HARD

HEY-
DON'CHA TELL
ME HOW TO
KICK ASS,
LEO!



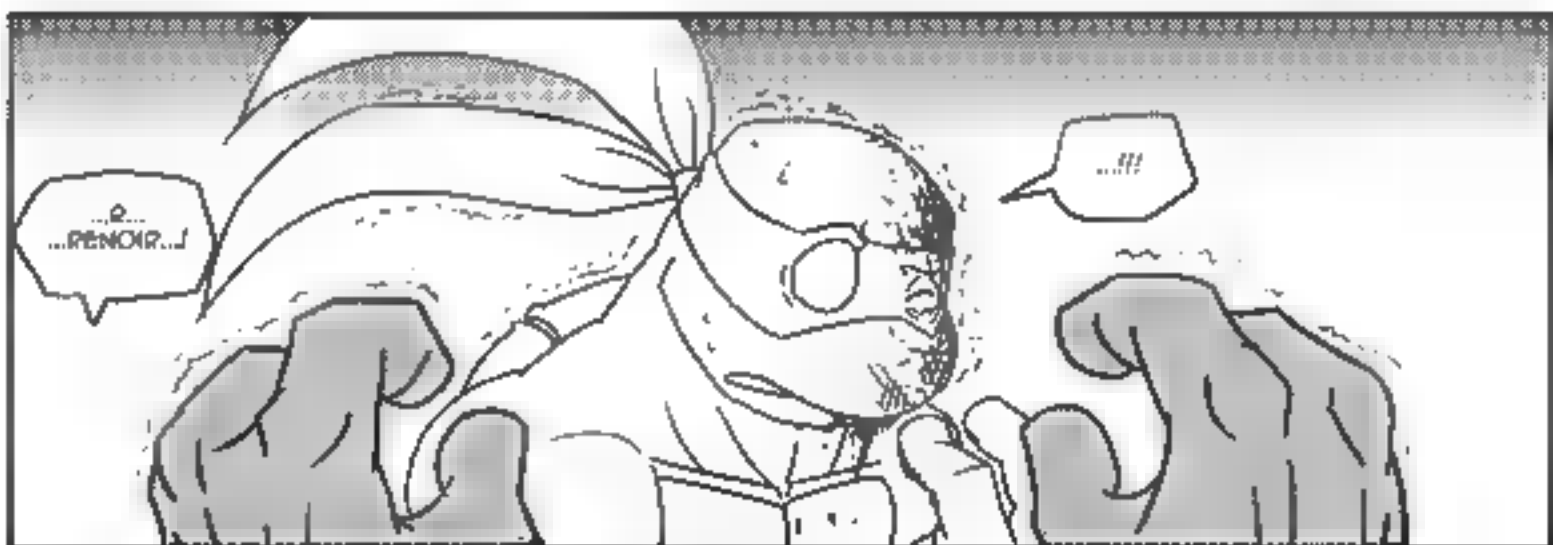
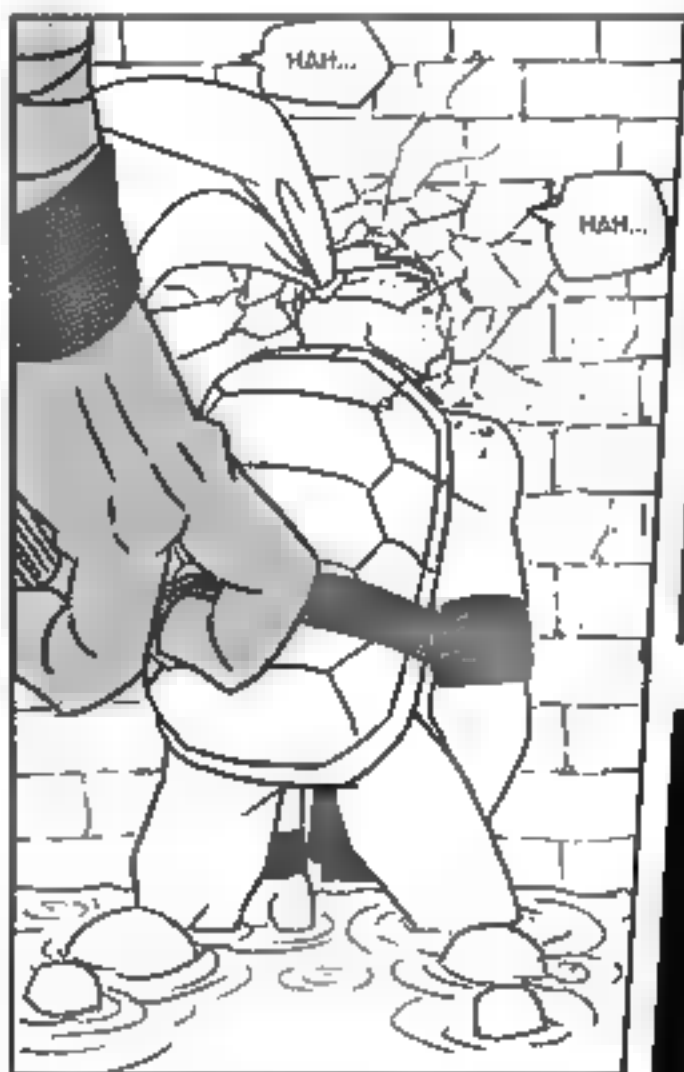
BUT, BUT...
THEY'RE NINJAS...
IF WE'RE TOO CARELESS,
WE MIGHT SCREW UP
AND...



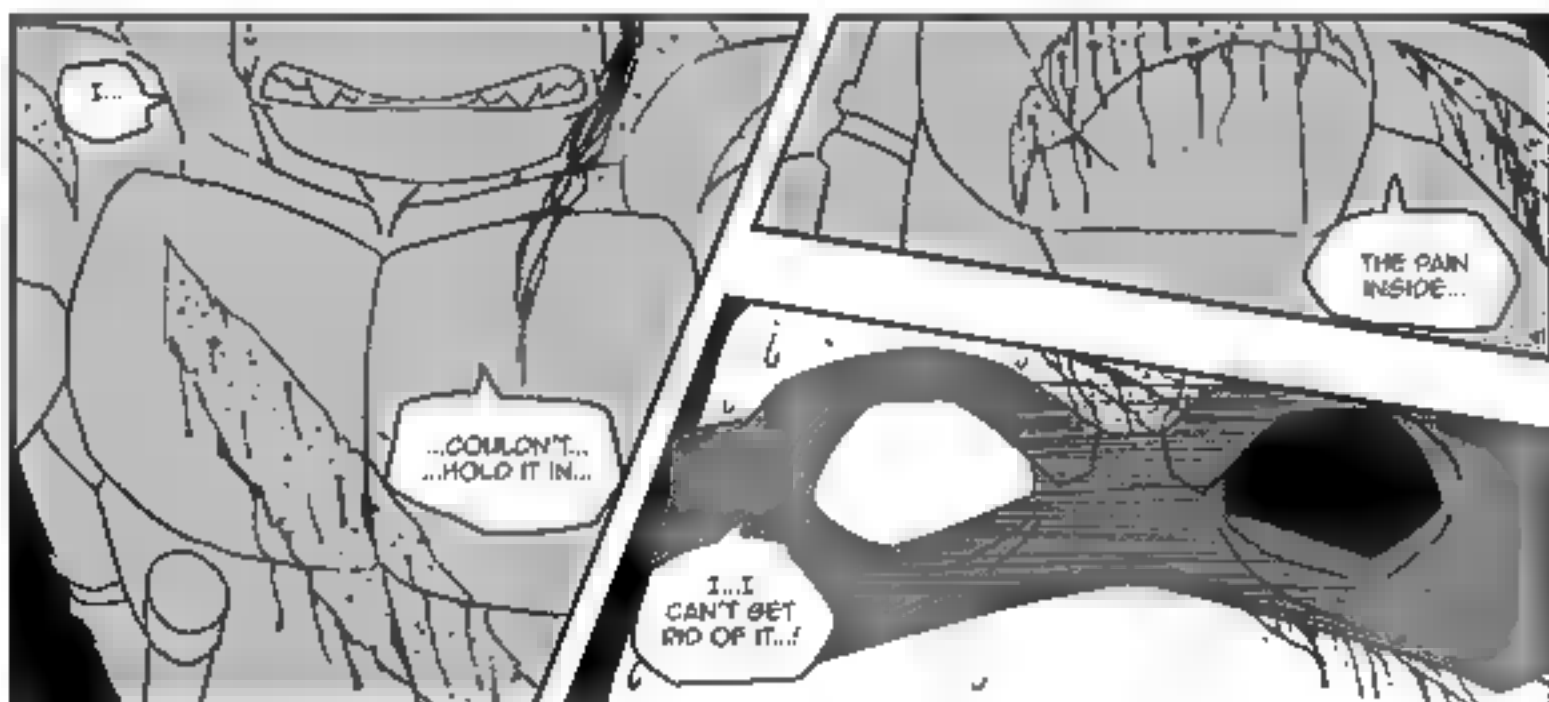
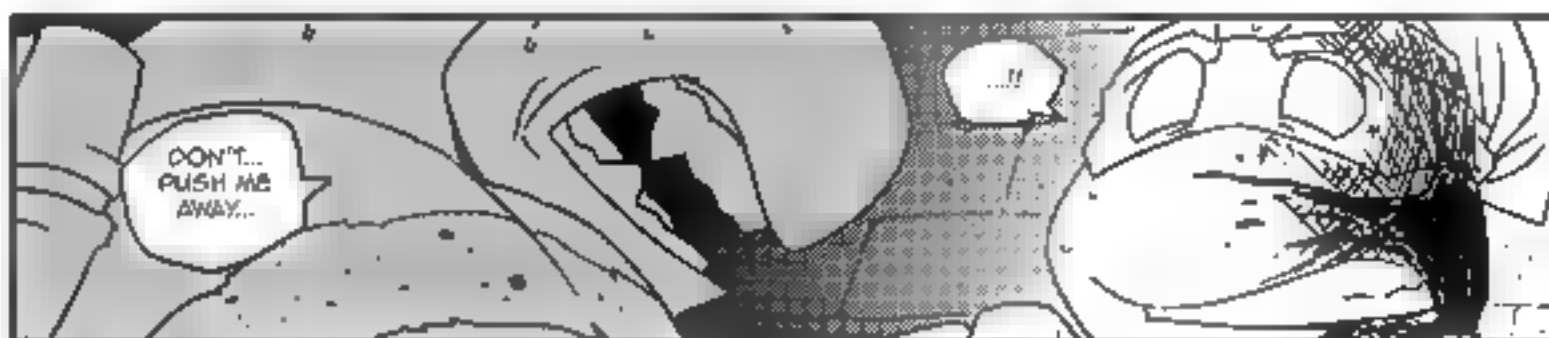
URKKKK!!

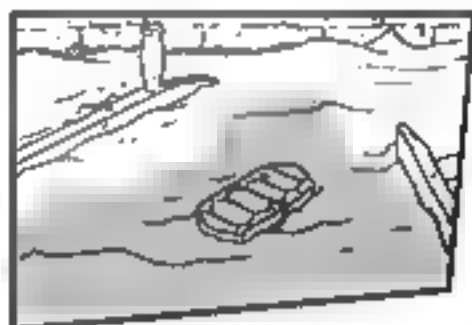
SCREW
UP?
MEEEE?



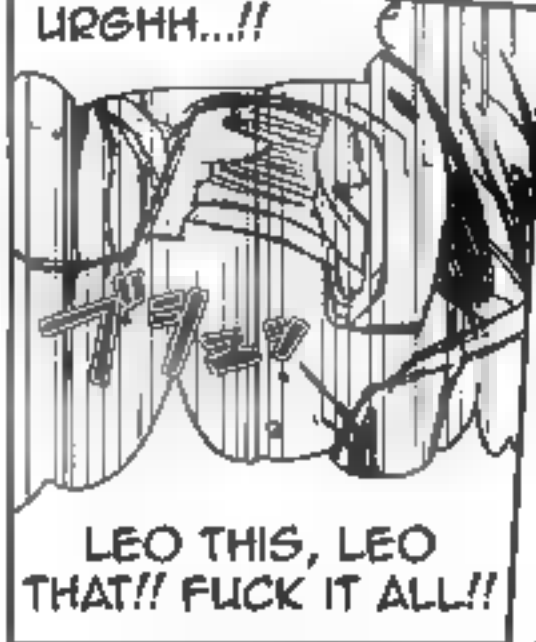
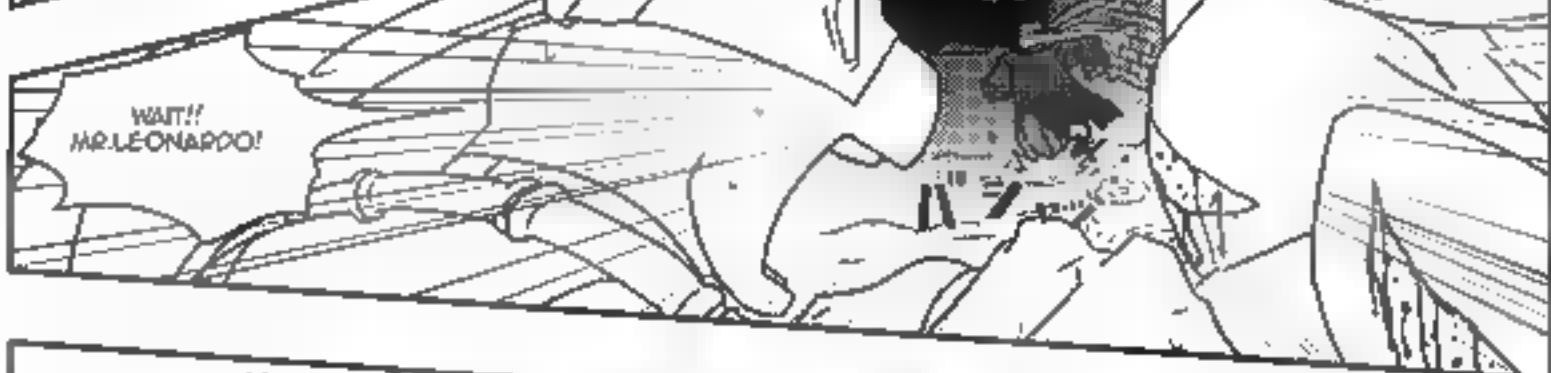


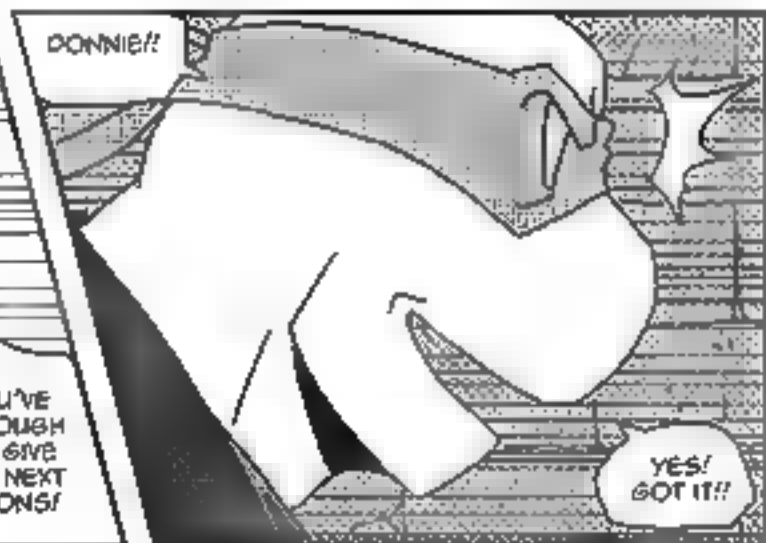
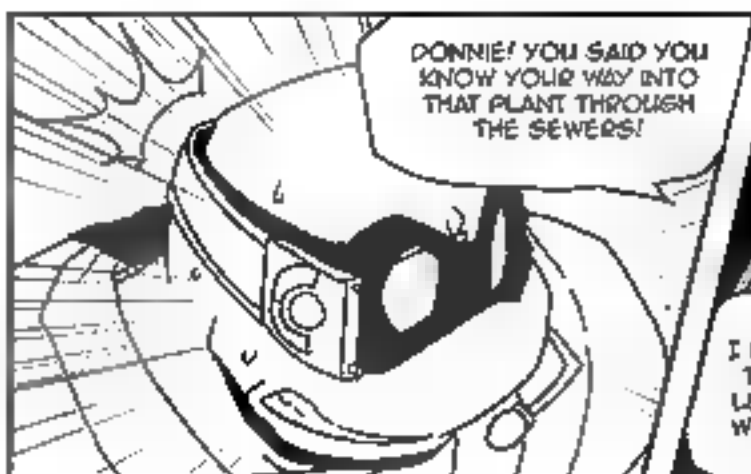
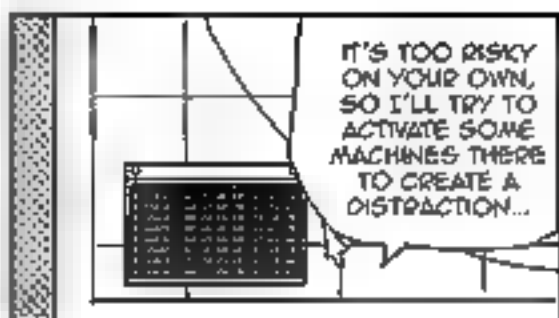


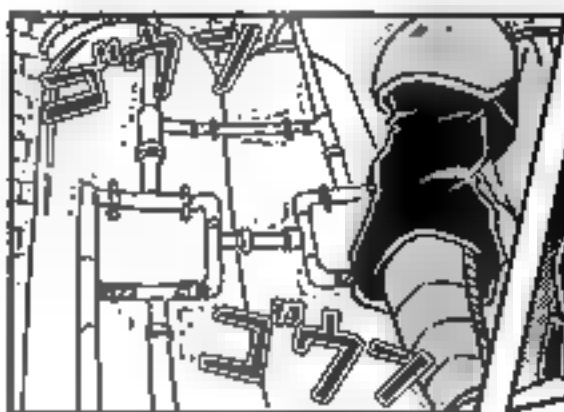




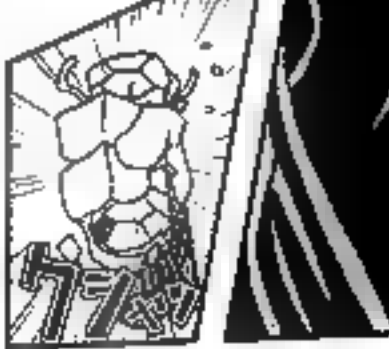
MY HERE PRESENCE KEEPS
TRIGGERING HIS CURSE!!
I MUST GET AWAY FROM HIM
IMMEDIATELY AND HAVE
KAPAI KILL A MORINAGA
AS SOON AS POSSIBLE!!







SWIFTLY AND
EFFICIENTLY.



I SEE A GIRL IN HER TEENS, HALF-JAPANESE, HALF... ITALIAN MAYBE. RED COAT, LONG HAIR. ABOUT 5'04".

SHE SEEMS TO BE ■ BROOKLYN. I SEE... HALSEY STREET.

IN ANY CASE, SHE MATCHES ONE OF THE SUSPECTS WE HAD UNDER SURVEILLANCE ■ OUR FILES...

I... I CAN SEE ANOTHER GIRL BUT I HAVE A HARD TIME FOCUSING ON HER...

YOU'LL CHECK LATER... WE HAVE THE MIRROR NOW.

KARAI. OUR NEXT TARGET IS SUSPECT "C" ■ OUR FILES. SHE'S NEAR HALSEY STREET, BROOKLYN.

GOT IT. I'M SENDING OUT A SQUAD TO TAKE HER OUT.

BRING BACK THE MIRROR TO KARAI.

SADAO?

THIS IS THE END OF THE LINE FOR YOU, EIKICHI GOTOH.

...S...
...SADAO...?

YOU WOULDN'T COOPERATE WITH KARAI EVEN AFTER SHE SPARED YOUR LIFE WHEN WE CAPTURED YOU...

YOU KILLED SEVERAL OF MY COMRADES AS YOU ESCAPED...

BLINDED BY YOUR DEVOTION TO OROKU SAKI, AND THEN BY YOUR DESIRE TO BUILD A FACTION TO DEFEY THE REST OF THE CLAN...

...YOU WERE UNABLE TO SEE THE BIGGER THINGS AT STAKE. THE IMMINENT DESTRUCTION THAT LOOMS UPON US SHOULD YAMATA-NO-OROCHI AWAKEN.

LOOK AT WHERE ALL OF THIS BROUGHT YOU... ALONE, ALL YOUR FOLLOWERS GONE OR DEAD... COMPLETELY LOST...

RYOTA WOULD BE ASHAMED OF YOU...

HRRR...

HRR.
HRRR...

HAHA!!
HAHAHAH!

I'LL SILENCE
HIM...

IN A SECOND...

EIKICHI,
GO ON,
SPEAK YOUR
MIND.

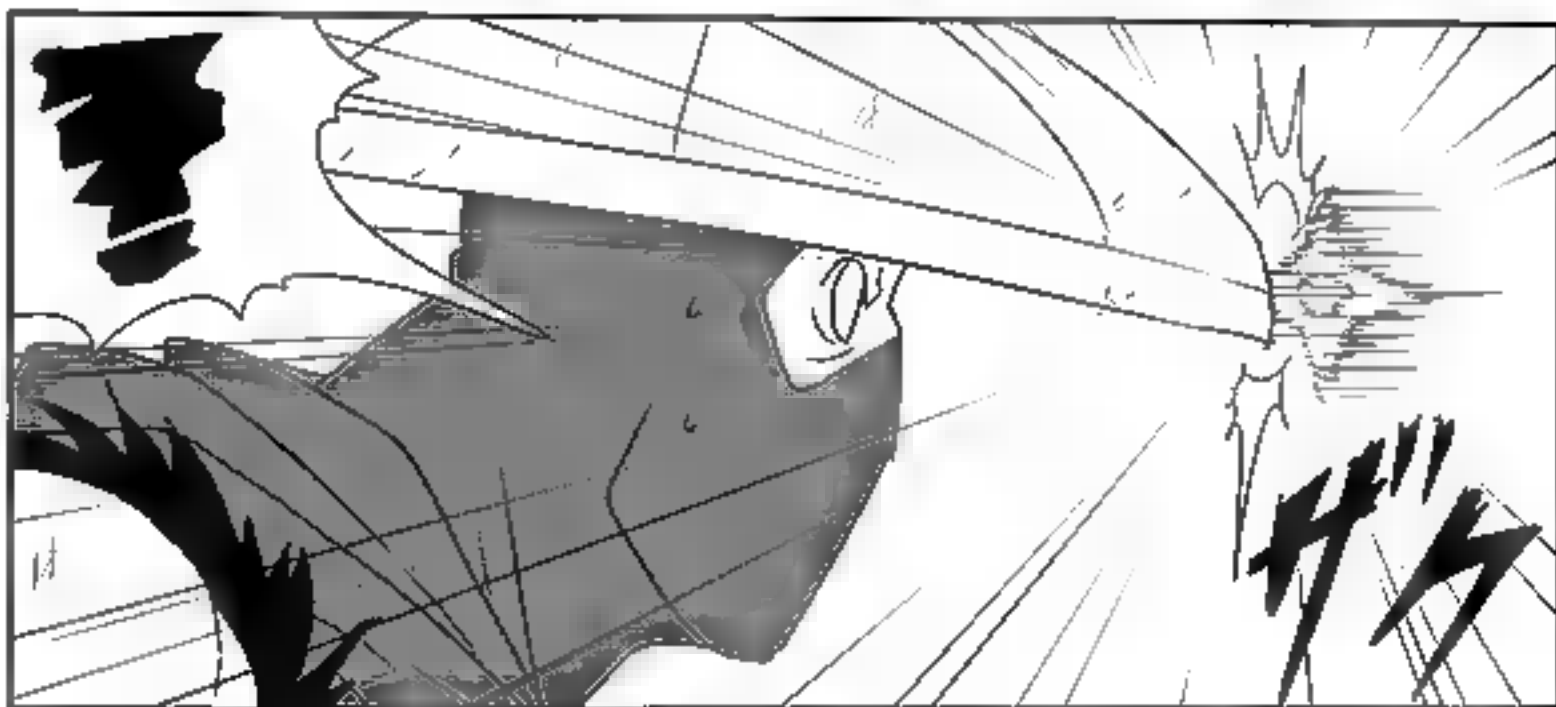
I REMIND YOU
OF HIM, DON'T I?
AFTER ALL... WE'RE
BROTHERS.


YES... HE TOLD ME
ALL ABOUT YOU.
YOU KNEW HIM
SO, SO WELL,
DIDN'T YOU?

IT'S A PITY
HE'S NO LONGER
AMONG THE LIVING.


NOW, SADAO...
COME AND JOIN ME.
LET'S GET TO KNOW
EACH OTHER.

YOU DON'T
HAVE TO BE
ALONE
ANYMORE...






PREYING ON
MY MISERY...
HOW INSULTING.



I SEE... YOU THINK YOU CAN
SEE RIGHT THROUGH
PEOPLE, DON'T YOU?




LET ME HUMOR
YOU, THEN...




TELL ME,
SADAO.

DID YOU REALLY
BELIEVE MY
BROTHER WAS
BEING TRUE TO
YOU?



WHEN I HEARD RUMORS
ABOUT YOU TWO,
I ASKED HIM ABOUT IT.
HE TOLD ME HE WAS
JUST PRETENDING, ON
KARA'S ORDERS.



YOU WANTED TO
LEAVE THE FOOT
CLAN SO SHE USED
MY BROTHER TO
GIVE YOU A REASON
TO STAY...



PRETTY SURE YOU
DISGUSTED HIM
THE WHOLE TIME...

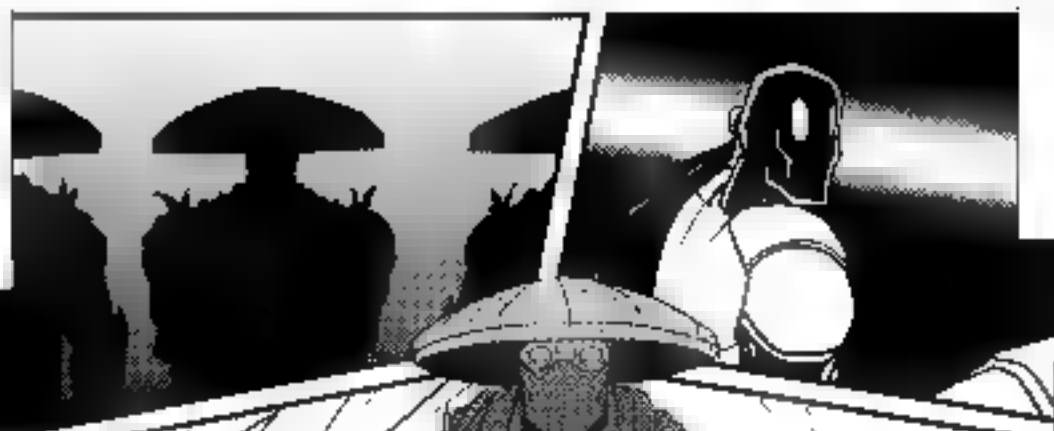
I KNOW THAT "STORY"...
HE TOLD IT TO KARAI
AND I.

DID YOU KNOW THAT?
DO YOU KNOW ANYTHING
AT ALL, EVEN NOW?



YOU WERE
ALWAYS
OBSESSED
WITH SERVING
UNDER
OROKU SAKI.

ONE DAY, HE
TOLD ME YOU
WANTED TO
MEET HIM TO
ASK ABOUT
HIS.



YOU SHARED SAKI'S
AMBITIONS. THAT WAS
ALL YOU'D EVER
TALK ABOUT...

HE'D USUALLY
OPEN UP
TO PEOPLE
HE TRUSTS AND
WANTS TO KEEP
IN HIS LIFE...

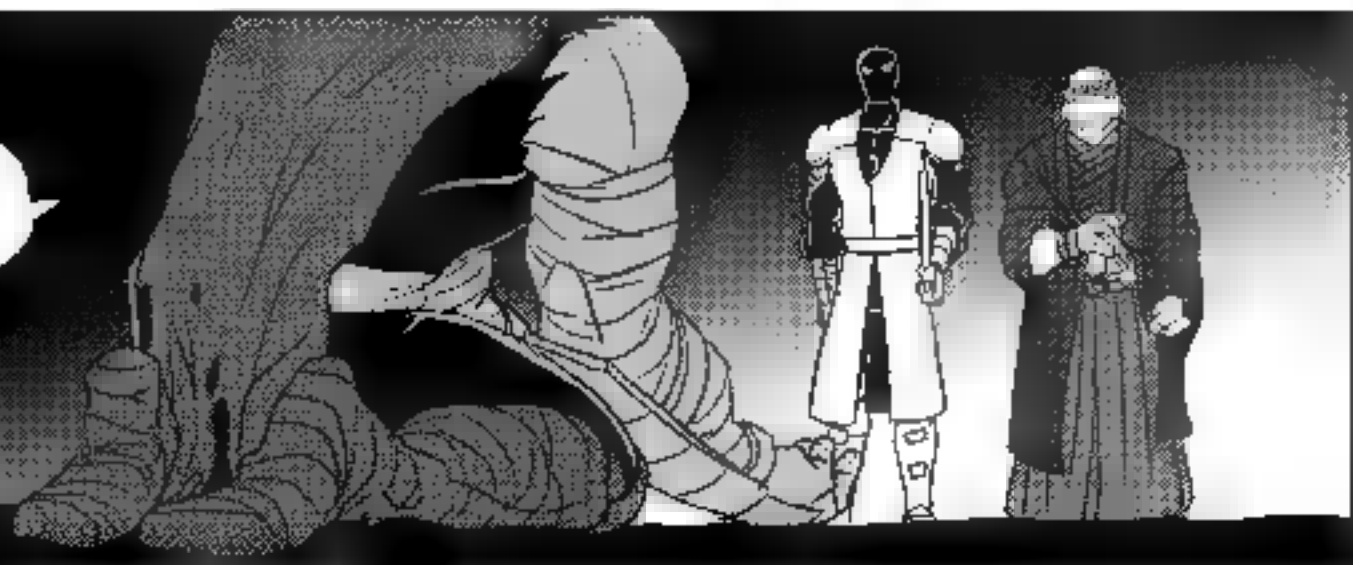


...THAT'S WHY HE
DECIDED TO TELL
YOU A CONVENIENT
LIE TO KEEP YOU
HAPPY AND KEEP
YOU OUT OF HIS
LIFE.

...TO THE POINT
WHERE HE NO
LONGER
RECOGNIZED
HIS OWN
BROTHER IN
YOU.



...SCREW
THAT...



NOW YOU GET IT...

NO... HE'S A BROKEN MAN. HE JUST REALIZED THAT THE ONE PERSON HE TRUSTED MOST AFTER OROKU SAKI DECEIVED HIM.

MY ALLIES...

OROKU SAKI...

SHOULD WE DISPOSE OF HIM?

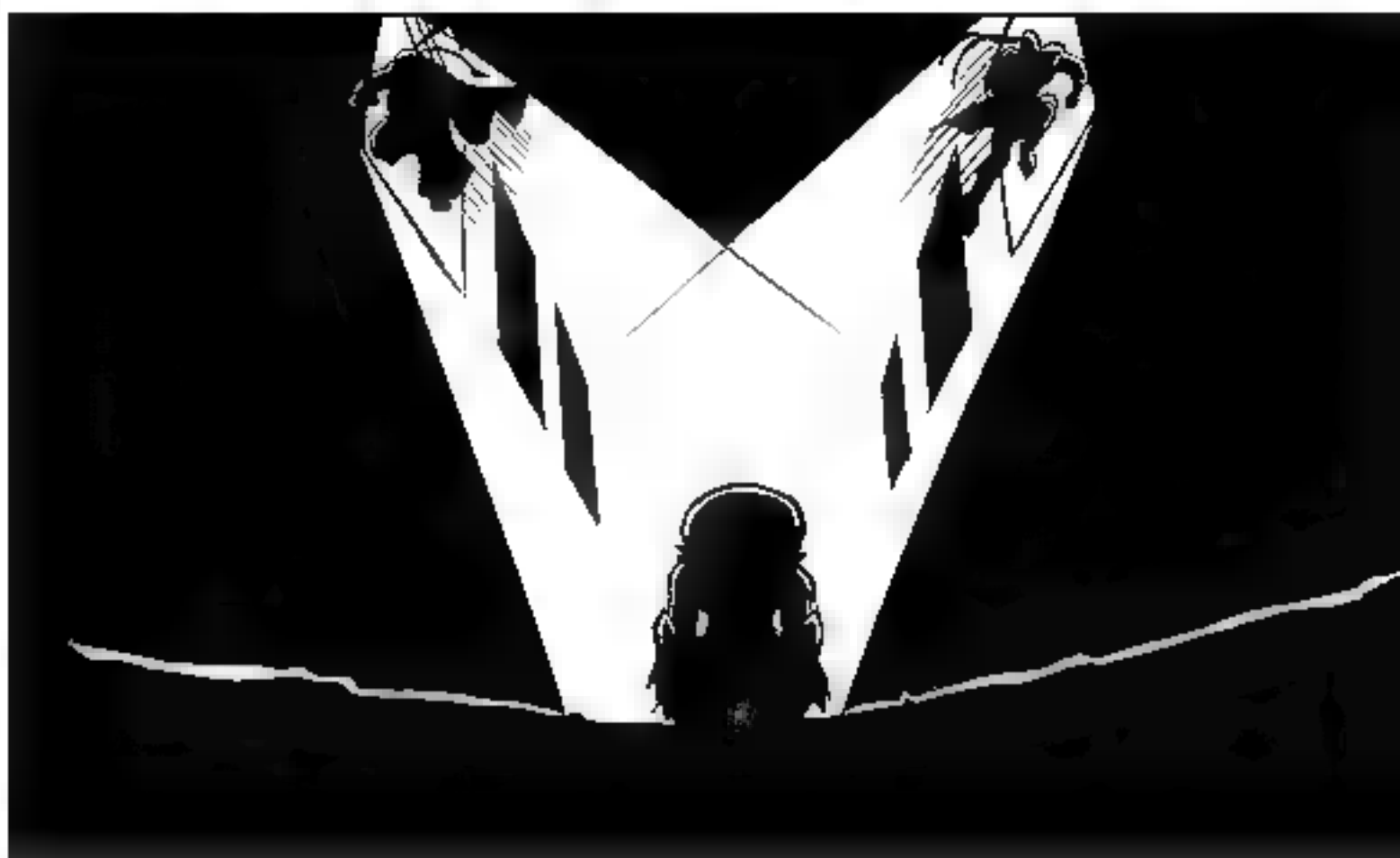
HE COULDN'T LOOK MORE PATHETIC AND PITIFUL.

RYOTA...

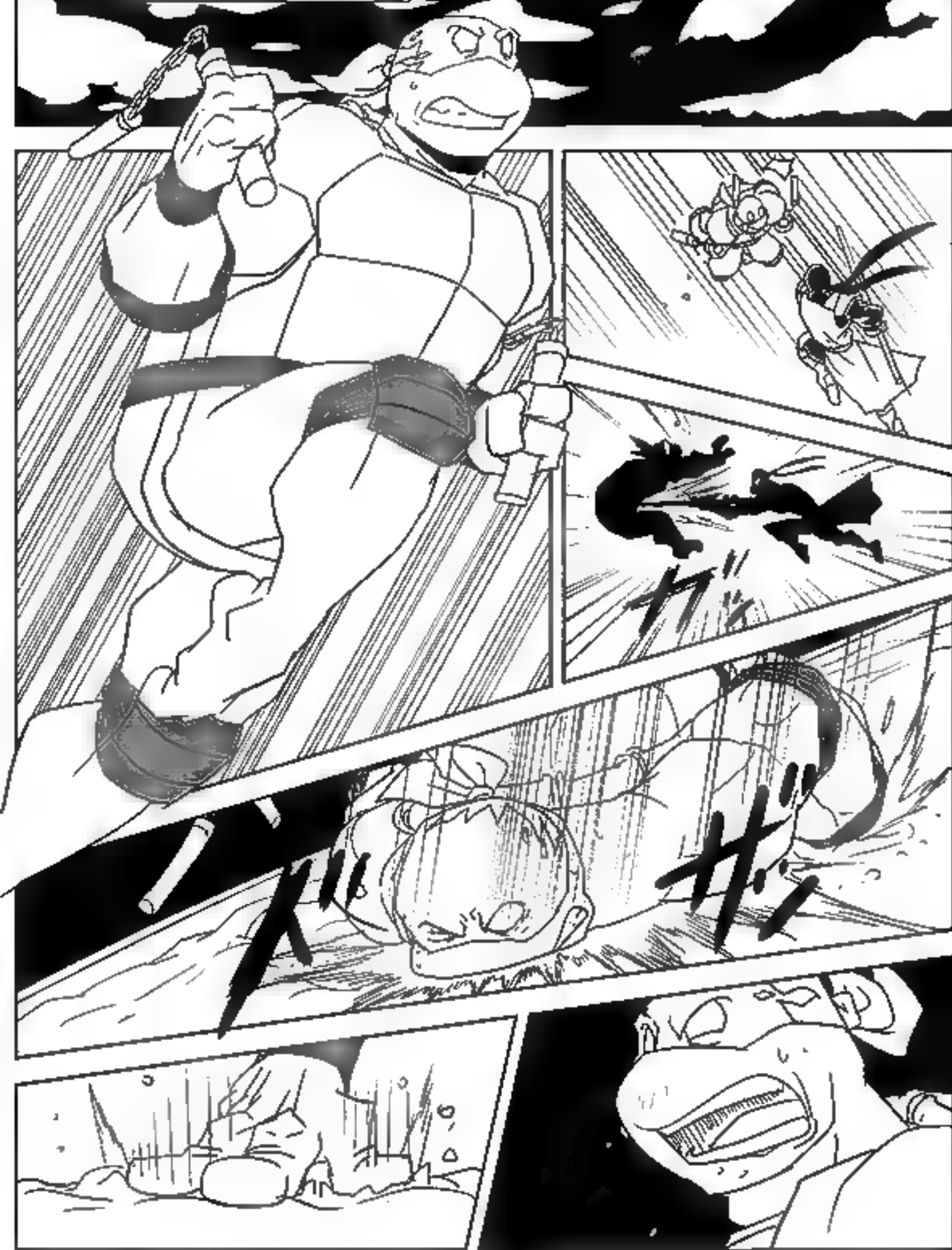
YOU LOST EVERYTHING. AND THINGS YOU THOUGHT YOU HAD... YOU NEVER HAD THEM IN THE FIRST PLACE. YOU'RE NOT EVEN A THREAT TO US ANYMORE.

SO GET LOST. LEAVE BEFORE THE CLEANING CREW GETS HERE.

AND IF YOU EVER GET IN OUR WAY AGAIN... I'LL END YOU.



I DON'T KNOW HOW LONG
I CAN KEEP GOING...
THEY JUST KEEP ON COMING!



WHERE ARE
THOSE NINJAS?

MISSION
ACCOMPLISHED.

YOU
MEAN...?

THERE WERE NINJAS
AFTER ME... WHAT
HAPPENED TO THEM?

YEAH, I
DESTROYED
THE MIRROR.

THEY JUST
RAN AWAY.
I SAW THEM
JUMP OFF THE
ROOF.

LET'S GO
BACK TO
RAPH.

YOU TRAITORS.
WE TRIED TO REFORM
YOU BUT I SEE YOU'RE
BEYOND HELP.

WE DON'T CARE
ABOUT YOUR CURSE
WE DON'T TRUST
KARAI...

OROKU SAKI'S
WILL IS ALL THAT
GUIDES US...

H...HEHE...
HEHEHE...

WE'RE HIS LEGACY!
WE'LL NEVER BOW TO
THE REST OF THE
FOOT CLAN!

WE---

HEY LEO,
WHAT HAPPENED
TO RAPH AND
RENOIR?

RAPH WAS OVERCOME
BY THE CURSE, SO I
HAD TO LEAVE HIM WITH
RENOIR.

BUT THE CURSE
IS DONE FOR,
RIGHT?

RAPH WILL NO
LONGER HAVE
VIOLENT OUTBURSTS,
RIGHT?

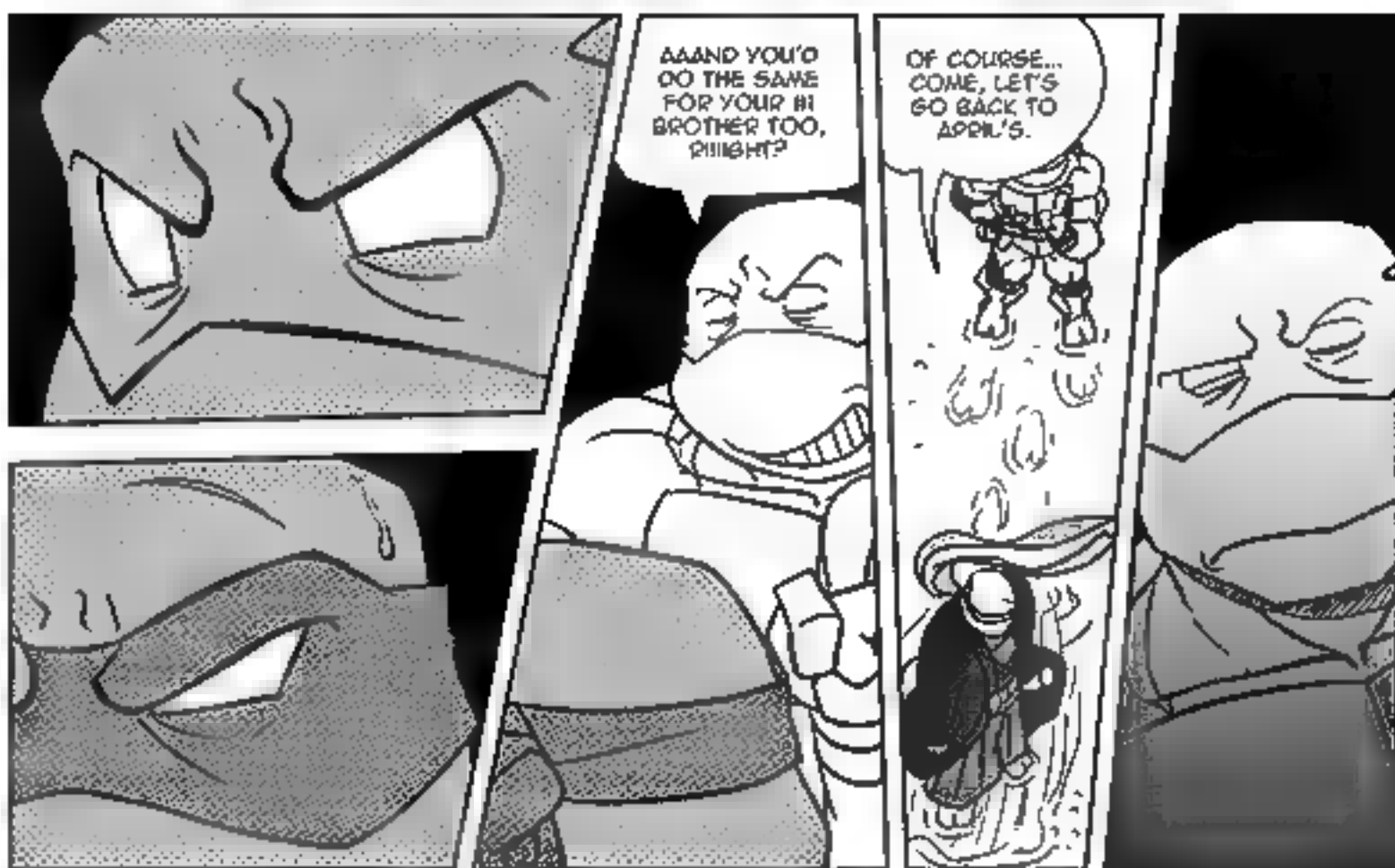
HEY?

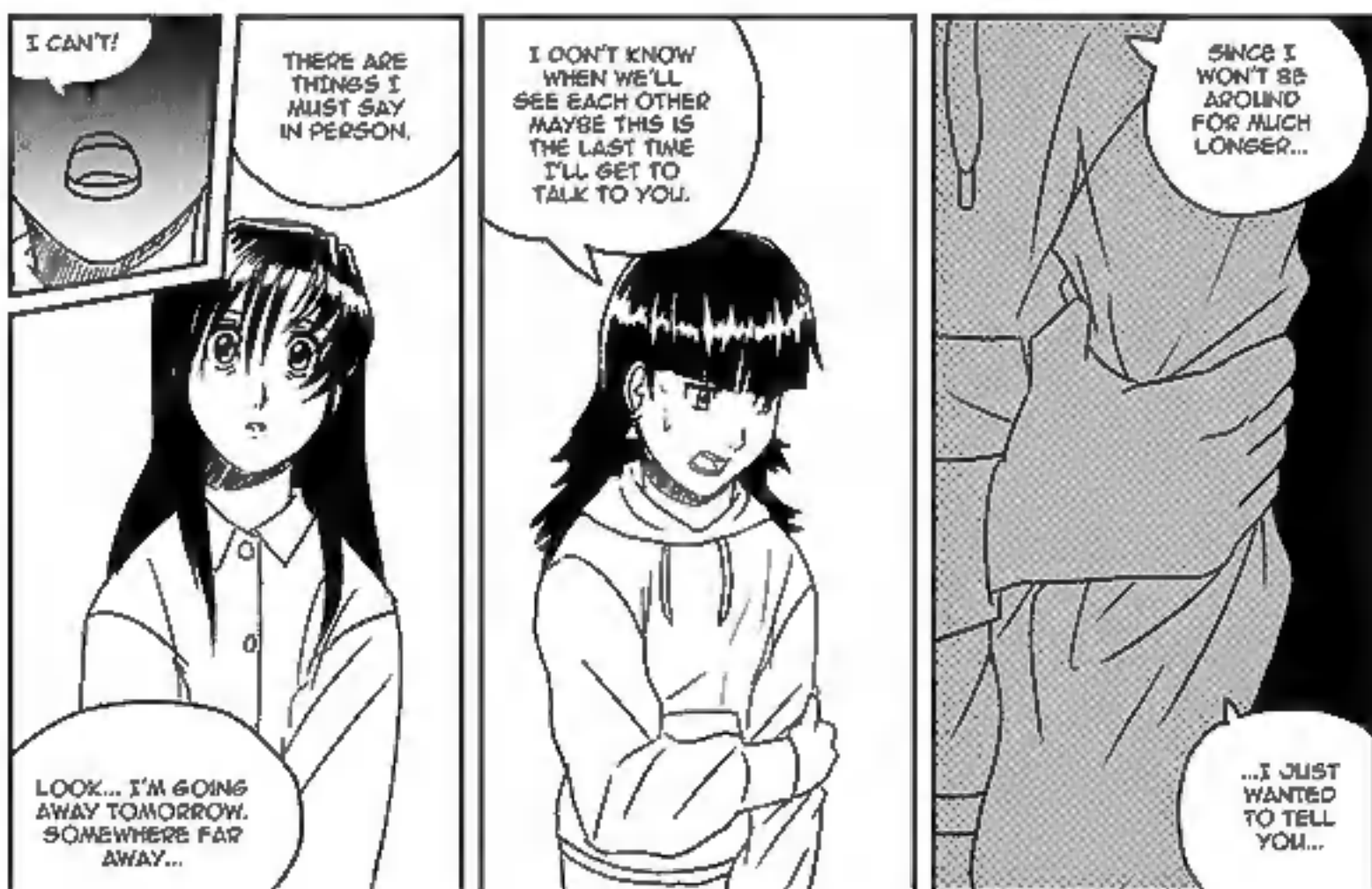
EARTH
TO LEO?

MIKEY...! LOOK, THERE'S
MORE TO IT, BUT I NEED
TO LOOK INTO IT, OKAY?

EHEHE! SORRY, SORRY.
IT'S JUST... THAT'S WHAT
WE'RE FIGHTING FOR, NO?

YOU CAN SPARE ME
THE UNSPOKEN
DETAILS ABOUT YOUR
SOLUTION, BUT...





...IF I WERE
STILL AROUND FOR
VALENTINE'S DAY...

...I WOULD'VE WANTED
YOU TO BE MY
VALENTINE!

AH-

MARCELLA!
HOW TO PUT IT...
I... UM...

I KNOW! I KNOW!
YOU DON'T NEED
THAT WAY! I JUST
NEEDED TO GET IT
OFF MY CHEST!

YOU'VE ALWAYS
BEEN SO NICE
TO ME

SINCE THE DAY
WE FIRST MET,
YOU LOOKED
AFTER ME, AND...

RELAX.
YOU'RE DOING
GREAT...

IT TAKES A LOT
OF COURAGE
TO CONFESS
YOUR LOVE
TO SOMEONE...

...ESPECIALLY
WHEN IT'S NOT
EVEN VALENTINE'S
DAY!

WE MIGHT NOT BE
A MATCH... BUT IT
HONORS ME THAT
YOU CONSIDER ME
YOUR TOP PICK
FOR A VALENTINE!

ONE DAY,
YOU'LL FIND
THE RIGHT ONE
AND THAT
PERSON WILL
BE THE LUCKIEST
PERSON ON
EARTH.

YEAH...
ONE DAY...

THANKS,
OAVIANNA!

WAIT...!

YOU'RE ACTING LIKE
YOU'RE LEAVING
FOREVER... THAT'S NOT
THE CASE, RIGHT?

PLEASE PROMISE
ME WE'LL MEET
AGAIN!

FOR SURE,
DAVIANNA!
WE'LL MEET
AGAIN!

IT'S A
PROMISE!

MARCELLA...?

GOODBYE...

